



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### **Usage guidelines**

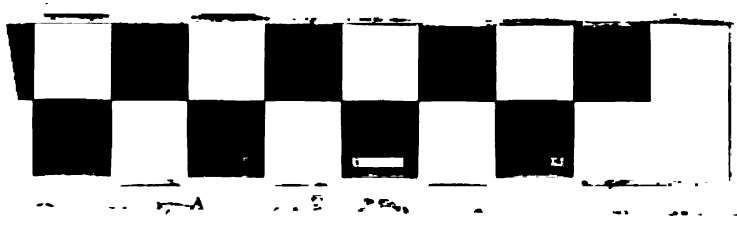
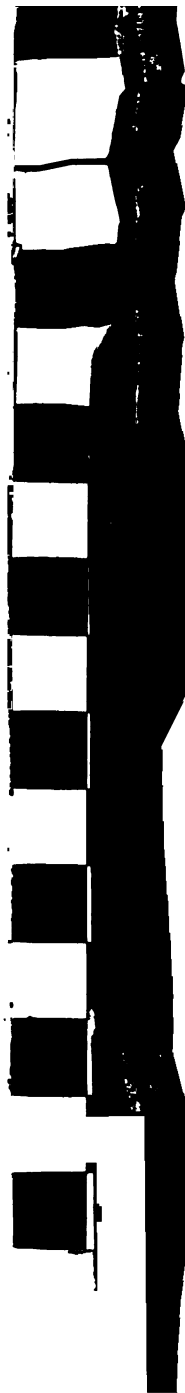
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

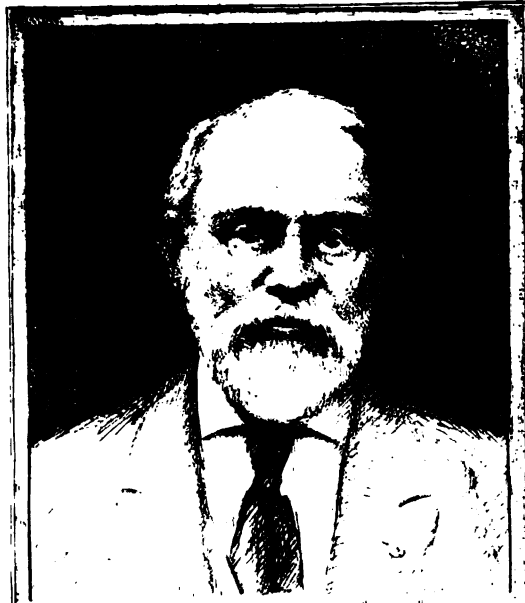
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### **About Google Book Search**

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>





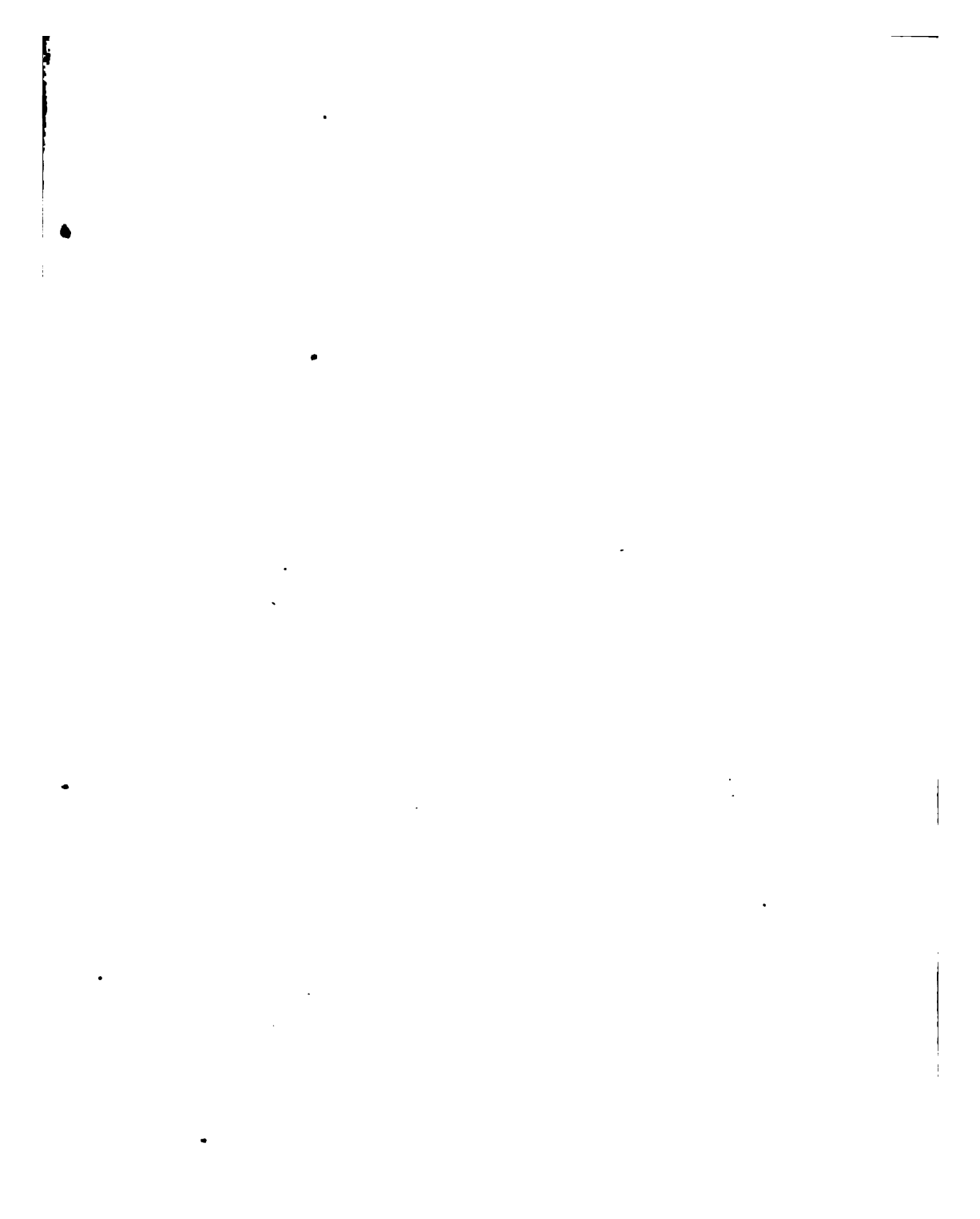
SILAS WRIGHT DUNNING  
BEQUEST  
UNIVERSITY OF MICHIGAN  
GENERAL LIBRARY



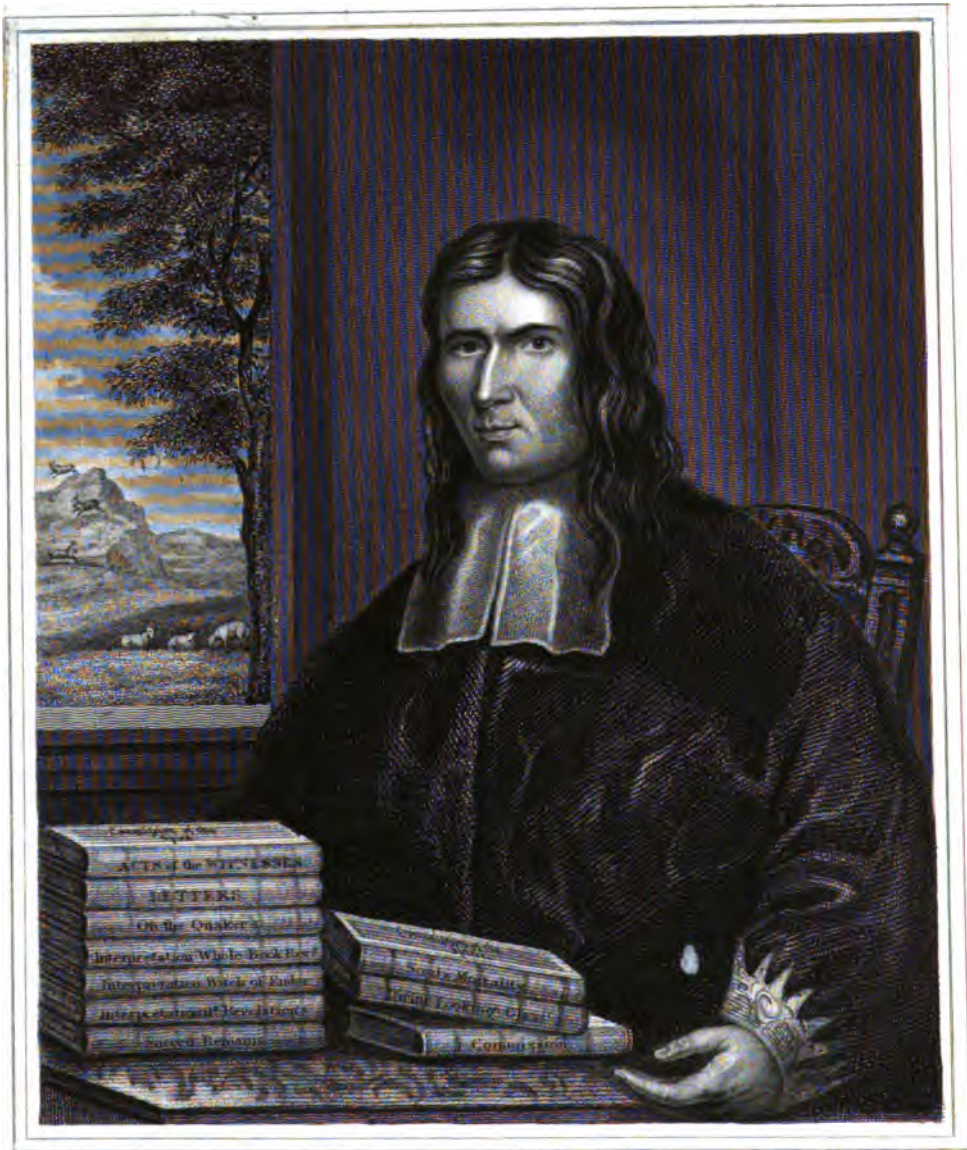












Engraved by J. Kneass

## LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

THE LORD'S LAST HIGH PRIEST UNDER JOHN REEVE, IN THE  
COMMISSION OF THE SPIRIT;

*Died 14<sup>th</sup> March 1696, Aged 83 Years, 7 Months & 14 Days.*

The above taken from the original, Painted from Life, by his Friend William Wood, Brantree, Essex:  
*The former Plate was taken from his bust after Death* Joseph & Isaac Post 1823

THE  
**WORKS**  
OF  
**JOHN REEVE AND LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**  
**THE TWO LAST PROPHETS**  
OF THE  
*Only true God, our Lord Jesus Christ.*



IN THREE VOLUMES.

---

VOL. III.

---

LONDON:—PRINTED BY SUBSCRIPTION.

1832.

BX  
7697  
.R28  
1232  
v.3

Dunning  
Edwards  
6-23-52  
79379

# GENERAL INDEX

TO

## JOHN REEVE & LODOWICKE MUGGLETON'S WORKS.

INTENDED FOR THREE VOLUMES.



**BELOVED BRETHREN,**

*The following Books may be considered the whole of the Writings of the Lord's last Prophets, JOHN REEVE and LODOWICKE MUGGLETON as far as the Church is in possession of.*

*We have given the contents of each Book to render reference more easy to those that would willingly be instructed in the knowledge of the true God and their own eternal salvation.*

**JOSEPH and ISAAC FROST.**

SAINT JOHN'S SQUARE.  
London, A.D. 1831.

## A TRANSCENDENT SPIRITUAL TREATISE

Upon several heavenly doctrines from the Holy Spirit  
of the Man Jesus, the only true GOD, sent unto all  
his elect.

### CONTENTS.

PAGE.		PAGE.	
Of my Commission received by Voice of Words from the Spi- rit of the Man JESUS in glory	1	sent the Person of God the Father.....	38
Of the last great deceiving Anti- christ, and Man of sin, that ever shall be .....	4	Of all Prophets, or Priests, or Ministers in this World, being false, not knowing the true God; therefore not sent by the God of all truth, the Man Jesus .....	42
Of the unlawfulness for a spiri- tual Christian to war with a sword of steel.....	9	Of all Heathen Magistrates, and their Heathen Prophets, false Worship or Image....	46
Of the Creation beyond the Stars, or of the other Side of the visible created Heavens, where Sun, Moon, and Stars, that shall all vanish like Smoke together to Eternity	14	Of the Mortality of the Soul, and how, and when, it became mortal .....	49
Of the creating that reprobate Angel Serpent that beguiled Eve and became a Man....	17	With what bodies the Elect and the Reprobate shall appear after Death.....	51
Of the eternal Creator clothing himself with flesh, and so be- came a pure Man .....	23	How the Bodies and Spirits of the World of the Elect Be- lievers shall be like unto the glorious Body of God their Redeemer, in his Glory to Eternity .....	54
Of the creating of Man, and the Nature of Holy Angels in their Creation.....	26	Of some difference between the Glory of Men and Angels in Glory in the Heaven above	56
Of Eliah the Prophet ascending bodily in Heaven, to repre-			

**A GENERAL EPISTLE**

**From the HOLY SPIRIT, unto all Prophets, Ministers,  
or Speakers in the world.**

**A REMONSTRANCE FROM THE ETERNAL GOD,  
Declaring several spiritual Transactions unto the Par-  
liament and Commonwealth of England, unto his  
Excellency, the Lord General Cromwell, the Council  
of State, the Council of War, and to all that love the  
second appearing of the Lord Jesus, the only wise  
God and everlasting Father, blessed for ever.**

CONTENTS.

PAGE.		PAGE.
1	Of our being sent with a Mes- sage unto one John Tane, by command of God . . . . .	London and Westminster to lay down their Preaching, because the Lord Jesus gave them no commission to preach 12
7	Of our being sent by command from the Lord, with a mes- sage unto one John Robbins . . . . .	Of our being sent with a mes- sage unto all spiritual coun- terfeits about London . . . . . 15
8	Of our being moved by the Ho- ly Spirit to deliver a message unto some ministers . . . . .	Of our being apprehended, and committed to Newgate, for our faith, by the Lord Mayor 16
9	A discovery of the Lord's two last spiritual Witnesses that ever shall speak or write un- to Men, by Commission from the true God, until time be no more . . . . .	Of the injustice of one Alder- man Andrews . . . . . 17
10	Of the Roman Gentiles being Lords of the Scriptures, by conquest over the Jews . . . . .	Of our unjust trial and sentence against us for our faith in God by the Recorder Steele, and the London jury, about the 15th of October, 1653. . . . . 18
	Of our being moved by the Ho- ly Spirit, to command in ge- neral, all the Ministers about	Of our humble requests in be- half of the chosen of God, unto all the chief powers of England . . . . . 20

**A DIVINE LOOKING GLASS; or the Third and last Testament of our LORD JESUS CHRIST, whose personal residence is seated on his throne of eternal glory in another world.**

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
1. From whence all Writings proceed. 2. A necessity of extraordinary light to satisfy or silence curious questions. 3. The names of the two last Witnesses, and the time of their call. 4. The highest queries concerning the eternal estate of mankind. 5. Of the form and nature of God from all eternity, who continually increaseth. 6. The person of God is the object of true faith. 7. No reason in God. 8. The purest reason in man cannot understand the Scriptures.....	1	IV. 1. Of the angels further. 2. Of the nature of pure reason. 3. Of the divine nature. 4. Wherein they differ. 5. The angels were under the moral law which was written in their natures. 6. The Creator above all law. 7. A necessity of supplying the angels with continued revelations from the Creator. 8. He that was above all law, made himself under the law, by becoming flesh. 9. Who is Antichrist. 10. No joy in God without a form. 11. Death an enemy to all kind of life in God, angels & men.	14
II. 1. What the substances of earth and water were from eternity. 2. A great secret revealed concerning death & hell. 3. Concerning the heavens above. 4. Earth and water not eternally glorious. 5. The residence of the Creator. 6. Earth and water uncreated substances.....	6	V. 1. The cause of the angels fall, and the fruit thereof. 2. The condition of the elect angels. 3. The spiritual nature of the fallen angel remained, and what names are given to him. 4. An objection, and the answer, concerning two vessels. 5. Of the fallen angel and Adam. 6. No distinction between God and the Creature, but by names and natures. 7. Election and reprobation proved by divers Scriptures.	22
III. 1. Of the angels. 2. Their form and nature. 3. Out of what they are made. 4. The serpent which tempted Eve. 5. The cause why any creature was formed. 6. Who are partakers of the divine nature. 7. No created being capable of the Essence of God to dwell in it.....	9	VI. 1. Of the Scripture records. 2. Of the ignorance of men that deify or vilify them. 3. The Prophet's prayer in the conclusion .....	29

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>VII. 1. Of the creation of the firmament, sun, moon and stars. 2. Of the earth in the deep waters. 3. The meaning of the word create. 4. Why the deep waters are eternal. 5. By what the firmament was formed. 6. How the sun, moon, &amp; stars came. 7. Of the distinct and fixed bodies of the sun, moon, and stars. 8. The sun and moon of contrary natures. . . . . 33</p>	<p>XII. 1. To own or believe any other God but Christ, is a cursed lie. 2. Who are the deceived persons. 3. Concerning the true knowledge of God. 4. The deceivers of others under conflicts of mind, described by many and various expressions. . . . . 58</p>
<p>VIII. 1. Of the heavens. 2. How many were created. 3. No more but three. 1. A throne of eternal ravishing glories. 2. A throne of natural perishing glories. 3. An invisible spiritual throne leading to eternity. . . . . 41</p>	<p>XIII. 1. Of the language and condition of two sorts of men and women. 2. The one elected unto glory, the other rejected unto shame. 3. The Prophet's declaration thereupon. . . . . 66</p>
<p>IX. An exact Scripture rule to prove the Man Christ glorified, to be Father, Son, and Holy Spirit in one distinct person . . . . . 43</p>	<p>XIV. 1. A moderate discourse concerning civil wars in a kingdom. 2. The people's subjection to the laws. 3. Wherein several objections are answered. 4. Many things of very great consequence seasonably declared 71</p>
<p>X. 1. Of persecution of conscience. 2. Of the sin against the Holy Ghost. . . . . 49</p>	<p>XV. 1. Of the error of errors in men, who say that there is no other God or Christ, but in this creation only. 2. Several objections and answers concerning the death of the soul. 3. The light of Christ in man, is the invisible image of God, which purifieth the inward filthiness of the flesh and spirit, and presents the certain truth of an eternal life of glory or shame. 4. No need of a new birth, if there be a sufficient light of Christ in generation to conduct to heaven. 5. Children cannot understand spiritual or natural good or evil; so need not Christ's spiritual gifts in the womb for eternal happiness.</p>
<p>XI. 1. Of the true nature of infiniteness. 2. Wherein it lieth, viz. in the not knowing its beginning or ending. 3. Infiniteness and finiteness are incapable of equal glory. 4. Against all true reason that there should be three persons in the Trinity. 5. Christ and the Father one undivided Godhead. 6. Denying Christ to be the only God is Antichrist. 7. How prayers are heard. . . . . 52</p>	



PAGE.	PAGE.
6. A great error to believe that the essence of the eternal Spirit dwelleth in any man, but in the Lord Jesus only. 7. Two marks of reprobates ..	Why God called himself by a three-fold name .....
84	107
XVI. 1. Of divers comparisons of the Spirit or Person of Christ, unto the face of the natural sun. 2. No man or angel can be capable of the in-dwelling of God's essence, but his own person only.....	XX. 1. No title of honour ever attributed but to a person. 2. Who it was that Christ prayed unto in the days of his flesh. 3. The Creator distinct from all his creatures. 4. Of God's oath concerning his transmutation into pure flesh and bone ..
93	111
XVII. 1. No man's salvation or damnation lieth in his own will, but in the prerogative of God. 2. Divers absurdities which follow from the opinion that Christ is only within men. 3. A question and answer concerning a two-fold presence of God in the creature. 4. If the essential Spirit were united unto creatures, it could not be infinite .....	XXI. Of a three-fold record of natural witnesses, proceeding from the blessed Person of Christ at his death. ....
97	115
XVIII. 1. A discourse that the Divine Being is clothed with flesh and bone. 2. How God knows all things in the world. 3. Of the manner of God's taking upon him human nature. 4. What the form of God was before he became flesh. 5. No spirit can enjoy happiness or misery without a body .....	XXII. 1. Of the three witnesses on earth. 2. Of Spirit, water, and blood. 3. The three records on earth are the three commissioners. 4. What the commissions are .....
102	116
XIX. 1. Of the true spiritual Trinity in unity. 2. Of the one personal divine Majesty. 3. No Scripture mentioneth God to be three persons, only one God and one Person. 4.	XXIII. 1. Of several empty opinions concerning the two witnesses in the Eleventh of the Revelation. 2. What they are. 3. No true witness without a voice from heaven. 4. Who are the two last spiritual Witnesses .....
	118
	XXIV. 1. Of the Witnesses' trials and persecution after the publishing of their commission. 2. The Prophet's interpretation of some verses in the Eleventh of the Revelation. 3. An objection against the true Witnesses answered .....
	123
	XXV. 1. Of the sinful soul of man. 2. Of its mortality.

PAGE.		PAGE.
	3. All souls that are generated are mortal. 4. If men's souls were immortal, they could not be capable of diseases.....	130
XXVI.	1. Of the nature and place of the reprobate's torment. 2 The last Witnesses' great confidence concerning the end of the world. 3. Without a tongue no speech can be made by God, angels, or men. 4. God is visibly seen by spiritual bodies, as kings are by their subjects..	134
XXVII.	1. A more full discourse of the two Witnesses. 2. No true messenger or witness without a voice from God to the hearing of the ear. 3. The three commissions agree all in truth. 4. Differing only in point of worship. 5. There was not nor can there be assurance of eternal happiness, but in the belief of a commission. 6. God owneth no worship in this commission, but what is spiritual. The difference between true and false commissioners .....	139
XXVIII.	1. No reason in angel or men can be satisfied in itself without revelation from the Creator. 2. God created reason. 3. Yet it was not of his own nature. 4. Infiniteness is to create persons and things differing from his own nature. 5. Though all creatures were made by God, yet they came not out of him,	
	but by the word of his power.	
	6. No creature spiritual or natural, can be said to be the image of God, but man only.	
	7. It is the property of reason to promise obedience to God by his prophets, but perform none. 8. Why the angels are called mighty ..	146
XXIX.	1. Of the creation of Adam. 2. Why God spake in the plural number in the making of man.....	153
XXX.	1. How God made man in his own image or likeness. 2. The soul of Adam was of the same divine nature of God. 3. Not of the nature of the angels.. 4. Of the created virtues in Adam's soul 5. Adam did not know of his power to stand or fall. 6. The breath of life which Adam had received of God, died .....	160
XXXI.	1. Of the seed of the woman. 2. Of the seed of the serpent. 3. How sin came into man's nature. 4. No angel cast out of heaven but that one which deceived Eve. 5. No true knowledge of the Scriptures, but in the knowledge of the two seeds. 6. No speech could proceed from any but from the angel	165
XXXII.	1. The condition of Adam and Eve in their fall. 2. The angel called a serpent. 3. He was more comely in Eve's eyes than Adam. 4. How the fallen angel be-	

PAGE.	PAGE.
came flesh. 6. How God became flesh ..... 168	not satisfied without being ruler ..... 188
XXXIII. 1. What form the devil was of before he tempted Eve. 2. Spiritual bodies do not change their forms but their glories. 3. Spirits can take up no bodies but their own. 4. The forbidden fruit was not an apple, or any other fruit that could be eaten with the teeth .... 172	XXXVIII. 1. The bodies of angels are capable of dissolving into seed. 2. The seed of the serpent only damned. 3. Pure reason lost the knowledge of the creator, and of itself. 4. Cain not the son of Adam, but of the serpent. 5. Cain was brother to Abel only by the mother's side. 6. All that died by the first Adam shall be saved in the second. 7. Those that are not lost in themselves, can never be saved ..... 192
XXXIV. 1. The Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil was no natural tree. 2. What it was. 3. Whence the originality of sin came.. 176	XXXIX. 1. No condemnation but to persons of maturity. 2. No children damned, though they be of the seed of the serpent. 3. He that killeth a prophet, or a righteous man, would kill the Creator if he could. 4. No salvation by the power of man's own will. 5. But by the power of God..... 199
XXXV. 1. The curse was not pronounced upon any natural beast, but the fallen angel ..... 179	XL. 1. Concerning Christ's coming to judgment. 2. The vanity of that opinion that believes Christ's personal reign upon this earth ..... 203
XXXVI. 1. Of the mind of the Spirit in the word eating of the tree of knowledge of good and evil. 2. No true interpretation of the Scriptures but by immediate inspiration. 3. Reason not capable of the mysteries of God. 4. But faith only. 5. No devils but men and women. 6. No Devil without man tempteth any. 7. But the seed or last of his own spirit ..... 183	XLI. 1. The vanity of believing in a God that hath no form. 2. And of them who say, the creator is an incomprehensible Spirit. 3. Or that there is no God but nature only. 4. Or who say, that God's Spirit, and their spirits, are but one spirit.. 210
XXXVII. 1. The prerogative power of God is above all law. 2. Why God cursed the fallen angel in the womb of Eve. 3. The angel's nature (after his offence) was	

PAGE.	PAGE.
XLII. 1. A further discourse concerning the error of Christ's personal reign. 2. The interpretation of the three last verses of the 12th of the Revelations. 3. Concerning the Dragon and the Woman. 4. Of the binding of the old serpent dragon for a thousand years. 5. When they expired. 6. Of the worship of the beast. 7. Of satan's being loosed out of prison. 8. Who they are that be in the deepest prisons of raging darkness 216	profession of the true Jesus. 3. Two sorts of Jews. 4. Some remarkable signs of the approaching of the day of judgment ..... 237
XLIII. 1. Of the personal glory of Christ's coming to judgment. 2. No man hath so much faith as a grain of mustard seed, but Christ only. 3. Of spirits finite and infinite. .... 224	XLVII. 1. Further signs of the approaching day of Christ's coming to judgment. 2. The prophet writes by inspiration. 3. And giveth the interpretation of several Scriptures tending thereunto 243
XLIV. 1. Of the great white throne which John saw, Revelations 20. 2. A mark of a reprobate to desire Miracles, to make him believe the truth of a commission .... 227	XLVIII. 1. Of the first resurrection. 2. And what it is, by several questions and answers. .... 247
XLV. 1. The Creator's withholding of his divine assistance was the cause of the fall of our first parents. 2. The ground of all spiritual or natural curses. 3. Noah's ark assimilated to heaven. 4. Of the resurrection ..... 233	XLIX. 1. Concerning God's becoming a child. 2. None lives, and moves, and have their beings in God, but the seed of faith. 3. No creature capable to be essentially one with God ..... 250
XLVI. 1. The last commissioned prophet come into the world. 2. No calling of the natural Jews to the pro-	X. 1. Of the second and last dying in the Lord. 2. What it is. 3. Eternal life is hid in the person of God only.. 253
	LI. 1. Eternal damnation is a living death, and a dying life. 2. Three books will be opened at the last judgment. 3. Signifying the three commissions of the law, the gospel, and the spirit. 4. The Heathen are judged by the law of their conscience, having not had the Scriptures. 5. The Prophet's heavenly conclusion ..... 256

**An OCCASIONAL DISCOURSE** from the **First and Second Verse of the Second Chapter of the DIVINE LOOKING GLASS**; concerning the Prophet **Reeve**, that *Darkness, Death and Hell*, lay secretly hid in the spiritual earth eternally with God. By the Prophet **MUGGLETON**, Sept. 28, 1668. [*See the end of the Looking Glass.*]

---

**JOYFUL NEWS FROM HEAVEN;**

Or, the last intelligence from our glorified **JESUS** above the stars, wherein is infallibly recorded how that the soul dieth in the body.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
THE soul's mortality proved ..	1	of Samaria; or, true worship discovered .....	27
The vanity of dreams .....	23	No spirit without a body ....	30
The soul's sleeping in the dust	24	Baptist's commission counterfeited .....	33
The mystery of the dispute between Christ and the woman		A true description of heaven..	48

---

**A True Interpretation of the Eleventh Chapter of the 11th Revelation of St. John, and other Texts in that Book; as also many other places of Scripture.—** Whereby is unfolded, and plainly declared, the whole counsel of God concerning Himself, the Devil, and all Mankind, from the foundation of the World to all eternity—Never before revealed by any of the sons of men until now.

CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.	
1. What is meant by the reed like unto a rod. Of the city of God. Of the little book,	and what is meant by the sweetness & bitterness thereof. Concerning the temple of God, the altar, and the

PAGE	PAGE.
<p>Worshippers, with the measuring of them ..... 1</p> <p>II. Of the court without the temple. Of the treading the holy city under foot, and what is meant thereby .... 5</p> <p>III. Of the two Witnesses. Who they were. An explanation of the commissions of Moses &amp; Jesus. How these make up but two Witnesses or prophets. Who they are that can only interpret Scripture truly. God's becoming flesh in the incarnation of Christ explained ..... 7</p> <p>IV. Whence the law came. To whom it was given. Who are under the law, and who are not. Of the weakness and foolishness of reason in the things of God, or faith .... 10</p> <p>V. Of the tree of life, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The agreement of Adam's form and nature with God's. The difference between the breath of life in Adam, and that breath of life which is in all other creatures. How the invisible life giveth form, whereby all forms differ from man's. How Adam was only capable to see the forms and understand the speeches of the two trees ..... 11</p> <p>VI. How man in innocency could, and did see the face of God, as he was seen of him. Of man's misery by</p>	<p>knowing good and evil. Of the end of his fall, wherefore it was. How Adam and his seed shall be raised up to a higher degree of happiness than the state of innocency. How only those of Christ's seed or nature, shall be raised to glory. How the breath of God died in Adam 13</p> <p>VII. Of the form and nature of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, &amp;c. Of the extent of the curse upon Adam, &amp;c. How the curse and death of Adam and his seed, extended no further than the sorrows and death of this life. How none can be capable of the knowledge of good and evil, but the two seeds of faith &amp; reason..... 16</p> <p>VIII. What is meant, when it was said that the serpent should go upon his belly: &amp; how he feedeth on the dust of the earth, and what that food is. How Cain was the first born of the devil. How the angel's nature may be said to be the elder brother, and Adam's the younger. Of the Lord's judgment upon both natures ..... 18</p> <p>IX Of eating the forbidden fruit. How that could not produce seed. How the enmity lay in the two seeds. What is meant by bruising the head and the heel .... 21</p> <p>X. How seed or nature was before form; and how form</p>

	PAGE.		PAGE.
causeth seed or nature to appear, and how spiritual bodies may dissolve into seed or nature.....	23	Of some revelation of the two seeds, in the raven and dove in Noah's ark. Reason's imagination, concerning God and himself. Faith's knowledge concerning God and himself, both declared what they are .....	38
XI. What it was that made Adam know good and evil. How reason is the governor of this world, and not faith. how it may be said that spiritual bodies are not in their right region, except they be where celestial bodies are. That Adam in innocency had no reason in him. That all thoughts and motions in man ariseth from the two seeds..	25	XVI. How Moses in the law may be said to be one of the olive trees. The meaning of the two golden pipes mentioned by Zechariah .....	42
XII. How reason (being the angel's nature) was condemned, in the loss of the knowledge from whence it came. That reason cannot know the mind of God in the Scriptures; and the cause thereof. Of eating the flesh of Christ. An interpretation of eating manna, and the true bread	27	XVII. How it was only external blessings that was given to the obeyers of the outward law, and cursings to the disobeyers. How idolatry, or idolaters, proceeds from the not knowing, and obeying the true God. The difference between voice of words, and revelations from God .....	44
XIII. An interpretation of the water out of the rock. Of the serpent in the wilderness. How there was but two trees of a spiritual nature in the garden .....	32	XVIII. How the principle of God's being a Spirit without a body, did arise. Diverse queries about the eternal being of God, with the blindness of reason therein.....	48
XIV. What the two candlesticks were. In what nature the law was written. Why no law is given, but to the seed of reason .....	36	XIX. How Jesus Christ in the gospel may be said to be the other olive tree. How there is no water of life, but that which proceeds from the tree of life .....	52
XV. How Hagar and her son, and Sarah and her son, were the types of the two commissions, and the two seeds.		XX. Of the Cherubims who had the flaming sword to keep the way of the tree of life. What the flaming sword was; and how the	

PAGE.	PAGE.		
seed of faith is preserved thereby, from being destroyed by reason .....	51	tation of the Parable of the wise and foolish virgins....	68
XXI. Of the tree of life: the fruits thereof, and the use of them. That Christ gave no commission to his disciples, with power, till he was ascended, which was only to the twelve apostles. That all spiritual commissions came from heaven.....	57	XXVI. Some mysterious sayings in the book of the Revelations opened, viz. the New Jerusalem, the Tabernacle, the angel which carried away John into the high mountain, the golden reed.	70
XXII. Of the seven churches, and what they are; and how one of them are enlightened above another, even till the devil is transformed into an angel of light in the last: yet that they have all one and the same God and Devil ..	60	XXVII. When the great city and holy Jerusalem came down from heaven. Of the tabernacle of God being with men, in opposition of the tabernacle in the mount. Of the great and high wall which had twelve gates, and at the twelve gates twelve angels, and names written. How the partition wall was broken down, and when ..	72
XXIII. Of the seven churches further, shewing four of them have their commissions from man only: and the other three, neither from God or man.....	62	XXVIII. Of the wall with twelve foundations, and what the foundations are, and who set and did bear them up..	74
XXIV. Shewing no spiritual commission but from heaven. What the baptism of John was. How the ordinance of baptism belonged only to the apostles, and to none of the seven churches since.....	65	XXIX. Of the reed wherewith the city was measured. The equality of the twelve foundations. Of the angel which shewed John these things by way of vision .....	77
XXV. How the apostle's commission came from the tree of life, and what that tree was. That the Apostles were the candlesticks, and why so called. An interpre-		XXX. The power of commissioned Prophets. How that which hath been done by them, hath been accounted as done by God himself. ..	79
		XXXI. That John the Baptist was the last prophet under the law, declaring the end of	



PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>the worship under the law, and the coming in of the worship under the gospel .. 82</p> <p>XXXII. Of the persons who slew the Lord's commissioned prophets, and Christ himself; with the woes pronounced against them, which were as fire proceeding out of their mouths..... 84</p> <p>XXXIII. How that words of truth raiseth up rage in the seed of reason, and peace &amp; joy in the seed of faith. That all strife between nearest relations about spiritual matters, ariseth from the two seeds ..... 87</p> <p>XXXIV. How fire proceeded out of the mouths of the prophets and apostles. The right understanding of the differences in the several commissions declared ..... 89</p> <p>XXXV. Of the sun being turned into darkness. And also of the death or darkness upon the eternal God opened, in explaining the prophecy of Joel, where it is said, the sun shall be turned into darkness, &amp; the moon into blood 93</p> <p>XXXVI. The power of the prophet's commission, in shutting the heavens that it rain not ..... 94</p> <p>XXXVII. Of the further power of the prophets ..... 97</p> <p>XXXVIII. A declaration of</p>	<p>the difference of commissions. How Moses and the prophets were all but one commission ..... 100</p> <p>XXXIX. The commission of the water, and the commission of the blood declared .. 102</p> <p>XL. Of the commission of the blood further, and how this commission shut the heavens 104</p> <p>XLI. What is meant by the commission of Jesus turning the waters into blood. How the law was overcome by Jesus, and how sin and death was overcome by his being offered up to death, through the eternal Spirit ..... 107</p> <p>XLII. Of the water and blood which came out of Christ's side; how the law which signified the water was turned into blood..... 110</p> <p>XLIII How the commissions were the two prophets mentioned by John, and how they plagued the earth with all manner of plagues .... 111</p> <p>XLIV. The interpretation of some sayings concerning John the Baptist. How John the Baptist was the greatest prophet. What is meant by the kingdom of God..... 112</p> <p>XLV. Whom the kingdom of heaven was taken from, and unto whom it was given. What is meant by the two</p>

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>sons who were to work in the vineyard ..... 114</p> <p>XLVI. What is meant by the beast that ascended out of the bottomless pit, and what is meant by the bottomless pit. What is meant by satan's being shut up a thousand years. What the keys of heaven and hell are, and what is meant by satan's being shut up a thousand years in the bottomless pit..... 117</p> <p>XLVII What is meant by making war with the prophets. What is meant by Tophet prepared of old, the pile, fire, and much wood, and the breath of the Lord. Of the death and resurrection of the law with man for eternal punishment ..... 120</p> <p>XLVIII. The parable of Dives and Lazarus opened. Concerning the resurrection and the necessity thereof. What is meant by a drop of cold water to cool the tongue. Abraham's bosom, the kingdom of heaven, Cain's bosom the kingdom of hell ..... 123</p> <p>XLIX. What is meant by the two dead bodies ..... 126</p> <p>L. What is meant by the streets of the great city, and why called Sodom &amp; Egypt 128</p> <p>LI. What is meant by people, and kindred, and tongues, and gentiles. What is meant by painting the tombs of the</p>	<p>prophets, and garnishing the sepulchres..... 130</p> <p>LII. How the scriptures are the two prophets dead bodies, which the learned men would not suffer to be buried. but have made merchandize of them..... 131</p> <p>LIII. Of the Gentiles painting the tombs of Christ and his apostles, as the Jews did those of Moses and the prophets. .... 133</p> <p>LIV. Of rejoicing over the death of the prophets, and of sending gifts one to another ..... 134</p> <p>LV. What is meant by three days and a half. What by the spirit of life from God, and what by eternity. How that there can be no true interpretation of the Scriptures, but by him who hath the spirit of light from God 138</p> <p>XVI. The death of Christ procured a greater power to himself than he had before. What is truly meant by the prince of this world ..... 141</p> <p>LVII, How the spirit of life from God in a commission quickeneth that which is spiritually dead. That the Apostle's commission of the Holy Ghost was the spirit of life from God. What is meant by the great fear that should come upon men.... 144</p>

PAGE.		PAGE.
<p><b>LVIII.</b> Concerning 2260 days, and the three days and a half. Who is meant by the Woman that hath the eagle's wings, and what the wings of that eagle were, and the wilderness she did flee into. What is meant by the Woman clothed with the sun, the moon under her feet, and the crown of twelve stars upon her head. What the earth was that swallowed up the flood..... 144</p> <p><b>LIX.</b> Who it was that did hear the great voice from heaven 147</p> <p><b>LX.</b> Who it was that made Christ's face to shine, and his garments glitter, and who the angels were that watched over him. Of the two prophets ascending into heaven. what is meant by their enemies that shall see them ..... 149</p> <p><b>LXI.</b> What is meant by the word earthquake in the commission of Moses ..... 152</p> <p><b>LXII.</b> A further explanation of the said earthquake.... 155</p> <p><b>LXIII.</b> What is meant by the word earthquake of the gospel, with the diverse effects it had upon the invisible spirit, both upon faith and reason, for natural and spiritual earthquakes ..... 156</p> <p><b>LXIV.</b> Interpretations of several scriptures concerning earthquakes. What is meant</p>	<p>by the same hour the earthquake should be ..... 158</p> <p><b>LXV.</b> What the sun was which was as black as sackcloth of hair, and how the moon was like blood..... 161</p> <p><b>LXVI.</b> The revelation of the spirit only knoweth the distinction of earthquakes.... 162</p> <p><b>LXVII.</b> What is meant by the city: what by the tenth part of it. What by the seven thousand that should be slain: what the remnant was that was sore affrighted, and gave the glory to God. How the Jews and Gentiles are called the City of God 164</p> <p><b>LXVIII.</b> What is meant by the first and second woes, &amp; when they were past, which did belong to the two commissions of the law and the gospel ..... 167</p> <p><b>LXIX.</b> Of the third woe which could come anon, how it doth belong to the third commission. How the kingdoms of this world are become Christ's and in what manner he will reign ..... 169</p> <p><b>LXX.</b> Of the four and twenty elders, and what they are. The difference of glory in the four and twenty elders. 171</p> <p><b>LXXI.</b> Who it was that gave thanks to God. Faith looks at things to come, as in present being. Of God's putting</p>	

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>an end to all time. The glory which shall be given to his prophets and the seed of faith. The end of the kingdom of reason, and the eternal destruction of the devil and his seed, with the place of their torment . . . . . 172</p> <p>LXXII. The difference between the temple of God in the state of mortality, and of immortality. The interpretation of the two covenants . . . . . 174</p> <p>LXXIII. How Christ came by water and blood, explained. Of the three that bare record in heaven, and the three that bear record on earth, and what they are . . . . . 176</p> <p>LXXIV. Of the commission of the Spirit, which is the last record in the earth. The witnesses' names, and their authority and power concerning the spiritual and eternal condition of mankind . . . . . 179</p> <p>LXXV. All spiritual counterfeit powers brought down by the commission of the Spirit 181</p> <p>LXXVI. The witnesses of the spiritual commission, their sentence upon false Christs and false prophets . . . . . 182</p> <p>LXXVII. How the two witnesses of the commission of the Spirit, may be said to be the two witnesses mentioned in the 11th of the Revelation 184</p>	<p>LXXVIII. As the reed signified John's Revelation, so Revelation is the reed of the witnesses of the spiritual commission, to declare the deep mysteries of God hidden in the Scriptures, and to finish them. The spirit of prophecy in the three commissions of water, blood, and spirit, opened . . . . . 185</p> <p>LXXIX. How the witnesses of the spiritual commission are like the olive-tree, the candle-sticks, and the spiritual light of the world . . . . 186</p> <p>LXXX. How, and what fire it is that proceedeth out of the mouths of the witnesses of the spirit, and how they shut heaven, and turn waters into blood . . . . . 187</p> <p>LXXXI. How the declaring of the true God, the right devil, and other mysteries, is the finishing of the witnesses of the commission of the Spirit's testimony, and are forerunners of Christ's coming to judgment . . . . . 190</p> <p>LXXXII. How the same beast that did arise out of the bottomless pit, and did make war against the witnesses of the water and blood, upon the finishing their testimony, hath risen and made war against the witnesses of the Spirit, upon the finishing of theirs . . . . . 192</p> <p>LXXXIII. How the Scrip-</p>

	PAGE.		PAGE.
tures are the dead bodies of the witnesses of the Spirit. None can interpret the Scriptures truly, but the witnesses of the Spirit .....	193	and life from God, and maketh the dead bodies to stand upon their feet, to the justifying of the seed of faith to eternal happiness, and the condemnation of the seed of reason to eternal endless misery .....	195
LXXXIV. How the commission of the Spirit, is as spirit			

END OF THE CONTENTS OF VOL I.

THE CONTENTS OF VOL. II.

**A TRUE INTERPRETATION** of all the chief Texts, and Mysterious Sayings and Visions opened, of the whole Book of the Revelation of St. John ; whereby is unfolded and plainly declared, those wonderful deep Mysteries and Visions interpreted, concerning the true God, the Alpha and Omega, with variety of other heavenly secrets which have never been opened nor revealed to any man, since the creation of the World to this day, until now.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
<b>CHAP. I.</b>			
WHAT is meant by him that is, which was, and which is to come; and of the seven spirits, or seven blessings of the seven churches of Asia ....	1	death; and of the hidden manna; and what is meant by ruling with a rod of iron.	7
II. What is meant by eating of the tree of life; and of not being hurt by the second		III. What is meant by not blotting a man's name out of the book of life: and by being a pillar in the temple of God; and by him that overcometh .....	14

PAGE	PAGE.
IV. What is meant by the seven spirits of God; and how those seven spirits are but one spirit . . . . .	18
V. What is meant by the throne of God; and that there is a kingdom above the stars, as there is here below . . . . .	23
VI. How Jesus Christ is called by the Spirit the Alpha & Omega, and how God was in a two-fold condition, and so made capable to suffer the pains of death . . . . .	25
VII. The resemblance and likeness of the seven churches of Europe, unto the seven churches of Asia; how their ministry doth differ; and how their reward will differ also . . . . .	33
VIII. A further interpretation of the throne of God in heaven; and of the seven lamps burning with fire; and of the seven spirits of God . . . .	42
IX. What is meant by the sea of glass in heaven; and of the four beasts full of eyes; and how Christ is called David's lord, and David's son; and the difference of the four beasts in their forms, yet all but men . . . . .	50
X. The interpretation of the six wings the four beasts had a-piece; and what is meant by their being full of eyes before and behind; and of their giving thanks, praise, honour,	
	and glory to Christ, as he is the Creator . . . . .
	54
XI. The difference of the power of God as he was the Creator and his power as he is a Redeemer there being a two-fold state and condition in God; what is meant by the book of life, and the seals on the back side . . . . .	58
XII. How John wept because he could see none in heaven, nor in earth that could open the book of life; how the lion of the tribe of Judah doth prevail to open the book as he is the Redeemer, and not as he is the Creator; and what is meant by the seven horns . . . . .	61
XIII. A further interpretation of the seven horns; and what is meant by ten days tribulation; and by the seven eyes; how Christ opened the book of life, as he is a Son . . . . .	65
XIV. The interpretation of the song of Moses, and of the Lamb; why Moses's song may be called an old song, and the song of the lamb a new song; & what is meant by the golden vials & harps . . . .	69
XV. The interpretation of the white horse; and he that sat upon him; and in what manner he went forth to conquer; and what the bow in his hand signifies . . . . .	72
XVI. What is meant by the	

PAGE.		PAGE.
78	red horse, and he that sat thereon .....	XXIV. What is meant by the rivers and fountains of waters being made bitter; and how those that drank of them died .....
80	XXVII. The interpretation of the black horse; and him that sat thereon; and what is meant by not hurting the oil and the wine; and what is meant by the oil and the wine .....	XXV. What is meant by the sun being smitten, that she could not shine, but a third part of her only; and what is meant by the moon & stars being smitten; and how a third part of them did not shine, nor gave light in the night.....
85	XXVIII. The interpretation of the pale horse; and him that sits thereon; and what is meant by hell that followeth him .....	XXVI. What is meant by the star that fell from heaven unto this earth; what is meant by the bottomless pit, and the key that openeth it; and of the smoke that did arise out of the bottomless pit.....
90	XIX. What is meant by being slain under the altar; and how their blood cried unto God for vengeance .....	XXVII. What is meant by the smoke of the pit; and by the locusts that came out of it; how the saints are called green grass and trees ....
97	XX. How the heavens may be said to be rolled up like a scroll: and where the place of the reprobates shall be ..	XXVIII. What the four angels were; and how men's heads may be said to be like lion's heads; and what is meant by fire, smoke, and brimstone that issued out of their mouths.....
99	XXI. What is meant by the four angels who had power over the winds; and what by the sealing of the servants of God in their foreheads .....	XXIX. What the serpent is; and how they may be said to be the tail; and how they may be said to have stings; and how they do hurt....
104	XXII. What is meant by the first and second angels sounding; and of the mountain burning with fire; and what is meant by the third part of creatures that died in the sea	XXX. How the Papist, Epis-
110	XXIII. What is meant by the star that fell from heaven; and how it burned like a lamp .....	

PAGE.	PAGE.
	it; how the saints are not called the world; and how they may know their names are written in the book of life ..... 162
<p>copal, Presbytery, and Independent ministry do resemble the angels of the churches of Ephesus, Smyrna, Pergamos and Thyatira; and what judgments did follow..... 140</p>	<p>XXXVII. What is meant by the beast out of the earth with two horns, like a lamb, and what the two horns do signify; and how those miracles he wrought were counterfeit, and mere shadows . . 166</p>
<p>XXXI. How the ministry of the Baptist, Ranter &amp; Quaker do resemble the angels of the churches of Sardis, Philadelphia, and Laodoea; &amp; how plagues do follow at, and in the sounding of their their ministry ..... 145</p>	<p>XXXVIII. What is meant by the image, &amp; how the image may be said to speak..... 171</p>
<p>XXXII. The interpretation &amp; difference between the dragon's ten horns, &amp; the beast's ten horns; and how they may both be said to have seven heads a piece..... 150</p>	<p>XXXIX. What is meant by receiving the mark of the beast in the forehead, and in the right hand; and how they may be said to have the name of the beast, and the number of his name .. 174</p>
<p>XXXIII. No true faith upon earth, but in the time of a commission from God .... 152</p>	<p>XL. The interpretation of the number of the beast; and how he may be said to be six hundred three score and six, and yet but the number of a man ..... 178</p>
<p>XXXIV. The interpretation &amp; distinction why men may be called a dragon, devil, or serpent; and how the seed of reason may be said to be in heaven ..... 155</p>	<p>XLI. What is meant by the lamb that stood upon Mount Sion; and what those hundred forty and four thousand were who stood upon Mount Sion with him; and how the voices of the saints are called the sound of waters, and as the noise of thunder..... 183</p>
<p>XXXV. How the beast may be said to be like a leopard; what is meant by his feet being like the feet of a bear; &amp; his mouth like the mouth of a lion; and what is meant by his deadly wound being healed ..... 158</p>	<p>XLII. The interpretation how men and women may be said to be not defiled with wo-</p>
<p>XXXVI. What is meant by the tabernacle in heaven; and by those that dwell in</p>	



PAGE.	PAGE.
men ; & in what sense they may be called virgins ; and why the Jews are called the first fruits unto God ; and who the angel was that did fly in the midst of heaven ; and how the everlasting gospel was preached to every nation, and kindred, and tongue, and people ..... 187	out his plagues, as the angel of the law did..... 207
XLIII. The difference between the temporal Babylon and the spiritual Babylon expounded ; and how men may be said to drink the wine of the wrath of her fornication 191	XLVII. The interpretation of the waters being turned into blood ; and how the waters of the soul of man are turned into blood in the spiritual, as the natural waters of Egypt were ..... 212
XLIV. How Christ is called by the Spirit the Son of Man ; and what is meant by the white cloud ; and the crown of gold upon his head ; and what is meant by the sharp sicle in his hand ; and what is meant by reaping the earth ; and how the wine press of God's wrath is trodden without the gates, or city of Jerusalem ; and what the city is ..... 197	XLVIII. How the seed of reason did drink the saint's blood ; and how they must drink their own blood ; and what is meant by peuring out the vial upon the sun ; and by scorching men with fire ..... 217
XLV. How the saints of God are capable to stand upon a sea of glass in heaven, as men may upon this earth, they being spiritual bodies..... 204	XLIX. The interpretation of the kingdom of darkness in the temporal ; and what that darkness signifies..... 223
XLVI. What is meant by the seven vials of God's wrath poured out upon the earth ; and what angels they were that poured them out ; and why they are called the seven angels ; and how the angel of the gospel doth pour	L. How the spirit of Cain doth run through all wicked Herods ; and how the land of Goshen doth signify true light ; & the land of Egypt, hell, death and darkness.. 225
	LI. What is meant by the great river Euphrates in the natural, and in the spiritual ; & how it may be said to be dried up ; and who they are that are called kings of the earth..... 230
	LII. How these three unclean spirits, like frogs, proceeded from one spirit, and yet by their several operations and workings, they may be called three..... 235

PAGE.	PAGE.
LIII. A further interpretation of the dragon, beast, and false prophet; and how all the worship set up by them is false ..... 237	the mother of harlots; and what is meant by her fornication ..... 248
LIV. An interpretation of the operation of that wisdom that cometh out of the dragon's mouth; and why it is called by the spirit, an unclean spirit, like a frog ..... 239	LIX. How the kings of the earth may be said to commit fornication; and how the saints do drink the wine of the wrath of her fornication; how the scarlet coloured beast doth carry the whore; and how she sits upon the beast; and what is meant by the beast, and why called a scarlet coloured beast ..... 257
LV. What the unclean spirit is that came out of the beast's mouth; and how they are clothed in scarlet. .... 241	LX. The interpretation of the woman, and how she is arrayed in scarlet colour, and purple, and precious stones, with a golden cup in her hand; and what these things do signify; and how the woman may be said to be drunken with the blood of the saints ..... 261
LVI. What is meant by the false prophet; and how he came to be clothed in sheep's clothing; and how these three unclean spirits like frogs deceive one another, and all people else ..... 242	LXI. The interpretation of the beast that was, and is not, and yet is; and how he may be called the eighth, and is of the seven: with other deep secrets ..... 264
LVII. What is meant by the great earthquake, & by that great hail; and how every stone may be said to weigh a talent; and how mingled with fire and brimstone .. 245	LXII. How the woman may be said to sit upon seven mountains; and what the mountains are ..... 268
LVIII. How the spiritual Babylon is compared unto the temporal; and how false worship may be, and is called mystery Babylon, in opposition to the mystery of God; with many other things opened; and how, and when the sceptre departed from the Jews, and how the Gentile's worship is idolatrous, and so becomes, or makes up that great city mystery Babylon,	LXIII. The interpretation of the ten horns; and what is meant by their having power one hour with the beast; and how they make war with the lamb; and what

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>weapons they fight with; and with what weapons the lamb doth overcome them 271</p> <p>LXIV. How the ten horns received power from the beast to persecute the saints: and how the same ten kings received power from God to make the whore desolate, to fulfil God's will; yet all but wicked kings, yet they did his will. .... 274</p> <p>LXV. How all this seventeenth chapter was shewed unto John by vision, and none could interpret it, but he that hath a commission from God 276</p> <p>LXVI. The difference between the temporal Babylon, and the spiritual Babylon; and how this spiritual Babylon is called an habitation of devils, and a cage of every hateful bird, and a hold of every unclean spirit; and how the kings of the earth and all nations committed fornication with her ..... 278</p> <p>LXVII. How the saints may be said to come out of her; and how she must drink her own blood; and what is meant by filling her cup and giving it her double to drink; and what manner of famine and fire she shall be destroyed with..... 281</p> <p>LXVIII. What is meant by the merchant's standing afar off, for fear of her torment. .. 284</p>	<p>LXIX. How the prophets and apostles are bid to rejoice over the destruction of the great city, in that God hath avenged himself on her .. 286</p> <p>LXX. How the seed of reason doth walk in the paths of the scriptures, they cannot find out the true God; but the seed of faith can find out God in all those narrow paths where he doth walk; and how the voice of mirth did cease when Babylon was destroyed; and the blood of prophets and saints is found in her ..... 286</p> <p>LXXI. How the four beasts and four and twenty elders, and saints do sing praise unto God for the perpetual downfall of spiritual Babylon 289</p> <p>LXXII. What is meant by the voice of many waters; and the voice of mighty thunders; and how the saints are married unto God..... 291</p> <p>LXXIII. What is meant by the white horse; and by the many crowns that he had on his head; and of the difference of glory between the work of creation, and the work of redemption; and how it may be said that no man knew his name but himself ..... 293</p> <p>LXXIV. The interpretation of the garment of Christ down to the foot; and his vesture</p>

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>dipt in blood: and what is meant by treading the wine fat 296</p> <p><b>LXXV.</b> What is meant by the armies in heaven that follow Christ; and how they all sat upon white horses: and how Christ trod the fierceness of the wine-press of Almighty God, and yet not his father's wrath..... 299</p> <p><b>LXXVI.</b> The interpretation of the name of Christ written upon his thigh; and how he may be called king of kings, and lord of lords, in respect of the power of his creation and the power of his redemption; and how his death got power over sin, death &amp; hell, so that he can dispose of death now as he pleases, for his own glory ..... 302</p> <p><b>LXXVII.</b> What is meant by the fowls of heaven; and what the supper is they are invited unto; and what it is they must have to supper; and how the saints may be said to eat the flesh of kings, &amp; of captains &amp; of mighty men 305</p> <p><b>LXXVIII.</b> How the temporal power signifies the beast, and the spiritual power signifies the false prophet; and how they are both</p>	<p>cast alive into a lake of fire and brimstone; and what is meant by the remnant that were slain with a sword that came out of his mouth; with the end of the nineteenth chapter ..... 307</p> <p><b>LXXIX.</b> The prophet's prayer and thanksgiving unto Jesus Christ, the only God, who became very man, and yet was very God at the same time ..... 310</p> <p><b>LXXX.</b> What is meant by Gog and Magog; and how the the camp of the saints may be said to be compassed about in all the four quarters of the earth; and what that fire is that came down from heaven ..... 312</p> <p><b>LXXXI.</b> How non-commissioned men are those that do add unto the prophesy of this book of the Revelation, and to all the Scriptures; and how the plagues written in that book will be added unto them, for going before they were sent of God 318</p> <p><b>LXXXII.</b> How men are said to diminish, or take away from this book; and how he hath his part taken out of the book of life..... 321</p>

**A TRUE INTERPRETATION of the WITCH OF ENDOR, spoken of in the First Book of Samuel, xxviii. chap. beginning at the 11th verse.**

**SHEWING,**

- I. How she and all other Witches do beget or produce that familiar Spirit they deal with, and what a familiar Spirit is, and how those voices are procured, and shapes appear unto them, whereby the ignorant and unbelieving people are deceived by them.
  2. It is clearly made appear in this Treatise, that no spirit can be raised without its body, neither can any spirit assume any body after death; for if the spirit doth walk, the body must walk also.
  3. An interpretation of all those Scriptures, that doth seem as if Spirits might go out of men's bodies when they die, and subsist in some place or other without bodies.
- Lastly, Several other things needful for the mind of man to know, which whoever doth understand, it will be great satisfaction.

---

**THE NECK OF THE QUAKERS BROKEN, or cut in sunder by the two-edged sword of the Spirit which is put into my mouth.**

**LÓDOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

**CONTENTS.**

PAGE.	PAGE.
I. In a Letter to Edw. Bourne, a Quaker ..... 3	worth to Lodowicke Muggleton ..... 34
A Letter of Samuel Hooton and W. S to Lodowick Muggleton ..... 7	III. In Lodowicke Muggleton's Answer to Richard Farnes- worth's Letter ..... 40
II. In answer to a Letter of Samuel Hooton and W. S... 13	IV. In Lodowicke Muggleton's Reply to Richard Farnes- worth's printed Pamphlet .. 56
A Letter of Richard Farnes-	

**A LETTER** sent to **THOMAS TAYLOR**, Quaker, in the year 1664, in Answer to many blasphemous sayings of his in several pieces of paper, and in the margin of a Book. Amongst many of his wicked ignorant sayings, I have given an answer to some of the chief and main things of concernment for the reader to know : The particular heads are seven.

- I. That Christ could not make all things of nothing.
- II. That earth and Waters were eternal, and out of that matter God created all living creatures.
- III. That there was a place of residence for God to be in, when he created this world.
- IV. How all children are saved, though the seed of the serpent, if they die in their childhood.
- V. Of the difference between the fruit of the womb, and the fruits of the flesh ; and how they are two several trees, and two several fruits.
- VI. How the seed of faith, the elect seed, did all fall in Adam, and therefore made alive in Christ ; and how the reprobate seed did not fall in Adam, so not made alive in Christ ; and what it is that purifies the Quaker's hearts.
- VII. How Adam and Eve were not capable of any kind of death before their fall : and how their fall did procure but a temporal death to all the seed of Adam ; but the fall of the serpent did procure an eternal death to all his seed, who live to men and women's estates, and more especially to those that doth deny the person and body of Christ to be now living in heaven, above the stars, without a man, as all the speakers of the Quakers do.

---

**A LOOKING-GLASS** for **GEORGE FOX** the Quaker, and other Quakers ; wherein they may see themselves to be right Devils. In answer to **GEORGE FOX**, his Book, called *Something in Answer to Lodowicke Muggleton's Book*, which he calls, *The Qua-*

*ker's Neck Broken.* Wherein is set forth the ignorance and blindness of the Quaker's doctrine of Christ within them ; and that they cannot, nor doth not know the true meaning of the Scriptures, neither have they the gift of interpretation of Scripture, as will appear in those several heads set down in the next page following.

## CONTENTS.

PAGE.	PAGE.
CHAP. I.	
Of a catalogue of damned Quakers .....	1
II. Sheweth the ignorance and foolishness of George Fox ..	8
III. How the Quaker people are altogether ignorant of heavenly secrets, so become the greatest despisers of them	11
IV. A discovery of the Quaker's blindness, which cannot discern whether a man that preaches the Gospel ought to have his commission from Christ without him, or from a Christ within him.	13
V. Sheweth how ignorant and dark the Quaker's people are in the knowledge of the right devil. & of the serpent's seed	16
VI. How the soul of man is mortal, and doth die, yet Fox thinks it impossible to prove by Scripture .....	22
VII. How it was no lie to accuse the Quakers of sin and blasphemy .....	26
VIII. The right devil proved	26
IX. How the Quakers are mistaken in the flesh and bone of Christ .....	27
X. How God hath made the Witnesses of the Spirit judge in his stead.....	28
XI. Sheweth that the body of Christ's flesh and bone is distinct of itself, and not in the Quaker's bodies, neither are they Members of his body..	29
XII. Sheweth by Scripture how Christ dwelleth in his saints, and how it may be said they are flesh of his flesh, and bone of his bone	32
XIII. How Fox is proved a devil, because he cannot give a reason that he is no reprobate .....	37
XIV. An explanation how George Fox and other Quakers, may be said to appear before the judgment seat of Christ .....	38
XV. A further interpretation concerning the judgment seat of Christ .....	42

PAGE.	PAGE.		
XVI. How the sentence and curse hath subdued those witchcraft fits in the Quakers .....	44	essence .....	69
XVII. How spirits cannot assume what shapes they please neither can there appear any spirit without a body .....	47	XXVI. How men cannot worship God in spirit and truth, without bodies; and how Muggleton never was in the spirit of Solomon, nor never shall be .....	72
XVIII. How the true God is no bigger than the compass of a man, and no spirit without a body, as the Quakers doth vainly imagine .....	49	XXVII. A great stir the prophet Muggleton hath to keep the Quakers spirits out of Christ.....	77
XIX. How the Quakers may see themselves to be right devils .....	53	XXVIII. How Fox justifies the Magistrates persecuting of me in Derbyshire .....	79
XX. How the Quakers are more antichristian in their doctrine than the pope ....	54	XXIX. How the curse of Muggleton shall remain upon Fox to eternity .....	80
XXI. How the body of Christ's flesh & bone is distinct from the Quaker's bodies.....	56	XXX. How the curse and sentence of Muggleton shall be over, and upon the spirits of the Quakers to eternity....	81
XXII. That which killed the righteous and the just, it was the spirit of reason, the devil in man that always did it...	59	XXXI. How the law written in the Quakers hearts, is that Christ they could have spoken in, had they never seen letter of scripture nor man that professeth it.....	82
XXIII. A difference between reasonable and unreasonable men, and a further discovery that reason is the devil....	62	XXXII. How their confidence will fail them in the day of trouble .. .....	84
XXIV. How the soul of Christ died, & the ignorance of the Quakers discovered in the death of their own souls ..	67	XXXIII. How Fox shall see no other God or judge, but that sentence Reeve & Muggleton hath passed upon him	84
XXV. It is proved that Christ, the only God, is not in this world at all, in his person or		XXXIV. A reproof for Quakers for rejoicing in my sufferings, and being sorry the	



	PAGE.		PAGE.
magistrates did not punish me more than imprisonment....	86	phet and minister of Christ, hath power to open the book of conscience.....	94
XXXV. How it doth belong unto mortal men, that are chosen of God, to interpret scripture, & not unto Christ himself .....	90	In the last place, I shall say something as to the Quakers principle and practices	
XXXVI. How every true pro-		A letter to Sara Coppin, quaker	102
		Do. to Richard Chair, quaker	107

**THE ANSWER to WILLIAM PENN, Quaker, his Book, entitled, “*The New Witnesses proved old Hereticks.*”** Wherein he is proved to be an ignorant spatter-brained Quaker, who knows no more what the true God is, nor his secret Decrees, than one of his coach-horses doth, nor so much ; *for the Ox knoweth his owner & the Ass his master’s crib*, but Penn doth not know his Maker, as is manifest by the scriptures, which may inform the reader, if he mind the interpretation of scripture in the Discourse following.

- I. That God was in the form, image and likeness of man’s bodily shape, as well as his soul, from eternity.
- II. That the substance of earth and matter was an eternal, dark, senseless chaos, and that earth and matter was eternal in the original.
- III. That the soul of man is generated and begot by man and woman with the body, and are inseparable.
- IV. That the soul and body of man are both mortal, and doth die and go to dust until the resurrection.
- V. That to fulfil the prophecy of Esaias, God descended from heaven into the virgin’s womb, and transmuted his spiritual body into a pure natural body, and become a man child, even the child Jesus, Emanuel, God with us.
- VI. That God by his prerogative power, hath elected the seed of Adam to be saved, and hath pre-ordained the seed of the serpent, such as Penn the Quaker is, to be damned, without any other inducement, but his own prerogative will and pleasure.

VII. A reply to the discourse between Penn and me.

VIII. What is meant by the armour of God, the wilderness, and the wild beasts I fought with in the wilderness.

**AN ANSWER to ISAAC PENNINGTON, Esq. his Book entitled, ‘ Observations on some passages of Lodowicke Muggleton’s Interpretation of the 11th chapter of the Revelation’; also some passages of that Book of his, entitled, ‘ The Neck of the Quakers Broken;’ and in his Letter to Thomas Taylor.— Whereby it might appear what spirit the said Lodowicke Muggleton is of, and from what God his commission is; as by what authority his spirit is moved to write against the people called Quakers. Written to inform those that do not know the antichristian spirit of false teachers, in these our days.**

**By LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

END OF THE CONTENTS OF VOL II.

**THE CONTENTS OF VOL. III.**

**A STREAM from the TREE OF LIFE; or the Third Record vindicated—being the Copies of several Letters and Epistles wrote by the two last Witnesses of Jesus Christ; wherein Truth rides triumphant, and imagination is confounded.**

PAGE.	PAGE.
A COPY of a letter to W. Madgate, proving that God takes no immediate notice . . . . . 1	To Walter Bohenan on the same subject . . . . . 9

PAGE.	PAGE.		
To James Whitehead, answering six queries . . . . .	17	To Christopher Hill, containing his own, Thomas Martin, William Young, and Elizabeth Wyles's blessing. . . . .	63
To Colonel Phaire, concerning eating the flesh of devils; as also explaining the mustard grain, Luke xiii. 19. . . . .	25	To Alice Webb, containing the six principles, and her blessing . . . . .	64
To Edward Fewteril, concerning witchcraft . . . . .	30	To a friend concerning true and false preachers. . . . .	66
A discourse between John Reeve and Richard Leader wherein philosophy is confounded . . . . .	38	An epistle concerning spirits	69
To Thomas Tomkinson, relating, in part, the prophet's sufferings for declaring truth ..	48	To Isaac Pennington, Esq. concerning God's visibly appearing in flesh. . . . .	74
An Epistle to a Quaker, shewing the blindness of those people. . . . .	49	The death of Moses unfolded	80
An Epistle of the prophet Muggleton's, proving his power to give sentences; also explaining how the devil entered the herd of swine . . . . .	57	An epistle, proving Christ had inherent power to die and live again, without assistance from any in heaven, or on earth . . . . .	81
		To Ann Adams, shewing the peace of a pure life . . . . .	87

---

**SACRED REMAINS; or a DIVINE APPENDIX; being a Collection of several Treatises, Epistolary and Public, originally written above fifty years, by the Lord's last immediate Messenger, JOHN REEVE; and now after careful examination by the most correct Copies, communicated for the consolation and establishment of the Church of Christ, by their brethren, whose faith in these, and all other his irremovable Declarations, doth (and by divine protection will) remain unshaken to eternity.**

PAGE.	PAGE.
Queries sent to Mr. Sedgwick, by the Prophet John Reeve 1	J. Reeve's Epistle to his kind- man ..... 51
Mr. Sedgwick's Replies..... 3	What was from eternity..... 62
The Prophet's Answer to Mr. Sedgwick ..... 7	A general Treatise of the three Records or Dispensations .. 73
Of the one personal uncreated glory ..... 25	A cloud of unerring witnesses plainly proving there neither is nor ever was any other God but Christ Jesus the Lord.. 94.
The Prophet John Reeve's An- swer to a Letter sent him by Esquire Pennington ..... 36	Scriptures proving that Christ Jesus is the only God..... 97
John Reeve's Epistle sent to the Earl of Pembroke .. . 47	

---

**A BOOK of LETTERS, or SPIRITUAL EPISTLES:** being Copies of 168 Letters, written by the two last Prophets & Messengers of God, JOHN REEVE & LODOWICKE MUGGLETON; containing variety of spiritual Revelations, and deep Mysteries, manifesting to elect seed the prerogative power of a true Prophet; who by virtue of their commissions, did truly give blessings of life everlasting to those that believed their declarations; and to all despising Reprobates the curse or sentence of eternal damnation. Collected by the great pains of Alexander Dalmaine, the elder, a true believer of God's last commission of the Spirit; intended at first only for his own spiritual solace; but finding they increased to so great a volume, he leaves it to his posterity, that ages to come may rejoice in the comfortable view of so blessed and heavenly a treasure.

**SUPPLEMENT TO THE BOOK OF LETTERS;**  
 being the copies of twenty-three Letters, written by  
**JOHN REEVE AND LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

**THE ACTS OF THE WITNESSES OF THE  
 SPIRIT, in five Parts; by Lodowicke Muggleton,**  
 one of the two Witnesses, and true Prophets of the  
 only high, immortal glorious God, Christ Jesus; left  
 by him to be published after his death.

## CONTENTS.

	PAGE.	PAGE.
<b>CHAP. I.</b>		
The Prophet sheweth first, that Moses and the Prophets did record strange and wonderful things; as also their Revelations which we are bound to believe .....	1	conscience before they knew the truth .....
II. The Prophet makes a rehearsal of the Acts of the Apostles in the New Testament, and of the Lord Christ; and how that they were written for the comfort of the seed of faith: after which he enters upon the third Record, and shews the cause of his writing some of the most principal Acts of the Witness of the Spirit, under this third Record.....	3	IV. How the secret providence of God prevented the expectation of the prophet, in his choice of a wife, and in his desire of riches, of the prophet's zeal for the law, and a righteous life.....
III. Of the birth, parentage, & trade of the two witnesses, & how the Prophet's nature led them forth to all sobriety, hating drunkenness, and of their inclining to the principles of those called Puritans, and of their being persuaded from judging cases of		V. The prophet shews his care, his fear, and zeal in the law of God, and of the working of his thoughts, & height of the Puritan religion .....
		VI. After the prophet hath given a description of his marriage, of his wives, and of his children, from the twenty-sixth year of his life, to the thirty-eighth; he then shews the alteration of the religion in the Puritan people, and of confusion that was amongst them. ....
		VII. The prophet shews his great dissatisfaction and loss in religion, even almost to

PAGE.	PAGE
despair; yet in the conclusion resolves to hold his integrity, to do justly, and keep from actual sin, but mind religion no more, but left happiness and misery to God's disposal . . . . .	17
VIII. The prophet gives a description of John Tane, & John Robins, being counted greater than prophets, and sets forth their appearance and wonderful actions . . . .	10
IX. Of the prophet's application concerning these wonderful things, and of his qualification . . . . .	22
X. The prophet shews of a melancholy that came upon him and afterwards of two motions arising in him, and speak as two living voices . .	24
XI. The prophet's further reasoning in himself. how hardly God dealt with him; and of his reasoning against Adam; and shews how a contrary seed, or voice in him, repelled his argument	26
XII. The prophet raiseth arguments more, to give him some hope that he might escape hell; but another motion voice gave answer, which quite frustrated all his hopes again . . . . .	28
XIII. The prophet's submitting to God's prerogative power, immediately wrought in him peace and quietness of mind, even to all admiration in wisdom, and ravishing excellencies . . . . .	32
XIV. Of the time of the prophet's revelation; his satisfaction in it, and his resolution to sit still now, and be quiet from disputes about religion. Yet shews that providence ordered it otherwise. Of the Prophet Reeve's revelation of the raven and dove . . . . .	35
XV. Shewing how John Reeve's revelation gave him satisfaction, and full resolution to sit still and be quiet, never meddling about religion more, but contrary to the resolutions of them both, a little while after, were made the greatest medlers of religion of all the world . . . . .	38

THE END OF THE FIRST PART.

SECOND PART.

PAGE.	PAGE
CHAP. I. Of the commission given; the Prophet Muggleton's children	blessed by the Prophet Reeve, the great wisdom given unto Sarah Muggleton . . . . . 41

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>II. The transactions of the second morning; &amp; how Thomas Turner went with the Prophets to John Tane's, and of John Reeve's Message to him; and how John Tane and his design perished, and came to nothing..... 43.</p> <p>III. Of the transactions of the third morning; and of the message of the Prophet Reeve to John Robins ..... 45</p> <p>IV. When the transcendant Treatise was wrote, many people were more offended with the doctrine than the commission. Of the letter sent to the ministers, &amp; when. How the children mocked John Reeve, called him Prophet, Prophet, and followed him, flinging stones at him; and how a woman hearing this, followed the Prophet to his house, and was converted to the faith. Of sentence given upon one Penson, and its effects..... 48</p> <p>V. Of one Jeremiah Maunte, a great friend to this commission; and of a damned man and his fury; and how John Reeve entreated the people that he might lie down and expose himself to his fury, with the effects of that submission. And of one James Barker, his hypocrisy to get the blessing of John Reeve, and how he was cursed by Lodowicke Muggleton, with the effects of that curse ..... 51</p>	<p>VI. What the Ranter's God was. And how them and their God was damned by this commission. And of the resolution of three of the most desperate to curse the prophet Reeve and Muggleton's God ..... 56</p> <p>VII. Of the dispute with Mr. Leader, a New England merchant; and of the prophet's convincing him how that God had a body; and how God is worshipped in spirit and truth with bodies; and that there is no spirit without a body ..... 58</p> <p>VIII. Of one Mr. Cooper, a great disputant, and how convinced; and how a true ministry is known from a false. Of his conversion; and how he passed sentence of damnation upon fifteen of his companions; and of his trouble for so doing without commission; and of a minister's censuring him to be bewitched ..... 61</p> <p>IX. Of one captain Stasy, a friend to the two witnesses, and of their dispute with a minister, proving that God was in the form of man. And of the minister's blasphemy, and John Reeve's passing the sentence upon him, &amp; that he should never see any other God but that sentence; and how John Reeve was threatened with a warrant from Cromwell, or the council of state; &amp; how</p>

PAGE.	PAGE.
John replied, that if they despised as the priest had	done, that he would pronounce them damned. .... 64

THE END OF THE SECOND PART.

THIRD PART. °

PAGE.	PAGE.
I. Shewing how five men got a warrant from the Lord Mayor, and brought the two Witnesses before him: of their accusation: of their examination: and of their answer to it with boldness. . .	brought them in guilty; and of the Recorder's sentence upon them. And of several other transactions . . . . . 76
67	
II. Shewing John Reeve's answer to the Lord Mayor's questions, and John Reeve's question to the Mayor, what his God was, with the Mayor's answer; & John Reeve's replication to it. Of the two Witnesses commitment, to Newgate. . . . .	V. Of John Reeve's travelling to Maidstone in Kent, where he met with some enemies, and gave them the sentence; upon which they got a warrant against him. Of the notice he had and departed. Of his Treatise, called Joyful News from Heaven. After the writing of which he died
70	78
III. Shewing how the prisoners brought irons; required money of the two witnesses; they having none, took one of their cloaks for a pledge. How long they were prisoners; the boards were their bed. And of the wickedness of some of the prisoners, which had a design to have hanged them; and how providence preserved them. . . . .	VI. Of Laurence Claxton, what Books he wrote of his exalted pride; the Believers complain of him; the Prophet forbid him for writing any more. How he humbled himself. The Prophet forgave him. And of his death
72	80
IV. Of the two witnesses being brought to their trial. How John Reeve would not suffer the Mayor, a damned man, to speak; how the jury	VII. Shewing how the Prophet caused, 'The Divine Looking Glass,' to be re-printed. Of the Prophet's printing a book of the Interpretation of the xi. of the Revelations. And, the Quaker's Neck Broken. Of his Travels to Nottingham; and the transactions that passed there; & then to Chesterfield. . . . .
	82



PAGE.	PAGE.
VIII. The Prophet travels into Cambridgshire and Kent; and of his marriage to his third wife; and of his second journey into Derbyshire; & of his being brought before the Mayor of Chesterfield. Of his examination by the Priest; and of his commitment .....	86
IX. Shewing that the Prophet proved before the Priest, Mayor, and Aldermen, that Christ was the only God. The Priest made no replication against it, but fawning upon him with fine words, to ensnare him against the government. The Prophet's wisdom discovered it. Of his commitment .....	90
X. The Priest gave that character of the Prophet, of a wise and sober man. The Prophet gave the like character on Pendor. Of a dispute between the Prophet, and two of the officers of the town, &	the keeper of the prison, and the sheriff's men. The Prophet proves three Records on earth, to answer the three Records in heaven; all this in the gaol .....
	93
	XI. Shewing the interpretations of the two past Records on earth, of water & blood, being undeniably unfolded..
	96
	XII. The interpretation of the third Record on earth, the Record of the spirit, & who it is acted by .....
	99
	XIII. The Prophet's arraignment, and examined by the judge; and he required of the judge to take bail, the judge granted it. The Mayor Aldermen, & Recorder that committed him, saw their folly and madness, and were ashamed of themselves. How the Prophet had the love of all the prisoners. Of his printing of the whole book of the Revelations, &c.....
	103

THE END OF THE THIRD PART.

FOURTH PART.

PAGE.	PAGE.
I. The Prophet's travels into Kent. Of Judge Twisden; and of the Prophet's Letter to him. Of the increase of believers.....	106
II. Of one Captain Wildye, an honourable man. And of one Mrs. Cowlye, of her faith	and obedience of her husband, and of her son. a university scholar; and of his being convinced by the Prophet, both as to the ministry, law and physic.....
	109
	III. The Prophet's Answer to Thomas Loe's Letter. His

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>sentence, with the effects of it the Prophet's dispute with George Whitehead and Josiah Cole. With his sentence passed upon them both.... 115</p> <p>IV. Of Cole's being sick unto death immediately after the sentence of his testimony against the Prophet. Of his death; the Quaker's God described; with the nature of Reason, and the law that is written in it. Of William Pen's blasphemous letter to the Prophet ..... 121</p> <p>V. The answer of Lodowicke Muggleton to William Pen, Quaker; his proud, presumptuous &amp; blasphemous letter 126</p> <p>VI. Of the Prophet's travels in-</p>	<p>to Cambridge, Leicester, Nottingham, and Derbyshire, to visit friends there..... 130</p> <p>VII. The prophet's house searched for books. The searcher's civility. The prophet acknowledges their kindness, and after sent them a gratuity. A second search for books, where several were taken. Of a great rebellion that happened upon the prophet's absence ..... 133</p> <p>VIII The three first assertions answered .. ..... 138</p> <p>IX. The fourth, fifth and sixth assertions answered .... 224</p> <p>X. The seventh, eighth and ninth assertions answered.. 148</p>

THE END OF THE FOURTH PART.

FIFTH PART.

PAGE.	PAGE.
<p>I. Of one Sir John James's oppression of Widow Brunt, and of her death; the Prophet left her executor; and how he would not sell his birth-right, but arrested Sir John James's tenants. Of his great troubles and trials.. 153</p> <p>II. Of the bill of indictment, &amp; of the cruelty of the judges 157</p> <p>III. The counsel against the Prophet pleads with fear and</p>	<p>horror; the Prophet's counsel pleads, and through fear, did wrong his cause ..... 162</p> <p>IV. The Prophet is brought in guilty; of his sentence and judgment; with the nature of his sufferings..... 166</p> <p>V. Shewing how that the Prophet in a short time saw his desire (unto God) in part fulfilled..... 171</p>

	PAGE.		PAGE.
VI. Of the Prophet's deliverance out of prison. Of the price and value that was		made of him; the rewards to the two seeds at the last day	176

---

**A True Account of the Trial and Sufferings of Lodowicke Muggleton, one of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, left by our friend POWEL, who witnessed his trial and all his sufferings, therefore he gives a more full and particular account of the whole proceedings than the Prophet has left on record. [*See the end of Vol. III.*]**

FINIS.

A  
**S T R E A M**  
FROM THE  
***T R E E O F L I F E :***  
OR, THE  
**T H I R D R E C O R D**  
V I N D I C A T E D.  
BEING THE  
**COPIES OF SEVERAL LETTERS AND EPISTLES**

Wrote by the two last Witnesses of Jesus Christ.

WHEREIN

***TRUTH RIDES TRIUMPHANT AND IMAGINATION IS CONFOUNDED.***

---

---

These were not included in the Volume of **SPIRITUAL EPISTLES** because of the great expence.

---

---

Printed from the original Manuscript in the year of our Lord  
**M.DCC.LVIII.**

1. **PROPOSTA DI ATTIVITÀ** (descrizione dell'attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

2. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

3. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

4. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

5. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

6. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

7. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

8. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

9. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

10. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

11. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

12. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

13. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

14. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

15. **DESCRIZIONE DELL'ATTIVITÀ** (attività, obiettivi, destinatari, durata, luogo, risorse, ecc.)

## To all those that fear not the sudden appearing of JESUS CHRIST.

---

---

BRETHREN,

*IT is a great pleasure to the only true Church of Christ, to see so great a progress, in not only re-printing but also putting in print what never was before, things of the highest eternal consequences to the seed of faith, at a vast expence. It is surprising how it is so far accomplished, considering what a handful we are, and how few of that handful have substance sufficient to support so great an undertaking. Notwithstanding all this, love hath carried on the work, inso-much, that within these seven years, we have printed, besides this, The Interpretation of the Eleventh Chapter of the Revelations, The Divine Appendix, The Soul's Mortality, The Answer to William Penn, the volume of Spiritual Epistles, [never printed before], The Transcendent Spiritual Treatise, The Looking-Glass for George Fox, and The Neck of the Quakers Broken.*

*So there is nothing now scarce, except The Acts, and The Divine Looking Glass. And if we are preserved in the same love and harmony we are in at present, their printing will soon be effected also. For no other way can we serve God, than by making The Third Record on Earth public to his friend, the captive seed of faith. For a candle is not lighted to be put under a bushel; and what is done to his seed, he accounts it as done to himself.*

*So wishing love may increase in the Church, as without that no heavenly virtue can inhabit the soul, I subscribe myself an unmoveable believer of these glorious truths, which will remain unshaken to eternity.*

JOHN PEAT.

# THE CONTENTS.

---

	PAGE
A Copy of a Letter to W. Madgate, proving that God takes no immediate notice . . . . .	1
To Walter Bohenan, on the same subject . . . . .	9
To James Whitehead, answering six queries . . . . .	17
To Colonel Phaire, concerning eating the flesh of devils; as also explaining the mustard grain, Luke xiii. 19.	28
To Edward Fewterell, concerning witchcraft . . . . .	30
A discourse between John Reeve and Richard Leader, wherein philosophy is confounded . . . . .	38
To Thomas Tomkinson, relating, in part, the Prophet's sufferings for declaring truth . . . . .	48
An Epistle to a Quaker, showing the blindness of those people . . . . .	49
An Epistle of the Prophet Muggleton's, proving his power to give sentences; also explaining how the devil entered into the herd of swine . . . . .	57
To Christopher Hill, containing his own, Thomas Martin, William Young, and Elizabeth Wyles's blessings . . . . .	63
To Alice Webb, containing the Six Principles, and her blessing . . . . .	64
To a Friend, concerning true and false preachers . . . . .	66
An Epistle concerning Spirits . . . . .	69
To Isaac Pennington, Esq. concerning God's visible appearing in flesh . . . . .	74
The death of Moses unfolded . . . . .	80
An Epistle, proving Christ had inherent power to die and live again, without assistance from any in heaven or on earth . . . . .	81
To Ann Adams, showing the peace of a pure life . . . . .	87

---

---

*Here followeth the Copies of several LETTERS and EPISTLES, taken from the original Manuscript, for the further Consolation of the Elect.*

*The Prophet Muggleton's EPISTLE to the Believers of the Commission, touching the Rebellion occasioned by the nine Assertions.*

**A**ND now I shall speak a few Words unto him, and the rest of Believers, as followeth :  
And because one of the Conspirators in Rebellion hath repented of his Rebellion, and asked Forgiveness before it was too late, and I forgave him his Trespas against me, and against God ; (namely, *Thomas Burton.*) He did well to agree with his Adversary while he was in the Way, for the Prophet is an Adversary to all Rebels against God.

And this I would have you to know, though it be now too late, that Obedience is better than Sacrifice ; that is, Obedience to the Prophet is better than all the legal Righteousness you have performed between Man and Man all your Days ; yet this ought to be done, but not to leave the other undone. And this you may know, that Rebellion is as the Sin of Witchcraft, for Rebellion against the Prophet is Rebellion against God ; for when King *Saul* rebelled against the Prophet *Samuel's* Words, he rebelled against God, for it was the Prophet *Samuel* that gave the King a Command, and it was he that reproved the King for his Disobedience and Rebellion,



for God never spake to him, nor never gave Judgment upon him, it was the Prophet only. Now ought not King *Saul* to have minded the Prophet only? But *Saul* minded God only, as you have done, and rejected the Prophet *Samuel*; and because he minded God only, in that he thought to please God better by offering up the best of the Cattle in Sacrifice to God, he thought it was better to mind God than the Prophet's Words: But how did God reject him for disobeying the Prophet? And his Sacrifice was rejected also. Now had not *Saul* better have minded the Prophet only? then would it have been well with him; but he minded God only, and disobeyed the Prophet, and rebelled against his Command. What a woful Effect did fall upon him! and so it will upon all Rebels against Prophets. Thus it is with Men that think themselves wiser and more righteous than their Fathers; for whosoever disobeys a true Prophet, disobeys God, and it is accounted so of God; therefore it is good for Men to mind the Prophet only, and pin their Faith upon the Prophet's Sleeve, else there can be no Peace nor Safety, because no Man can come unto God to reason or dispute with him but by his Prophet only. This hath been the Way God hath walked in all Ages; and now I being the last Prophet of all, God hath put me in his Place here upon Earth, and hath raised me up as he did that good Man *Joseph*, *Genesis* the last, the 19th Verse, who said unto his Brethren, *Fear not, I am in the Place of God*; and Verse 21, *Now therefore fear you not, I will nourish you; and he comforted them, and spake kindly unto them.*

So God hath raised me up to be his last Prophet, and hath set me in the Place of God, to nourish his People, who have believed his Prophet's Report, with spiritual and heavenly Knowledge: For true Prophets, true Apostles, true Ministers, have made Saints in all Ages; so that, without these, no Saints at all; they may be elect Vessels, but not Saints; for no Man or Woman can properly be said to be a Saint, except they come actually to believe in a true Prophet, true Apostle, or true Minister of *Christ*.

And further I say, that whoever doth not act well, by that Law written in his Heart, and doth not stand in Awe of that,  
and

and fear to offend that Law of Conscience, as if God himself did stand by, and take notice of all his Actions; therefore he doth well, because God's Eye is over him, else not. I say, all his well-doing is but Eye-service, and respected of God no more than the cutting off a Dog's Neck. And that Man is in the Depth of Darknes, who will do nothing that is good, except God doth take notice of him, to reward him for every good Deed he doth; but if he doth Evil, then he desireth God to take no notice of it, but blot it out of his Remembrance, as if God were beholden to Man to do well, when there is a Blessing in the Deed doing, and a Curse in evil-doing. But this I say, if there were no God to reward the Good, nor to punish the Evil, yet could not I do any otherwise than I do; for I do well, not because I expect any Reward from God, or refrain from Evil, because God will punish me, or that he doth mind me in it; but I do well to please that Law written in my Heart, so that I might not be accused by that Law in my Conscience, as God hath placed for his Watchman, to tell me when I do well: So am I justified by Faith in God, in my own Conscience, and being not condemned by the Law written in my Heart, I have Boldness to the Throne of Grace. Neither do I refrain from Evil for fear of God's Person seeing me, and he seeing me will punish me; but I refrain from Evil, because the Law written in my Heart seeth all my Doings, and that Watchman God hath set there to watch me, will tell God of all my Doings; so that God need not trouble himself to watch over every Man's Actions himself, for he hath placed his Law a Watchman in every Man and Woman, to give notice of all their Doings, whether good or evil.

Thus, in the Original, God taketh notice by his Law, written in every Man's Heart, both of Saint and Devil; and no otherwise doth God mind to take notice of his Saints in particular at all. Not that I do own this Law written in Man's Heart to be the very God, as the Quakers do; but God is a distinct Person of himself, and distinct from this Law written in Man's Heart. And in this Sense, God may be said to take no notice of his Saints, nor doth not mind them at all.

True Believers are my Brethren and Sisters, and the Prophet hath spoken kindly unto them, and hath nourished their Souls with Bread of Life, as *Moses*, he hath fed them with heavenly Manna; also the Prophet hath been like *John Baptist*, a burning shining Light in this last Age, as *John Baptist* was in his Time; a shining Light that hath discovered the Darknes in all the World, for it is Light that discovereth Darknes; and hath not the Prophet enlightned the Understandings of many, that in Light they see Light? Hath not the Prophet fed them with Bread of Life? He hath given them the Flesh of God to eat, he hath given them Water of Life to drink, even the Blood of God to drink, to satisfy their thirsty Souls; also, he hath brought them to the Knowledge of the true God, his Form and Nature; he hath brought them to feed upon the Flesh of God, and to drink his Blood by Faith, whereby their Souls have never hungered nor thirsted more after the Forgiveness of Sins or Satisfaction of Mind as to Things of Eternity; for who hath fed the People with the Knowledge of God, the Knowledge of the right Devil, the Knowledge of Scripture, and all other heavenly Secrets which are hid from all the People in the World, besides? Hath not the Prophet taken the People by the Hand, and pulled them out from the Spirit of Bondage, which kept them under Fear, and hath pulled them out from under the Task-masters of Superstition in *Egypt*? The Prophet hath led them through the Wilderness of their Minds, and hath brought them into the Paradise of Peace, and hath shewed them where the Tree of Life stood in the Midst of the heavenly *Canaan* above the Stars, and many of them have stretched forth the Hand of Faith, and have taken of the Tree of Life, and eat and live for ever, and so are set down at Rest there. And doth not all the People in the World else perish for Want of Knowledge, but those few who are led and guided by the Prophet? He hath blessed many of them, and hath led them into the Way of Peace, a strait and narrow Way, that few can find; and when they have wanted Comfort of Mind, he hath comforted them; and when they have been weak in Knowledge, he hath strengthened them; and when any of their Brethren have been too strong one for another, he would  
not

not suffer the Strong to trample upon the Weak and Feeble, but would lift him up, and uphold him with his own Knowledge, so that no People under the Sun live better for the Generality than those People who are obedient unto the Prophet, or under him. Hath the Prophet been a Burthen, or oppressive to any of the Faith, let them speak, and he will restore them two-fold; or hath he favoured the Rich, or oppressed the Poor; nay, hath he not forced the Rich to help the Poor? Nay, the Yoke laid upon the Neck of these People by the Prophet is easier and better, both spiritual and temporal, than the Yoke of any other People whatsoever.

And now I shall speak unto you in particular, and ask the Reason why you rebelled against me. What Cause did I give you to rebel? Were you offended at my Words? And because I did bear with many Weaknesses of some of your Brethren in the Faith, and had Compassion on them, and would not suffer them to be so much oppressed in Spirit for the Guilt of their own Sins, and judged and condemned by their own Brethren in the same Faith, because they were of corrupt Natures, so doth God himself bear with corrupt Natures; the Prophet must bear with corrupt Natures, as well as with pure uncorrupt Natures, though you cannot, for Prophets are not sure that all uncorrupt Natures will believe them; so that if a Prophet hath not Power to uphold some corrupt Natures that believe him, to what Purpose then should God send him? And will you find Fault with the Prophet for being merciful to corrupt-natured Men, whose Nature is more corrupt than your's? Yet the Prophet hath upheld you these many Years. You may remember when you came acquainted with me first, that there was some Difference between *Claxton* and you. *Claxton* was high in Knowledge at that Time, and yourself weak and low in Knowledge at that Time, and his Knowledge and Faith was over you, and above you, and did keep you under him, though his wicked Life had been worse than your's, yet your legal Righteousness between Man and Man could not have delivered you from his Power, had not the Prophet kept him down; and when you made your Complaint to me I strengthened you against him, and upon your Request I blessed you, and you became in my Favour; and when

when any spoke against your wrathful Nature, Words and Actions, I pleaded for you, and upheld you against them ; also I led you in a Way which you knew not, and in a Path which was not known to any but myself, even the Way and Path of Peace ; I brought you into the Assembly of Saints, for there is no true Saints on Earth at this Day but those that are under the Prophet ; I brought you with the rest of the Saints from under *Mount Sinai*, that is, from being under that fiery Law written in your Hearts ; I led you by your Hands through the Wilderness of your Minds ; I led you unto *Mount Sion*, the City of the living God ; I shewed you the holy Hill of *Sion* ; the Habitation of the holy God is *Mount Sion*, the City of the Living, and the holy Hill of *Sion* signify the holy God himself, from whence Prophets, Apostles and Saints receive their most holy Faith, Revelation and Prophecies in the Original ; also I brought you to the Spirits of just Men made perfect, as *Noah*, a Preacher of Righteousness by Faith, he built an Ark, and *Lot* by Faith received two Angels, therefore called righteous *Lot* ; *Abraham* by Faith would have offered up his Son, therefore called the Father of the Faithful ; *Isaac* and *Jacob*, *Moses*, the Prophets, *David*, the Apostles, these were all just Men, made perfect by Faith, yet several of these just Men, whose Spirits were made perfect by Faith, they committed Evil and Sin after the Blessing was given of God ; as, *Noah* he was drunken with Wine, and discovered his Nakedness ; *Lot* was drunken with Wine, and committed Incest with his two Daughters ; *Abraham* told a Lie, because of his Wife ; *Jacob* lied to his Father, when he stole the Blessing ; *David*, a Man according to God's own Heart, was guilty of Murder and Adultery ; *Peter*, the Rock upon whom *Christ* built his Church, plaid the Hypocrite, and dissembled, when he circumcised *Timothy* ; *Paul* dissembled, and plaid the Hypocrite, when he pretended a Vow, and shaved the four Men's Heads. These, and several other just Men, whose Spirits were made perfect by Faith, committed Evil, after the Blessing was given them of God ; but their Faith never failed, and should not he uphold them that blessed them ? But this Prophet is blamed for upholding smaller Sinners than some of those that believe.

Now if these Men's Spirits were made perfect by Faith, and so said to be the Spirits of just Men made perfect, so are all true Believers of this Commission of the Spirit, whose Faith holds out to the End, are counted of God the Spirits of just Men made perfect by Faith, and so may be said to come unto the Spirits of just Men made perfect. Also I led you into the Paradise of Peace, where the Thief went that Day he believed in *Christ*: I brought you, with the Rest of Believers, to the Tree of Life, which stood in the Midst of *Paradise*; you said you saw it, and you liked it well; and if you had stretched forth the Hand of Faith as others did, and have taken and eat of the Tree of Life, and have lived for ever, then had you not rebelled. I shewed you the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, you saw it, and understood what you saw; I shewed you the *New Jerusalem*, that came down from Heaven, and that is said to be four-square, the Length and Breadth are equal. The *New Jerusalem* that came down from Heaven, it was when God became Flesh in the Virgin's Womb, and its being four-square, the Length and Breadth equal; it was when *Christ* was nailed to the Cross, his Arms being spread abroad were equal with his Head and Feet, and so may be said to be four-square, and so is every perfect Man: And so the *New Jerusalem* that came down from Heaven, the Person of *Christ*, may be said to be four-square, the Length and Breadth equal. Likewise I brought you to an innumerable Company of Angels, I shewed you their Forms and Natures. These Things I did for you, in the spiritual, and many more; and the Prophet hath not been the least beneficial to you, in the temporal; I have not been your Hindrance, but your Furtherance, in what lay in my Power; I never was beholden to you in any temporal Matters, and did not satisfy you for what you did. And when several Believers did complain of your rude Speeches, your wrathful Words, your merciless Judgment, I have pleaded for you against them, and have upheld your corrupt Nature, else you would have been forsaken of several Believers before now; but those I have done most for, and have been the least beholden unto, have lift up their Heel against me, so that you have been offended

offended against me, and rebelled against me without a Cause, which hath caused you to be cast out of my Sight, and out of God's Sight, as *Cain* was, and out of the Society of the Saints. And now, may all your own evil Words and desperate Wishes which you have uttered, come upon your own Head.

*First*, You say, if *Claxton* were saved, you would be damned ; how do you limit God's Mercy to your Wrath ?

*Secondly*, You say, that if God did not take notice of you, then would you had been a Toad, a Dog, or a Serpent, or any Thing but a Man.

These are desperate Words, and it will be a Wonder if you have not Cause indeed, to wish yourself a Toad, Dog, or Serpent, rather than a Man.

*Thirdly*, You call the Prophet, Devil ; *Peter* might as well have called *Christ* Devil, for calling him Sathan ; for *Peter's* Offence was out of Love and Pity to *Christ*, but your Offence to me, was out of Pride and Rebellion ; for I was your Master and Judge, as *Christ* was *Peter's*.

*Fourthly*, You slighted the Blessing from the Prophet, and in a rude and uncivil Language, said, you cared not a Farth for it.

*Fifthly*, When *Burton* bid you burn the Assertions, and humble yourself to the Prophet, as he did, you said you would perish first.

*Sixthly*, You despised the Government of the Commission of the Spirit, saying, it is poorly and weakly managed.

These are desperate Words against God, and against the Prophet, and high Rebellion ; I do not think it could be paralleled, not by all the Prophets and Apostles, since the World began. And if this Rebellion be forgiven, then let it be said, that this last Prophet and Witness of the Spirit had  
Power

Power to do more than any Prophet or Apostle ever did in the Time of their Commissions.

*Written by*

LODOWICK MUGGLETON,

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory. Amen. In the Year 1671.*

*A LETTER written by the Messenger of God, Lodowick Muggleton, to Walter Bohenan, of Condemnation for Apostacy, January 23, 1671.*

*Walter Bohenan,*

**T**HIS is to let you know, that I have seen three of your rebellious Letters, for which Cause I was not willing that any Rebel should see the Answer to those Assertions laid down by *William Medgate*, that grand Rebel. Your Letters are full of Nonsense, and not good *English*; and you have laid down the Assertions false Lies, and not true. Those nine wrote by *Medgate* were well laid down, and I own them all to be true as they are laid down; and I have given an Answer to them all, but no Rebel shall see them if I can help it.

But it seems that you have undertaken, not only to answer the Assertions, but to give Judgment upon them; and not only so, but you vapour and threaten me, that you will force me to give Answer to them, as if so be you were commissioned to judge me. I shall not speak of many of your wicked, nonsensical, rebellious Words; it would be too tedious, only these few:

*First, You say you do believe that I, and all the Devils in the World, cannot hurt you; for my Power, you say, you*



are not afraid of it, no more than of a Child of one Day old.

*Secondly*, You say, That if I do give Sentence upon you before I have answered the Assertions, you say you will force me to it, if you and I do live in *England*; and that you will bring me on the Stage. This is *Judas* like.

*Thirdly*, You say, You have more Ground to be offended with me than I have to be offended with you: For, say you, I do affirm that you are fallen from the Truth, and have gone about to overthrow *John Reeve*, and have contradicted myself: This is Devil like, to judge his Lord and Master.

*Fourthly*, You, say you, will make me believe a Lie, and more than one, but many Lies, contrary to all the Prophets and *John Reeve's* Writings. Here is the Mark of a Reprobate, to charge his Teacher with Lies from dead Men's Writings; these are but a few of the Fruits of your Rebellion, but there is enough to condemn one Rebel to Eternity, if there were no more; but this I shall say unto you, that you have shewed yourself a right *Scotchman*, a dissembling false-hearted Man, of the *Scottish* Nature. And it would be a rare Thing to meet with a true-hearted *Scotch-Man* or *Woman*, that is upright in Heart, either to God or Man: For I have been in this Commission almost twenty Years, and I never knew but two, one a *Scotchman*, and a *Scotch-Woman*, that made a Profession of this Faith, and they proved both false-hearted, both to God and Man; for the Woman did fall from *John Reeve* in his Time, for which he branded her with a Title of false-hearted *Scot*, and you, the Man, is fallen from that Faith, you once had in me, to Rebellion, for which I shall brand you with the Mark of Reprobation, for you have shewed yourself a Reprobate, a false-hearted Man, a Cast-away. Did you not say, that you did believe that I had Power to give a Blessing unto you of eternal Happiness, else you would not have asked it of me.

And upon your Request, saying you did believe that I had such Power, I gave you a Blessing, and you continued in my Favour, and in the Favour of many Believers, for a While; but

but now you have despised the Blessing as *Esau* did his Birthright ; for the Blessing of a Prophet is a good Birthright, if it be not despised ; but you have despised and disowned it, and forsaken the Blessing of a living Prophet, and do cleave unto dead Men's Words, and to the Doctrine of those that are dead. *Jobn Reeve* is dead, and those that wrote the Scriptures are dead, but he that God hath preserved alive, to be the Judge of *Jobn Reeve's* Writings, and Judge of the Writings of the Prophets and Apostles, which you never knew, neither did you ever receive any Light or Knowledge from them, but what you received from me ; yet have you lift up yourself in Rebellion against me, and have despised the Blessing, therefore you shall have the Curse of a Prophet in the room of it, and see, if that will stick more close unto you ; for this I say, you shall never cast that off, as you have done the Blessing, but it shall remain upon your Spirit to Eternity ; for your Condition is much like unto King *Saul's* : The good Spirit of the Lord departed from him, and an evil Spirit was sent from the Lord to him ; that is, while he kept in Obedience to the Prophet *Samuel*, the good Spirit of Peace from the Lord in his Seed gave him Peace of Conscience ; but his Rebellion and Disobedience to the Prophet *Samuel*, caused that Peace of Conscience to depart from him ; and the evil Spirit in the Seed of Reason, of Rebellion, and Disobedience, was sent unto him, and that became a Worm in his Conscience, that never dies, and a Fire in his Conscience, that will never be quenched.

This will be your Condition for your Rebellion and Disobedience unto me ; for while you were kept in Obedience unto me, the Prophet of the Lord, the good Spirit of the Lord in your Seed, that believed in his Prophet, it preserved you in Peace of Conscience, in that I gave you the Blessing ; but now, through your Disobedience to the Prophet of the Lord, and Rebellion against God, for it is all one, if God himself were in my Place, you would say as much to him as you do to me ; but the good Spirit of the Lord is departed from you, and an evil Spirit, from the Lord, is sent unto you, even the Fruit of your Disobedience and Rebellion, which is the Curse of God, you being rejected of God and of his Prophet, and

cast out from the Society of the Faithful for ever ; so that the Worm of Rebellion will never die in your Conscience, nor the Fire of Hell will never be quenched in you ; so that you shall know this Torment is for nothing but your Disobedience and Rebellion against the Prophet.

And as for your vapouring that I, nor all the Devils in the World, cannot hurt you, and that my Power is no more feared by you than a Child of a Day old, these Words you have learned of *Medgate*, that Dragon Devil, who hath roared out his Rebellion like a mad Bull ; and you have learned of him to call the Prophet of the Lord Devil, who was his Lord and Master, and yours also. But for all your Vapour, you shall find that my Power shall reach you wherever you go ; if you ascend up to Heaven in your Imagination, my Faith and Authority shall pull you down from thence ; and if you go down into Hell, I shall find you out there, and your Act of Rebellion shall be executed, and my Judgment shall be executed upon you there. And if you go to the uttermost Parts of the Earth, you shall not flie from that Curse that shall follow you ; so that you shall know that the most High hath chosen me, and rejected you. And as for your threatening me that you will force me to answer the Assertions, if you and I live in *England*, and that you will bring me upon the Stage, do you not shew yourself a *Cain* and *Judas* Devil ; you would both betray your Lord and Master, as *Judas* did his, and kill, as *Cain* did his Brother, because he was accepted, and *Cain* rejected. So, because God hath accepted of me, and hath set me in his Place, and hath rejected you, therefore you would betray me, to bring me upon the Stage. Your evil Spirit is willing, I perceive, but your Power is weak. And will you dare to talk of bringing a Man upon the Stage, that is free-born, and free by Service, by you, that are a Foreigner, a Stranger, and Alien, one that is by Act of Parliament counted a Vagabond, a Runagate, a Fugitive in a Nation which is not your own, who is not free-born, nor free by Redemption ; yet you will dare to bring me upon the Stage, because I condemn you for your Rebellion. And this I say, if I were treacherous in Heart, as you are, I would quickly cause you to be removed from *Ware*, if not out of *England* ; but I shall let that pass ;  
and

and I would fain know how you can force me to let you see the Answer to the Assertions, or to bring me upon the Stage ; you may do what you can now, I provoke you to it, but here you may see the Pride and Presumption against your own Soul, in that you have lifted yourself up against your Lord and Master.

And whereas you say and affirm that I am fallen from the Truth, is not this the Word of a Rebel, that learned and was taught the Way of Truth, and what Truth is ; neither had you any Light or Truth at all, but what you received from me, your Lord and Master ; and yet the Spirit of Rebellion in you is grown so wise to judge your Master that taught you, to be fallen from Truth, so that you know how to teach your Master better than he can teach you. But how can I expect any better from the Spirit of Rebellion ? Also you say, I would make you believe Lies : Who made you a Judge, what is a Lie, and what is Truth ? You say, I go about to overthrow *John Reeve*, and that I would make you believe many Lies, contrary to all the Prophets and *John Reeve's* Writings :

To this I say, What have you to do with *John Reeve's* Writings, now he is dead ? Neither have you to do with the Prophets nor Apostles Writings ; they are all given into my Hands, that is alive, and you ought all to be taught of me that am alive, or else you cannot be taught of God. And whereas you say, I contradict *John Reeve* :

To this I say, I have Power so to do, and I had Power so to do when he was alive, and did contradict him in some Things, when he was alive ; and *John Reeve* wrote some Things that was Error to me, and Error in itself, which I did oppose him in to his Face, and he could not deny it. And yet notwithstanding *John Reeve* was infallible, and did write by an unerring Spirit. This will seem a Riddle, except it be unfolded thus : As to the doctrinal Part contained in our Writings, the six Principles were written by an unerring and infallible Spirit in *John Reeve*, and the Interpretation of Scripture written by him was infallible ; but *John Reeve's* Experience and Apprehension of God's taking immediate Notice of every Man was Error ; and that God did supply every Man  
and

and Woman immediately from his own Person, this was Error in *John Reeve's* Judgment and Experience, as I did prove to his Face ; but the Things being written before, and they were of no Consequence as to eternal Happiness, they were let pass. Besides none can judge of a Prophet's Writing or Judgment, but he that is equal in Power and Judgment with him. Being chosen of God, I had Power to contradict him in his Judgment ; and though it was Error, it would have been Rebellion in any Believer to do as I did. And now, I being the last Liver, it is Rebellion in you to call any Thing Lies or Error that I do justify to be true ; for none is to call me to an Account, or to resist my Judgment in spiritual Things or Matters, but God only. And I am sure he hath and will justify me in what I have done, and in what I do of this Nature. Besides, where Men are chosen equal in Power, they may contradict one the other in some Things, and yet both infallible Men in Doctrine, but not in Judgment and Practice.

As for Example, *Peter* was an infallible Man, and did write by an infallible and unerring Spirit, as to the Doctrine of *Christ*, yet he erred in his Judgment and Practice, and circumcised *Timothy*, contrary to his Commission from *Christ* ; and it was a great Error in *Peter*, and *Paul* being an Apostle, and in equal Power, withstood him to his Face, and reprov'd him of Error and Dissimulation. Now should any Believer of *Peter's* Doctrine have said to *Peter*, thou art a Liar, and no true Apostle, nor hath not an infallible Spirit, but art in Error, if this should have been spoken by any private Believer, as it was by *Paul*, who was equal in Power, I would not have been in that Believer's Condition for all the World.

Again : Did not *Paul* write by an infallible Spirit ? As to the Doctrine of *Christ*, *Peter* and he did agree in that ; but *Paul* committed an Error in his Judgment and Practice, when he pretended a Vow ; this was a great Error in him, it had like to have cost him his Life. And should any dare to say that he wrote his Epistles by an erring lying Spirit ? So likewise *Paul* and *James* do absolutely contradict one another : *Paul* saith, *Rom. iii. 28. You see then by Works a Man is justified, and not by Faith only.* Here is a quite Contradiction to *Paul*. And should any Believer, in their Time, dare to say,

that either of these did write Error and Lies, and that they were not infallible Men, in their Doctrine of *Christ*, because they differed in Judgment, in Point of Faith and Works; this was much like *John Reeve's* believing God did take notice of every particular Man, and my Judgment that God did not.

Now shall any dare to say, that either of us are Liars, because we differ in Judgment in some Things? Besides, this is a common Thing in the Scripture, for Prophets and Apostles to differ in Judgment and Practice, but not in Doctrine; as the four Evangelists, they contradict one another very oft, and the Words of *Christ* himself contradict one the other, in many Places, which would be too tedious to name now. Now because *Christ's* Words do contradict one the other, shall any dare to say he spake Lies, and taught Error, and that which he spake was contrary to all Truth, or that he was not a true *Christ*? None but Devils did say so, when he was upon the Earth. And should any, in the Apostles, *Matthew, Mark, Luke,* and *John's* Time, dare to say that any of them wrote Lies and Errors, because they contradicted one another, in point of Judgment and Experience? None but Devils did find Fault and cavil with them, when they were alive. And so it is now, with *John Reeve* and me; none but Devils would have made a Faction and Disturbance amongst the Believers, about *John Reeve's* writing of Error; for this I must tell you, that no Man upon Earth is to judge what is infallible, and what is not, but the Prophet only that is alive; and if Men will not take Things upon his Words and Judgment, whoever refuseth it upon his bare Word, will perish to Eternity; therefore the Spirit of Rebellion hath deceived you, and made you forsake the Prophet that is alive, and to cleave unto *John Reeve*, that is dead, and to trust to the Scriptures, that were never spoken to you, nor given unto you; but those People they were spoken unto, did receive Benefit by them, if they did believe in Time, when that Faith was in Being. But *John Reeve's* Writings, nor the Scripture, will do you no good, now you have rebelled against the Prophet that is alive; neither will that Faith in them deliver you at all from those eternal Torments, neither will those dead Prophets deliver you from

from your Rebellion, nor help you to the Knowledge of Truth, now they are all dead ; but this live Prophet shall torment you, and those dead ones shall not deliver you from my Power.

And as you have walked in the Steps of *Korab*, *Dathan* and *Abiram*, those notable Rebels, who rebelled against *Moses* and *Aaron* : And what was the Fruits of their Rebellion ? Did not *Moses*, the Prophet of the Lord, cause the Ground to open and swallow them up alive. And this you shall know, though I cannot cause the Earth to open its Mouth as *Moses* did, yet this I can do, by my Commission of the Spirit, I can open Hell's Mouth, and that shall swallow you up alive, and keep you there eternally, where your Worm of Conscience shall never die, and the Fire of Hell shall never go out, that you may know to your endless Pain and Shame, that you rebelled and forsook the Blessing of a true Prophet alive upon Earth at this Day. And for all your Pride, Presumption, and Vapouring, lifting yourself up against the Lord's anointed chosen Prophet. And it will be a Wonder, if God's Vengeance doth not make you exemplary in this World, to be a Fugitive and Vagabond upon the Face of the Earth before you die, besides your Damnation hereafter ; for Sins of this Nature are punished with a greater Punishment than any other Sin whatsoever, but Murder ; and it would have been good for you and *Medgate*, if you had never been born. Therefore, in Obedience to my Commission, for this your Wickedness, in falling from the Faith you once had in the Prophet, now alive, to Rebellion against him and against God, and for many base, proud presumptuous Speeches in your Letters, I do pronounce you cursed and damned, in Soul and Body, from the Presence of God, Elect Men and Angels, to Eternity. And now do you see whether God will take Notice of you, to deliver you, or whether he will own you or me ; or whether your Faith be stronger than mine ; or whether you have declared Truth or I ; neither shall any of this Faith eat or drink with you, or trade any more with you, if I can help it ; for you are cast out of God's Sight for ever, and cast out of the Prophet's Sight, and cast out of the Assembly, or the Society of the Believers, for ever ; and now you may seek new Acquaintance

tance in the World, and see if you can find a better Sort of People than those you find Fault with. And you need not fear as *Cain* did, that every one that meets you will kill you ; but your own evil deceitful Heart to your Principles, and rejected Spirit, may meet your Conscience, and kill the Peace of it.

*Written by*

January 23, 1671.

LUDOWICK MUGGLETON.

A COPY of a LETTER written by the  
*Prophet* Lodowick Muggleton, to Mr.  
 James Whitehead of Braintree in Essex,  
 bearing Date June 13, 1682.

*Loving Friend in the true Faith,* James Whitehead,

I Received a Letter as from you, but I suppose not of your Hand-writing nor inditing ; but I perceive you do own it as your's by the Direction of it, and your Name being at the latter End of your Letter, being your own Hand-writing, wherein your Desire and Request is, That I would answer those six Queries you have laid down, as followeth.

*Query 1.* Whether there be such an Estate attainable in this Life, that a Man may be certainly assured of eternal Life on the other Side of Death ?

*Answer.* To this I say, That the Scripture is full to prove, that the Fathers of Old, as *Moses* and the Prophets do declare, and there was such an Estate attainable of the full Assurance of their eternal Happiness in the Kingdom of Glory after Death, even while they were in this mortal Life ; else how could

D

*Abraham,*



*Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob* have blessed their Children? Shall any Man imagine, that their Blessing did extend no further than the Things of this Life? Or shall any Man think, that those they blessed had not the Assurance of eternal Life in themselves?

As for Example, Christ said when on Earth, *Whoever believeth in me shall not perish, but have everlasting Life abiding in him.* So that, if Christ, when on Earth, was assured of his own eternal Life and Glory after his Resurrection, when he had passed through this first Death, I say the very same Assurance was attained unto in this Life in every true Believer in that Commission, who continue stedfast to the End.

For this you must understand, that those Men God hath chosen, and hath given Power to bless and curse, must needs have Assurance of eternal Life in themselves, else they could not give a Blessing of eternal Life to those that believe them: So that Person that doth truly believe hath the same Assurance of eternal Life abiding in himself, as he hath that gave the Blessing, else what Peace and Satisfaction can any Person have in this Life; and if this Peace and Assurance be not attainable in this Life or in this World, it will never be attained to in the Life to come; but I know that you and many others have attained the Blessing and the Assurance of everlasting Life in yourselves now in this present World, which will endure to Eternity.

*Query 2.* If attainable, whether a Man having once attained it, can finally fall away, and be reduced to a State of Damnation?

*Answer.* That if a Man hath attained the Assurance of eternal Salvation, and that it doth abide in himself, he cannot finally fall away, nor be reduced to a State of Damnation; but if a Man do attain to the Assurance of eternal Salvation in his Head and in his Tongue only, such a one may finally fall away, and be reduced to a State of Damnation. Why? because this Assurance of eternal Life did not abide in him, that is, it did not sink down into his Heart, it remained in his Head and Tongue only, so that it taketh no Root in the Heart; so that the Assurance of eternal Life in such Men it springeth

springeth up, and maketh a fair Shew quickly; but a little Opposition causeth it to wither, and finally to fall away, and be reduced to a State of Damnation.

This I have had Experience of, by some Persons you know, for he that hath attained the Assurance of eternal Life after Death, abiding in his Heart; then it is in himself; for it is said, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, with all thy Soul, with all thy Strength*; so that, whoever hath attained the Assurance of eternal Life here in this World in his Heart, shall hold out to the End of this natural Life, and shall not fall away, nor be reduced to a State of Damnation.

*Query 3.* Whether our Justification and Peace of Mind ariseth not purely from the Act of Faith from the true God?

*Answer.* That the Justification and Peace of our Mind, it doth arise first from the Act of Faith in the Messenger of God; for a Man must first believe he is a Man of God, or sent from God, else why should any Man enquire of him after heavenly Things: Therefore it was the Prophet said; *Who baib believed our Report, or to whom is the Arm of the Lord revealed?* So that if People do not believe the Prophet's Report, that bringeth glad Tidings of Life and Salvation in the first Place, he cannot have any Act of Faith in the true God, because it is the Prophet that doth declare the true God; which is the Prophet's Doctrine; so that our Act of Faith doth first arise in believing the true Prophet, and that leads us to the Act of Faith in the true God; for there must be a receiving which is believing, which is an Act of Faith in him that God sent in the first Place, and then you shall receive God that sent him.

And so Justification and Peace of Mind ariseth purely from the Act of Faith in the true Prophet, who hath declared unto you the true God, which is the Rock to build your Faith upon, that will say unto you in that Day Come, ye Blessed, because you believed my poor despised Messenger, when on Earth, enter into the Joys of Heaven, which is Life eternal, which my Messenger I sent declared unto you; and in as much as you believed him which I sent, you believed in me.

Thus do true Believers come to have Justification and Peace of Mind in this Life, by the pure Act of Faith that ariseth in their Hearts while here on Earth.

*Query 4.* Of what Use is the Moral-Law to us who have received the Commission of the Spirit in the Love of it, and have yielded Obedience thereunto, and have chose rather to suffer under the Odium that evil Men have laid upon it than to enjoy the good Report the Men of this World give to false Worshippers.

*Answer.* That the observing and yielding Obedience to the Moral-Law is of great Use to all those who have received, and that have Faith in this Commission of the Spirit, and that have yielded Obedience unto it in the Love of it. Why? Because the Moral-Law is the second Commandment; for as *Christ* said, when on Earth, *There is but two Commandments*; that is, one Commandment on God's Part, and the other on Man's Part.

The Commandment that is for God, is: evangelical, spiritual, and heavenly; that is, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy Heart, with all thy Soul, and with all thy Strength.* This Commandment no Man, in the World, can keep, or perform, but those that do truly believe in this Commission of the Spirit: Why? Because no Religion in the World, at this Day, doth know the true God in his Form and Nature, but those that believe in this Commission of the Spirit. Therefore no Man can love God with all his Heart, nor with all his Soul, nor with all his Strength, because he doth not know God. For how can a Man love him with all his Heart, which he doth not know; but by Reading the Scriptures or the History of a God; a Man may know God in his Head by the Imagination of Reason, and in his Tongue to talk of a God, and so love that which he doth not know with all his Head, and all his Tongue, and all his Imagination.

This is the State and Condition the whole World lieth in, as well Professors of the Scriptures, as others; For none can love God with all his Heart, but such as know God by Faith in this  
Com-

Commission of the Spirit : This is a strait and narrow Gate, which few do enter in at.

And the second Commandment is like unto it, *Thou shalt love thy Neighbour as thyself* ; because the Moral-Law is written in every Man's Heart, which Law doth speak in every Man's Mind : Do as thou wouldst another should doe to thee. For this I know, that there is never a Man in the World, but would have every Man to do justly and honestly by him ; but he will not do so by others. For this Moral-Law, written in every Man's Heart, is on Man's Part to keep and perform ; that is, whatsoever he would have another do unto him, let him do so to another ; for if all Men did walk by this Moral-Law, written in every Man's Heart, then there would be no Wickedness acted upon this Earth ; for observe, there is no Man that hath his Senses or in his Wits, and his Reason in him, that would willingly have another Man to commit Adultery with his Wife, whom he loves, or to commit Fornication with his Daughters. The Nature of Man doth loath and abhor this in another Man, yet himself will commit Adultery with another Man's Wife, and commit Fornication with other Men's Daughters.

This is not to do as he would be done unto ; and so of the Rest of the Particulars in the Moral-Law, written in every Man's Heart ; and he that breaketh one of these six Commandments is guilty of the Breach of all the Moral-Law written in his Heart, which is contained in the second Commandment, which is on Man's Part, to do as he would be done unto, which is this Moral-Law, written in Man's Heart, which if this Moral-Law were kept, performed, and done by all Men, there would be no Disobedience to Parents, no Adultery nor Fornication committed, no Murder, no Stealing, no Covetising his Neighbour's Wife, his Ox or his Ass, or any Thing that is his ; so that the Moral-Law is of great Use to the Believers of this Commission of the Spirit, and to all religious Men, as well as wicked, in all Ages. And especially since *Moses* published this Law written ; for where the Righteous doth break this Moral-Law, the Worm of Conscience will gnaw in the Righteous now in these Days, as it hath done in the Days of old. As *David*, for his Murder and Adultery, who brake the Moral-

Moral-Law written in his Heart, in a high Degree ; he was loath that another should have done so by him as he did to *Uriah* and his Wife, in that he gave Judgment himself ; That another Man should die that did do as he had done, not thinking in the least, that he was the Man. It was a very bad Example of a Righteous Man, and to all Kings that should come after him ; for the Breach of this Moral-Law caused him to make a great Outcry to the God of Heaven, and to his Prophet to take off this Burthen of his Soul. I have had the like Experience of some that shall be nameless, since I have been in this Commission. So that the Moral-Law is of great Use both to Saint and Devil. And I could wish that all the Believers of this Commission of the Spirit might be observed from the Breach of the Moral-Law in Act, as I have been from my Childhood : For this I say, Millions of People are damned to Eternity for nothing else, but for the Breach of the Moral-Law, written in their Hearts, and Millions of Men and Women, who are legally righteous, and many of them never brak the Moral-Law in Act, yet being of the Reprobate Seed, have despised the Truth, and others being shut up in Unbelief of the Truth, will perish to Eternity.

*Query 5.* What is that which gives Trouble and Distraction, in the Hour of Death, to some Believers in this Commission, when as we know and believe, that being justified by Faith, we have Peace with God, and Peace with Death ? What then, I say, is it that seems to separate us from that Peace and Joy we had in the Time of Health, to the great Dishonour of Truth ?

*Answer.* It is Sin, after they have believed the Truth ; I say, it is the Breach of the moral Law, written in his Heart, in some Kind or other, after he received the Truth, which gives the Trouble and Distraction in the Hour of Death, to some Believers of this Commission, as I have had Experience of, in my Time, of several ; and of some I have taken off the Trouble of the Mind, and restored them to their former Peace and Assurance they had in their Health (as the Prophet *Nathan*

than did to *David* and others) that have sought to me, in the Trouble of their Minds, to ease them of their Burthen, but I would not, but left them to the moral Law written in their Hearts, and their Sin, after they received the Truth, to grapple together ; so that which got the Mastery, the Soul must be subject unto. Their Persons on both Sides shall be nameless.

Likewise, I do know that every true Believer in this Commission is justified by Faith ; they have Peace with God, but have no Peace with Death, but fight with it. Neither is Death at Peace with any Man that hath Life in him ; for Death and Life is always at War, one with another ; and Death is never at Peace with Life, until Death hath conquered and overcome Life ; then is Death and Life at Peace one with the other ; for Death is the King of Terrors ; so that the God of Heaven, when he was on Earth, was made capable of the Fear of Death, which caused him to cry out, if it be possible, this Cup of Death might pass away from him ; but he, knowing that he could not be Death's Death, no other Way but by suffering of Death, to have the Conquest of the Godhead Life for a Moment ; so that Death and the Godhead Life was at Peace, one with the other, for a Moment ; but this Godhead Life, being the quickening Spirit, it quickened out of Death again, into a new and eternal Life ; and this new eternal Life is Death's Death, and hath conquered Death, Hell, and the Devil ; that is, by his quickening out of Death into an endless Life, he hath procured an eternal Death, that is, a living Death, and a dying Life ; so that Death shall always live in Hell, and Hell shall always live with Death, and the Devils, which are Men and Women in the Resurrection, shall live with Death and Hell, in utter Darkness, to Eternity.

This did *Christ* purchase, by his suffering of Death, and his quickening again into Life eternal ; else there would have been no Death eternal to the Seed of the Serpent, nor no Life eternal to the Seed of the Woman, which is the Seed of God.

These Things are deep and secret Mysteries, the Tongue of Men and Angels cannot express.

This is more largely treated of in my two Books of the *Revelations*, and what that is that seems to separate us from  
that

that Peace and Joy we had in the Time of Health, to the great Dishonour of Truth.

To this I say, it is the Guilt of some Sin which is secret and hid in a Man's Heart, which in his Health he would willingly hide from his Brethren of the same Faith, lest he should lose his good Reputation and Credit among his Friends, and of the World, that had a good Opinion of him, thinking in his Health that in Time he shall order his Matters so as to satisfy his own Conscience, and that none shall know that he ever did any Evil at all to any Man. This was *David's* Case, he thought he hid his Sin of Adultery, by causing her Husband to be killed; but Death appearing presently after the Act of Sin, Sin appeareth also; for Death and Sin always goeth Hand in Hand together, to accuse the Conscience, and Hell followeth at the Heels. As for Example, when *Adam* had sinned his Sin, his Sin did not accuse him, but thought himself well enough, till the Voice of the Lord called, *Adam, Where art thou?* immediately after his Sin was committed, and said, *Hast thou eaten of the Tree of Knowledge of Good and Evil, which I forbad thee to eat of?*

So likewise when *Cain* had killed his Brother *Abel*, he thought all would be well with him; but when God called unto *Cain*, and said, *Tby Brother's Blood crieth from the Ground unto me for Vengeance*, then Sin and Death joined together in *Cain's* Conscience, which caused him to say, his Punishment was greater than he could bear.

And so it was with *David*, he thought himself well when *Uriah* was slain, till the Prophet *Nathan* in his Parable had convinced him of his two Sins in Act of Adultery and Murder, then Sin and Death went Hand in Hand together against his Conscience, which made him cry out, he had sinned against the Lord.

And this is that, as I said before, that doth seem to separate a true Believer in this Commission of the Spirit from that Peace and Joy they had in the Time of Health, which is to the great Dishonour of Truth, which no Prophet, nor God himself when on Earth, could prevent, the Fear of Death being not at Peace with Death in Health.

*Query 6.* Whether a Person dying so, may be accounted true in the Faith, and may notwithstanding obtain a Crown of Righteousness from the God of our Hope at the last Day?

*Answer.* That a Person so dying in Trouble and Distraction in the Hour of Death, if his Trouble and Distraction of Mind doth arise through some actual Sin, after the receiving of the Truth, then, except he can procure a Forgiveness from him that is the Head of that Doctrine which he received the Truth from; I say, such a Person that hath dishonoured the Truth, and hath committed Sin in Act, after he received the Knowledge of the Truth, he may not be accounted true in the Faith, neither can he obtain a Crown of Righteousness from the God of our Hope at the last Day, except he can procure Forgiveness of that Person as aforesaid.

Thus I have answered your six Queries, according to your Request; and having no other Matter, at this Time, to write unto you, I shall take Leave, and remain, in that eternal Truth, which none knoweth, but those that truly believe in this Commission of the Spirit,

*Your Friend,*

*London, June 13, 1682.*

LODOWICK MUGGLETON.

*A COPY of a LETTER written by the Prophet Lodowick Muggleton, to Colonel Phaire, and the rest of the Believers of the Commission of the Spirit. Dated in London, February 16, 1680.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Robert Phaire,*

**I** Having the Opportunity to send unto you by our Friend *Mary Stone*, the Daughter of *Mrs. Penson*, who came on purpose, as she saith, to see me and *Saddington*; therefore it



was necessary that I should write a few Lines unto you, upon her Request, to signify unto you that she hath been with me ; which Lines unto you are as followeth :

I have had great Experience of your stedfast Faith in the true God, and in this Commission of the Spirit, ever since you first heard of it, even above twenty Years ; you have been, as it were, the Corner-stone, that was laid in that Kingdom of *Ireland*, which many have stumbled at, and have dashed their Foot against a Stone ; and others again have built their House upon this Stone, as upon a Rock, so that no Winds nor Storms of Persecutions, Reproaches, Slanders, and Lies, could make it fall, or shake this Doctrine of the true God, in his Form and Nature, and of the right Devil, in his Form and Nature, which *Reeve* and *Muggleton* have declared in our Writings, which I perceive you and others are very well satisfied in, do truly understand and believe ; for there can be no true Faith in the Heart, except the Understanding be enlightened first. And these two Forms and Natures are two Pillars ; the one Pillar bears up Heaven, and the other bears up Hell.

Now, God's Form is spiritual, heavenly, and glorious, yet in the Form of Man, and his Nature is all pure Faith, which is all Power : Therefore all true Believers do partake of the Divine Nature of God, even the Seed of Faith, which is but as a Grain of Mustard Seed, a very small Seed ; yet is able to remove that Mountain of Ignorance, Darkness, and Unbelief, that lyeth before the Understanding of every Man by Nature ; so that by Faith we come to know the Worlds were framed by the Word of God ; that is, by the Power of Faith in God. And by Faith in these our mortal Bodies, we come to know God in his Form and Nature ; and by Faith we see God here in Mortality, as in a Glass, as the Apostles saith ; and when this Faith is immortalized in the Resurrection, then shall our vile Bodies be made like unto his glorious Body, then shall Immortality appear, and shall see the immortal God in the Form of Man, Face to Face ; even as we are seen of him, according to our Faith here in this Life, shall it be unto us.

Furthermore, by Faith we do feed upon the Flesh of God, and drink his Blood, as *Christ* said, when on Earth :  
Except

Except you eat my Flesh, and drink my Blood, you have no Life in you; for his Flesh is Meat indeed, and his Blood Drink indeed.

And this I say, None upon Earth, at this Day, doth eat his Flesh, and drink his Blood, but those that do truly believe the Doctrine of this Commission of the Spirit: Why? Because no Man hath Faith to believe that God became Flesh, and dwelt amongst Men here upon Earth, who doth not believe that the Flesh of *Christ* was the Flesh of God, and the Blood of *Christ* to be the Blood of God; and who hath not Faith to believe, That the Godhead Life died when *Christ* was offered up unto Death through the eternal Spirit; no, not any but those that believe our Report.

Therefore it is that all religious Men perish for Want of Faith in the true God, they cannot eat the Flesh of God, that is Meat indeed, to satisfy their hungry Souls; neither can they drink the Blood of God, which is Drink indeed, to quench the thirsty Soul of Man. But blessed are your Eyes that see, and Ears that hear, and have Hearts that understand the Things that belong to your Peace; for God hath given you his own Flesh to eat, and his own Blood to drink, which hath assured you that you shall drink of those new Joys, and new Pleasures, and new Glories in the Kingdom of Eternal Glory.

This is that Wine that *Christ*, our God, our King, and Redeemer, will drink a-new with his Apostles, and us the Witnesses of the Spirit, and you the Believers, in the Kingdom of eternal Glory.

And this I say, all those, or all us, that have eat of the Flesh of God, and drank his Blood by Faith here in the State of Mortality, we shall be gathered together in the Resurrection (as the Fowls) to fly in the Midst of Heaven, being immortalized, shall come to the Supper of the great God, that we may eat of the same Flesh as he eateth of, which is the Flesh of persecuting Kings, and the Flesh of Captains, and the Flesh of mighty Men, even of Judges, and the Flesh of Horses, and of them that sit on them, and the Flesh of all Free-men and Bond-men, and of Small and Great; that is, all wicked reprobate Men, both small and great, that have per-

secuted and hated the Lord's Prophets, Apostles, and Messengers, which he sent in this World.

Oh ! how blessed are we that shall sup with the great God of Heaven, in the Destruction of our Enemies ; for as God was hated when he was on Earth, so are we for his Sake ; and as God is pleased to make his Supper with the Destruction of the Souls and Bodies of the Seed of the Serpent, to Eternity, and he hath invited us, the Fowls of Heaven, to sup with the great God, why should not we rejoice in this Supper which the great God hath made, even in the Destruction of this wicked World ; for this Earth is a Habitation of Devils, while the World doth endure. And for my Part, I could willingly sup with the great God of Heaven, that hath redeemed my Soul, in the Destruction of this World, that I might eat the Flesh of mighty Men ; Mayors, Judges, Juries, small and great Devils, that have hated me without a Cause. Oh ! how happy are we that shall sup with the great God, that is, in the Assurance we have, that God hath ordained wicked persecuting Kings, and high Captains, and Judges, and mighty Men, and all other inferior Devils, both small and great, more than the Sand of the Sea-shore, which cannot be numbered, to be damned to Eternity, to suffer those eternal Torments.

These I know shall be cast alive into a Lake of Fire, burning with Brimstone, to all Eternity ; and we, the Fowls of Heaven, shall eat or feed upon the Miseries of these mighty Men, as in a Supper with the great God, praising and magnifying him that redeemed us with his own Blood, from being Devils incarnate, or Devils in Flesh. And in this we shall eat the Flesh of Kings, and the Flesh of high Captains, and the Flesh of mighty Men-Devils, and the Flesh of small and great Devils. And this Supper, I know, we shall have with the great God in the Resurrection, when we shall ascend in the Clouds of Heaven, and meet the Lord in the Air, and leave the Devils, the Serpent, and his Seed, here upon this Earth, where they shall be tormented Day and Night for ever, and evermore, even to Eternity. This is the true Interpretation of *John's* Words, in the sixth Chapter of his *Revelation*, concerning the Supper of the great God, and the Fowls of Heaven ; for God hath sowed in this World the Seed of Faith, which is counted  
the

the small Seed, even as one Grain of Mustard Seed, which indeed, as *Christ* saith, *Mat. xiii*, and 32, is the least of all Seeds ; but, when it is grown, it is the greatest among Herbs. And it is a Tree, so that the Birds of Heaven came and built in the Branches thereof : So in *Mark* the ivth, and 31st, the Kingdom of God is compared to a Grain of Mustard Seed, which, when it is sown in the Earth, is the least of all Seeds ; but after it is sown, it groweth up, and is greatest of all Herbs, and beareth great Branches, so that the Fowls of Heaven may build under the Shadow of it. So in *Luke* xiii, and 19, then said he, What is the Kingdom of God like ? It is like a Grain of Mustard Seed, which a Man took and sowed in his Garden, and it grew and waxed a great Tree, and the Fowls of Heaven made Nests in the Branches thereof.

This small Grain is the Grain of Faith that was in God from Eternity, by which he created the Heaven and the Earth, and all Creatures else, in both Worlds, by this little Grain of Faith, no bigger than a Mustard Seed, hath he done all his Wonders. By this Grain of Faith did he sow himself in this Earth or Garden, which was in this World, which was in the Virgin's Womb, and brought forth himself a Man-Child, in pure Mortality. And this Grain of Faith, that was sown in the Field of this World, it grew up to be a Tree, that is, a Man, whose Branches spread themselves forth so thick, that the Fowls of Heaven do make their Nests in the Branches thereof.

This Tree of Faith, which is compared to a small Grain of Mustard Seed, was *Christ*, the only God, become Flesh ; when he was in the Glory of the Father, he was that Man that sowed that Grain of Faith in the Field of this World, or in the Garden of *Eden*, when he breathed into *Adam* and *Eve* the Breath of Life, and they became living Souls : Then was this little Grain of Faith no bigger than a Grain of Mustard Seed, sowed in the Field of the elect World : So that, all that are Partakers of this little Grain of Faith, they build their Nests in the Branches of this Tree, by having Peace, Salvation, and Life eternal abiding in them.

These are the Fowls of Heaven, that build their Salvation upon *Christ's* Death, Resurrection, and Ascension, which none

none in this World doth at this Day, but those that truly believe this Doctrine declared by *Reeve* and *Muggleton*. We are the Fowls of Heaven in this last Age, that have received a Measure of this Grain of Faith, which doth cause us to make our Nests, and rest quietly in the Branches of God's free electing Love, in his Redemption and Salvation.

Thus I have given you the true Interpretation of the Excellency of this little Grain of Faith, as small as a Grain of Mustard Seed, which you, that have but a Measure of it, can experience the Truth of it. Therefore I shall say no more at present, but remember my Love to yourself and good Wife, your Sons, and Daughters, that are Partakers of this precious Faith, and to all the Rest of our Friends in the true Faith, in that Kingdom, I take Leave, and remain,

*Your Friend in the eternal Truth,*

Feb. 16, 1680.

LODOWICK MUGGLETON.

*A COPY of a LETTER written by the Prophet Lodowick Muggleton, to Mr. Edward Fewterell of Chesterfield, bearing Date from London, March 29, 1660.*

*Friend,*

I Received your Letter, wherein I perceive you are a Man that hath been led through several Opinions, yet not suffered to join with any, but have been made to wait upon *Jesus Christ*, the only God, for Satisfaction; and now it hath been his great Love, which he hath loved you, to let you have a Sight of those infinite Truths written by the Hands of his two Witnesses, and *Lawrence Claxton*, which Writings of ours, I perceive,

perceive, by your Letter, have given you more Satisfaction than any that ever you read before.

Only this I perceive, that you did, and do, still much approve of *Jacob Benson's* Works, and for this Cause; because you were, as I perceive by his Writings, exhorted to resign your Will unto God's Will, and to come unto that happy State, neither to will or desire any Thing, but to abide in the Will of God, which is *Jesus Christ*, into which Estate the Lord did twice bring you in some Measure.

Also you say, that it is a hard Thing to cast out that Devil that is in us, nor can it be done, as we say, or think, but by that Resignation and Faith in the true God.

Likewise you say, that you were a great Disputant against all Forms and formal Worship, till the Lord silenced you, and did let you see it was but a vain Thing to wrangle and jangle with the Devil more.

But I shall pass by Part of your Letter, and I shall answer you to those Things that are of most Concernment.

You say, that there was that Portion of Scripture brought into your Remembrance, of his Promise, *I will send the Spirit of Truth, which shall guide you into all Truth*; and there have you had your Rest reposed.

In the last Place, I find that you would have some Answer to some Doubts, concerning that Devil that doth appear to Witches, and suck of their Bodies and what that is that doth appear to Conjurers, and the Authors of lying Wonders of *John Robins*, though you do believe there is no Devil but Man. You do believe also, that the Soul of Man is mortal, and must needs die, and so cannot appear, though you thought otherwise in your Reason.

You say, Whether is there a Spirit in Man, that surviveth, and is allured by them, or do they stir upon awaking the Power of the first fallen Angel through their devilish Faith; or is these Things from their vain Imaginations? If so, how? If not, what it is, is your Desire to know of me.

To which I shall give you some Answer, both to the first Part of your Letter, and also to the latter Part of it.

First, You say, That you have been made to wait upon *Jesus Christ*, the only God, for Satisfaction thereof.

I would have you to consider, how could you wait and be satisfied in the Belief of such a God, which you never knew? For the Letter of the Scriptures did never declare to you, that *Jesus Christ* was the only God; neither did God commissionate no Prophet nor Apostle for to declare it, though their Declarations was as necessary to be believed, in their Time and Place, as this Commission of the Spirit; which Commission of the Spirit hath deeper Mysteries held forth in it than the other two Commissions had: For God never did give to any Prophets or Apostles the Knowledge of his own Form or Nature, before he became Flesh; if they did know it, they did not reveal it; but he hath given it to his two last spiritual Witnessess and Prophets, *John Reeve* and *Lodowick Muggleton*, who were those chosen Witnessess of God, which should have more Understanding of the Mind of God, in the Scriptures, than all the Men in the World.

Which Knowledge of God's Mind in the Scriptures doth consist of these six Heads:

*First*, Of the Form and Nature of God, before he became Flesh.

*Secondly*, Of the Form and Nature of the Devil, before he became Flesh.

*Thirdly*, Of the Place and Nature of Heaven.

*Fourthly*, Of the Place and Nature of Hell.

*Fifthly*, Of the Nature and Persons of Angels.

*Sixthly*, Of the Mortality of the Soul.

Upon the Knowledge of these six Principles depends the eternal Happiness of many. And the Knowledge of the two Seeds is those two Keys that doth open those two, namely, the strait and narrow Gate, that leadeth unto Life, and the broad and wide Gate, that leadeth to Destruction. And those two

two Keys are given unto us two aforesaid, which hath the Commission of the Spirit given unto us.

So that there is no coming unto the Knowledge of the true God, nor the right Devil ; but where the Declaration of this spiritual Commission doth open the Doors or Gates of Men's Hearts, and lets them see what Seed they are of. And so Men come to know the true God and the right Devil. And then a Man may truly say, that he can resign his Will to God's Will, as you say *Jacob Bemon* in his Writings doth declare.

Yet this I would have you to know, that *Jacob Bemon* had no personal God at all, not to resign his Will unto ; but his God was an infinite, incomprehensible formless Spirit, as all the World hath ; neither had his Devil a Person, nor Form ; neither had his Angels he speaketh so much of any Body, or Form at all ; but they were all Spirits without Bodies, which in Conclusion was no more but so many Letters, that is, three Letters, G. O. D. And so of the Devil and Angels.

And yet this Man would resign his Will unto God's Will, and yet his God had no Form nor Nature at all. Therefore there could be no Will in his God, whereby any Man should resign his Will into God's Will ; whereas there can be no Will in God, except he hath both Form and Nature.

And this is that Will of God, which you call *Jesus Christ*, into which Estate the Lord did twice bring you ; which Estate of yours in that Faith of *Jacob Bemon's* could not be a true Estate, because there was not the Knowledge of the true God. And where there is not the Knowledge of the true God, there cannot be the Knowledge of the right Devil.

Without the Knowledge of these two, there can be no true lasting Peace in Man.

And as for your being a great Disputant amongst all formal Worship, I do not question the Thing, because I know that the Wisdom of Reason, which is the Devil, doth love to be upmost in Disputes.

But, how can you say, That the Lord did silence you, and made you to see the Vanity of all Disputes, whereas you did not know any other God, but what is generally believed



on in the World ; that is, an infinite, incomprehensible Spirit ; not minding whether God had any Nature or Form at all ?

Therefore it could not be the true Lord that did silence you, but it was something that did arise out of your own Seed, which did shew you the Vanity of all Disputes.

In the next Place you say, That there was brought into your Remembrance that Portion of Scripture concerning his Promise, that he would send his Spirit of Truth, which should guide you into all Truth, and there have you had your Rest reposed.

*Answer.* That this Place of Scripture did not belong unto you, nor to any Man in the World, at this Day ; for that Promise was given only unto his Disciples, which Disciples of his, to whom those Words were spoken, were afterwards made Apostles of *Christ* ; so that the Promise which *Christ* did promise to his Disciples, before his Death, was that of the Blood, which was given unto his Apostles, which was called the Spirit of Truth ; because it should lead them into all Truth ; because they should witness unto the Truth, that is, unto his Death, and Resurrection, and Ascension.

Therefore take Notice of this, That that Promise was fulfilled upon his Apostles after he was ascended up to Heaven, as you may read in the second of the *Acts*, and not to every Man, that doth read the Promises, which God did make to his commissioned Apostles, it doth not belong to every Man that doth read them ; but every Man is to mind that Commission which he is under.

Therefore, for you to repose your Truth upon such Promises as were given to other Men in their Commission, that Peace will not endure to the End, but will vanish like Smoak in the Fire.

In the next Place, I shall give you some Answer to those Doubts which you spake of, concerning that Devil which doth appear to Witches and Conjurers, and how those lying Wonders were acted by *John Robins*.

*Answer.* There is a twofold Witchcraft, the one is natural, the other is spiritual.

Now

Now this natural Witchcraft is acted by such as are called Witches and Conjurers. Now as for those ignorant Women, which are Witches, their Witchcraft lies in their wicked Nature, by giving themselves up to believe that there is no God at all, but Nature only, and so by that strong Faith that they have in Nature, they have Power over those whose Understandings are of a lower Capacity than themselves; and so People being ignorant and fearful of them, doth many Times disturb and searce their Blood with the Extremity of Fear, which they have of one that is suspected for a Witch, and so by their own Fear and Imagination they come to be bewitched. As a Man being overcharged with extreme Grief, or being prevented by one that he loves, he goes distracted, or runneth mad, which is no other but his being bewitched. And so it is with all those that are ignorant and overcharged with Fear; and as for those Children and Cattle that are bewitched, it is by some other Sorcery, which they do use, with Herbs and Plants, and some other Things of Nature, they having some small Knowledge of that Sympathy and Influence the Stars have over those Bodies and Herbs; and so mixeth their Faith and Experience together, pretending to do all Manner of Good, but intendeth nothing but Evil; so that there is no such Thing as People do vainly imagine, as for Spirits to suck Witches; but all the Devils that is, is their own dark Reason, and that Spirit that doth bewitch any Creature, it doth arise out of their own Imagination. And as for Conjurers and Magicians, their Reason is more enlightened than the others is, because they do go altogether by the Figure, which is an Art by which the Reason of Man hath produced Characters and Figures for the several Stars and Planets; and so they came to imagine the Influences of those Stars and Planets upon the Bodies of Men; and many Times they do affright, yet it is still but Witchcraft, for it is nothing else but the Imagination of Reason, that doth pry into the Secrets of Nature. And the first Witchcraft that ever was, it was produced by learning of Numbers and Figures, I say it was first from the *Egyptians* Arts, and from thence came Conjunction, and the Knowledge of the Influence of the Stars and Planets, and the Knowledge of Physick, which are no other in the Original but Witches, only this

their Witchcraft is more tolerated by the Powers of the Nations ; but I am confident that there is more People in the World bewitched with them, than there is with the other Sort of Witches ; that is, they are deceived both in Body and in Mind, and Estate ; for when a Man is deceived in his Expectations and Faith which he had in that Art, he may very well be said to be bewitched. But as for the raising of Spirits, without Bodies, there is no Witch, no Conjuror, or Magician, nor the greatest Artist in the World, can do ; neither can any Spirit assume any Body but its own.

So much for natural Witches.

And as for those lying Signs and Wonders which *John Robins* did act, it was by a mere spiritual Witchcraft ; his was not by the Knowledge of the Stars, though he had some Skill in that too ; but the Power of his Witchcraft did lie in the assuming and taking upon him the Title of the great God, as you may read in our Books ; and so that his Reason being more exercised in the Scriptures, upon spiritual Matters, because the whole Body of the Scriptures doth consist of spiritual and heavenly Matter ; and he having more Knowledge in the Mystery of the Scriptures, at that Time, than all Men in the World, therefore he had many that did fall down and worship him, because his Knowledge in the Scriptures did surpass other Men, and so produced Voices in himself, and could present lying Signs and Wonders unto all those that were deceived by him, or that were afraid of him. Yet he did not deal with Spirits that had not Bodies, but all that Wisdom and Witchcraft that he did shew, it came or arose out of his own Spirit of Reason, which was inclosed in his own Body. And there is the Influence of the same Spirit of Witchcraft doth now remain upon those People called Quakers, notwithstanding their seeming Holiness ; for they have many Times such fleshly Fits falling upon them, which doth seem as if they had the Falling-Sickness, and be as Men dumb, and will not speak a Word for three or four Hours together, and upon a sudden, they will break forth into a strong Language, as if the Spirit did immediately move them to speak. This, I say, it is nothing else but an Influence of *John Robins's* spiritual Witchcraft, which is produced out of their own Spirit within them,

them, and not from any Spirit which hath no Body, without them. And all this is because they have no Knowledge of the true God, or the right Devil.

Therefore it is that the greatest Part of the World doth lie under Witchcraft, either a natural Witchcraft or a spiritual Witchcraft; there is a very few, that is delivered from being under one or both of them. There is none delivered but those that are come to have Faith in this spiritual Commission, which is now extant in the World; for Faith in it doth lead Men to the Knowledge of the true God and the right Devil, with all those deep Mysteries, which doth depend on them, the Knowledge of which doth free a Man from all Witchcrafts whatsoever.

Therefore, I would advise you to read the Book of ours, called *The Divine Looking-Glass*; for that you may see there, that there can be no Spirits without a Body; neither can any Witch or Conjuror raise any Spirit without a Body: But these Conjurors may do, through the Ignorance and Darkeness of Man's Reason, and that Fear and Belief that is in the Ignorant, they may, by their ignorant Power, raise a Shadow of Things, as if they were real Bodies, or Spirits, in the Shape of Bodies, as the *Egyptians* did before *Pharaoh*, King of *Egypt*; they did seem to raise Frogs and Grasshoppers in the Sight of *Pharaoh*, King of *Egypt*; but I say they were not real Frogs and Grasshoppers, but Shadows of such Things, which as soon as ever their Witchcraft Power Art was over, their Frogs and Grasshoppers were gone also, else would the King and his People been as much troubled at those Frogs, which the Magicians did bring up on their Land, as they were with those which *Moses* brought up, which went into their Houses. And now, if *Moses* had not raised Bodies, as well as Spirits; or if he had raised Spirits without Bodies, they would have been as little troubled at those Things which *Moses* did, as they were at those Shadows, or seeming Things, which the Magicians of *Egypt* did. There is some more of the Letter; but I have not Time to writ it. *Vale*, so resteth your Friend,

London, March 29, 1660.

LUDOWICK MUGGLETON.

*A DISCOURSE between John Reeve and Richard Leader, Merchant; recited by Lodowick Muggleton, one of the two last Witnesses and Propbets of the most high God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

**T**HIS *Richard Leader*, notwithstanding he was well fastified in spiritual Things, as to his eternal Happiness, yet there was some Things as to temporal Matters, which we had declared, that he could not as yet consent unto, because it was contrary to the Rule and Art of Astrology and Philosophy; for I asked him what it was; he said, you declare the Sun is not much bigger than it seemeth to be, and our Art saith, it is threescore Times bigger than the Earth: Also, said he, you say the Moon doth not borrow any Light of, nor from the Sun: Likewise you say, that the Heavens is not much above six Miles high from the Earth; and we by our Art do say, the Heavens are Thousands of Miles high from the Earth; these Things, saith he, seemeth something strange.

Then I answered, and said unto him, You are a Man, that have travelled through many Parts of the World, and you have been in that Place, called the equinoctial Line, where the Sun is nearest to the Earth of any other Place, where the Heat is so great, that no Creature can scarce live, the Sun is so hot; did the Sun seem any bigger to your Sight, when it was near to the Earth, than at other Times, when you were at a Distance? You saw the full Proportion of it, did you not? He answered, and said, he did. Then said I, did the Sun seem any bigger to your Eye-sight, where it was near to the Earth, than at other Times? He answered, no, not any bigger, as he could discern. Why then, said I, will you believe your lying Figure, before you will believe your own Eye-sight? You must either say, the Sight of your Eye is false, or the traditional Figure you depend upon is false; now hath not God appointed the Sight of the Eye to be Judge of that it sees?

sees? But Men hath chose rather to believe their lying Imagination, which they never saw, nor never can see, nor knows not what it is; therefore it hath erected a Figure, that Man might be led into Darkness, imagine Things that are not, and make People believe, that the natural Sight, that God hath given Men in their Creation, to be Judge of what it sees, to be a false Sight, and a false Judge; and your dark Imagination and Figure to be a true Light, and a true Judge of the Bigness of the Sun. For consider,

That the Imagination of Reason in Man, doth always judge God to be bigger than he is, or lesser than he is; likewise Imagination being blind, it judgeth God's Power to be greater than it is, or lesser than it is; and so it doth in the Works of Creation: As for Example; the Imagination of Man judgeth, that God made this vast Earth and Waters of Nothing; which is more than God could do, for he never made any Thing of Substance of Nothing, for of Nothing comes Nothing; for what Thing or Creature, that God made of Nothing, God will turn it to Nothing again. Then would it be well for all wicked Men, if the Earth was made of Nothing, and Men made of the Dust of the Earth; then, when this Earth is turned to Nothing, its Original also; but this Earth was an eternal dark Chaos, and shall return at the last Day into Darkness again, and wicked reprobate Man shall live upon this Earth in eternal Torments, in utter Darkness, for ever and ever.

So that neither the Earth, nor wicked Man, the Seed of the Serpent, shall neither of them both be turned to Nothing, but shall be in utter Darkness to Eternity. Again, the Imagination judgeth the Sun, Moon, and Stars, to be of vast greater Bigness, though they seem to be small Bodies to us; so that the Imagination of Man, being blind, judgeth every Thing bigger than it is, or less than it is; though God hath made the Sun, Moon, and Stars, little Bodies, to give Light unto the Earth and Waters, and in their Light, the Creatures here on Earth do see Light; and God hath made these Lights, Bodies in Heaven, to answer to that Light that is in little Bodies here on Earth. And shall a Man say, the Light of his Eyes is no true Light, but the

the Imagination, that seeth not at all, is called true Light; thus it is with Astrology, and Philosophy, that judgeth God to be bigger than he is, or lesser than he is, and his Power to be greater than it is, to create this vast Earth and Waters of Nothing; and the Sun, Moon, and Stars, of such a vast Bigness, all out of Nothing: So that the lying Imagination hath created to itself a bigger God than the true God, and this God hath a greater Power, and hath created Things of a more bigger Magnitude, than the true God ever did, and could do, as to make this Earth of Nothing, and the Sun, Moon, and Stars, of such a vast Bigness, far bigger than ever the true God made them. But to tell the Imagination of Man of the true God, that created Man in his own Image, he became Flesh, and became a little Child, and grew to a Man, and suffered Death by his own Creatures. O! no, saith the Reason in Man, God could not die, it is impossible for God to die; here God's Power is looked upon, by the Imagination of Men's Hearts, to be less than it is.

*Objection 1.* Said he, The Sun may seem to be but a little Body, because of the great Distance from us: As for Example, set a Man upon the Top of *Paul's*, and at a Distance he will shew as little as a Crow. To this he answered and said, Indeed a dark Body at a Distance doth shew less than it is. But, said I, let a light Body, as a Torch, or Candle, be but a Mile above the Earth, if it were possible, and it shall shew bigger a hundred Miles Distance from it. As for Example:

When a Beacon is set on Fire, it seemeth a greater Blaze forty Miles Distance, than it doth near at Hand, for it is but a little Thing of itself; yet nevertheless, it is the Nature of all light Bodies, to shew rather bigger at a Distance, than they are of themselves; and it is the Nature of all dark Bodies, to seem less at a Distance, than they are in themselves. When he heard this, he was convinced; and did acknowledge, that it must needs be so in Nature, that light Bodies did show bigger at a Distance, and dark Bodies less; so that the Sun being a bright Fire, light Body, and running so swift in its Course, it could not be much bigger than it seemeth to be, notwithstanding he had long imagined the contrary.

*Objection* 2. Saith he, We by our Art doth judge, that the Moon doth borrow her Light of the Sun, because, saith he, so far as the Sun is right against the Moon, so far the Moon is light, and when the Moon is at the Full, the Face of the Sun is right over it ; so that sometimes the Moon seems to have a dark Body, only a little Piece of it forked, why is it then, said he ? Because the Sun is right against no more of the Moon, and so much of it as the Sun is against it, it receiveth Light from the Sun, and the rest of the Body of the Moon seemeth dark : To this I answered and said,

If this should be so, then that Saying of Scripture, *Gen. i. v. 16.* must be laid aside, where it is said, *God made two great Lights, the greater Light to rule the Day, and the lesser Light to rule the Night.* Certainly the Moon hath Light in itself to rule the Night, else those Words cannot be true ; for if God made the Moon a dark Body, and that it hath no Light in itself, but what it receiveth from the Sun, then God made but one great Light, and one dark Body, and not two great Lights ; for if the Moon hath not Light in herself, but doth borrow of the Sun, then the Moon had no Light in her Creation : A Man may as well say, That a Man is a living Man, that hath no Life in him ; for if a Man hath not Life in himself, he cannot move no farther, than a Man that hath Life doth carry him ; so likewise if the Moon were a dark Body, and had no Light in itself, how could it move to rule the Night ? The Sun, that hath always Light in itself, must carry the Body of the dark Moon, and move it about the Firmament of Heaven, to rule the Night, which would be a great Trouble to the Sun to do two Bodies Works ; for God hath set every Thing in order, and every particular Thing shall do it's own Work ; the Sun shall rule the Day, and the Moon shall rule the Night, and the Stars shall give their Light ; so that every Thing that God hath made, shall do their own Works, according to the Law God hath placed in their Natures. If the Moon must rule the Night according to God's Command, certainly he gave the Moon a Light in itself to rule with, else it could not rule ; for borrowed Lights never ruleth well. A Man that is Stone-blind, may as well

G

say



say to another Man that can see, I would borrow your Eye-sight, that I may see the Light of the Sun, as you do : This cannot be done, for in Light we see Light ; for there must be two Lights, else a Man cannot tell that there is any Light at all.

For that Man that was born blind, could not tell that there was any Sun or Light at all in the Day-time, but as he heard others say ; but when *Cbrist* opened his Eyes, then he saw Light, because he saw Light in himself ; and when he received his Light, was not this Light of his Eyes in himself ? Was it any borrowed Light, or Light for *Cbrist* ? I trow not, for God hath made every Creature, that hath Light in itself, to see another Light that is out of itself ; so that in Light we see Light ; there must be two Lights, else Things cannot be distinguished ; for dark Bodies, that hath not Life and Light in itself, cannot borrow Life and Light of any other ; neither can the Moon borrow any Light of the Sun at all, for it hath an inherent Light in itself in it's Creation, as the Sun hath in it's Creation ; so that the Words of *Moses* are true, that God *made two great Lights, the Sun to rule the Day, and the Moon to rule the Night* ; only the Moon hath a lesser, but both hath a Light in themselves, and doth not borrow one Light of the other ; else how could the Moon fight with the Sun in the Eclipse sometimes ; if the Moon were a dark Body, and had no Light in itself, could it oppose the Sun as it doth, that the Moon even darkens the Sun in the Fight ? Can a dark Body fight with the Light of the Sun ? You may as well say, that a dark Body may fight with a living Man : But these Fictions of Men's Imaginations, hath deceived the whole World, and keepeth the People in Darknes, and putteth out their own Light of their Eyes, and calleth Darknes Light, and Light Darknes, even in Things that are visibly seen.

*Objection 3.* Then said he, How comes it to pass, that there is so many new Moons, and sometimes we see but a Piece of the new Moon, and do discern the rest of the Body to be dark, and so the Moon doth intrace the dark Bodies filled up with Light ; so that in a Matter of fifteen Days, the Moons full  
and

and all Light, and in a little Time, it is quite gone, and seen no more in our Horizon. To this I answered, and said,

Were you ever up in the Firmament of Heaven? Do you know by your Imagination how God hath framed it, and how many Chambers he hath made in it? And how many Planets, Stars, and Lights, he hath put in every Chamber, in the Firmament of Heaven? You Astrologers yourselves say there is twelve Houses and four Houfons, are you sure there is no more Houses in the Firmament of Heaven, but twelve? And do you know how many Lights there is in every House, and when these Lights do remove out of one House into another? Or do you know whether one Star doth take its Light from another Star? Or hath every Star Light in itself? Or doth the Light of the Stars and Planets remain in their own Bodies, and neither increase nor decrease their Light, since they were made and sit in the Firmament of Heaven? Is there any of those Stars or Lights in the Firmament of Heaven missing, that were made at first? Or hath any of them lost their Light God put in them at first, when God created the Heavens and the Earth?

If you can tell this, then you can say something, as the Moon borroweth Light of the Sun; but to give you a little further Satisfaction; God hath placed the Sun, Moon, and Stars, in the Firmament of Heaven, and every one of these, Houses of their own, that is, the Place where they first began to give Light, and to shine upon the Earth, that is, the House of the Sun, Moon, and Stars; now God that made them, knoweth the House and the Place of the Firmament of Heaven, where they first began to give Light; because he had measured out the Firmament of Heaven, because he made it; but Man doth not know, nor cannot know by his Imagination, Art, and Figure; also God hath given these Lights Power to go out of their own House, into any of the Chambers of Heaven, even as a Man doth out of his own Dwelling-House, into more remote Parts, yet the Man retaineth his own Wisdom and Knowledge, when he is remote from his own Dwelling House, as at Home; so it is with the Sun, Moon, and Stars, though they go out of their own House, yet they retain the same Light in themselves, wherever they

go. And if God hath made the Sun so swift and bright, to run through all the Houses of the Firmament of Heaven, in twenty-four Hours, yet that is the Sun's own House, where it went first from, and it is the Work God hath appointed the Sun to do every Day and Night; and when the Sun is absent, in its Place, the Moon supplieth her Light, and the Moon not being so swift as the Sun, it cometh not so soon into our Horizon as the Sun doth; besides, it passeth throughout the same Region as the Sun doth, but in a Region of a lower Degree in the Firmament of Heaven, than the Sun doth; and the Cause why the Moon sheweth the Light, but a little Piece of her, when she is but a Quarter old, so by Degrees she increaseth, till she is at the Full, so that the Full Face and Light of her, may be seen by the Light of the Eye. The Cause why we see her by a little and a little, is, she cometh out of one Chamber or House of Heaven into another, and as the Houses and the Firmament of Heaven be at such a Distance one from another, so we see her Light the more, and we see her sometimes half light and half dark; now the Piece that seemeth dark, it is because she is not come out of that House or Region; but when she is come to that Horizon, where she was at the Full, then she is all Light and no Darknes at all; not but that she was all Light in herself before at all Times, but she was in some Chamber of Heaven, which shadowed her so, that we could not see her whole Light of her whole Face. As for Example: Suppose a Man stand in a Bottom, and there be two high Hills before him, at a Distance one from the other, the Man standing in the Bottom, discerneth a Man upon the Top of the farther Hill, so seeing him come down the Hill a pretty Way, but a little lower he loseth the Sight of the Man, until such Time as the Man cometh up that Hill nigh to him, and when he cometh to the Top of this Hill before me, I do discern first his Head, then after his Face, then after his Body, so that I see it is a perfect Man which I saw at first, but this Hill before me hindred the Sight of him till he came to the Top of it: So it is with the Moon, a Man cannot discern the full Face of her, till she hath passed in her Journey thro' all those Houses of the Heavens, which lieth lower in that Region where she is, so  
that

that the Hill and Mountain of the Earth doth hinder the Sight of her, until she cometh to the Top of the Hill of our Horizon, then can we see her whole Face; for the Earth is as a Ball, standing upon and in the Air; that is, the Power of God's Word hath made the Air a Foundation for the Earth to stand upon; therefore it is, that the Earth standeth upon Nothing as a Man can see; and this is the Foundation God hath laid this vast Earth upon: And who could lay the Foundation of this Earth upon such a Foundation as the Air? None but God only, whose Power is infinite and unspeakable. Likewise the Earth about with the Element, then the Earth must needs interpose and shadow the Light of the Moon, so that she cannot be seen in her perfect Light, untill she stands upon the Top of the Ball; but those that are on every Side and underneath the Ball cannot see her, for she is always at the Full in herself, tho' a Man cannot see her so perfectly, but when she is at the Full; yet the Moon is the same Light in herself always, as when she is at the Full, tho' those on the Sides and underneath cannot see her; neither is there any Newness in her, but she is the same To-day, Yesterday, and same for ever, as long as the World lasteth; ever the great Light, which God created and appointed to rule the Night in one Place or other of this World continually: This is Truth, and *Moses's* Words are Truth, whatever Man by their Imaginations do say to the contrary.

*Objection 4.* Well, said he, how will you make it appear, that the Heavens are not above six Miles high from the Earth?

I answered and said, that I will make it appear by Scripture and Reason. That will do well, (said he.) Then said I, see that Scripture, *Gen. xi. 4. And they said, Go to, let us build us a City, and a Tower, whose Top may reach unto Heaven:* And in the 5th Verse, *And the Lord came down to see the City and the Tower which the Children of Men builded:* And the 6th Verse, *And the Lord said, behold the People is One, and they have all one Language, and this they begin to do, and now nothing will be restrained from them, which they have imagined to do.* Here, said I, it is plain, that there was a Possibility for the Sons of Men to build

build a Tower up to Heaven ; now if Heaven had been Thousands of Miles high, as the lying Art of *Astrology* saith, there could have been no Possibility to build up to Heaven, and that these Men's Reason know well enough, neither could they have laid a Foundation to build Thousands of Miles high ; now the Imagination of Reason in these Men were more right, which went by no Figure, nor Rule of Art, but by the Sight of the Eye, and their Reason and Sense ; and they did imagine by the Sight of the Eye, that it could not be above three Miles to the Clouds, which the Philosophers grant by their Art, the Clouds to be but three Miles high from the Earth ; so they imagined that the Firmament could not be above three Miles higher ; and we do imagine, said they, in themselves, that they might lay a Foundation to build six Miles, and thought they, when we come up to the Clouds in Building, we shall see then how far it is to the Firmament, and so build up unto it. Now, the Lord himself said, it was possible for them to do what they had imagined, for (saith he,) *Nothing will restrain them for what they have imagined to do.* So that God knew there was a Possibility to build up to Heaven, else he would never come down from Heaven himself, to prevent them, in confounding their Language, if the Heavens had been Thousands of Miles high : Besides, said I, do you think, when *Christ* ascended up to Heaven, after he was risen from the Dead, that he ascended with that Body thousands of Miles high, from where he ascended up to Heaven ? It is said, *Acts* i 9. *While the Men beheld, a Cloud received him out of their Sight.* That is, they saw him ascend up as far as the Clouds, which is half Way to the Firmament of Heaven ; for the Clouds opened for him to pass through, and closed together again, out of their Sight ; for they could not see no farther than the Clouds : Likewise, when the Prophet *Elijab* went up to Heaven in a fiery Chariot with Horses of Fire, Do you believe that he had thousands of Miles to Heaven ? He said, No : Besides, there is a Possibility to build up to Heaven now, as there was then, only it is forbidden of God : But this I say, if it were lawful, and that a Man was sure to live 7 or 800 Years upon this Earth, as they did then, then a Man might as easily build up to Heaven now, as then ; were it lawful, as I said before.

So that God hath not made the Heavens so high, as the lying Imagination of Reason hath ; for Reason imagineth the Heavens to be higher than they are ; and Reason imagines Hell to be lower than it is ; so that Heaven is so high, that Reason can never ascend up to it, and Hell so deep, that Reason can find no Bottom ; therefore called, *A Bottomless Pit*, when indeed Hell is but six Miles Distance from Heaven to this Earth, where Men acted all their Wickedness, shall be that Place of Hell for all the Damned, and the Place where the Devil and his Angels, which are wicked Men and Women, shall be tormented to Eternity.

But the Seed of Faith knoweth the Height of the Heavens, and but a few Miles high, and can easily ascend up to it ; and Faith knoweth the Bottom of Hell, and knoweth it is upon this Earth, and no deeper than this Earth, and that the *Bottomless Pit*, so much feared by Man, it is in a Man, and not without a Man : Therefore, said I unto him, your Figure, Rule and Art, must be laid down ; but Arithmetick and Numbers is necessary only for Things on this Earth, to measure Land, and other Accounts between Man and Man here on Earth ; your Arithmetick and Figures is not to measure the Height of the Heavens, nor the Depths of Hell, that belongeth only to the Seed of Faith, being God's own Nature.

Faith measureth the Height of Heaven, and the Deepness of Hell : Therefore, in these Things, you are to lay aside your Figure Art, and depend wholly upon Belief of what we have said in these Things, because your Reason, Skill and Art, let it be never so great, cannot disprove a steadfast Faith.

When he heard this Discourse, with much more than is here written, he was very well satisfied in these Things, and many others, and he grew very mighty in Wisdom and Knowledge, both in natural Wisdom and heavenly ; so that every great Man of his Acquaintance did submit to his Wisdom, and loved him for his Knowledge ; so he continued in it all his Life : But about a Year or two after *John Reeve* died, he died at *Barbadoes*.

## A LETTER from the Prophet Muggleton.

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith,* Thomas Tom-  
kinson,

**M**R. Delamaine would have written sooner, but being in great Trouble, had not Leisure to write; for the Shepherd being smitten, the Sheep were all scattered. Upon the 17th Day of *January* last past, Judgment was given upon me; to stand upon the Pillory in three several Places of the City of *London*, and the Books they took away from me were divided into three Parts, and were to be burnt before my Face, those three Days I stood on the Pillory.

So they offered up the Books as three Burnt-offerings, to the unknown God; and they offered me up as a Sacrifice, to be slain by the rude Multitude; and it was a wonderful Providence I was not slain outright.

I was exposed to the uttermost Rigour of the Law, more than any ever did, that suffered in that Time; however, they have shed the Blood of the last Prophet, although not to Death. Oh! what shall be done to this bloody City, for shedding innocent Blood! The God of Heaven will say unto this bloody City, You shall be punished with Poverty, Beggary, and Imprisonment.

But those that have had a Hand in the Persecution and Blood of my Servant the Prophet, shall be cast into that bottomless Pit, in utter Darkness, where shall be wailing and gnashing of Teeth for evermore, where they shall never see bright Day, to Eternity.

This, I am sure, will be the Effect upon those that have had a Hand in these Sufferings of mine. I cannot enlarge in particular of these great Sufferings of mine, that hath happened to me of late, it would be too large a Volume, to relate the Particulars of it; but you may understand by a little what a great deal means. So being in Haste, I shall take Leave, and rest, only my Love to yourself, and my Wife's Love to  
yourself

yourself and your Wife, and all Friends else there with you,

*I rest your Friend in the true Faith,*

From the Press-yard, Newgate,  
April 23, 1677.

LODOWICK MUGGLETON:

An E P I S T L E

To a Q U A K E R.

*Dear and loving Friend,*

I Shall not salute thee about perishing Natures, or empty Observations, for the exalting of an Idol ; but the Desire of my Soul is, that we may be found real in the Things of the Spirit, that we may be impowered to perform our Christian Duties to each other, in the Things of Flesh ; which is that which girts the Spirit, or strengthens the Soul with lasting Peace.

Is it not a real Comprehension of him that made us, by Virtue of his heavenly Light or Love abiding in us ? If this be true, as I am certain it is, how is it possible then, that we should be one in Spirit, or in the Flesh either, until the true God be made manifest to us, or in us ? Indeed Time was when I was strongly deceived with an Imagination of the eternal Salvation of all Mankind, though they lived and died under Power of all Manner of Unrighteousness whatsoever.

And this Error arose in me through a lying Doctrine, founding in my Ears, of a pretended universal Love to the whole Creation, from those People called Ranters, which gilded Love I found at length to be nothing else but carnal

H

Lust,



Lust, in the Bottom of it ; why, because it had no spiritual Foundation to build his Faith and Hope upon, but within itself only.

Peradventure, thou at this present mayst imagine, that thy Society, called Quakers, are endued with more excellent Light than all others whatsoever ; but if I should condescend to such an Imagination, I must belye the Light of all Things, which, through his eternal free Love, hath lately shined into my dark Soul ; but it hath not so shined into it as to persuade me to mind no other God or Christ, present Light, or future Glory, but what is within me only, as formerly I did, when I was deluded to idolize my own lying Imagination with Titles of divine Glory, by worshipping of it with the holy Name of eternal Jehovah, or Jesus, and calling of it the high and lofty One, or holy One of *Israel*, the only begotten Son of God, the everlasting Father, the Daughter of *Sion*, the Glory of all Perfections, with many other such like heavenly Expressions, which indeed belongs only to a glorious personal God, eternally living without me, and not to any spiritual God or Christ, Light or Glory, that is, or may be within me, in the least.

For whilst I groped after Light and Life, only within myself, behold I met with nothing but thick Darkness, and a secret Fear of an everlasting Vengeance ; but since I came really to understand that all the spiritual Godhead is wholly abiding, remaining, or dwelling in the glorified Body of the Man Christ Jesus, and that by the Light or Virtue of his Spirit only, he lives by his redeemed Ones, I have enjoyed much sweet Peace, and pure Hopes of spiritual Glories, in that Life to come, which are eternal.

Moreover, though the Variety of spiritual, or temporal Joy and Glory, be of none Effect to the Creature, without an inward Manifestation of it, yet, when I feel a Want of new and heavenly Consolations, to satisfy my hungry Soul, thro' the manifold Temptations of the Flesh, behold I seek not for it from any spiritual Light or Life that is within me, or within Men or Angels, because, by woful Experience, I certainly know it is not there to be found ; but the Light in me ascends up on high without me, even into the glorious Body of the everlasting

everlasting God-Man Christ Jesus, the Lord both of Quick and Dead, whose spiritual Godhead wholly died with its Manhood, and lived again alone by his own Power, and from thence, from whence alone all spiritual Excellencies proceed, received I divine Satisfaction in this Life, according to my present Necessity, with a full Assurance of a transcendent bodily Glory in that Life to come, at the Resurrection of all the Souls and Bodies of Mankind that are dead, asleep in the Dust of the Earth, when Time shall be no more.

I say again, as aforesaid, that all the true Peace, Joy, or Glory, which the Creature doth or shall enjoy in this Life, or the Life that is to come, proceeds not from any spiritual God or Christ, Light, or Life, or Glory, that is within the Spirits of Men or Angels, in the least; but it flows only from an infinite Fountain of spiritual Glories, which are wholly dwelling in the Man Christ Jesus, that is without them, the personal Majesty, in the Sight of many true Witnesses, visible ascended far above all imaginary bodiless Gods, Heavens, Angels, or Men.

Furthermore, notwithstanding all this, if thou shouldst still imagine, that both our Lights may or will produce eternal Life in us at the last, though we should be at Variance about the Knowledge of the true God and his divine Worship, to our Lives End, I am not of thy Mind. Why? because as there is but only one true God, so likewise I certainly know there is but only one true Light or Worship, appertaining to his glorious Person, which Worship of his is now only spiritual and invisible, suitable to an invisible Glory.

Now thou mayst suppose thou art guided by an inward pure Light, yet certainly know, that instead of spiritual teaching, grounded upon a firm Foundation, thou art in Bondage to outward Forms and empty Declarations, proceeding from Man's carnal Spirit, who, through fleshly Guilt and Loathsomeness of Spirit, with a pretended pure Language and Practice above all other, Pope-like, are violently hurried about, to proselyte the whole World to themselves, which cunningly they endeavour to bring to pass by the Sword

of the Tongue, for Want of a Sword of Steel in their Hand, deluding their own Souls, and many of their Hearers, vainly to imagine, that all Men and Women have so much true Light in them, which will make them eternally happy, if they will.

But the Light in me witnesseth the contrary; for by it I am really informed, that there are select Numbers of Mankind, who, in the free Love of the Creator, were set apart for the Enjoyment of the Light of Life eternal, even before the Foundation of the World was laid.

So likewise, on the contrary, I am fully satisfied against all Gainsayers, that there is a Generality of Men and Women, who, in the Foreknowledge or Purpose of the living God, were ordained to an Estate of Unbelief in his glorious Person, and the spiritual Mysteries of his heavenly Kingdom, that they might everlastingly perish, even for Want of the Light of Life eternally shining in them: So that it is clear to a spiritual Eye, that it is not in him that willeth, nor in him that runneth, but in God alone that sheweth Mercy unto eternal Salvation, or withholdeth his divine Light or Love to himself, unto everlasting Condemnation, as aforesaid.

And who shall be able, in the great Day of Accompt, to look on his Face, and to say unto him, Why hast thou made one all glorious, and another altogether miserable? Woe be unto them that contend with their Maker, by speaking Evil of him and his secret Councils, which they know not, which he hath not revealed to the dark Multitude, nor never will, no, nor to any Speaker that hath handled a Sword of Steel to slay Mankind, or hath defiled his Marriage Bed, under what Pretence whatsoever.

Again, I say unto thee, that the Light in me disowns those Men to be spiritual Commissioners, or Witnesses unto the true God, that say they are guided by an infallible Spirit, through which they speak against all deceivable Preaching or Writings to the People, and yet do the very same Thing.

Moreover, the Light in me bears Witness against all Kind of publick or private Meetings in the World, in a ministerial Way of Worship, as not by a Commission from the Holy One of *Israel*. Why? Because of the great Ignorance I find in them,

them of the one spiritual God, and personal Glory, prepared for his Elect, and bodily Misery ordained for the Reprobate, at the last Day; therefore, as before, I certainly know, that such Men have no Authority from the living God, to prophecy, preach, or speak of heavenly Things to the People, but only from their own lying Imaginations.

Furthermore, I say again, the Light in me bears Witness against those Men that own no other spiritual God or Christ, but what is within the Creature, or within this Creation only, to be for the present in the deepest Darkness of all Mankind, concerning heavenly Things, or that worship the literal Word Light, instead of Jesus Christ, the eternal Word, who alone is both God and Man in one single Person, glorified as aforesaid, whose ever-blessed Body is a fiery glorious Substance, distinct from all Things and Places, that he alone is worthy, may have the Pre-eminency over all, and in all, who above all is worthy, having purchased it from himself, by Virtue of the pouring forth of his Godhead-Life, Blood unto Death, and quickening that divine Life again, in the very same Body that died, into transcendent ravishing Glories, even out of silent Death, or Darkness itself.

Now I am compell'd from undeceivable Experience, to let thee know, that thou hast never heard such a Language of seeming glorious Enjoyment, from any imaginary God or Christ abiding within the Creature only, as I have done; therefore it is not the Words of Men or Angels that can now convince me in the least, that they are in the Truth, unless they are able plainly to declare who or what that God or Christ is, both in his Nature, Form, and Essence, from whence they suppose they enjoy such spiritual Consolation above all others, that are not endued with the same Light.

For as Men's painted Words will not fill the Belly, nor cloath the Back, without Food and Raiment; so likewise an imaginary God of goodly Words, only living within the Creatures, will not satisfy my hungry Soul, without the real Knowledge of a glorious Substance to feed upon.

But peradventure, thou mayst reply and say unto me, that every rational Man and Woman, hath so much true Light in them, that will lead them to the real Knowledge of the true  
spiritual

spiritual God, whereby they may attain everlasting Happiness if they will, by hearkening unto it with a diligent and obedient mind; *Many are called, but few are chosen, for all Men have not Faith:* Wherefore to this I answer, if this thy supposing of all Men possessing spiritual Light in them, were as true as it is false, indeed then there would be no need of any other spiritual God to instruct Mankind but what is within them only.

Again, if every rational Soul were posselt with never so little of Salvation Light in it, how is it possible that it should live and die in Wrath with God or Man, as commonly it doth? What, is Man principally guided in spiritual Things, is it the Light of his own Spirit or another Spirit? Now if you acknowledge it to be the Light of Gods Spirit that bears Rule in the Creatures, what is it then that purifies the whole Man from all Filthiness of Flesh and Spirit, and leads it into Righteousness? Is it the Light or Will of his own Spirit, or of the Spirit of God, as aforesaid? Now if it be the Light of another Man's Spirit, that opens Man's dark Understanding, enabling them, in some Measure, to comprehend the glorious and wonderful Things of Eternity, and not the Light of their own Spirit, as I am certain it is; It is not then in the Power of any Man's Will, at his Pleasure to obey or disobey the Light that is in him, as many Men vainly imagine. But it is the Power of God's Will only by his most blessed Spirit, to persuade Man's Spirit to be willing to yeild Obedience to the Light that he hath freely given him, or sometimes it is his Pleasure to leave him to his own Strength, through which he rebels against the Light that is in him, to the wounding of his own Soul, That he may learn to know, that the Power by the Virtue of which he is persuaded from Eternal Ruin, is not in himself but in the living God that made him, who freely gives the Light of Life eternal, to whom it pleaseth him, but neither can nor will give his Glory to Men or Angels, or to the Light that is in them; why, because the Tree of eternal Life and Glory is not within them, but the Fruit of that heavenly Tree only, as abundantly aforesaid.

Wherefore, *whisber Spiritual Obedience, Praise or Glory belongs to the Fruit or to the Tree, Judge ye.*

Now

Now thou mayest know there is a twofold Light in Mankind, a natural and a spiritual, the natural Light comprehends natural Things or Notions only, but the spiritual Light comprehends heavenly Things that are past, present, and to come, and is not ignorant of natural Things neither; for the natural Light enthralls the Soul with fleshly Whimsies, literal Observations, censorious Madnes, and what not.

But the spiritual Light sets the Soul at perfect Liberty, from inward Wrath and outward Rage, carnal Whimsies, or invented Formalities, leading the Soul into all spiritual Loveliness and Peace, to the utmost of its Power, with all Mankind even all its Days, not that it can have any heavenly Communion, with any, but those which enjoy its own Light. What Communion hath Light with Darknes, or Life with Death; Now in that personal God and his Light declared in this Epistle, I am thy loving Brother in the Flesh and in the Spirit for ever. I do fully expect thy Answer to this Writing, and shall with Patience wait for it, that the true and saving Light may distinguish between the Spirits that set Pen to Paper.

JOHN BEEVE, *One of the Lord's two last Witnesses unto the Foundations of all Truth, and Pen-Man to this Epistle.*

*An* EPISTLE *written by the Prophet*  
 LODOWICK MUGGLETON.

THE Occasion of this Writing, is in Answer to some Objections made against me. The first is, that there is no Power given of God unto Man, to give Sentence of Damnation upon Man for his Wickedness and Blasphemies against God and a true Prophet. In Answer to which, I say, it is recorded in the Old Testament, That he that despised *Moses's* Law died without Mercy; these are the Words of a mortal Man, and where there is no Mercy, there remains nothing but Condemnation or Damnation, which is all one. Again,

is

is it not said, *Jacob have I loved, and Esau have I hated, before they had done Good or Evil*; but this is to be observed, God had appointed them to live to be Men, and two Nations to come out of their Loins; so when they were come to be Men, the one had the Seal of God's everlasting Love in his Soul from his righteous Actions: The other had the Seal of God's everlasting Vengeance from his wicked Actions. Is this any other than Blessing and Cursing, or Salvation and Damnation? And these are the Words of a Man, that had Power from God to set Life and Death before all Men; and this I say, Happy is that Man that hath the Seal of God's everlasting Love in his Soul; and miserable is he, that is sealed up, through the Evil of his own Heart unto eternal Condemnation, which all Men are that have committed the unpardonable Sin, by despising the Teachings of God's Holy Spirit, and blaspheming against it. By this you may see there is a prerogative Power in God, above all Law, to place his electing Love where and in whom he pleases; and to fix his rejecting Power where and on whom he will, without any Motive to it, for the Advancement of his own Glory: For this I say, God will have as much Glory by reprobate minded Men, as he hath by the Elect: For as the one setteth forth his Love and his Mercy, so the other setteth forth his Justice, Power, and Wrath, without which the Glory of God would be quite lost: For Mercy cannot be called Mercy, if there be no Justice to punish Wickedness; take away the one, and you destroy both. He that pleads against this Doctrine and Power opposes an infinite Being; and who art thou that contendest against it? For Infiniteness is above all Law. The Apostle *Paul* hath spoken positively and fully to this Point; which I refer to your Consideration. This Doctrine is owned, I suppose, by the Church of *England*, but is very coldly maintained; for I don't remember I have heard it preached to any Purpose in my Time. And now I shall return to my first Proposition, and prove, in the second Record, that Power was given unto Man to give Sentence of Damnation upon all such as refuse to believe, or rather despise the Doctrine of the Apostles. For it is said: *He that believes and is baptized shall be saved, and he that believes not shall be damned.*

Is not this a positive Sentence of Blessing and Cursing, of Salvation and Damnation? And these were Men who pronounced it; and this Power was given to the Apostles when the Keys of Heaven and Hell were given to Peter. These Keys were the Gospel of Jesus, by which they opened the Hearts of all such as had Faith in their Doctrine to Salvation; and to shut the Gates of Heaven upon all such as despised and persecuted it unto Condemnation. This was opening the Gates of Hell in the Hearts of all despising, blaspheming spirited Men that villifye God's Prophets, Apostles and Saints, when Salvation is offer'd to them, by calling them Blasphemers, Liars, Hereticks, and their Doctrine false Delusion, persecuting the Name of Christ afresh, and yet expect to be saved by the same Name which they persecute, this is a Sin not to be repented of, and will never be forgiven. This I speak of Men that had their Commission from Heaven given of God by Voicē of Words, as *Paul*, and *Moses*, and several of the Prophets had; and he that speaks Evid or persecutes a false Prophet, will do the same by a true Prophet, for he knoweth not who is false and who is true, and all Persecution is of the Devil, and will be punished with eternal Death; as well he that persecutes a false Christian, as he that persecutes a true Christian.

*Note*, The same Power that was given to God's chosen Messengers in the two past Records, the same Power was given to his two last Witnesses in this third and last Record that God will bare to this World, and which will last to the End of the World; and that Ministry that hath not Power to bless Men for their Faith and Obedience to God, and to curse Men that are disobedient to the Teachings of his Holy Spirit in his chosen Messengers is not of God.

The next Objection I shall answer is, these Sayings in the Scriptures where the Devil was cast out of the Man that had an unclean Spirit, and suffered to enter into the Hind of *Sauve*: But first I shall endeavour to discover the right Devil from the imagined Devil, which Man hath created to affright himself with all, how fain would Men have a Devil distinct from himself: But there is no such Thing, the right Devil is the Seed or Spirit of Reason in Man, from whence the Imagination



gination flows which was first seated in *Cain*, and runs in the Line of his Seed to the End of the World, therefore *Cain* is branded with the Title of a Devil, and *Judas* was a Devil, and those Jews that pleaded they had *Abraham* to their Father. Christ tells them, they were of their Father the Devil, which was a Murderer and a Liar from the Beginning and his Work they would do, and so they did, for they crucified him, and put him to Death. These were all Men Devils, and I can find no other Devils mentioned in Scripture. *Esau* was a Devil, and would have murdered his Brother *Jacob*, had not his Mother by the Revelation of Faith sent him out of the Way. Now observe, it is said, all Evil is of the Devil, not only actual Evil, but all such Evils as are Incident to the Nature of sinful Man, for by Sin came Death; and Diseases being the Forerunner of Death, these are the evil Spirits or Devils that Christ cast forth of Men, that were afflicted with them, and the Man out of whom the unclean Spirit was cast, was a lunatick Person, and was distracted in his Senses, as may be seen by his Breaking of Chains, so that by his raging Madness, his Strength was doubled to him; and Christ commanded this unclean Spirit to come out of him, whereby his Senses were restored, and he became in his right Mind as before this unclean Spirit, Devil or Disease took Place in him, and went away praising or giving Glory to God for his Mercy toward him, so likewise Christ cast out the Fever. Now I would not have Men think that Christ cast out a Spirit, an Existence in itself distinct from the Body of Man; for there is no such Thing as Spirits without Bodies, for Spirit and Body is one inseparable Being, and cannot be parted from its own Body; and as to the casting out this unclean Spirit, Christ by his commanding Power, caused this Spirit or Disease to cease and have no longer Power in him; for he became whole and in his right Mind: And as to the Devil or Disease entering into the Herd of Swine, I affirm the Devil did not enter into Hogs, for there were no Hogs in that Country, but Hogs the People, and they abhor Swine's Flesh, for the Swine the Devil entered into, were Men of a brutish, swinish Nature, a stubborn, un-

governable,

governable, unruly People, that would neither be obedient to the Law of God nor Man, but always resisting the Power of Christ, when he was upon this Earth, as you may see, where they accused Christ of casting out Devils by *Beelzebub*, the Prince of Devils; and these unclean Spirits that entered into them, arose out of their own Souls or Spirits; for Soul and Spirit is all one. And it is said, they run down a steep Hill into a Sea or Lake, and were drowned: Now this Sea or Lake was not a Sea or Lake of natural Waters, neither was that Hill a Hill of Earth; but it was the Worship of the Law of *Moses* was that Hill they are said to run down; for these *Gadareans* were a zealous People in the Worship of the Law; and those high and lofty Imaginations they had of that Worship, was that steep Hill; for that Worship was esteemed as a Mountain, overtopping all other Worships; and this was that high Mountain the Devil tempted Christ upon, where he shewed him all the Glories of the World; and these Waters were spiritual Waters, wherein they were choaked or drowned: For the Testimony that Christ did bear, in declaring the Gospel of Peace, and the Miracles he wrought, and with the lunatic Man's declaring him to be the Son of God, it took away or destroyed their Peace they had in the Worship of the Law; so that no true Hope of Salvation remained in them: Thus they may be said to be drowned in the Fears of eternal Death; these were those spiritual Waters they were drowned in.

Again, I never read, that Christ destroyed any Man in his temporal State, while he was upon this Earth: He came not to destroy, but to save Sinners. I wonder that Men should be so dark in their Imaginations, to think that the Devil entered into Hogs. Were not all Things made for the Use of Man, and to support him with Food whilst he is in a State of Mortality, and so to end and be no more? The Beasts cannot sin, nor be tempted of the Devil, nor suffer eternal Torments: It is the Devil and his Angels, or his angelical Seed of wicked reprobate Men, that will be cast into Hell-Fire at the End of Time. And now observe; this lunatic Man is said often to frequent, or have his Dwelling amongst the Tombs: These Tombs signify a Burying-Place or Church-Yard, near unto

which might be an Assembly of People to be instructed in the Worship of the Law of *Moses*; and for their Unbelief, and despising Christ's Power and Miracles, they are called a Herd of Swine; for they were many in Number; and those Herdsmen were their Teachers, which went to the City and told what was done, which brought a Fear upon them; so they came humbly to Christ, and besought him to depart their Coasts. Again, it is said, *Cast not your Pearl before Swine*: It is not meant, cast not natural Pearl before Swine; but those Pearls they were forbid to cast before Swine, were those Salvation-Secrets that tend to Mens everlasting Happiness; these are those Pearls such swinish Men are not worthy of. Thus, if your Eyes are opened, you may see something into the spiritual Meaning of those Scripture Sayings.

And now I shall discover the Devil Man hath created out of his lying Imagination of his own evil Heart. This Devil is a Spirit without a Body, and hath no Form of his own, but borrows some other Form to represent himself in; for he can assume what Shape he pleases; he can whip into a Man, and tempt him to all Manner of Evil, which once committed, he can whip out of him again, and leave the Man to suffer for his Sins; he is invisible, and yet visible; he is in Hell-Fire, and yet out of the Fire; he is chained, and can go no farther than God suffers him; and yet at Liberty, and can tempt Millions of Persons at the same Time: He is a Monster of a Devil; for he hath Horns and never a Head to place them upon; he hath Wings, and never a Body to fix them to: I have seen him represented with Claws to tear and torment People with, but still hath no Body of his own. This is the Devil Man hath made to affright himself withal.

The next Thing I insist upon is to distinguish a true Minister from a false, which I have in a Measure explained before, as thus; a true Minister is one that God hath chosen and fitted for his Purpose, by inspiring him with the Revelation of his Holy Spirit, and then giveth him a Commission to go forth in this World, to propose Terms of Salvation or Condemnation to his People. Thus he is made Christ's Ambassador, and is empowered to set Life and Death before all Men, and this Power is blessing all such as believe, and are obedient to his  
Doctrines

Doctrine or Declaration to them, and a Curse upon all such as refuse to believe or rather despise it: For God doth not come now into this World himself to treat with his People, But giveth Power to a mortal Man to be a Prophet, an Apostle, Minister, or Ambassador of God, the King of Heaven; as the the Kings of this Earth do to their Ministers. And these commissioned of God, stand in God's Stead, and represent the Person of God the King of Heaven, as an earthly King's Minister doth represent his Person and Power, and such Men are true Ministers of *Jesus Christ*, and happy are those Men that are made obedient to them, and miserable are all such as despise their Declaration.

A false Minister is such a one as may be distinguished by the Contraries of the foregoing Discourse, that hath no Commission from *Jesus Christ* by Voice of Words, spoken from Heaven to the hearing of the outward Ears, but counterfeith a Commission from the Letter of the Scriptures; but have none of the Spirit that declared them, nor no Authority from God. Some of them justify themselves by the Authority of the national Power, and if this will serve their Turn at the last Day, it is well with them. Others think the Letter, which was other Mens Words, that had their Commission from Heaven, to be as good a Commission as that of the national Power; And if this will bare them out, it is well with them also; others think themselves as good Ministers as those before mentioned from the Light within them, these are the People called Quakers; but this Light I know to be only the Law written in their Hearts, which no Man can keep, therefore serves only for Condemnation. So that when all those Ministers comes to plead in their Hearts and say, Lord we have preached in thy Name, prayed in thy Name, cast out Devils, and done wonderous Things; their Answer will be, Go ye Workers of Iniquity, I know you not, I sent you not. Thus you may see God will not own them, because he did not send them; there are some of the Ministers have got away of whining and toning in their preaching, as if their Words had not the same Meaning, without toning as with it. Again, they shall repeat one Word or short Sentence, three, four, or six Times together.

Thus

Thus they go on, till they have filled their Noddles, topful, and when they have tired themselves and their Congregations, then they depart, and in half an Hour or an Hour's Time, their Sculls are as empty as before they came together, and if they talk together as they go Home, they shall admire their Teacher, he is a precious Man, a great Gift in Prayer, a sound Preacher. These are such as by their canting Language climb into the Hearer's Affections, empty their Pockets, and fill their Heads and Hearts with Nonsense. It was my Chance to hear a Clergyman say, if he had a Horse or any other Goods to expose to Sale, and if this Horse was all over Faults he was not obliged to discover any Fault at all, except it was demanded of him to discover them, to which I agree; by the Laws of the Land, he may conceal them; but by the Law of *Moses*, which is the Law of God, by which the Law of the Land is made, I can find no Justification for Man to deceive his Neighbour by Concealment; but because Men can find no positive Words to forbid this Deceit, therefore Men justify themselves in it; yet the Law is good, and doth not allow any Man to be deceived by his Neighbour, and he that lives by over-witting or any wordly Deceit, will be found to deceive himself; if Man was not corrupt in his Nature by Sin or Evil, which is of the Devil, he would abhor such Deceit in himself, and not encourage it in others. There is a new Law given, which is to do as ye would be done unto; and I believe no Man is willing to be deceived or wronged in any Kind; and if this Man had instructed Men in the Christian Law, I should have approved of it much better. This Law of Christ saith, love your Enemies, do good to them that hate you, and evilly intreat you; and such Men that seek to pervert the Law of Christ, or Christian Law, are rather to be esteemed Ministers of Deceit, than true Christian Ministers: Men are apt enough to take this Liberty to deceive their Brethren, although it disturb their Consciences; therefore they need not be encouraged in it.

He that peruses this Writing, and considers it in his own Mind, may see that God doth give Power unto Man, to judge, and give Sentence upon Men, of Salvation or Condemnation,

demnation, according to their Obedience or Disobedience to God and a true Prophet. Likewise he may see, that the Evil that arises out of a Man's Soul, is the Devil, and no Spirit without hath Power to tempt him to any Evil. Again, he may see, that he that takes upon him to be a Minister of *Jesus Christ*, and hath not a Commission from Heaven, as *Paul* had from God's own Mouth, I say, he commits spiritual High Treason against God, and will be punished with everlasting Death for so doing, if he continues in it.

LODOWICK MUGGLETON.

---

*An* PPISTLE of JOHN REEVE to his  
*loving Friend* Christopher Hill.

*Brother Hill, in the Eternal Truth,*

**M**Y Love to you and the Rest of our Friends. This is a spiritual Love Letter that I am moved to write unto you, wherefore by Virtue of my Commission I pronounce thee *Tbo. Martin, William Young, and Eliz. Wyles*, the Blessed of the Lord to Eternity; the Remembrance of this the Lord's Blessing, will do you no harm when I am in my Grave; in the mean Season, our good God cause you to love one another more than your temporal Enjoyments, and that will become a Heaven upon Earth in your innocent Souls; Faith fetcheth spiritual Comfort, the Fountain to each particular Soul; but Love fulfilleth all Righteousness both to God and Man. Oh! the transcendent Excellency of the Love of Christ in his new-born People, it is not to express'd by the Tongues of Men or Angels.

JOHN REEVE.

*A Copy*

*A Copy of a LETTER wrote by the Prophet JOHN REEVE to Mrs. Alice Webb, containing her Blessing, and the Six Principles, on August 15, 1656.*

*Loving Friend,*

**D**ESIRING your Eternal Happiness in that Place of Glory above the Stars, I am moved from the Spirit of the Lord to write these Lines unto your serious Consideration.

This I know as sure as God knows himself, that *Jesus Christ* from his Throne of Glory spake to me by Voice of Words three Mornings together, which Speaking of his hath opened my dark Understanding to declare such spiritual Light to the Chosen of God, as never was so clearly manifested before, especially in these six Foundations.

*First,* What the Person of the true God is, and his Divine Nature.

*Secondly,* What the Persons of the holy Angels are, and their Nature.

*Thirdly,* What the Persons of the Devils are and their Natures, and what the Person of the Devil was before he became a Devil, and begot Millions of dark Angels or Devils, it being all one.

*Fourthly,* In what Condition the Man *Adam* was created in, and by what Means he lost his first Estate and the Effects of it.

*Fifthly,* What Heaven and Glory is, and the eternal Residence of it.

*Sixthly.* What Hell and eternal Death is, and the Place where it shall be to Eternity.

This

This I know certainly, That before the Lord sent me to declare his Pleasure unto his People, no Man upon this Earth did clearly understand any one of these six fundamental Truths, which to understand is Life eternal, and to be ignorant of them is Death eternal. Now the Lord hath sent his two Messengers to declare them, I mean, to all those that may be informed in these spiritual Things, and do reject us (that are the Lord's Messengers of these Things of Salvation) through the Love of carnal Things, they must all perish to Eternity.

Again we know from the Lord by that infallible Spirit that he hath given us, of divers Persons that shall be eternally blessed with us: and all that we pronounce Curled to Eternity, are eternally Curled, as sure as *Jesus Christ* the Lord of Life is Blessed, because it is his Curse and not ours.

Again, if the Lord Jesus do not bear Witness unto our Testimony, and make it evident that he hath sent us in a few Months, than you may conclude, that there never was any true Prophets nor Christ, nor Apostles, nor Scripture spoken from the Mouth of God to Men. But there is nothing but the Wisdom of Men and Nature their God. But this we know, that those that are joined with us, are Partakers of those Truths, and shall be blessed for evermore, and shall in the mean Time patiently wait for the fulfilling of our Prophecy, and shall have Power over their Thoughts, Words, and Deeds, purifying their Hearts by Faith in the Person of God even as he is pure, trampling all the Riches and Honour of this World, under the Feet of their Souls as Dung, because they have tasted of that Glory to come, that no Tongue of Men or Angels can express, and this makes them not only love one another in carnal Things, but for the Truth's sake they are ready if (need require) to forsake all Relations, and Life itself for one another, and is that Power of that one only Faith and Truth, declared from the Spirit of God, the Man Jesus by us, which none enjoys but those of this Faith.



Much more might I write, but speaking Face to Face, (if it may be) is far more profitable : *Farewell.*

**JOHN REEVE**, *the true Propbet, of the only true Personal God, the Lord Jesus Cbrist upon the Throne of immortal Glory in the bigbest Heavens.*

*An* **EPISTLE** *of* **JOHN REEVE** *to a Friend, written in May, 1657.*

*Shewing,*

**T**HAT Elect Angels are distinct from him who visibly beheld him Face to Face ; and what that reprobate Serpent-Angel was in his Creation, which by the secret Council and unsearchable Wisdom of God, fell from his created Glory like Lightning from the invisible Heaven above, to this visible Earth beneath ; and through his super-seeming God like Counsel, he overcame innocent *Eve* ; and she yielding unto him, he wholly entred into her Womb, and naturally changed himself into her Seed, and so became the first-born Son of the Devil, and afterwards a cursed *Cain*, and the Father of all those *Cananitisb* Reprobate Angels, spoken of in the visible Records of the Scriptures ; *Not as Cain, who was of that wicked one, and slew his Brother, the 1st of John, the 3d Chapter, and 18th Verse. And the Tares are the Children of the wicked one, Math. 13th Chapter, and the 18th Verse.* Also in what Condition *Adam* was created in, and how he came to fall from his created Estate, and what that Sin was that *Eve* and he were guilty of, and how Sin came first in their pure created Natures.

Again, what that heavenly Glory is and where it is, that God's Elect Wheat, which are the Seed of *Adam*, and not of *Cain* shall possess when time shall be no more, and what that shameful Eternal Death is, and where it is reserved for the Seed of *Cain*, and not of *Adam*, who are either a Spirit given  
up

up to persecution of Men's Consciences, or else they are left in Darknes to condemn the Things of Eternity, because they cannot comprehend them for want of a true distinguishing Spirit, which is a Gift of the Holy Ghost, unto him which is immediately sent by the Lord of Glory, that he may be distinguished by the new born of God, from all those counterfeit or deceived Preachers or Speakers in the World, who are apt and ready to judge Men in Darknes, if they soberly ask them needful Questions concerning things of Eternity; the understanding of those glorious Excellencies, which is the Saints Inheritance, being utterly hid from them, because they went before they were sent.

*Friend and Brother in the Eternal Truth,*

By this infallible Demonstration, you may know a Man that hath not a Commission from the true God, to preach and speak unto the People.

If a searching Speaker or Writer, deliver any thing unto those People that joyn with him, then for fear of his Weakness or Ignorance being discovered, he will counsel the Hearers to stick close to the Ordinances in the Word of God, or to hearken to them, or to that in their Consciences, and to beware of false Christ's and false Prophets, and such like borrowing Scriptures Languages, to prevent the People of ever hearing the Glorious and dreadful Things of Eternity from the ever-living God, revealed both by Voice of Words without, and Inspiration within, unto his two last despised true Messengers.

Thus it is clear, they have not the true Spirit of *Paul* in them, who gave the true Saints Liberty to try all Things or Opinions of Men, (for that was his Meaning) but to *bold fast to that which was good.*

Again, that Speaker or Preacher to People, whether publick or private, that declares against all Appearances that are contrary to his Way, discovers himself to a discerning Spirit not to be of the Lord, unless he can demonstrate a Spiritual Commission received by Voice from Heaven, from the Mouth of the Lord Jesus Christ, so that no Man can disprove him, though few from a true Understanding received him.

Again, he that preaches or teaches only of a God or Christ in Men's Consciences, doth he not question the Scripture Records concerning the Resurrection and Ascension of the glorious Body of the Lord Jesus Christ, who through Faith in his invaluable Bloodshedding, the Consciences of the Elect being sprinkled, are purified from the Power of all Unrighteousness of Flesh and Spirit, and so doth he not question the Resurrection of Mankind after Death.

Again, if after Death there be no bodily Resurrection for the Spirit to possess an immortal God like Glory, or to suffer an eternal Devil-like Shame, according to their Deeds done in their Bodies; is it not one of the vainest Babblings under Heaven, for Men to talk of a God or Christ, or of Righteousness, or Purity, or Mercy, or pure Love without Envy, or of any Spiritual Excellency whatsoever, unless it be for Gain or Glory amongst Men.

The eternal Spirit and alone everlasting Father, which essentially reigneth in the glorified body of our Lord Jesus Christ his eternal Son, and spiritually, and motionally; or virtually liveth or reigneth in elect Men and Angels, bear Record between me and you for Everlasting, or World without end, whether this Witnessing be not sent unto you, and all the Elect that shall view it principally for the re-establishing of your tender Spirit, upon that spiritual Rock of all Ages, the Lord Jesus God and Man, in one distinct Person Glorified and everlastingly Honoured, with all Variety of Spiritual new Songs and Praises, from his Redeemed or Elect Men or Angels, when all Time or Times is swallowed up into Eternity or Eternities.

JOHN REEVE.

*Another*

*Another* EPISTLE of JOHN REEVE'S

S I R,

**Y**OUR Replication to mine doth but still harp upon the same Matter as your former, and yet you suppose you have given such Arguments as may quite silence my former Assertions, were that there are no Spirits without Bodies, but such as mere Shadows and that God is not a bodiless Spirit, but hath and ever had Form, Substance, and Shape, and that is no other but the Form of a Man.

This is Contradicted by you, and so you affirm these Particulars following.

*1<sup>st</sup>*, You take at those my Words which said, that if a Spirit have no Body or Shape, then it is no more than a meer Shadow: This you deny, by saying, that a Shadow is only privative, but a Spirit, say you, is positive.

*2<sup>dly</sup>*, You further say, that there is such immaterial Substances, which have a separate Existence from such gross Bodies which we have about us; witness say you the Soul of Man, which is immaterial, and lives after the Body is dead, which is, say you, confirmed by *Paul*, *2 Tim. i. 10.* which saith, that the *Gospel brings Life and Immortality to Light.*

*3<sup>dly</sup>*, This Doctrine, say you, was known by the Light of Nature to the Heathen Philosophers, and hath since been confirmed by Scripture of the New Testament to us, and so conclude it no ways repugnant to right Reason.

*4<sup>thly</sup>*, You charge me with quoting the Scripture falsely, when I said, that Christ reply'd to the young Man, saying, *That no Man was good but one, which was God*; therefore say you it is false that the Scripture saith, that God is a Man.

To

To each of these take this particular Answer, 1. If your Spirit have neither Shape nor Substance, it is but a Shadow and no more than what the *Egyptians* Sorcerers produced before *Pbaraob*, what *Moses* brought up were real Substances, but their's no other but Shadows, but therefore a Spirit without Substance is not positive, for that which is privative can have no Being without a positive, because that which is positive hath a Being or Substance: Now he that will not admit God to have a distinct Being of himself, his God that he worships is nothing but a Shadow.

2dly, Where you speak of Spirits being immaterial Substances; if they be immaterial, how are they Substances, and what Existence can they have, and how can a Soul be immortal in a mortal Body; it is said, *the Soul that Sins, it shall die*; yet you, it is immortal and cannot die, and would prove it in 2 *Tim.* i. 10. when as that Place shews plainly, that it was Christ's Death and Resurrection which *brought Life and Immortality to Light*; so that if there be not a Resurrection, then can there be no immortal Life.

Therefore it is, that the Scriptures doth affirm, that there can be no Salvation without a Resurrection, so that if the Dead should not rise, then were all Faith vain, and God the God of the Dead (seeing Death is not abolish'd) and not of the Living; so that there is no Spirit that can subsist or have any Existence without a Body, either Spiritual or Natural.

Again, doth not the Gospel *bring Life and Immortality to Light*, and is this Life and Immortality brought to Light without a Body, but it will have a Spiritual Body suitable to that mortal Spirit made immortal. And doth not the Scripture affirm, that it shall have a Body like unto God's own glorious Body, and yet you say, God hath no Body, and a Soul hath no Body.

Do you not read also, that Christ had a Body, and that it was after the *express Image of his Father's Person*: Would you trace substantial Truth into an Allegory, and say Righteousness, Knowledge, and Holiness is the Image of God, and yet must have no Body to act forth itself in. When God said, *be ye body,*

*body, as I am body,* must we turn our Souls out of our Bodies, to make them like your bodiless God.

When we are said to worship God in Spirit and Truth, is this spiritual Worship performed without a Body, although there is a Mental, Privy, and Praise without a vocal Expression, yet it must arise from a Heart, and that Heart must be placed in a Body.

There is no Light without a Sun, no Stream without a Fountain, and no Spirit without a Body.

*3dly,* As to your third Particular, this I must tell you, that no Light of Nature can discover Spiritual and Evangelical Truths, and it is very gross for any Man to subject the Spiritual Truths of the Gospel, to the heathenish Principles of Philosophers, making the New Testament no other but for the Confirmation of the Principles of Nature, which Nature you call right Reason, which say, you never repugns the Gospel, nor the Gospel it.

By this your Discourse I find, that you own that Christ came, but to confirm the heathenish Principles of Nature, as, that God, and Spirits, and Angels, were all without Bodies, being immaterial Beings, and you know not what.

Now give me leave to be plain with you, and to tell you, that I could never read that the Gospel of Christ was ever sent to enlighten Nature, Nature or Reason hath no Interest in it at all. In the moral Law it hath, and therefore it is written, *the Law came by Moses*; and what to do, but only to enlighten Reason unto whom the Law was given: But as to the Gospel, *it came by Jesus Christ*, and particularly belonged to another Seed; namely, *to the lost Sheep of the House of Israel*; so that you can no more distinguish between the Law and the Gospel than between the two Natures of Faith and Reason it is all a Mystery to you. Do you know what right Reason is, if you do, you must ascend up into the Kingdom of Heaven, and view it in the holy Angels; for you will not find neither pure, nor right, nor uncorrupted Reason any where in this Orb below the Stars: For it is evident that Reason's Notion can never be capable to comprehend Spiritual Truths, as from the Power of its own Nature, it only serves to comprehend natural and temporal Things,

Things, it being but natural itself; but Gospel Truths are comprehended by another Light, according as it is written by *David* saying, *in thy Light shall we see Light*, &c.

So that from what is said, we need not fear (as the World have) of the Heathens rising up in Judgment against us, for maintaining Gospel Truths against their Darknefs of Reason.

4thly, As to your fourth Point, where you charge me of fathring upon the Scripture those things that are not, and you make a Wonderment of it, that I should say, that God was a Man, and to quote Christ's Words for it, telling the young Man, *that there was no Man good but one, which was God*, this you tell me was false, for you say, the Text saith that *none is good but one, which is God*. Here your Ignorance appears very great, and may be wonder'd at considering your great Learning and continual Study; but it appears, it is but in those heathenish Philosophers; for observe for better Instruction, did not that young Man call Christ Master, and own him to be a Man and no more: Now to this you may find that Christ's Answer did tacitly imply, that if he was but a Man, he was not perfectly good, and that no Man could be perfectly good.

And furthermore for a more full Answer in the Old Translation, attending to mark it, is render'd thus Word for Word *that there is no Man good but one, which is God*.

This is plain Scripture, and yet you are ignorant of it; I perceive you are not very conservant in Scripture, your Philosophy turns you out of all Scripture knowlege. But to proceed farther, cannot you find by Scripture that God was ever called a Man, did not you ever read that Scripture that saith, *God was a Man of War*.

Much more might be said of this, and several positive Proofs from Scripture might be produced to confirm it withial, but because it is not the general received Opinion, therefore it must be quarrell'd with; for the Honour of this World must be both sought after and submitted to.

And whereas you farther say, that the Apostles of Christ did ever teach after they had received their Commission, that Spirits were immaterial and could subsist without Bodies, now answer to this:

It is most certainly evident, that the Apostles never taught, that any Spirit could subsist without a Body, but the contrary altogether; for their Doctrine was, that as the Soul and Body lives together, so it dies together, and at the Last Day rises together, and is ever without Separation.

When the Apostles said, *That many Spirits were generate into the World, which denied that Christ was come in the Flesh*, did he mean Spirits without Bodies: And when Paul said, *that the Spirit speaketh expressly, that some shall depart from the Faith*: Now what Spirit was that, but Paul's own Spirit of Faith, in his own mortal Body; for without a Tongue it could not be expressed.

And where the Apostles tells of the Doctrine of Devils were those Devils bodiless, and taught damnable Doctrine?

So that the Apostles never taught that there was any Spirits without Bodies, but always Spirit and Body went together, and so makes Longitude and Latitude profoundly, as your Philosophical Notions teacheth, although you cannot apply it to any sublime or spiritual Thing, you knowing nothing of it but all is nothing and of no Substance; and so in that your Darknes I leave you, seeing you are no Friend to the Light; and rest yours in all civil Respects,

**JOHN REEVE** *the only true Witness unto the very true God, amongst many pretended Spiritual Messengers in this confused Age.*



*An Epistle wrote by the Prophet JOHN REEVE  
to ISAAC PENNINGTON, Esq; dated 1658.  
concerning an Answer to a Book of his, with  
several Mysteries and Divine and Spiritual  
Revelations declared by the Prophet, concer-  
ning God's visible appearing in the Flesh.*

**I**N your Self-return, you seem to mourn over the sunk Spirit of both Creations, so termed by you. Also you write as though many from a satanical Spirit write most accurately, both of the Works of Creation and Mystery of Redemption by an immediate Gift of God from our Lord Jesus Christ. To this I answer, a little Season will produce Mourning enough in you, when you shall see your angelical Motions like Lightning, cast down with Confusion of Fear, from their former Perfection of imaginary Glory, rational Dreams and Visions, Revelations, Inspirations, Experiences, or Voices proceeding from an incomprehensible Spirit.

Again; I have both read and heard a Voice to say, that the Secrets of the Lord are his choice Treasures, reserved only for Redeemed ones; but I never read or heard from any spiritual wise Man before now, that any satanical Spirit was able to intellect deceived Persons, exactly to write of the hidden Mysteries of the Everlasting God. Again, you pretend unto no such Revelations as I proceed upon, but say you, there is another Way more certain than Reason or Revelation, which whether as I presume you were led into, the Lord will one Day make manifest, from the true Light of Life Eternal. To this I answer, your Light as terming of the true Inspirations of the Lord Jesus Christ, written by me to you, is because as yet his Holy Spirit viels them from your Eyes; but as for your new Sound of teaching them from your God, more certain than Reason or Revelation; from the Divine Voice spoken in the Ear, through the glorious Mouth of my Lord.

I de-

I declare that in all Ages the Elect lost Shee p. of *Israel*, did never read or heard of any more than two original Ways either natural or spiritual in Mankind, whether you call them Creature or Creator, Light or Darkness, Truth or Error, Revelation and Reason, Inspiration and Imagination, Truth and Unbelief, Flesh and Spirit, and such like.

'Tis confessed, that visible Appearances of God or any else unto Mortals is teaching of all, but he that expects that kind of Teaching any more until Men are immortalized, lieth under at present as great an imaginary Deceit, as ever yet appeared in this Land. It is also granted that the most holy God speaketh to his Chosen Messengers by Voice of Words, even to the hearing of the Ear unto which Truth for Ends best known unto himself; by his gracious Power only, can bear Record in this present Generation, unto the Grief only of all angelical Wife, envious, proud, inglorious, hypocritical Reprobates that hear of it.

Moreover if your more sure Way of teaching from God were Vision itself, yet it is impossible for you to enjoy any true and lasting Peace, unless it swallows up all your former Writings produced from your own Spirit, without an immediate Commission from God, and in the Room thereof, persuade your Soul to pour in your Oil, into the natural Wounds of oppressed Persons, under what Opinions or Appearances whatsoever.

Again, you say, O Lord God, pity the Captivity of Man, yea, pity the Captivity of thy own poor Seed, hear the Prayers of that Spirit that interceedeth with thee for every Thing, not according to any fleshly Imaginations, but according to Truth and Righteousness of thine own Ballance. From the God of Truth, to this I answer, concerning that spiritual Captivity of the Elect, in Reference of a right Understanding of the Creator, you need not trouble yourself about that, unless you think through much importuning the unchangeable God, may be persuaded to loose their Bonds before the decreed Time thereof; but if you think that Glory of God's eternal Love towards them, will provoke to their spiritual Darkness through the invisible Appearances of his own pure Light, then you

may know, until his own glorious Season, that all the Desires of Men or Angels are of no Effect, no nor of the Son himself, if you imagine a Father besides. 'Tis confessed, when the Time draweth near of some great Deliverance of the Chosen of God, usually the Lord provokes his People to cry unto him with Sighs and Groans, which cannot be uttered but from the innocent Spirit of his spiritual redeemed Ones, as his Due, he may receive all Honour, Praise and Glory for their Deliverance out of their natural Darknnesses, unto his marvellous Light.

Again, I declare from the true Light of the true God, that the Spirit which intercedeth with the Creator for all Mankind, upon the Account of his eternal Happiness, was never principled upon a spiritual Foundation of Truth, whatever subtile Expressions of God's righteous Ballance proceedeth from him. Moreover, is it not the new heavenly Glances of Christ Jesus in Man's dark Soul, which upon an immortal Account, becomes all Light, Life, or ravishing Glory in him; and of the contrary, is it not the absenting Voice or Virtue of the uncreated Spirit of the Lord Christ Jesus, that occasions Men's Spirits to be full of satanical aspiring Wisdom about the Creator; and whence think you cometh this to pass, or possible could be of the Spirit, if the Creator were, and Angels were essentially living in one another there.

Again, if your literal Request unto the Lord God, as in Reference unto the miserable Captivity of poor Mankind, lying under the miserable Yoak of unmerciful rich Tyrants, especially over his own innocent Seed or chosen People, then this will most necessarily follow; nay, you cannot deny it, if there be any Light in you, that all your conceived Spiritual Speakings, or Writings, or Prayers, in the great Day of the Lord Jesus Christ, will become but fiery burning Death in you of utter Darknness, according to the true Saying *If that Light in you be Darknness, how great is that Darknness?* Unless as before said, answerable to your Profession of Love unto God, and Pity unto Man, you are a bountiful Reliever of his oppressed Ones, according to his Bountifulness towards you, then mind the Virtues of Christ Jesus thus shining in you, will occasion from the refreshed Bowels

of his own Seed new spiritual Acknowledgments, and a loving Return in the Lord for you, Why? because it is rare to find a merciful rich Man.

*Friend,* I certainly know that if you are one of God's Elect, you cannot be offended with me, for writing the Truth, though at present, I be contrary to you in Spirit. Again, you write that you would beg unto the Lord for me, both with Tears and Blood, and you would speak somewhat concerning me, but you are afraid to open the Spirit before the Season thereof.

*Friend,* As to that if ever the Lord of Life and Glory manifest himself to your Soul, then you will see clearly the Vanity of those Words.

Moreover, if I should tell you, that in the pure Eyes of the Lord Christ Jesus, that one handful of your Silver Tears, are of more Value than a Horse Load of your Tears and Blood, you might account it a very strange saying from me; truly I unfeignedly believe it will be found a principal Truth, when our Lord Jesus Christ shall say in the Day of Judgment, *Come ye blessed of my Father, inherit the Kingdom prepared for you, for when I was hungry, you fed me; Go ye Cursed into everlasting Fire, when I was hungry ye fed me not:* So that without Controversy, there is nothing in Man comparable to Love, Mercy and Forgiveness, even to his greatest Enemies.

Again, it is a marvellous Thing, if you or any other Man, should have a Spiritual Gift to distinguish between divine and diabolical Appearances, and yet defer the Examination thereof to another Season, or did the most wise God ever commission any Man or Angel to make a Discovery of any spiritual Counterfeits, and yet that Messenger remaineth dark in his own Understanding, concerning the Creator that sent him. I remember such a like Scripture Saying as this, *him whom you ignorantly worship, declare I unto you.* Moreover, if the most wise Creator, either visible or invisible by himself or Angel, hath appeared in your Spirit, whereby unto your thinking, I was clearly discovered as a deceived Person among the rest, is it not a strange Thing that you should have Power over that Light above Men or Angels before you, for the Producing of it at another Season, the Creator himself will visible make it manifest, *even so come Lord Jesus Christ, for thy glorious Name-*

*Name sake, come quickly, and in the visible Sight of Men and Angels bear Record whether thy Holy Spirit sent me (as I have declared almost these three Years) or no.* Again, when the Lord made Choise of such a simple poor Man as I was, as many can witness in the City of London, that have known me about these twenty Years, that I might instrumentally discover the two principal Heads of mischievous Darknes in the Land; as namely *John Robins* past, and *John Tawney* almost spent, truly I had no Power in me to put by his Message until another Time; why because (whether you can believe it or no) his Voice was so glorious in me, that it shone as the Sun, and it was of Motion swifter than Thought, and so pleasant to be declared by Tongue; yet for all that Godlike Glory piercing in me, and through me there arose a Desire in me to be eased of that Burden of the Lord committed to my Charge, because of that sharp Sentence that I was to declare against any Man that should despise it; then the Lord spake again unto my Soul, Words of burning Death, of sensible unutterable Darknes, answerable to that *Jonas-like* Rebellion in me, against so great convincing Glory; and truly I was compelled immediately to cry unto him for Deliverance from the Wounds or Anguish of my Soul, that I might presently obey his Word that shined in me with such Light, and Majesty, and Glory in whatsoever it should command me.

Wherefore, *Friend* happy are you if preserved from slighting an Appearance, that is contrary unto your Light, though it strike at the Foundation on which is built all your Spiritual Enjoyments; for alas, you know in the End, all false Lights will be made manifest unto those that possess the true Light of Eternal Life in them; blessed therefore are those, that in Obedience unto the Creator from a purified Spirit are compassionate to all Men, but especially to those innocent Appearances, in the Name of the Lord, though they all differ in their Declaration for them. If there be but one true Messenger from the Lord amongst the rest, they shall as formerly, receive an Angel of God unawares, and with him be Partakers of the glorious Secrets of the everliving God, to their eternal Consolation: For this I know, from the Spirit

of Truth, that those that are left under a Spirit of rejecting and despising of false Appearances, coming forth in the Name of the Lord, they not clearly knowing them to be so, they will as readily despise a true Messenge of the Lord to their eternal Hurt ; wherefore are all those, that neither Honour nor Life itself is dear unto them, but upon an Account of Spiritual Wisdom amongst wise Man, when the Glorious Things of Eternity, though in base Appearance presented unto them, from that Spiritual Rock of all Ages, which is our Lord Jesus Christ, God and Man, is one distinct Body or Person glorified ; for whatsoever Men dream from their imaginary Gods, of two or three Persons, or a vast incomprehensible Spirit, essentially living in all Things and Places ; from an immediate Voice from the highest Heavens, I positively affirm against Men or Angels, that there neither is, nor ever was any other God or Creator, but that God-man Christ Jesus, which was nailed to the Cross, the which Glorious God will one Day visibly appear with his mighty Angels, to the everlasting Terror of those that reject his Person, as to love a Thing for an infinite God to dwell in or to be ; yea this very true God in Opposition to all other Gods, Men or Angels, is already come with his invisible pure piercing Light, to make an everlasting Distinction between the imaginary notional Misteries of Men in rational Darkness, and the spiritual Misteries of his everlasting Kingdom, by true Inspirations from an holy and unerring Spirit. *Even so come Lord Jesus Christ, visibly also according to thine own Word, come quickly. Amen.*

Yours with all the Elect, in that only wise very true God, which in the Sight of Men and Angels visibly appeared in Flesh, and in that very Body of Flesh and Bone, is ascended far above all Gods, Heavens, Angels, or Men, and there to remain until the Resurrection of all elect Things, or the Judgment-Day, whose uncreated Spirit of fiery Love, is all Variety of immortal Crowns of new ravishing Glories, prepared for all those that long for his visible appearing, to make

an everlasting Separation, between the merciful Elect, and unmerciful Reprobate.

JOHN REEVE, *the only true Witness unto the very true God, amongst many pretended Spiritual Messengers in this confused Age.*

---

*And Moses was never buried.*

THE Testimony of the Prophet *Muggleton*, concerning the Death of *Moses*, the first Commissioner from God to the Children of *Israel*, he saith, That *Moses* went into the Mount, and there died, and God raised him again in a Moment of Time, and translated him into Heaven, but *Enoch* and *Elias* were both translated, and did not taste of Death, and God not thinking fit to bury *Moses* by the Hands of the Children of *Israel* under the Earth, because till he had laid down his God-head Life himself, he could raise none from the Grave.

As concerning who gave *John* the Baptist his Commission, whether *Elias*, or Christ, the Prophet *Muggleton's* Testimony is that *Elias* gave it to him from Heaven, therefore saith the Scripture, he came in the Spirit and Power of *Elias*.

*Is There any Evil in the City, and I the Lord hath not done it*; the Interpretation is thus, when a sinful Land committeth all Manner of Sins and Wickedness, which in the committing to them is pleasant, but when God cometh and bringeth the Evil of Punishment, as Plagues, or Fire, or Sword, then he bringeth the Evil upon them.

*An*

---

*An EPISTLE of the Prophet REEVE.*  
Written in the Year, 1656.

**B**LESSED are all those that shall read, or hear this Epistle with a meek Soul, and are kept from judging Things that seem strange at first Appearance, but by sober searching of the Scriptures, compare spiritual Things with spiritual, as those noble born did in the Apostles Time, being made patient to wait the Lord's Leisure, who reveals his Secrets to such only who with a pure Conscience hearken to his Spirit; *He that believeth maketh not Haste.*

In the 6th Chapter of St. *John* 36th Verse, are these Words, *The Words that I speak unto you are Spirit and Life*; and in the 10th, 17th, and 18th Verses, it is thus written, *I lay down my Life that I may take it again: No Man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself I have Power to lay it down, and Power to take it again.* Therefore, that you may increase in your most holy Faith unto your eternal Glory, which are appointed to believe in that distinct glorified Body of the Lord Jesus Christ, the only God and everlasting Father, from the Holy Spirit, I shall shew you wherein that Power did consist of Christ dying and living again.

This his Power was secretly hid in the Truth of his Word speaking. Why? Because the Nature of Christ's Soul within his blessed Body was only one Voice of spiritual Faith and Truth. Therefore, you may understand, whatever he spoke in that Word speaking, was all Power to effect the Thing spoken of. *The Words that I speak unto you are Spirit and Life*, that is, as if Christ should have said, "My Words tend not to Joy in carnal Things that perish, but in the rejoicing in spiritual Things which are eternal; or, as if the Lord should have said, "My Word is all spiritual Light and Love, Meekness, " Patience, with all Variety of immortal glorious Joys beyond " the Comprehension of the Spirit of Men and Angels.



Again, Christ's Words are said to be *Spirit and Life*, because all Spirits in the Creation were made by his Word speaking only : Furthermore, because his Word only, is the original Cause of all Light, Life and Glory in Heaven and Earth, and in Men and Angels ; *I have Power*, said Christ, *to lay down my Life, and Power to take it again*. I declare from the Holy Spirit, none in Heaven and Earth could ever truly speak those Words, but that Man Christ only.

Again, it is as if Christ should have said, " I only have " all Power within my Soul, by a Word speaking, to die " and live again".

Moreover, *Christ Jesus* being Lord of Life and Death, did believe without any Motion of doubting in him, that whatsoever he spoke should come to pass, and that gave a Being to the Thing spoken of, and that made him to say in the 24th of *St. Matthew*, ver. 25. *Heaven and Earth shall pass away, but my Word shall not pass away*.

So that Christ being the only God of all Truth, you may understand that it was his Faith in that living Truth, or Virtue of his Word speaking, which gave him Power to lay down that divine Soul, or spiritual Godhead Life in the Hell of the Grave, and to quicken his spiritual Life again from Death, to reign in immortal Glory to Eternity, in that very Body of Flesh wherein he suffered Death. For I declare, from the Holy Spirit, from that everliving Virtue continually flowing from the former Suffering of God on this Earth, in the Body of Christ, the Tongue of Men nor Angels can never express the Variety of new glorious Joys, the eternal Spirit of God the Father hath in that glorious Garment of Flesh he hath clothed himself withal.

Again that divine Faith of Christ in that living Truth and Virtue of his Word speaking gave him Power over Life and Death, that by his precious Blood shedding, he might purchase from himself the Lordship of the Dead and Quick.

Again, If God had not been able to have made his Soul to die in his Body, and by the living Virtue of that almighty Word of Truth, spoken through his holy Mouth, to quicken a new and glorious Life again, O then would it be impossible for him at the last Day, by the Power of his Word to quicken and make alive, all the Souls and Bodies

of Mankind that are dead asleep, and buried in the Grave

You may understand, that living Virtue of his divine Word of Truth, spoken before he died, was that God, which raised the everliving God from Death to Life again.

Therefore, because the Lord your God liveth, ye which are to live eternally with him with astonishing Wonder and Admiration behold your God, that was absolutely dead and alive at one and the same Time.

Therefore Christ spoke those Words to his Apostles of the Power of Faith, *Matt. xxi. 21.* and *Jesus* answered and said unto them, *Verily I said unto you, if ye have Faith, and doubt not, ye shall not only do what I have done to the Fig-tree, but also if you say to this Mountain, take thyself away, and cast thyself into the Sea, it shall be done;* and in *Matt. xix. and 26.* *But with God all Things are possible,* and in *Gen. xiv.* *Is any Thing hard to the Lord.*

Woe, Woe, Woe therefore, to all that are left under the Power of carnal Reason, that they may ever war against that incomprehensible Power of spiritual Faith and Truth essentially reigning in the glorious Body of the only wise God, your alone Redeemer, which long for his Appearance, which by the almighty Power of his Word speaking of that Substance of Earth and Water, created both Worlds, and all living Forms that in them are, into that Order they appear now to be, whether for a Time, or for Eternity, which also twice changed the Condition of his glorious Form by the almighty Power of the Spirit of Faith and Truth speaking thro' his heavenly Mouth.

Moreover, his divine Godhead died in the Flesh and quickened in the Spirit, not only to redeem his elect lost Sheep of the House of *Israel*, from the bitter Cup of eternal Death, but also to prove his infinite Power and Wisdom of Truth speaking, and for the disproving of all lying Reprobates, which always either in Heart or in Tongue, speak against that glorious Power of their Creator.

You know, that it is a common Thing for them to say, that it is Blasphemy for any Man to say, that *God could possibly die*, with many such like cursed Speeches against incomprehensible Power. And why do atheistical Hypocrites

say, that God could not die? Because of their lying Imagination they cannot comprehend by what Means God should possibly live again if he were dead.

Thus they measure that incomprehensible Power of divine Faith or heavenly Truth, by the narrow Compass of their blind Reason, and bottomless Pit of lying Imagination, which understand nothing of that spiritual Power of true Faith.

And because they are not able to comprehend the spiritual Ways of the Lord *Jesus Christ*, they hate both him and his Elect, and call him a Liar to his Face, both in his Person and in his Word, and in his Prophet, and in his People.

Moreover, because they see no Power in themselves, neither to live nor to die, presumptuously they take upon them to judge the God of all Power over Life and Death, by their no Power at all.

Again, if that God that said, *I have Power to lay down my Life, and Power to take it again*, did not die, and was buried both Soul and Body in the Grave, and after the decreed Time of three Days and three Nights, by a quickening Spirit revive a new and glorious Life again in Despite of Death's Power, then (angelical Reprobate) the following Scriptures were Words of Truth, spoken from the spiritual Mouth of the everlasting God, that sent me to declare this Secret, who did die, but cannot possibly lie; for lying is of a mortal Man, like unto thyself. In the Words of *Isa. lv* and the last Verse, *Because he poured out his Soul unto Death*. In *Psal. 16. ver. 11*. *For thou wilt not leave my Soul in Hell, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see Corruption*. In *Acts ii. 27, 31*. *Because thou wilt not leave my Soul in the Grave, neither wilt thou suffer thine holy One to see Corruption*; he knowing that he before spoke of the Resurrection of Christ, that his Soul should not be left in the Grave, neither should his Flesh see Corruption. *Rom. xiv. 9*, *For Christ therefore died and rose again, and revived, that he might be Lord both of the Dead and and Quick*. In *Rev. i. 17, 18*. *Saying unto me, Fear not, I am the first and last I am he that liveth, and was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore, Amen; and have the Keys of Hell and Death*. And *Rev. ii. 8*. *These Things saith the first, and the last, which was dead and is alive*.

If this Truth be not sufficiently cleared by the Letter of the Scriptures concerning Christ's Soul and Body being both dead and buried in the Grave, and living again by his own Power, I would it were. This I am certain of, that they that deny this Truth, are not only naturally blind, but wilfully also do shut their Eyes, and stop their Ears, and call the Scriptures Lies, because of the Cross of Christ, without which there is no Crown of Glory.

Again, if the everlasting God for a Moment could not have died, and left himself void of all Light, or Life, spiritual or natural (as the Condition of all Mankind is, which are dead asleep in the Dust of the Earth) then he could not possibly have experimentally known the State of the Dead, whether elect or reprobate. Moreover, neither could he possibly, in his Creatureship Condition, be capable of entering into the immortal Glory of his Creatorship again, but by his entering into Death, that he might live again, and upon his glorious Head, instead of a Crown of Thorns, wear a double Crown of eternal Glory.

Again, that he might also shew unto his elect Men and Angels, his almighty Power and unsearchable Wisdom, by quickening an immortal, transcendent, glorious Life, out of Death itself.

Thus the Lord of Life and Death, by suffering all Conditions in his innocent Soul and Body, did purchase, at a dear Rate, from himself, a prerogative Power of being Lord and King over all Conditions whatsoever; and from hence he experimentally knows what immortal Crowns and Glory are most suitable for all suffering Conditions his blessed ones undergo; and, by Virtue of his unspeakable Sufferings at the Hands of *Jewish, Canaanitish* Devils, he knoweth what Measure of eternal Death in utter Darkness is most meet for the Souls and Bodies of all the Sons and Daughters, proceeding from the Bowels of cursed, bloody *Cain*, that reprobate, angelical, old wise Serpent-Devil, and Father of all the Damned; who through the Decree of God, was cast out of Heaven into this World, that he might bring forth his Generation of proud, envious, scoffing, persecuting, wise Serpent-Devils; not only to war against the Lord of Life and the Truth of Holy Scriptures,

tures, but also against his Holy Spirit of divine Faith or Truth, in all the elect lost Sons and Daughters proceeding from the Loins of *Adam*: So that their eternal perishing by the secret Decree of God, being hid from them by his Wisdom, they might justly be damned in themselves from the everlasting Remembrance not only of all their Actions of vain-glorious Hypocrisy, but unmerciful Cruelties.

This will be that gnawing Worm of Conscience which never dieth, and that fiery Curse of the Law, of the Wrath of God in Mens Souls, that never goeth out.†

And so much concerning that everlasting Word of Truth that was spoken by the glorious Mouth of the everlasting God, that Man *Christ Jesus*, upon the Throne of all immortal Crowns of Glory and Majesty, far above all Heavens, Angels, and Men.

*Yours, who love the Lord Jesus, more than this  
perishing World.*

JOHN REEVE.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet  
LODOWICK MUGGLETON, to ANN ADAMS  
of Orwell, in Cambridgeshire, bearing Date  
from London, March the 27th, 1663.*

*My Dear and Loving Friend, Ann Adams, the Wife of Wil-  
liam Cakebread, my Love remembered unto you.*

**T**HESSE are to certifie you, that I came well Home, therefore I thought it convenient to write these Lines unto you, as followeth: First in that thou wast honoured of God to be an Handmaid or Guide unto a Prophet, unto *John Reeve*, when thou wast but in thy Infancy concerning the  
Know

Knowledge of Things of Eternity, but the Seed of Faith which was in you, though it was but small, yet it hath taken deep Root downward in the Heart, and hath brought forth Fruits of Faith and Love upwards; for thou hast and shall find it no vain Thing to receive a Prophet in the Name of a Prophet, and the reward is no less than Peace of Mind here, and eternal Life hereafter in the Kingdom of Glory, let the World esteem of it how they will.

There is one thing which I shall always have a Love to thee for, in that thou wast kept innocent in the Days of thy Ignorance, for that was a Thing which I always did love in myself in the Days of my Youth and Ignorance, and it doth yield me a great deal of Peace, the Remembrance of it now; because the World cannot say justly, that there is any Evil found in me, neither is there any Blot upon my Mind, for I can say truly as the Prophet did in another Cause (where he saith) whose Ox have I stolen, or whose Ass have I taken away; so I can say whose Wife have I committed Folly with, whose Daughter have I deflowered, which is a great deal of Peace to me, and it may be some Satisfaction to all you that are innocent; and for others of the Seed of Faith, which have been guilty in the Days of their Ignorance; for this I would have thee, and all the Seed of Faith to mind, that almost all those that have gone forth upon the Account of Prophets, and Prophetesses, and Speakers of every Sect, they have been for the generality of them guilty of Lust, many of the Baptists and Quakers have been guilty. Therefore impossible they should be Messengers or Ministers of Christ's whatsoever they pretend, yet we the Witnesses of the Spirit can bear with those that have been guilty; but it was always my natural Temper to be more affectionate to that which hath been kept undefiled from their Childhood, and as that Seed of Faith lay secretly hid in thy Nature.

The Declaration of the commission of the Spirit hath brought it forth to publick View; and as Nature hath beautified, thy outward Form or Person, so likewise hath that Grace of Faith beautified thy Heart and Mind, in that your Understanding is enlightened to discern betwixt Faith and Reason, God and Devil, with many more heavenly Secrets which

which is hid from the Eyes of the World; and as thou art Partaker of the like precious Faith with us the Witnesses of the Spirit, so likewise thou shalt be Partaker with us of the like spiritual and heavenly Glory; and the stronger thy Faith is in this Commission of the Spirit, the more bright will you shine in that Kingdom of eternal Joys, where Pleasure will run as a Stream or as a River out of your own Person, and not only so, but you shall see your God Face to Face, of whose Seed and Nature we are, and this will produce those Pleasures that are at his right Hand for evermore.

I thought good to write these few Lines unto thee; not but that I am well persuaded before of thy eternal Happiness, but only that you mayst know that the Blessing of the true Prophet is as if God had blest thee himself; and thy so receiving of it will grow to a perfect Peace here, and to eternal Happiness hereafter.

No more at present but my Love to your Husband, and to your Mother, and Goody *Candy*, as being in the same Faith with you, and your Husband's Brother *Symonds*.

I cannot enlarge, because I have so many Letters to write and other Business to do, because of my long Absence; therefore I shall take leave, and subscribe myself your dear and loving Friend in the true Faith.

LODOWICK MUGGLETON.

My Daughter *Sarah*, and her Husband with other Friends in the Faith, remember their Loves to you, your Husband, and Mother, with all the rest in the Faith with you.

*London, March 27, 1663.*

F I N I S.

**SACRED REMAINS:**  
OR, A  
**DIVINE APPENDIX ;**  
BEING  
**A COLLECTION**  
OF  
**SEVERAL TREATISES,**  
**EPISTOLARY and PUBLICK.**

Originally Written above Fifty Years since,

By the Lord's last Immediate Messenger

***JOHN REEVE.***

AND NOW,

After careful Examination by the most correct Copies,  
communicated for the Consolation and Establishment of the  
Church of Christ, by their Brethren, whose Faith in these,  
and all other his irremandable Declarations, doth (and by  
Divine Protection will) remain unshaken to Eternity.



1. The first part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

2. The second part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

3. The third part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

4. The fourth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

5. The fifth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

6. The sixth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

7. The seventh part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

8. The eighth part of the document is a list of names and addresses.

*QUERIES sent to Mr. Sedgwick,  
by the Prophet Reeve.*

*Courteous Friend,*

**I** Suppose my temporal Condition, in some Measure to you, hath been made known and manifest, through which the *Most High* already hath moved you, these five Years past, to supply my quarterly Necessity: And though you want no Objects of Mercy, yet I shall be constrain'd to visit you upon this Account, until the Creator hath opened some other Way: Therefore if our God see it good, my Desire is, that your Spirit may freely and chearfully act your Charity towards me, that you may have Consolation in the Deed, and I Joy in the *Lord Jesus*, from whom alone all Good proceeds. But passing by the perishing Comforts, suffer me to write unto you about Things of more Concernment, which I am moved to in a querying Way.

*Dear Friend*, Country-man and Brother in the Flesh, O! that I could knowingly say so in the deep Things of the Spirit also, then should I be fully assured, that these following Queries, by Divine Operation, would rather satisfy you, and move you silently to sit down in Peace, than offend you in the least.

1. My first Query is this, *Whether you do knowingly believe Jesus Christ alone, to be both Father, Son, and Spirit, in only one distinct Person glorified?*

2. *Whether any Man can truly demonstrate who or what the living God is against all Gain-sayers, without an immediate Commission from his eternal Spirit?*

3. *Whether it be not spiritual Treason against our Lord Jesus Christ, for a Man to execute the Office of a Prophet, or a Minister of the Gospel, without an immediate Command from his own Majesty?*

4. *Whether any Man that prophesieth, or preacheth, can have any real Knowledge of his own Salvation abiding in him, without an unquestionable Assurance of his own Soul, that the Most High hath anointed him?*

## 2 *Mr. Reeve's Queries to Mr. Sedgwick.*

5. *Whether the Lord's former Embassadors were not all empowered to pronounce a temporal or eternal Glory, or Misery to come, according to the Obedience or Disobedience of those they were sent unto?*

6. *Whether any Man in this Age can be an experimental Speaker of the Counsels of God, without an infallible Knowledge of Divine Mysteries above all other Men in the World?*

7. *Whether a Non-commissionated, or unsent Embassador, or Speaker to the People, upon a spiritual Account, may not be in as much Danger of an eternal Vengeance, as a counterfeit Embassador, upon a natural Account, is of a temporal Vengeance?*

8. *Whether you are fully satisfied against all Gain-sayings, that it was the Spirit of Christ alone, that formerly, or at this Time moved you to preach or speak in a ministerial Way to the People?*

9. *Whether, as your own Faith or Judgment; you do not hold forth to the People, that God alone is the Teacher of his Chosen ones, by the Inspirations of his most Holy and Blessed Spirit?*

10. *And lastly, If the Lord Jesus Christ alone be the only Teacher of his Beloved ones, by the continual Incomes or Enlightenings of his most glorious Spirit; what then are those that acknowledge God alone to be the Teacher of his Saints, and yet in a ministerial Way gather the People together, under Pretence of preaching Christ, or speaking the experimental Movings of his Spirit to them, but Mockers of God, Deceivers of the People, and deadly Enemies to their own true Peace; unless from on High, God bears Witness by infallible Testimonies, in the Spirits of his New-born ones, that he hath sent them by an immediate Speaking to them, from his glorious Throne, as abundantly before said?*

*Now in Obedience to that Commission, which I once receiv'd by Voice of Words, from The One Personal Glory itself, even to the Hearing of the outward Ear, as well as the inward Soul, never having had the least Sound of the Truth of it, in all Love, Meekness, and Humility of Soul, present I these few Queries to your private Meditations, and shall I trust with Patience, wait the Lord's Leisure for his loving Answer in you to these Things.*

June the 11th, 1657.

Yours in the Lord's

Eternal Majesty,

*John Reeve.*

*Mr. Sedgwick's Replies.**Mr. Reeve,*

**I** Am not wholly against *Queries*; they are much used by that caviling and disputing Spirit that is in all Sects, and may be better used by humble Minds, who are inquiring after Truth; but I think they least of all agree with that infallible Spirit which you profess to have.

To the *First Query* I answer, I may say, I do believe what you there express, but it may be not in your Sense: But I choose rather to say, I desire my Faith may not stand in a Form of Words, but in the Power of God.

2. To the *Second* I answer, I know none that do demonstrate who or what God is perfectly or with Power: In Weakness and in Part many do shew who and what he is. *Secondly*, If you mean by [against all Gain-sayers] a confident cleaving to what they affirm without being removed, that is very common: If you mean a silencing or convincing Gain-sayers, it is not yet done by you nor any Man that I know. *Thirdly*, The Commission of the Spirit which you would seem to appropriate is larger than you imagine; for no Man can say *Jesus* is the Lord but by the Holy Spirit, *And there are Diversities of Gifts but the same Spirit*, 1 Cor. xii. 3, 4.

3. To the *Third* I answer, In the general it is true, 'tis Treason only I except against the word [*immediate*] used in this and the second *Query*, being jealous that you do in it and in your Ministry, either deny or veil the Mediator 'twixt God and Man, for Immediate is without a Mediator; for by Virtue of Christ, who is Mediator 'twixt God and Man, and who is the Light of the World, and enlightneth every Man that cometh into the World; *Every Man may minister according to the Gift that is given him*, Rom. xii. *If he have Faith he may speak according to the Measure of his Faith*, Psal. cxvi. 10. *I have believed therefore have I spoken*; or if he have Experience he may speak according to his Experience, Acts iv. 10. *For we cannot but speak the Things we have heard and seen*. Nay, they not only may but ought, 1 Cor. xii. 7. *For every Gift is given to profit with of what Kind soever it be*; and I fear it is the Enemy in you that denies it.

4. To

4. To the *Fourth* I answer, *First*, A Man may have Salvation abiding in him, and yet he not know it. *Secondly*, A Man may have a real Knowledge of Salvation abiding in him, and yet come to lose it. *Thirdly*, A Man may think himself saved when he is lost, and lost when he is saved. There are that have their Lives but shall lose them, and there are that lose their Lives and yet save them. *Fourthly*, He is not sure that knows, but he is sure that God knows that he shall be saved. *Fifthly*, That is not the best Assurance which you call unquestionable, but that which is join'd with Fear and Trembling, especially at this Time. *Sixthly*, A Man may be anointed to the Work of Prophecy, and yet not have Salvation abiding in him. The Spirit of God came upon *Saul* and upon *Balaam*, and they did Prophecy by it.

5. To the *Fifth* I answer, I do suppose they were so impowered, and that every Man, according to the Proportion of Faith in him, hath the same Power: *First*, If he speak Truth temporally, a temporal Punishment or Reward attends that Truth as Men obey or disobey it. And if any Man speak Truth eternal, the Punishment or Reward is eternal, according as it is obey'd or disobey'd, there is Matter of eternal Condemnation in it; but the absolute eternal Condemnation which you declare is not justify'd in my Heart, neither do I see it at all justify'd of any.

6. To the *Sixth* I answer, I do own myself an experimental Preacher, though in very great Weakness and manifold Infirmities: What I do feel or have felt Evil I warn others of, but cannot own an infallible Knowledge of Divine Mysteries above all other Men in the World: If I should it would be great Pride of Spirit in me; and I judge it so in any that assume such Things to themselves. And let me speak my Experience, and desire you to reflect, if you can, upon your own Words, and see what a narrow lofty Spirit runneth in them: High swelling Words none must speak but he that hath an infallible Knowledge of Divine Mysteries above all other Men in the World: And who hath this infallible Knowledge but yourself and your Companion? I can experimentally warn you of that which saith, *I am, and there is none else beside me, I shall not sit as a Widow*, Isa. xvii. 8. Another Experience I have observ'd that you and  
your

your Friend have allowed Preaching by Experience without any such lofty Qualification which you now express, and therefore you yourselves are not true to what you declare.

7. To the *Seventh* I answer, Every one that goes without a Commission, or that goes beyond his Commission, is in Danger of eternal Vengeance; therefore it concerns you and me very much to stand in Awe, to tremble at the Word lest we fall under the Curse for adding to and taking from his Word. I believe some will suffer for running before they are sent, and some for running beyond what they are sent about. But concerning Speaking, I desire you to consider how large a Commission the Scriptures give; *The Heavens declare Day unto Day, and Night unto Night uttereth Speech; their Sound is gone through the Earth, and their Words to the End of the World.* Psal. xix. cxlviii. and cl. 6. *Let every Thing that hath Breath praise the Lord.* All Believers seem to be commissioned. Rom. xix. 9 and 10. *The Word is nigh thee, even in thy Heart, and in thy Mouth, that is the Word of Faith which we preach.* Ver. 10. *With the Heart Man believeth unto Righteousness, and with the Tongue Confession is made unto Salvation.* Therefore the Apostolical Ministry is to continue in the Church in all Ages, and Christ promiseth his Presence with them, and that Ministry, to the End of the World. Matth. xxviii. 20. *And there will be found in the Midst of the great Apostacy, when the Church comes out of Captivity, Apostles and Prophets,* Rev. xviii. 20.

8. To the *Eighth* I answer, That when I did speak formerly, I was as fully satisfy'd, as you are now satisfy'd in your Ministry; neither do I now wholly condemn my former Speaking, but have seen an evil Spirit which got into it; and it was not the least Evil of that Spirit that I did undertake to judge all others.

9 and 10. To the *Two last Queries* I answer, I am of this Faith, that God alone doth Teach his Chosen ones; yet Christ himself taught, and the Apostles taught, and the Prophets taught. You likewise hold the same Faith, and yet you teach, God teacheth by his Son, by his Servants, by his Word, by Afflictions, and in all by his Spirit. For that Charge of Mockers, Deceivers, &c. I shall bear it from you and others, till the Lord plead my Cause. For your Commission received

by Voice of Words I judge it not, but leave it to the Lord. I am exceeding weak, I fear and tremble every Time I Preach ; I rather think that my Mouth may be stopp'd, than that I should hold out Preaching : My Ears and my Heart are open to Rebukes. But this I may say, I Charge my Ministry more strongly and deeply than you do, and yet it stands staggering for ought I know ; if you can knock it down, you will do me a Kindness,

*W. S.*

*The*

*The Prophet's Answer to Mr. Sedgwick's Replies.*

S I R,

**T** I S confess, that subtil Serpents accustom themselves to propound, carnal, curious Queries, to ensnare the Innocent: But it doth not therefore follow, that sober Queries of the highest Moment should offend that Man which hath any true Light in him. Why? Because all such Queries are sent forth by the Spirit of Christ, either for the Trial of Mens Faith and Love to the Truth, or for a Witness against them, when the Secrets of all Hearts shall be opened, for their Ministerial Meddling with Divine Mysteries, without an infallible Light of an immediate Commission from the Lord.

1. *In your first Reply, you write, you may say you do believe what I there express, but it may be no in my Sense. To this I answer, what I there express is none of your Faith, unless you believe it in my Sense; for there is but one spiritual Sense to every Truth that is declared; and what I there exactly wrote in the Letter, is my very Faith in the Spirit, (to wit) That there is no other spiritual God, Creator, or Father, but only within the Blessed Body of Christ Jesus, glorified. For in him dwelleth all the Fulness of the God-head Bodily. His invincible Spirit is the everlasting Father; his visible glorious Body residing in the Heavens, above the Stars, is the eternal Son; his Heavenly Enlightenings in his New-born People is the Holy Ghost. If this be not your Understanding concerning God, as yet my Faith is not your Faith, neither is my God your God. In the latter Part of your Reply, your Words are these: But you choose rather to say, you desire your Faith may not stand in a Form of Words, but in the Power of God. To this I answer, 'tis the Power of God only that enables a Man to speak or write a Form of wholesome Words concerning himself, and the Mysteries of his everlasting Kingdom: But the Reason of Mens Words being so full of Confusion or formless Contradiction about spiritual Things, is because the true Understanding*



ing of his Divine Power is hid from them. For that Man who enjoys a real Comprehension of the Divine Power, being moved to treat of Salvation and Condemnation to his Brethren, is not guided by the Falibility of Supposings or Imagination, but by and infallible Assurance of the Truth of what he speaks, or writes in his own Soul; neither doth this Man want a Manifestation of the Power of them in his Life and Conversation.

2. *In your second Reply, you say, You know none that do demonstrate, who or what God is perfectly, and with Power: But in Weakness, and in Part, you say many do shew who and what he is.* To this I answer, though at present it be hid from your Eyes, yet we truly and boldly affirm, without any Doubt or Fear of after Shame, that God hath manifested himself with as much Perfection or Power upon some Spirits, by his Truth spoken through our Mouths, as ever he did by any true Prophet or Apostle, since the World began: But to name or present the Particulars to you as Witnesses to this Truth, it will be of no Value until you see it, or feel it, in your own Soul. I mean a glorious Manifestation of Salvation, through a powerful believing our Declarations, and an unmoveable Seal of everlasting Damnation, upon those that despise them, both in Life and Death. If you mean God doth manifest himself in Mens weak Bodies through natural Infirmities, that is common to all Mortals: But if you mean he doth manifest himself through the Weakness or Uncertainty of the Mind, that's utterly denied by us. For we affirm, that such Men were neither sent nor moved by the true Spirit, to demonstrate who or what God is, neither in Part nor Perfection, in Power nor in Weakness. For no Man is meet to speak or write concerning Things which are eternal, without an infallible Testimony of the Truth of them, dwelling in is own Soul. Moreover you say, *If I mean a silencing or convincing Gain-sayers, it is not yet done by me, nor any other that you know.* To this I answer, that Ministry, that neither silenceth nor convinceth Gain-sayers, is not of God; but that Gain-sayers have been both silenced and convinced by our Ministry, not only God, but several Spirits in other Nations do bear Witness to it at this Day; wherefore if it neither silence, nor convince you, the Great-Day shall make it manifest. And further you say, *The Commission of the Spirit, which I would seem*

*seem to appropriate, is larger than I imagine.* To this I answer, I am so far from what you seem to accuse me, concerning appropriating to myself, that God, and his Light in me are my Witnesses, when it was put upon me, I would have given the whole World if I had it, to have been eased of its Burthen: As for the Largeness of the Commission it is only known to him that gave it. But let me tell you without Offence, the Letter gives you, nor no Man else one Jot or Tittle of Right to the Commission of the Spirit. Indeed, a spiritual Commission gives a Man a great Measure of infallible Knowledge of the Truth of the Letter; but a literal Commission, gives no Man a certain Understanding of the Truth of the Spirit in the least. For if it should, then all literal Accutants would be the only spiritual Men in the World. Sir, I would gladly have you convinc'd of that general Deceit of pleading a ministerial Commission from the Scriptures to maintain your Preaching.

3. In your *Third* Reply, you say, *In the General, you grant it to be Treason, only you except against the Word [immediate] being Jealous, that in it, and in our Ministry, we do either deny or vail the Mediator 'twixt God and Man, for immediate, you say, is without a Mediator.* To this I answer, In your excepting against the Word [immediate] you except against the Teachings of the Spirit; for God in all Ages, ever taught his chosen Prophets and Apostles, by an immediate Voice or invisible Movings of his Holy Spirit. Holy Men of Old, spake as they were moved by the Spirit; and the Spirit in all moving in them, was not mediate, but immediate; therefore their Records have Power over the Consciences to the End of the World, because they were immediate Words of Truth. Indeed the Teachings of Men are all mediate, but the Teachings of God are all immediate, especially to his commissioned Prophets and Apostles, (to wit) that they might become the mediate true Teachers of all Salvation-Secrets to their elect Brethren that heard them, and Witnesses of Condemnation, in the Consciences of all Gain-saying, and despising Reprobates. If you mean we seem to deny or vail the Mediator 'twixt God and Man, because we own no other God at all, but our Lord Jesus Christ only: In that Sense we shall always seem to deny or vail the Mediator, to all those that ignorantly worship a divided God. For we

cannot own but only One undivided Personal Glorious God, and no more, even the Man Christ Jesus, Blessed for ever and ever, as aforesaid. But if you own another God besides him, before him, or distinct from him; 'tis you that seem to deny or veil the Mediator, by giving that Glory which is only due to him, to an Idol of your own lying Imagination. *He that honoureth the Son honoureth the Father*; but he that giveth the Honour due unto the Son, to any God infinite Spirit or Father, but what is wholly abiding in his Person, that Man through his Ignorance denieth both the Father and the Son. That Man doth not truly Understand who or what God is, who worships him under the Notion of two or three distinct Persons or Spirits. But he that truly Understands that the Father and the Son are but one Divine Bosom, (to wit) that from all Eternity, they were but only one spiritual Person in Form like a Man; that Man indeed, in a good Measure knows the Lord, as he is known of him. In the latter Part of this *Reply*, you repeat the Scriptures, which were spoken by the Lord's immediate Commissioners; and from thence you seem to maintain your present Ministry: But let me tell you, if I had not a more sure Witness, than the literal Sayings, of my Brethren, the Holy Prophets, and Apostles; I were the most miserable Man that ever appeared in the Name of the Lord. *Moreover*, though it be lawful for Saints to converse one with another, about their Faith, or Experience, in spiritual Things, for the provoking of each other to Love, and good Works; it doth not therefore follow, that it is lawful for the most eminent Saint in the World, to gather the People together, in a ministerial Way, to exercise Scripture Ordinances, without an immediate Commission from the Spirit of Christ, or a mediate Commission from an immediate Commissioner, as the Saints had that preached in the Apostles Time. *Faith comes by hearing, and hearing by the Word of God preached, and how shall they preach, except they be sent?* Because there is not a Man of you immediately or mediately sent by the Lord, how is it possible therefore that you should preach the true Faith, concerning God, or Devil, Heaven, or Hell, or any of his Counsels, concerning the World to come? And though you seem to fear it is the Enemy, that would hinder you from exercising your ministerial Gift; if my  
 God

## Mr. Sedgwick's Replies.

11

God make you obedient to it, you shall find it was the best Friend that ever spake to you in all your Life. *Obedience*, as well as *Mercy*, is far more excellent than *Sacrifice*; therefore whether you hear, or forbear, you shall one Day know to your weal or woe, that it was the Light of Christ in me, warning you not to Embassy your self about Things of eternal Concernment, without a Commission from the glorious Mouth of God himself. The literal Commission killeth, but the spiritual Commission giveth Life and Peace.

4. In your fourth Reply, you say, *a Man may have Salvation abiding in him, and he not know it.* Further you say, *a Man may have a real Knowledge of Salvation abiding in him, and yet come to lose it.* To this I answer, Salvation in Men is the Grace of the Spirit, and the Fruits of the Spirit are all Light and Life, and the Nature of the Light is to discover Darkness, and is given unto Men for that very End: How then a Man should have Salvation abiding in him, and he not know it, to me seemeth ridiculous; 'tis all one as if you should say, a Man may be abiding with me in my Chamber, and yet I neither see it, nor know it.

It is the abiding of the Light of Christ, before the Comprehension of the Mind, that makes a Man really to know his own Salvation; and whilst that Chrystal Light abides in the Memory of that Man, the Nature of it is to present nothing else unto him, but Life, and Salvation. 'Tis true a Man may be elected unto Salvation, and he not know it: But it is impossible for him to have the Seal of Salvation abiding in him, and he not know it. For when a Man is ignorant of it, it cannot properly be said to be abiding in him, though it should in him. Why? Because the abiding of it in him, is that which makes the Man sensibly to know it as aforesaid. Therefore if Salvation sensibly abides in Man's Memory, as long as he lives, he can be no more ignorant of it, than a Man that lives all his Life-Time in one House, can be ignorant of it, enjoying his right Mind.

Moreover, If you mean a Man may totally come to lose it, after he hath had Salvation knowingly abiding in him, that's utterly deny'd by us. Why? Because we certainly know that there was never any Reprobate possit with the Grace of Salvation,

tion, knowingly abiding in him. Therefore in the Parable of the Sower you shall find, though the Seed of Grace did seem to scatter it self in every Ground, yet it rooted it self but in one only; which *good Ground where it took Root, brought forth Fruit, unto everlasting Life, in some thirty, in some sixty, and in some an hundred fold.* So that it's clear, where Salvation makes it's abode, that Man is Safe from an eternal Vengeance. But if you mean, thro' the committing some gross Evils, a Man may come to lose the sensible Enjoyment of Salvation abiding in him, as formerly; and in it's Room, be often subjected with Fears of Condemnation, even all his Days, I consent to it. For I am perswaded, this was the Prophet *David's* very Condition. For in such Cases I am apt to believe, that either God takes back the Assurance of Salvation to himself, or else suffers the Creatures Light almost continually to be veiled with the Darkness of his Guilt, that when he sees Good, he may glorify himself a new, with a Ministration of Salvation to his afflicted Creature. Furthermore you say, *He is not sure that knows, but he is sure that God knows that he shall be saved.* Also you say, *That's not the best Assurance which I call unquestionable, but that which is joined with Fear, and Trembling, especially at this Time.* To this I answer: The Happiness of Man's Salvation in this Life consists not in God's knowing of it, but in his own Assurance of it. For if I want the sensible Knowledge of my own Salvation, I may be full of Fears of Condemnation, all my Days; notwithstanding the Creator's knowing of it. Therefore 'till I am possess'd with an assured Seal of my own Salvation, what Profit is it to me, that God knows it? Wherefore whatever you mean by Fear and Trembling, there is no creaturely Assurance comparable to that, which is always unquestionable; for that's freed from all faithless Fear, or sinful Trembling. *If you believe and doubt not, all Things shall be possible, saith Christ. If our Hearts condemn us not, then have we Boldness, to the Throne of Grace.* Sir, I have some Experience of this, besides a spiritual Fear, and Trembling, before the infinite Majesty. But a carnal Fear, and a Trembling before Men, O! Lord preserve me from, for ever! You say also, *The Spirit of the Lord came upon Saul, and upon Balaam, and they did Prophesy by it.* To this I answer, *Moses, David, Samuel, Elijah,*  
and

and many others, were anointed with the Grace of spiritual Prophecy, through which they became Pen-Men of Divine Secrets, and Ministrators of Holy Things, even all their Days. Wherefore, though *Saul* was once among the Prophets, and *Balaam* was compelled to declare good Things concerning *Israel*, it doth not therefore follow, that they were the Lord's anointed Prophets, to declare his Salvation-Secrets to his redeemed ones. No, that could not be, for none can truly declare such Things, unless they enjoy them in their own Souls. The Secrets of God, are with those that are possest with the Love, and Fear of his Majesty, through which they are not only delivered from the Language, of high swelling Words, but also from the Power or every proud Imagination, that would exalt itself against the Lord, and his Heavenly Light within them. But this Grace and Favour of God, abides not in them, in whom Wickedness reigns, all their Days, as it did in King *Saul*, and in *Balaam*. Therefore Salvation must needs be far from abiding in such Men. But it appears to them only as a Witness against them, in the Great-Day, for all their Unrighteousness committed against the Lord, and his anointed Ones. Sir, If through Inconsiderateness you imagine our Condition of Prophecy to be like *Saul's* or *Balaam's*, I hope you will bear with us, for retorting them back again, among those that Prophecy, or Preach, without a spiritual Commission from the *Lord Jesus*. Indeed the Scriptures make mention of the Fallacy and Wickedness, of divers Prophets, and Priests, that were rich. But you shall never find it charge any poor Prophet, with Falshood, or Cruelty, to his Neighbour.

5. In your fifth Reply, you say, *You do suppose they were so impowered, and that every Man according to the Proportion of Faith in him, hath the same Power.* To this I answer, if you do but suppose it, you Occasion a Doubt in me, whether you do really believe it; all Speakings by way of Supposition, to me seem doubtful; therefore you have left me wholly unsatisfied, in your Answer to this Part of my Query. So that I have no Ground-work of Replication. You say also, *There is Matter of eternal Condemnation in all, but the absolute eternal Condemnation, which we declare is not justified in your Heart, neither do you see it justified upon any.* To this I answer, if you mean there

there is sinful Darkness in all, which will suffer eternal Condemnation; but all Souls shall be saved at the last; I am not of that Mind. Why? Because I certainly know, there is no Sin or Evil capable of the least Suffering, unless it hath its being in a sensible Spirit. Nay, moreover an Evil Spirit, and its Darkness, are essentially one: Therefore they are undivided, in their eternal Sufferings. But if you mean, there is that in all, that would naturally produce their eternal Condemnation, if the elective Love of God did not prevent it; I am of the same Belief. For we certainly know, that the original Cause of eternal Salvation, or Condemnation, lyeth not in the Power or Will of the Creature, but in the Will, and Pleasure of the Creator only, whatever may be imagin'd to the contrary: *For his is the Kingdom, the Power and the Glory.* But if it lay in any Excellency in the Creature, it could not possibly then be avoided, but it would share with the Creator's Power, and Glory in his everlasting Kingdom. For as spiritual Righteousness, reigning in Men to their Death, is not the primary Cause of their eternal Salvation, but the Seal of it only; so spiritual Wickedness reigning in Men to their Lives End, is not the absolute Cause of their eternal Vengeance, but the Witness only. This Truth is a stumbling Block, to almost all Men that own a Creator. Sir, the true Prophets and Apostles, were absolute in their Declarations, which they receiv'd from the Lord: So that in your disowning the absolute Pronunciation, committed to our Charge, you do through Ignorance deny all that spiritual and temporal Power, that was committed to the former Commissioners, both in the Law, and in the Gospel; and though at present, you neither see it justified in yourself, nor in any other; it doth not therefore follow, that it is not justified no where at all. Yea, for God knows, and by his Light we know, also some of his Elect know with us, that in this great City, his Ministry in us, hath occasion'd the Seals of eternal Life, and Death, to manifest themselves upon divers Persons. If we had never seen any convincing Effects in our Ministry, because you have not seen it, truly we might have sunk long before now, in the Depth of Despair. Yea, it would have been enough, to have made us Question the Light of the Sun, though it shone never so bright. If ever you come

to see it, our God grant if it be his good Pleasure, that you may feel the eternal Blessing of it in your own Soul, and not the Curse.

6. In your sixth Reply, you say, *You do own your self an experimental Preacher, but cannot own an infallible Knowledge of Divine Mysteries, above all other Men in the World, if you should, it would be great Pride of Spirit, and you judge it so, in any that assume such Things to themselves.* To this I answer, it is granted, if you, or I, or any Man else, should assume such Things to themselves, it favours of the greatest *Lucipherian* Pride, as possibly can be, and an extraordinary Vengeance would undoubtedly attend such a Presumption. But it doth not therefore follow, that either you, or any other Man in the World, can, or ever shall prove us Guilty of any such Assumption. Sir, have you an infallible Judgment concerning Spirituals? If you have not, how can you be a competent Judge in this Thing? Is it impossible, think you, for a Man to be endued with the Knowledge of Divine Mysteries, above all other Men in the World? I trow not, for I am apt to believe, it was the Apostle *Paul's* very Condition, from his own Words, concerning Revelations above his Brethren. But whether it was, or no, it matters not: My Business is to make my Defence against your uncharitable or unadvised Judgment, concerning me in this Particular. Sir, why are you angry with our God? Do you not know he will do what he will: Hear, O my Friend, *William Sedgwick*, I beseech thee hearken to what I shall say without Offence. God, even the *Lord Jesus*, that made us all, did in plain Words from the *Throne* of his eternal Glory, say unto me, that he had given me Understanding of his Mind, in the Scriptures, above all the Men in the World, even to the hearing of the visible *Ear*, as well as the invisible *Soul*, were these his Words spoken? Who then think you can in the least cause me to question my Commission, or my Condition, whilst the Presence of these glorious and gracious Words remains in my Memory? No, the Light of Life shines too clear in me, for Darkness to predominate over it, or any Man's Words to daunt it. All Praise and Glory to him alone that gave it me. Wherefore, Sir, though you seem experimentally to warn me of a narrow lofty Spirit that runs in us; and of high swelling Words.



In answer to this, from an infallible Judgment, we boldly, yet humbly affirm, That this your Experience concerning us, neither proceeded from the Spirit, nor Light of Christ in you, but only from your own angry Imagination. Because by virtue of our Commission we declare that no Man can truly preach Christ, without an infallible Spirit. The Things of the Spirit are all infallible, and eternal, how then think you can they be declared by an uncertain, fallible, or imaginary Light? O! that our good God would once convince you of the Danger of Preaching from the Letter, without a Commission from the Spirit, by Voice of Words from above. And further you say, *Another Experience you observe in me, that I and my Friend have allowed Preaching by Experience, without any such lofty Qualification which we now express, and therefore we ourselves are not true to what we declare.* To this I answer, we did never allow any of our own Faith, in a ministerial Way, to Preach to the People; nay, knowing the Danger, they durst not do it, without a Commission from the Lord Jesus Christ. Moreover, after we had declared the contrary, did we ever allow any Man under Pretence of speaking his Experience, to Pray and Preach, and then conclude Praying, in the Priestly Way of the Nation, in their Satanical Synagogues, or any where else, in their Vain-glorious Hypochritical Forms? I trow not. For then you might truly charge us with Folly in this particular. If Men therefore have been convinc'd with the Deceitfulness of the national Ministry, (to wit) that their Preaching is by Way of Art and Trade, and not by the immediate Teachings of the Spirit, as I suppose you and divers others have been, and yet shall walk in the same Form of Preaching; how can such Men but be full of Fears and Doubts concerning the Truth, or Authority of their Ministry, whatever they pretend of speaking their Experience to the People?

7. In your *Seventh* Reply you say, *Every one that goes without a Commission is in danger of eternal Vengeance. Therefore it concerns you and me, very much to stand in awe, to tremble at the Word, lest we fall under the Curse for adding to, or taking from his Word.* Also you say, *You believe some will suffer for running before they are sent, and some for running beyond that which they are sent about. But concerning Speaking, you desire me to consider how large a Commission the Scriptures give.* To

To this I answer, it is a Work of the highest Concernment that possible can be, for a Man to execute the Office of a Prophet, or Minister of Christ. Wherefore we unquestionably affirm, That all those that go into the Ministry of the Letter, without a spiritual Commission, they are not only in danger of an eternal Vengeance, but very few of them will escape it, that have been warned of it by commissioned Messengers of the Lord's own sending. Therefore know, that neither your Experience, nor the Effects of your Ministry, no, nor the Scriptures themselves, will bear you out in the Day of Trial, for want of that sure Word abiding in you, *I the Lord have chosen thee to be a Minister to my People.* But as concerning a spiritual Commissioner being in danger of eternal Vengeance, for falling short, or going beyond his Commission, that's deny'd by us: A Temporal Vengeance indeed attends them in such a Case, as namely, a Whale's Belly, or slaying by a Lion, as *Jonas* and another Prophet were. But if you mean he may have some secret Fears of eternal Vengeance in him, for rebelling against the Commission, that is not deny'd by us; but that he shall be in danger of it in reference to God's Purpose, that we utterly deny. Why? Because we know that God anoints none with the Spirit of heavenly Prophecy, but those that were elected to Salvation before the Foundation of the World was laid. For as Men formerly, that were anointed with Oil, had a cheerful Countenance, so likewise all those that are anointed with the Grace of spiritual prophesying or preaching, enjoy a cheerful and settled Mind. Kings commit their Secrets to none but Favourites only; so likewise the God, or King of Glory, commits his secret Counsel, by way of Dispensation, to none but his beloved Commissioners only. 'Tis granted that all those that believe in the true Jesus are acquainted with a Measure of God's Secrets, according to the Proportion of their Faith; but the publick Declarations of them, as aforesaid, are committed to none in a prophetic or ministerial Way, but those that are immediately sent forth by the eternal Spirit; *To you it is given to know the Mysteries of the Kingdom, but to them it is not given, or in Parable only.* To whom is it given? To chosen Prophets, or Apostles only, that they might demonstrate them to their elect Brethren. *When thou art converted (saith Christ*

*The Prophet's Answer to*

to Peter) *strengthen thy Brethren.* 'Tis true, the Secrets of the Lord are with all those that serve him with an upright Heart as before; but it doth not therefore follow that they are capable to manage them in a prophetic or ministerial Way, for the convincing or converting their elect Brethren into a real Comprehension of them to their everlasting Establishment. No, I say again, from an unerring Light, none can do that but spiritual Commissioners only.

O! that you and all Preachers that are of a merciful Spirit, were convinc'd of this saving Truth! Moreover, you say, *David called upon all Creatures, and all Men, Kings, and all People, and upon every Thing that had Breath, to praise the Lord.* To this I answer, Did he call upon them all, or any of them at all, to praise the Lord in a prophetic or ministerial Way, as he himself often did? I trow not, that was none of his Intent when he uttered these Words; for he knew that none but selected ones could do that. But it was an extraordinary Comprehension of the Love and Goodness of God to his Soul and Body, which caused him with such Zeal to call upon all breathing Things to praise the Lord, for his Goodness towards them, according to their Kind or Light, as he did according to his Light. Also you say, *And therefore the Apostolical Ministry is to continue in the Church in all Ages, and Christ promises his Presence with them, and that Ministry, to the End of the World.* To this I answer, If you mean an exact Form according to the Letter, (as namely) visible praying, preaching, baptizing, breaking of Bread, laying on of Hands, anointing with Oil, and such like; I know none capable to administer those Apostolical Ordinances, for want of the Gift of Tongues, and Miracles. Whoever therefore imitates the Apostles Ministry from the Letter, are but Scripturian Usurpers, and Deceivers of their own Souls; and the People, for want of a Commission from the Spirit, as aforesaid. But if you mean, Christ will own the invisible spiritual Ministry of the Apostles, with his Presence in his elect Church or People in all Ages, to the End of the World, we join with you. For whensoever the Spirit of Christ convinces a Soul to believe the Truth of the Scriptures, and to yield a spiritual Obedience to them, to the utmost of his Power, it may properly be said, that he

owns the Apostles Ministry, with his Presence in the Creature. Why? Because they were the Penmen of those Records of Truth. *Again*, If a Man, through the Hearing of a National Preacher, should be convinc'd of the Truth of the Scriptures, as aforesaid, what doth he do in such a Case? Truly he justifies the Ministry of the true Prophets, and Apostles, and sits down in Peace in his own Soul, and becomes wiser than his Teacher, by seeing him in the Dark in spiritual Things, and so hears him no more, but pitties him. This is the Condition of all those that are taught by the Spirit.

Now this I shall commend unto you, if any Minister in the Nation or World, mediately or immediately were moved, or sent by the Spirit of God, to preach unto the People, no Man would be capable to become his Teacher; Why? Because the Oracles of God are committed to such Men only, upon the account of ministerial Declarations. If *David's* Teachers had been all *Nathans*, he would hardly have said he was become wiser than all his Teachers. For I dare boldly say, there was never any of the Apostles Hearers did attain to an Equality of spiritual Understanding with them. Why? Because the Power and Glory of God would be obscured, and his Messengers put to open Shame, and the Truth delivered by them subject to be question'd by all, if the Hearers should become wiser, or equal with their commissioned Teachers, in the Things of eternal Concernment. Sir, I would not have you guilty of calling the following Truth out of its proper Name, (*so wis*) From an infallible Light we declare, that God has chosen *us two only* in this Age, to bear Witness unto himself, and his invisible true Teachings, in his People by his Spirit, in Opposition of all visible Teachings in the World, in a ministerial Way, as false, vain, and of none Effect to the Preachers thereof; but rather a dreadful Witness against them in the Great Day, for their Ministerial meddling with Holy Things, without a spiritual Command. What Answer doth the glorious Commissioner say he will make unto them, when they shall think to plead their Ministry before him? *I never knew you: Depart from me, ye that work Iniquity; (that is) I never knew you as Ministers of my sending; you have had the Reward of your Ministry already; you have had your Souls chiefest Desire of Riches,*

*The Prophet's Answer to*

*Pleasure, or Honour among the earthly honourable ones; whilst my poor Messengers were afflicted with many Necessities, persecuted, and despised as Dross, and deadly Enemies against your ministerial Happiness; you have had your Reward already. Go therefore into everlasting Shame, with them that set you to Work, whilst my poor Messengers receive a Crown of eternal Glory in my Kingdom, with myself and my holy Angels, as a Recompence of all their faithful Sufferings for my Name-sake. Be faithful unto the Death, and I will give thee a Crown of Life.*

8. In your *Eighth* Reply, you say, *When you did speak formerly, you were as fully satisfy'd, as we are now satisfy'd in our Ministry, neither do you now wholly condemn your former speaking, but you have seen an evil Spirit, that got into it, and you say it was not the least Evil of that Spirit, that you did undertake to judge all others.* To this I answer, If your satisfaction had been the same as ours is, it would have remain'd with you to this Day, neither could an evil Spirit have got into it, if you have been kept unspotted of the World; for so long as a Man is preserv'd from outward Pollutions, the evil One in him hath no Power over him, nor his Ministry, nor an evil Spirit without him, could have any Power over him, (if you think there is any.) *Moreover*, if your satisfying Ministry had been from the Lord, as you suppose it was, we verily believe an evil Spirit could not have had Power over it one Day, no nor yet one Hour. For let me tell you, if your Ministry had been of God, the higher the Light had appear'd, the lower would your Soul have been humbled in the Sight of your Brethren. For though the true Prophets and Apostles had their natural Failings, through the manifold Infirmities attending them in their Ministry, yet an evil Spirit of lofty Exaltation above their Brethren, because of their great Light and Favour with God, did never predominate over them. Indeed a seeming glorious Light, proceeding from Men's own Imagination, is that which will not only exalt a Man above his Brethren, but also above all that is called God. Nay, it is so highly conceited with its own rational Wisdom, that it would rather it had never had a Being, if it may not bear Rule over all Inferiority, or Equality; it is an Abomination to such a Spirit. Therefore, if you now find an evil Spirit captivated your former Ministry, either with lofty

Conceits

Conceits of an essential Oneness with God himself, or a Triumphant over Men with your empty Notions, and such like; what good Thoughts soever you may have of that Ministry, in reference to the Joy and Glory you then possess'd, yet we dare boldly say, from that God that sent us, that the Head of that Ministry was an Angel of Darknes. *Furthermore*, if that Ministry of yours had been from the Spirit of God, though it had given Judgment against all gain-saying Opinions in the World, yet the Lord would have justified you in it. Why? Because the Sentence proceeded from himself. *We know*, saith the Apostolical Commissioner, *that we are of God, and the whole World lieth in Wickedness.* In this Saying, the Intent of the Apostle was not that they knew that all Men in the World were in Bondage to their own sinful Lusts, except themselves. No; but the Meaning was, that they certainly knew that their Ministry was spiritual, and of God, and that all the contrary Ministry in the World was carnal, and of the Devil. Wherefore, Sir, whatever you think of your present Ministry, the same Spirit remains in it as formerly. If you are moved therefore to acknowledge an evil Spirit in your former Ministry, that we might apply it to ourselves; truly, Sir, you have lost your Labour in this Particular. Why? Because we have the Seal of everlasting Satisfaction abiding in us, that our Commission and Declarations are of the Lord, whether they be unto eternal Salvation, or Condemnation. If any Man therefore can truly convince us of Wrong done unto him, since we receiv'd our Commission, we are both ready and willing to acknowledge it, and bear our Shame. But as concerning our inward or outward Failings towards God, in reference to our ministerial Commission, the Acknowledgment of such Things belongs only unto him, because none can cure it, or pass it by, but himself only. For because we say the Lord only hath made us 'Two his Spiritual Commissioners in this Age, therefore we know that all Men are subject to lie in wait to catch us, though they be taken in their own Net:

9. and 10. In your Reply to the *two last Queries*, you say, *You are of this Faith, that God alone doth teach his Chosen ones,* but you omitted that Clause, [*by the Inspiration of his most Holy Spirit.*] And you say, *Yet Christ himself taught, and his Apostles*

*Apostles taught, and the Prophets taught.* To this I answer, If you mean there is another spiritual God to teach Men besides Christ, we disown that; for God is our Christ, and Christ is our only God, who is a spiritual God-man, in one distinct Person glorified. As for two or three distinct Persons, and but one Essence, or an infinite formless Spirit, we own no such imaginary Confusions. Yet we hold forth a three-fold spiritual *Trinity in Unity* and *Unity in Trinity*, under a three-fold Title, of *Father, Son, and Spirit*. But this glorious Mystery is operated only in the singular Person of our *Lord Jesus Christ*, as aforesaid. *Moreover*, you say, *We likewise hold the same Faith, and yet we teach.* To this I answer, we have a Commission from the Lord for our Ministry; but we know that you have none, because you cannot own those Words of [*Immediate*] or [*Infallibility*]. And besides this, we deny that ever we used the National Form of Teaching at all: Indeed, when we first appear'd, there came divers unto us, to prove our Commission by way of Queries; to whom we gave Answers, endeavouring their Satisfaction. And this was, and is with our Declarations by writing, our Manner of teaching, adding this further; for the Discovery of the Ignorance and Fallacy of all the Ministry in the World, and their formal Worship, we are moved, in a discursive Way, to treat of the Foundation of spiritual Things; which Things were so opposite to some of the Hearers, and did so enrage them, that they did not only condemn them as Blasphemy, and Delusions of the Devil, but would also willingly have torn us in Pieces, and (some of them falling under the Lord's eternal Sentence for their despising) with a Warrent apprehended us. The Lord knoweth what we have suffered, and are to suffer, at the Hands of merciless Men, for his Name-sake. Our Joy and Glory is, that our Sufferings principally are, for yielding Obedience to his blessed Command. Again you say, *God teaches by his Son, by his Servants, by his Word, by Afflictions, and in all by his Spirit.* To this I answer, as afore, God never did, nor never will own any Man, as a Teacher to his People, but him only that he commissionates. 'Tis confess'd, God teaches by his *Son*, which *Son* is *himself*; or rather teaches in his *Son*, for that's most proper. For God was in Christ, reconciling the World to himself; and God did teach

teach by his commissioned Servants, the Prophets, and Apostles; but it doth not therefore follow, that any shall be truly taught by you, or me, or by any Man else, unless we have a spiritual Commission, as those his Servants had. If we have, then we may be confident of a Blessing in our Ministry; otherwise our Expectations will certainly come to nought. Sir, if you mean, all Mankind are, or may be capable of spiritual Teachings; that is denied by us. But if you mean, all God's Elect through the whole World, are immediately taught by his Spirit only, in the Things of Salvation, where his Commissioners are not; we join with you. *Moreover, you say, For our Commission receiv'd by Voice of Words you judge it not, but leave it to the Lord.* To this I answer, though here you say you judge it not, but leave it to the Lord; yet in your *Sixth Reply*, appears to me as harsh a Judgment, almost as possibly could be given. But seeing you have here disown'd it, our God will pass it by. Sir, I now humbly beseech you, seriously to consider what I shall write unto you, in relation to your true and lasting Peace. In the Holy Name, and Power of our God, we advise you to cease from your ministerial Way of Preaching; not minding your Honour in the Thing, for you will never find any true Peace in it, but the contrary altogether, after so clear a Discovery of the Fallacy of it, as this is. Christ Jesus our God never committed the Ministry of his Gospel to the Rich, but he hath chosen the poor and contemptible Things of this World for the confounding the mighty and honourable Things thereof. If you should think that *Paul* was rich and honourable, I believe he enjoy'd it but a very little Season after his Conversion. *I will have Mercy and not Sacrifice* (saith our God.) Sir, we have not looked upon you as one of the Tyth-Mongering Ministers of the Nation. Therefore in Christ's Stead we desire you never to imitate them more in their hypocritical Forms. For we are persuaded that God hath made you a Steward of great Possession, principally for a Covering to many of his afflicted Ones, in this hard-hearted Time. Therefore go on, not in your Ministry, but in your Mercy, and prosper. For (whatever you may think to the contrary) all the Peace you enjoy springs only out of the Bowels of your Compassion to helpless Souls. *Love covereth a Multitude of Sins. There is none can stand*



*stand in Judgment, but the Merciful. Blessed are the Merciful, for they shall obtain Mercy* (saith our God.) O! the manifold real Praises that ascend up to the Lord of Glory, through the Charity of the Merciful. No Man, nor Angel, can ever speak forth the Excellency of Charity. Why are the most of our rich Men uncharitable? Truly, because there is no spiritual Light, or Love in them. *Howle, ye rich Men,* (saith St. James.) For what? Because you had no Compassion to your poor afflicted Brother, notwithstanding your Bags of Gold and Silver. That rich Man only that hath found Mercy unto eternal Life, is made very tender of Men's natural Lives, not to give away a whole Estate, from an imaginary Call thereunto; that's none of our Intent, the Lord knows, but to refresh the Bowels and Backs of the Oppressed, with the Over-flowings of his Possessions; that was the very Intent of this Exhortation. To conclude, In the *Great Day*, the Lord Jesus seems to take notice of nothing else in the Rich but their Charity, or their want of Charity, in that saying, *Come, ye blessed of my Father; when I was hungry ye gave me Meat: Go ye cursed; when I was hungry, ye gave me no Meat.* Thus you may see, it is not a rich Man's Ministry, but his Mercy, that will stand in stead in the *Great Day*. Sir, if you are not satisfied, I shall wait for your Return. That no Flesh may glory in his Presence, the Lord himself satisfy you in this, and all Things else, that may further your eternal Happiness.

*This Return was delivered into Mr. William Sedgwick's own Hand, July the 30th, 1657.*

*One Personal Uncreated Glory.*

**I**F it should be granted, that the Man Christ Jesus, and his Father, were from Eternity, in Time, and to Eternity, only one distinct personal Majesty in both Worlds: Yet because of those literal Sayings, *My Father is greater than I; My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me; Father, into thy Hands I commend my Spirit; I ascend to my Father, and to your Father, to my God, and to your God;* with many such like throughout the *New Testament*: Therefore many Elect ones, whose Souls have been filled with glorious Experiences, not being clear in these Scriptures, they may say unto me, What was that God and Father that Christ pray'd or cry'd unto in his greatest Extremity upon the Earth? This Query being of high Concernment, before I make Answer thereunto, give me leave to cite a Scripture of two. In the Ninety-first *Psalms*, ver. 11, 12. and the Fourth of *St. Matthew*, it is thus written: *For he shall give his Angels charge over thee, to keep thee in all thy Ways; they shall bear thee in their Hands, they shall lift thee up, lest at any time thou shouldst dash thy Foot against a Stone.* Thus you that are spiritually quick in discerning hidden Secrets, may clearly see in the very Letter of the Scriptures, that when Christ Jesus was in the Glory of the Father, he gave a wonderful Commission to his Angels, in reference to the Protection of his own Person, in that Time of his creaturely Condition. Why? Because you may know when uncreated Infiniteness was wholly transmitted into a Creature like Finiteness, it must needs be disabled of its former glorious Power, to protect itself under all Temptations, and unutterable Sufferings, unto Death itself, it was to bear at the Hands of unbelieving Reprobates.

Thus you may see it was utterly impossible for the Creator to become or appear in the Condition of a spotless Creature, without first leaving the representative spiritual Office of God, the everlasting Father, in the glorified Persons of *Moses* and *Elias*; for they were those angelical Men that were entrusted with

## *Of the One Personal*

that glorious Power aforesaid. But you may say, if the Creator did appear in the Condition of a perfect Man, and commit the representative Power of his eternal God-head to his angelical Creatures, to what End did he thus abase himself? To this I answer, You may know that his unsearchable Wisdom moved him unto it for two Respects: *First*, In reference to the Manifestation of his eternal Love to his redeemed Ones. *Secondly*, In relation to his own personal Glory: For as he knew no other Way to restore the fallen Estate of his elect *Israelites*, so likewise he foresaw that in the lowest abasing himself, lay secretly hid a twofold infinite Glory, that would redound to himself in his Exaltation; because from hence originally ariseth, in elect Men and Angels, all those glorious new Songs or Ravishing Admirations of the Creator's Wisdom, Love, and Humility to Eternity, the which would not possibly be attained by the Creator, if he had not thus humbled himself. Again, This angelical Charge in *Moses* and *Elias* of spiritual Protectorship, in reference to God, elect Men and Angels, may be thus understood, (that is to say) by vertue of this their Commission, even as a spiritual God, and Father, they filled the Lord Jesus with Inspirations of his former Glory, which he possess'd when he was on the Throne of the Father. For you that have receiv'd Jesus Christ alone to be your God, may know, when he was in a Creature-like Condition, he neither was, nor possibly could be, capable to comprehend all that infinite Glory which he enjoy'd when he was in the Condition of a Creator.

*Wherefore*, as aforesaid, for the Protection of his blessed Body, they were not only set apart, to fill him with a perfect Assurance of possessing a more transcendent Glory, through Sufferings, than he formerly enjoy'd in his heavenly Kingdom; but they were appointed also to bear Record from Heaven, in the Sight of elect Men and Angels, unto Jesus Christ, upon this Earth, to be the only very true God, everlasting Father, and alone Creator of both Worlds, Angels, and Men, and all other Creatures, as they did unto *Peter*, *James*, and *John*, at the Transfiguration of Christ, the Lord of all Light and Life.

*More.*

Moreover, their spiritual Charge was to supply the Saints with an inspiring Light, as a Guide to direct them to that Fountain of all infinite Glory. God manifested in a Body of Flesh, as they did to *Joseph*, and *John the Baptist*.

Furthermore, their divine Office was also to uphold the holy Angels, with their appointed Food, of new Revelations, concerning that wonderful Salvation-Mystery, that God was bringing forth in the Man Christ Jesus, for his Elect sake. That the Angels, which were in great Power and Glory, might be kept in Obedience to their God, then appearing in Weakness, and Shame, until that his Body of Flesh and Bone was ascended into the Throne of the Father; that from his own personal Majesty he might fill elect Men and Angels with glorious Inspirations, concerning a new Thing, that he alone had done upon the Earth.

Again, If it should be granted, that the Creator did thus humble himself in a Body of Flesh, because when his Glory moves to a Thing, what can hinder it? *Is any Thing hard or impossible to God*, in such a Case as this is, or was? Yet there being such an innumerable Company of Angels, that never were defiled, it may be thought strange by some, that he should pass them all by, and exalt two Men to so high a Dignity, which had been Sinners. To this I answer, you may know therein did appear a nearer Union between God and elect Men, than between God and elect Angels. For God himself, in the Body of his Flesh, became a little lower than Angels, in respect of Death, that as before said, through Sufferings, with more infinite Advantage, he might exalt himself on his Throne again, above Men or Angels. So likewise you know it is written. *If we suffer with him, or for him, we shall also reign with him.* *Moses* and *Elias* wanted no Sufferings for Christ's Sake, when he was in the Condition of the Father. Wherefore they being kept faithful to their Trust on this Earth, in due Time their Persons were rewarded with God-like Glorification in the high Heavens, that they might be fit Representatives of an infinite Majesty: And so with God himself be exalted in Dignity, above the holy Angels. It is written, *He took not on him the Nature of Angels, but the Seed of Abraham.* Thus in the Creator's Absentment, he was clothed with the Seed

wherein his own divine Nature, of spiritual Faith, was capable of suffering, and entering into his Glory again. And not with that angelical Nature of pure Reason, that is no way capable of any kind of Suffering in the least; but if it were not continually preserved with the Incomes of Divine Faith, it would trample such God-like Humility under foot, as Foolishness itself. Wherefore the Bodies of Angels being spiritual, and their Natures only rational, and so unfit to suffer for their God, as *Abraham's* Children are, or were; therefore they were incapable to represent the Person of God, the everlasting Father, or to sit upon Thrones of God-like Glory, with the Apostles, spiritually to judge the Twelve Tribes of *Israel*. But of the contrary, the Nature of the glorified Bodies of *Moses* and *Elias*, being all Inspiration of heavenly new Wisdom, and like unto the Creator himself; tho' formerly they were inferior to Angels, in reference of Natural-pain, and Soul-mortality; yet being possess'd with that Nature by which Angels were created, they only, and not Angels, were fit Representatives of an everlasting Father, unto Christ Jesus, their Creator, and glorious Redeemer, in the Days of his Humiliation.

*Moreover*, though *Moses* and *Elias* for a Season, by divine Wisdom, were so highly exalted; yet you may know this God-like Power or Charge possess'd by them, was in Measure only; because none was capable of Spirit above Measure, but God only, which is Christ Jesus our Lord.

*Furthermore*, when the *Creator* was wholly transmuted into a *Creature-like* State, though the Nature of his Spirit was all divine Satisfaction in itself, yet, because that divine Soul was one divine Essence with the Body, subject to Man's Infirmities, of Hunger, Thirst, Sleep, and such like; was it not therefore of absolute Necessity, that *Elias*, or some other, should not only be in a God, or Father-like Condition, as a glorious Object for Christ Jesus to fix his Faith upon, but also to protect him both Sleeping and Waking, in all Conditions, that he might become a perfect Pattern of Child-like Obedience in all Things unto Death, to his redeemed Ones? That from thence they might learn to know unto whom all spiritual Obedience was meritoriously due, when that ever blessed Body of Christ's Flesh and Bone was risen from the Dead, and ascended

ascended into the Glory of the Father again, from whence he descended.

*Again,* The Scriptures clearly make mention of a visible, as well as invisible, Appearance of God the Father, unto *Moses* and *Abram*, and familiarly talking with them, as a Man talks with his Friend. But of the contrary, though the Scripture makes mention of a Voice that came from Heaven, saying, *This is my well-beloved Son, in whom I am well pleased;* yet you have no other Record to prove, that ever any other God and Father appeared either visible or invisible unto Christ *Jesus*, familiarly talking with him, but *Moses* and *Elias*; two Men in white Raiment, Angels, or such like.

*Now* I humbly beseech you, if there had been any other God, or Father of our Lord *Jesus Christ*, in the invisible high Heavens, but those glorious Representatives before said, can you possibly believe, imagine, or think, that that everlasting Father would, in such a loving Manner, have appeared to his sinful Servants, and neglect his only Son, and Heir of Heavens, Earth, Angels, and Men, and all Things else, unto whom alone all divine Honour, and Praise, or Glory, is ascrib'd from all capable Creatures, for Everlasting? Which you know will not be accepted of by Saints, or Angels, in Scripture Records, but alone by the everlasting *Jesus*, that everlasting Father, who always accepted of divine Honour, from them that he knew to have Faith in his Person, unto Life eternal; but seemed to reject it, from those that knew him not. Also you know it is written, *God will not give his Glory to another.* Therefore it is impossible, that there should be any other God, Father, or Creator, but the glorified Person of *Christ Jesus* our Lord; because, as before said, no Man can prove throughout the Scriptures, nor any other Ways, that there was ever any other personal Majesty, but him only.

*Moreover,* as the Skin of *Moses's* Face, through the Appearance of God, talking with him upon the Mount, shone so bright, that the *Israelites* were compelled to face him through a Vail: So likewise you know, when Christ was transfigured upon the Mount, his Face shone like the Sun, to the great Amazement of his Apostles; it was only through the appearing of *Moses* and *Elias* in Glory talking with him.

*Behold*

## Of the One Personal

. *Behold a spiritual Wonder! Christ Jesus the eternal Creator,* having transmuted his infinite Glory into Flesh, was feign to seek, or wait for the Appearance of a Glimpse of that Glory again, from his angelical Creatures.

Thus you in whom is rooted the Light and Life of *One Personal Glory*, may see somewhat clearer into the hidden Mystery of God, manifesting himself in the Man Christ Jesus our Lord; and of a more spiritual Oneness between him and elect Mankind, than between those holy Angels which visibly see him Face to Face.

Here you may know also, that the Man *Cain*, and his angelical Generation, of merciless gilded tongued Hypocrites, are designed for eternal Sufferings, of a sensible dying Life, or living Death; because, as aforesaid, the Lord Jesus took not on him the Nature of *Angels*, but the Seed of *Abraham*.

*Much* more might be spoken upon this Account, but I suppose I have written sufficient for the Satisfaction of that Soul that is really redeemed from the bewitching Love of Things that perish, through the divine Appearance of glorious Things which have no End.

In the vith and xth Chapters of *St. John* it is thus written, *The Words that I speak unto you are Spirit and Life. I lay down my Life, that I might take it again. No Man taketh it from me, but I lay it down of myself. I have Power to lay it down, and Power to take it again.*

Some tender-hearted Soul being well satisfied of the Soul and Body's essential Oneness, and so of their wholly dying, as well as living together, may say unto me, *If the Soul of Christ died in, or with his Body, what was that which raised it from Death to Life again?*

From a divine Gift, to this I answer, that spiritual Power of Christ's totally dying, and living again, consisted only in the wonderful Vertue, or Truth of his Word speaking. Why? Because you may know, that the Nature of Christ's Soul did consist only of one divine Voice, or Echo of all Variety of glorious Truth, through which he could not possibly err in his Sayings. Wherefore, as aforesaid, whatever he spake in that very *Word*, was all Power to effect the Thing spoken of. Moreover, you may know, that Word-proceeding through Christ's

Christ's Mouth, was the very Voice of the Divine God-head itself, reconciling the elect lost *Israelites*, in the Man Christ Jesus, to himself through Death.

*Furthermore*, when *Lazarus*, according to Christ's Words, was dead and buried, four Days in the Grave; (as it is written) if his Soul was alive, in Paradisical, or heavenly Places, of divine Glory, surely that Glory was in the Grave; and from thence was *Lazarus* raised from Death to Life. *My Words*, (saith the Lord Jesus Christ) *are Spirit and Life*. And he was *the Resurrection and the Life*, as he said unto *Martia*.

Wherefore you may know, that Man's Body and Soul, being but one living Substance, they are essentially one in Death also. And it was that everlasting Vertue of Christ's Word only, which was that God that raised the Soul and Body of *Lazarus*, out of the Grave, or Sleep of Death, unto Life again. *The Words that I speak unto you*, saith Christ, *are Spirit and Life*. That is, as if he should have said, *My Words alone are all spiritual Life, Love, Peace, with Variety of glorious new Joys, beyond all Comprehension, in the Spirits of Men and Angels*. Or, as if he should have said, *My Words principally tend to the satisfying of the Soul, with all divine Excellencies, which are eternal*. *I have Power*, saith Christ, *to lay down my Life, and have Power to take it again*. That is, as if he should have said, *I Only have all the God-head Power, in my own Person, to die, and to command Life out of Death itself*. Again,

Moreover, If there be but only One Personal Majesty, or glorious Power, over Heavens, Earth, Angels, and Men, who then besides the Lord Jesus could speak these Words? For alas! you may know, it is impossible for any Creature, whether Men or Angels, to have Power in themselves in the least, either to live or die.

*Furthermore*, the Lord Jesus being the only God over all Life and Death, did verily believe, or undoubtedly know, that whatever he said should come to pass, that rather than he would or could be prevented in his Words, not only Heaven and Earth, but all Things else, may sooner pass away, and be no more seen. That moved him to say, *Heaven and Earth shall*



## *Of the One Personal*

*shall pass away, but my Words shall not pass away. And to say: But after that I am risen, I will go into Galilee before you.*

Hence you may understand, if the God-man Christ Jesus alone be your living Life, that, as aforesaid, it was his Faith, in the ever-living Vertue of his Word speaking, which impowered him to lay down his divine Soul, or God-head Life, in the Hell of the Grave, for a Moment, with his blessed Body; and from thence, as the most pure Grain, even naturally to quicken and revive that Life again out of Death itself, that it might live, in a new and glorious Manner, in Immortality to Eternity; even in that Body that died, and no other.

For now I may boldly say, with unshaken Confidence, that the Variety of all unutterable Joy, or ravishing Glory, that God himself eternally possesseth, naturally floweth in him, only from the Vertue of his manifold Deaths, of deadly Sufferings, formerly endured in that very Body of Flesh and Bone, now glorified,

*Again*, Christ Jesus being the only God, the everlasting Vertue of his Word speaking, gave him all Power over Life and Death, by his most precious Life, poured forth in his Blood unto Death, that he alone might purchase from his Divine Self, in a new Way, to become the only Lord, both of the Dead and Quick. It is not the natural Life, or half dying of a God, or of his Son, if they were distinct; but it must be the Blood, or whole Life, of an infinite Power itself, that can cleanse the Conscience from dead Works, to enable a Man spiritually to obey the ever-living God, according to that in the Twentieth of the *Acts*, where it is thus written, *For I have kept nothing back, but have shewed you all the Counsel of God.* And in the Twenty-eighth Verse are these Words: *To feed the Church of God, which he hath purchased with his own Blood.*

With astonishing Admiration, behold a divine *Wonder!* God himself was absolutely dead, and buried, out of the Sight of all Men and Angels, and yet was virtually living, every where at one and the same Time, but was not sensible of it in his own Person, until he was risen from the Grave. But this spiritual Food is for strong Men in Christ, and not for Babes.

*Moreover,*

Moreover, by Vertue of his Word of Truths speaking only, he created out of a confused *Chaos*, both *Worlds*, and all in them, which were created, whether for a Time, or for Eternity. Who, by the same Power, also twice changed the Condition of his own glorious Person.

Furthermore, his divine Soul died in the Flesh, and quickened in the Spirit, not only to prove the infinite Power of Truth, speaking thro' his spiritual Mouth, but also for the confounding that carnal Reason in Man, which upon all Occasions contends against his divine Wisdom, and all other his unsearchable Counsels. It being a common Saying among Men, that it is Blasphemy for any Man to say, that God could possibly die; notwithstanding the Scripture says, *Is any thing too hard for God; and with God, said Christ, nothing shall be impossible.* And why think you do Men say, the God-head neither did, nor possibly could die? Truly, because they by no means can imagine which Way the Creator should live again, if once dead. Thus they measure the Almighty Power of an Infinite Majesty by the narrow Compass of blind Reason, proceeding out of the bottomless Pit of their own lying Imagination, which neither doth, nor possibly can understand any thing of the spiritual Power of Truths speaking. And because the Lord Jesus Christ's wonderful Power, divine Faith, or Truth, is hid from them, therefore they are at Enmity with him, and his Elect, unto whom alone his Secrets are revealed; and so they always call the Divine Majesty a Liar to his Face, both in his Person and People. And because they see no Power in themselves to live or die, from this their no spiritual Power at all, impudently, or ignorantly, they take upon them to judge the God of all divine Power over Life and Death, who is blessed for ever.

And because he could not possibly lie, therefore by the Word of his Power he did die, and live again. Or else what mean the Scripture Sayings, *Because he poured forth his Soul unto Death. For Christ therefore rose again and revived, that he might be Lord both of the Dead and of the Quick. I am that first and that last, and I am alive but was dead, and behold I am alive for evermore. These Things saith he which is first and last, that was dead, and is alive. Thou wilt not leave my Soul*

in the Grave, neither wilt thou suffer thy Holy One to see Corruption. He knowing that, before spake of the Resurrection of Christ, that his Soul should not be left in the Grave, nor should his Flesh see Corruption. More Scriptures might be mention'd to this Purpose; but if this saving Truth, concerning the whole God-head and Manhood dying, and living together again, by its own quickning Power, be not sufficiently cleared from the true Record itself, I would it were. Sure I am, those that shall vilify this glorious Truth, after the Perusal of this Epistle, (according as it is written) *they have Eyes and see not, Ears and hear not, Hearts and understand not*; and account the Scriptures but meer Fancies, and human natural Wisdom, whatsoever they shall pretend to the contrary.

Again, unless the Divinity had died with the Humanity, how could the glorious God experimentally, in his own Person, have known what Condition the Dead are in, whether they be the Elect or Reprobate? How could he, being in a creaturely Condition, be capable of entering into the Glory of the Creatorship again, any other Way but through Death, that from thence he might live again, and in the room of a Crown of Thorns, wear upon his Head a double Crown of immortal and eternal Glory, in the visible Sight of elect Men and Angels; which could not possibly be attained unto any other Way but through Death? Is it therefore any Thing else but the Devil in Man that wars against this divine Secret? If it be not so, when Peter said, *Master, spare thyself*; why did Christ so sharply reprove him, saying, *Get thee behind me, Satan, thou savourest not the Things that be of God, but the Things that be of Men*?

Moreover, that elect Men and Angels might more admire the Creator's Wisdom, Power, and Glory, in raising such transcendent eternal Excellencies out of Death itself, than all other Things!

Furthermore, you may know it was the God-head's Suffering under all Conditions, which gave him his prerogative Power over all Conditions, and from thence the Lord did experimentally know what Crowns of immortal Glory were most suitable for all suffering Conditions, that his Chosen ones are to undergo in this Vale of Tears, for Truth's Sake; also, what Measure  
of

of eternal Death, in utter Darknes, was most meet for cursed *Cain*, and his Generation of angelical merciless Men and Women, whose serpentine Wisdom is that wicked one that is no way able to endure these Salvation-Mysterics, because they discover their hypocritical Gloryings in gilded Words only, that perish, instead of glorious Things, which are eternal.

This will be that gnawing Worm of Conscience, that never dies, and fiery Curse of the Law, that will never be quenched in Men's Souls, when the Lord Jesus Christ shall appear, with his Saints and Angels to eternal Judgment.

And so much at present concerning the Spirituality of Words speaking, through the heavenly Mouth of the only and ever-living God-Man Christ Jesus our Lord, who sits in the Midst of the Throne of Crowns, of all Varieties of immortal Glory, and Majesty, in the highest Heavens, and lowest Hearts, even to all Eternity.

*Yours, in all Spiritual and*

*Natural Righteousness,*

*John Reeve.*

*The Prophet's Answer to a Letter sent  
him by Esquire Pennington.*

**H**AVING soberly perused thy last Writing, and with much Deliberation weigh'd it in the Ballance of Divine Truth, I doubt not but the *Most High* will move thy ponderous Spirit to do the like without just Offence at me.

Therefore, most acute Penman, I confess, that in reference to my real Understanding of the Holy Spirit, its wonderful Commission, and Revelation, with the Nature of my own Spirit, I cannot but confess thy Counsel is much like that of *Jesbro's* unto *Moses*. Wherefore undeceiving Truth being the only Searcher of all Spirits, by it I am first moved to write a little of our unutterable Deceits.

*Friend*, 'tis kindly confess, that Man's carnal imaginary Reason is an Angel of such satanical Depths, that the most high God-like Men that ever were, have oftentimes been snared therewith. And why so? That they might not put Confidence in any received Light in them whatsoever, but with trembling Spirits be abased before that infinite personal Glory without them, from whence it proceeded.

*Again*, From the aforesaid Darkness, a Man may mightily counterfeit lying Visions, Signs, and Wonders, concerning God, Angels, and Men, to the utter deceiving himself, yea, and the blessed ones also (if it were possible) for everlasting.

*Moreover*, I am filled with Confidence, that a Man by meer Supposition may imagine to discern much Weakness in the Declarations of Truth, from a Man sent by the Creator; and to know the true God's various Operations in his own Soul, notwithstanding he owns no God, or Creator at all, but imaginary Gods only, which he calls an infinite, or vast Spirit, which is without Form, and void.

*Furthermore*, I am not ignorant now, that from natural Parts, and Education only, a Man may be indued with such sharp Comprehensions, profound Languages, divine Sentences,  
and

and seeming Self-denial, that neither Man nor Angel can possibly discover him, 'till the Lord Jesus makes him manifest by his Fruits.

*Again,* I suppose it possible, that from a meritorious Conceit only, a Man may have Power to distribute all he hath to the Poor, and give his Body to the Fire, and yet be but a Cast-away, for want of acting Mercy, in Obedience from a divine Light, or Love in him, to an infinite personal God, or Glory without him.

*Moreover,* Because the Serpent-angel, or Devil in Man's Flesh, naturally winds itself into every good Desire, Thought, Word, and Deed, oftentimes predominating over Men's spiritual Peace; therefore a Son, full of God-like Compassion, is subject to question his eternal Inheritance, when an uncompassionate Child, possess'd with goodly Words only, is under deep Damnation, and knows it not, until his Light descend into sensible Darkness, of a fiery Life, or everlasting burning Death.

In the next Place, having manifested thy Suspicion of the Truth of my Commission, or Inspiration, as proceeding from the Spirit of all Truth; or if true, of a thorough renewing of my Spirit by it, or of walking contrary to it; somewhat shall be declared in Answer thereunto.

*Friend,* If thy Light informs thee, that the most high and holy One may empower a Man in this Age to declare divine Secrets to the Heirs of mortal Crowns; Is it not Wisdom's Way, rather to magnify himself in a contemptible Vessel, than in that which is with Riches and Honour among Men?

*Again,* Be it known unto thee, that as a Man speaks privately with his Friend, so did the Creator himself speak *eight Times* distinct Words unto my Spirit, even to the Hearing of the outward Ear; by Vertue of which, powerfully was I sent forth, to demonstrate the substantial Things of Eternity, prepared only for those Spirits that proceeded out of the Nature of the glorious Spirit of all Variety of infinite Excellencies.

*Therefore,* though many Angel-like Men may be under their Seasons of Light and Darkness, doth it therefore of Necessity follow, that the Commissioners of the unerring Spirit should be in the same Condition?

Is it not more meet they should be preserv'd from the Power of visible, or invisible Temptations, above all other Men? Seeing, *Paul*-like, they have, and are to be abundantly tried, by serpentine Spirits, in another Manner, in relation to him that sent him, concerning his wonderful Secrets of eternal Life and Death, upon the Spirits and Bodies of all Mankind, very suddenly.

*Moreover*, Their Persons being prevented from the Honour, or Dishonour of Riches, or any worldly Incumbrances, above many of their Brethren; may they not, in all Stillness of Mind, have more Communion with the Holy Spirit, concerning unutterable Glories to come, than other Men?

*Moreover*, Being set apart to be more than ordinarily enlightned with a real Understanding of the personal Glory, of an infinite Majesty itself; as soon as ever they feel the carnal Serpent begin to sting, before it becomes a fiery Serpent, or Dragon, to torment the whole Man; may they not, by the Light in them, look upon the Son of Man in his Glory, and be immediately healed?

*Again*, It is written, *There remaineth therefore a Rest to the People of God; for he that is entered into his Rest, is also ceased from his own Works, as God did from his.* What thinkest thou then of the Restlessness often arising in wise Mens Spirits? May it not be for want of the Power of Love in them unto their poor Brethren, from their mixing divine Motions, and carnal Notions together, and building them upon an imaginary God, instead of the spiritual Rock of all Ages?

*Moreover*, If Men, whose Tongues and Faces appear like Angels, in Comparison of others, shall often be subjected with eternal Snares; is God's eternal Rest indeed manifest to such Men?

*Furthermore*, Though angelical subtil Serpents, and simple Doves, or childish Saints, may be subjected to many sad Soul-distempers, through Ignorance of the spiritual Foundation of glorious Peace; yet may not those Men, unto whom the living Light hath manifested itself in Power, be entered into their royal Rest for Ever, unless they are left to commit some known Rebellion against the Lord, and his heavenly Light within them?

*Again,*

*Again,* May not those Men which enjoy the aforesaid divine Rest, certainly know that the principal Cause of many wise Mens Sorrows, whether rich or poor, is through want of a clear Comprehension of the glorious Person of the high and mighty God? For if Mens Spirits were really acquainted with the Lord of all Light and Life, how could their Souls frequently want spiritual Rest, being vertyually one with Salvation itself? And how can those Men, but be as Springs of settled Light of Life eternal, unto whose Spirits an incomprehensible God of Glory hath appeared as the Sun in his Brightness? But, on the contrary, thinkst thou those Men can possibly be freed from many Agonies of deep Darkness, who idolize a false God, or vainly imagine that no Man is capable to know the true God, because he is Infinite?

*Moreover,* Though the Spirit of our personal God, by vertue of its glorious Brightness, comprehends all Spirits at once, yet, except Men are enabled by the Light of Life in some Measure to comprehend his infinite Glory also, for what I know they may everlastingly perish.

*Furthermore,* Though Men or Angels have no divine Light of Life in them, but from the Influences of an infinite Majesty; yet thou mayst know, that his All-comprehensiveness consists not in its spiritual Quantity, but glorious Quality only. If I should say to thee, that the Essence of an infinite Glory, in its Quantity, is but as a Spark of Fire, canst thou or any Creature disprove me? And if so, doth not his transcendent Excellency so much the more appear to those which shall in some Measure be enabled to comprehend so wonderful Secrets?

*Again,* If thou art really convinced in thy Conscience that there is a Creator, and dost truly understand him to be a distinct personal Glory from thee, and all Things and Places, as he is; then with us (which live in this Light) thou must needs know, that the Spirit of our Lord Jesus Christ, God and Man, in one Person glorified, is called Infinite, Incomprehensible, Vast, or Boundless, upon the Account aforesaid. O! would it not be a divine Rarity, if but the honourable wise Man should own this our God in Power, and his glorious Truths revealed by us his poor despised Messengers? Why? Because they clearly



clearly discover the fandy Foundation of all those, who, through Darknes, slight a personal Glory, and adore an incomprehensible formless Spirit, otherwise an infinite Nothing, but glittering Words only.

*Again, (says he) If the Spirit of Satan cannot utter great mysterious Things, both concerning the Creation and Redemption, whence did those arise that John Robbins, and his Prophets, did wonderfully utter in this Kind?*

To this, from the Light, may be answer'd, If the Spirit of an infinite Majesty had discover'd *John Robbins* to thee, as it did in Love to me, about eight Months before his Recantation to *O. Cromwell*, thou couldst not then have possibly yoked us together; but the Light of Life in me imputes it only to thy not knowing of *John Robbin's* cursed Tenets, and carnal Designs, when his own hellish Darknes appeared in its Power upon him, and those that were under the same Deceit, by thee called *Prophets*.

*Moreover, Notwithstanding thy carnal Confidence, that divine Mysteries may be truly declared by a satanical Spirit: As to that, from a glorious Light I am emboldened to affirm, that neither Men nor Angels, from a false Spirit, are capable to demonstrate the wonderful Mysteries of Creation and Redemption. Why? Because thou mayst know, that the right Understanding of all spiritual Excellencies are inclosed only in these two Secrets. As it is written, Why speakest thou to them in Parables? He answered, and said unto them, because to you it is given to know the Mysteries of the Kingdom, but to them it is not given.*

*Furthermore, Are any Secrets comparable with those of Christ's everlasting Kingdom? Again, seeing all is not Gold that glitters, was it the Spirit of God that moved thee to write, that his Salvation-Secrets may be truly laid open by a lying Spirit?*

*Moreover, Suppose a Man, by a natural Instinct, be able to comprehend all Mens ordinary Experiences, yet this Man hath not heard the Voice of God at any Time, neither certainly knoweth whether ever the Creator did speak to Man or no; was it the Spirit of God moved that Man to judge his Writings, which hath not only heard the Lord's Voice, but hath also inwardly*

inwardly both seen and felt the exceeding Brightness of his Glory, yea, and the dreadful Horror of his own natural Darkness, even as that Man did who cry'd out, *He was undone*, when the Glory of the Lord appeared in him? But who can attain to heavenly Wisdom, 'till it be given him from on high? And can that Man wait for a spiritual Distinction between the Things of eternal Life and Death, who already is possess'd with great Confidence that the choicest Secrets of the Most High may be truly demonstrated by a diabolical Spirit, notwithstanding himself hath no immediate Commission or Revelation from a known God, or Glory, to build his Understanding upon? But what shall I say to such an Angel-like Man as thou art, concerning the glorious and dreadful Things of Eternity, seeing thou art exalted in the Midst of such notional and natural Heavens already? Only this, the Secrets of the Lord are with them that fear him, and love him, and his beloved ones, with his own pure Love rooted in them, from a real Understanding of his personal Glory, in the wonderful Mysteries of Creation and Redemption. But unto glittering Worldlings, this Light appears as Weakness or Foolishness; because it discovers the Vanity of their perishing Gods of Gold, Silver, precious Stones, fleshly Honour, good Language, and such like. And how can they bear it, 'till a more excellent Glory powerfully presents itself unto them?

Again, Thou advisest me seriously to consider, whether I was immediately moved by the Spirit of the Lord, to present that Writing unto thee. As to that, if the Love of God or Man so shines in thy Soul, that thou art not concerned in that Epistle, blessed art thou above Thousands. Nevertheless, it is unquestionably known unto me, and some others also, that the Creator will one Day own the Substance of that Epistle as from his own Spirit, to the utter confounding of all Gait-sayings for everlasting. Moreover, Though natural wise Mens God is Health, Wealth, Honour, long Life, and goodly Words only; and make the Creator's Name in vain all their Life long; yet I cannot forbear much mentioning of his glorious Person, because he spake unto me from the third Heaven, as he did unto Paul.

Farthermore,

*Furthermore*, If the everlasting true God, in Variety of spiritual Discerning, hath appeared in thy Soul, thou canst not then be a Stranger to almost all that is here written: But, on the contrary, if a spiritual Majesty, with the personal Glory, and Shame of Elect and Reprobates, at the Great Day is as yet veiled from thine Eyes; then indeed what is here related may appear unto thee but as Brain-Fancies only. Nevertheless, except these substantial Truths be written in thee; I aver from that God, from whom thou hadst thy Being, that all thy former Writings or Speakings to thy Brethren, as upon a spiritual Account, were but as the Language of a Parrot.

*Again*, Thou sayst, That I *barp much concerning thy distributing thy outward Possessions, in which thy Spirit doth not at all answer mine.* As to that, if thy Spirit had been clear, as to that glorious Spirit or God of real Love or Pity, through whose Appearance my Soul is preserved from those inward Snares of eternal burning Death in utter Darkness: My Epistle could not have been slighted by thee upon that Account; except thy Light perswades thee, that to improve thy Talent for the Exaltation of thy own Relations only, is the greatest Pitch of Charity, and to feed thy helpless Brethren only with goodly Words.

*Moreover*, If, upon a spiritual Account, thy Soul hath travelled under the Condition of eternal Life and Death; and upon a natural Account, art acquainted with a Condition of Straitness as well as Fulness; findest thou more inward Satisfaction in Bowels of Enlargement, or when thou wast chained up from all brotherly Pity whatsoever?

*Furthermore*, Though it be not in the Power of any Creature to think a good Thought, or prevent an evil Thought; yet if any Man shall pretend, experimentally, to own a glorious God, or Spirit of all Variety of infinite Love itself, and tender Compassion to the Sons of Men, and shall neglect the spiritual Duty, *Of doing as he would be done unto*, from a Condemnation of waiting a divine Motion thereunto, his Heart may become an Adamant to all God-like Pity for evermore.

*Again*, Thy Language is like unto him that certainly knows: that there is no hiding of Mens Serpentine-wiles from the All seeing glorious Eye. If thou speakest thy own possessed Light, thou

thou knowest it to be impossible for any Man to enjoy true and lasting Peace, but from Love encreasing to an infinite Majesty, manifesting itself unto Men, representing his glorious Image. Nevertheless, blessed art thou above all temporal Inheritors, if thou art guided to know when, and how, to act thy Charity for divine Enjoyment, according to the Spirit of the Lord.

*Again, Thou sayst, Revelations are of great Danger, and do lift up the Flesh, making Way for a greater Fall, unless the Spirit be sufficiently poised before-hand, by the natural Growth and Power of Life, that maketh thee undesiring of any such Thing, tho' thou acknowledgest it to be of Esteem and Worth.*

To this I answer, Doth not true Wisdom teach Men to speak, or write in their own Line, and not in another Man's? Wherefore seeing thou art so far unacquainted with the Nature of divine Revelation, that thou never didst desire it, how canst thou know thy Affirmation to be true? *Moreover,* Doth thou think it possible for any Man really to know the Nature of spiritual or temporal Secrets, if his Soul hath never tasted them? But who can blame thee for not desiring the Knowledge of eternal Excellencies, if thou suppose it dangerous to enjoy them? *Furthermore,* If (according to thy Declaration) thy Soul is unacquainted with the Operation of divine Revelation, how canst thou then know the Effects of it, upon my Account, in another Man? When *Saul* was travelling to *Damascus*, with a bloody Intent to all that published the Name of Jesus, was he fore-qualified to receive a Commission, Vision, or Revelation, from the Lord Jesus in Glory? Wherefore seeing the glorious Power of divine Revelation as yet veils itself from thy Understanding, what moved thy Pen to determine of it? Was it not the same Spirit or Light in thee aforesaid, which gave Judgment concerning the Mysteries of Creation and Redemption?

*Again,* May not the greatest Appearance of Light that ever was in Men or Angels become the deepest Darkness in the End, except it be preserved with the holy Inspirations of an infinite Purity? 'Tis confess'd, there are Degrees of this purifying Light; but what thinkest thou, would it not have been better for all Sorts of angelical Speakers, or spiritual Non-conformists,

that they had never been born; if they enjoy not a Measure of it before their Death?

*Moreover,* Though this everlasting Light have not clearly manifest itself in thy Soul at present; yet because thou mayst enjoy it in due Time, when the Holy Spirit presents the Super-excellency of it into thy Spirit, therefore suffer me to write a little of the Effects of it in my own Soul.

From the Truth itself, be it known unto thee, before I was possess'd with this Light, I wanted Power to bear an angry Word from any one living; but since this Light became my Guide, for bearing Witness to my God's Commission, and Revelation to our Brethren in the Flesh, I have been enabled patiently to bear many bitter Words, Blows, Shame, and Scorn, even before the Powers, among brutish Men, besides seven Months close Imprisonment, and often in Danger of Life itself; yet for all this I was made willing to return Good for Evil to my sharpest Persecutors; wherefore (as most due is) all Honour, Praise, and Glory, be rendred from elect Men and Angels, to the God of all Inspiration, for everlasting. Also the higher the Vision appeared, the lower was and is my dark Spirit humbled before its incomprehensible Brightness; yet because I find Doubting in thy Spirit of a real Discovery of my inward Carnalities, therefore I confess to thee, that this Light hath broken the Head of an aspiring Serpent in my Flesh, that, *John Robbins*-like, would have exalted itself above all that is called God, and trampled his infinite glorious Wisdom and heavenly Love, in all his redeemed ones, under Foot, if he had not been prevented by his divine Appearance. Wherefore that Words may provoke thee to thirst after these unknown Excellencies: I say, that this Light doth not only discover and destroy Mens carnal Rebellions against the Creator's Person, and shew Men the Beauty of those inward Virtues of eternal Life, through which their Souls are delivered from judging Things unrevealed, but it doth also enable them, in some Measure, to comprehend an infinite Majesty itself, and his vast glorious Throne, with the Variety of transcendent Excellencies, fitted for elect Men and Angels; and everlasting sensible burning Death or Wrath in utter Darkness, which is stored up for all those that are left to exalt their own Wisdom  
of

of Words, above this inspiring Light of the Things of Life eternal.

*Again*, Thou sayst, *Thou shouldst have concluded with a solemn Prayer for me, but that thou perceivest it so great an Offence to me.* As to that, who could have known thy Formality by thy Language, if thou couldst have contained thy Light to thyself? Suppose thou art under literal, natural, or notional Prayers, what Virtue is there in them to cure my Infirmities? Indeed they may pacify thy own Spirit, if it be void of Charity, for a Moment, as *David's* Harp quieted the merciless Spirit of *Saul*.

*Moreover*, If thy Light be spiritual, thou knowest then that an Heir of immortal Glory sounds a Trumpet no more in his Prayers, than his Alms. *Furthermore*, If the Light of God hath appeared in thy Soul, then his Love in thee undoubtedly beareth Witness of the Excellency of Mercy above all Sacrifice. *Nevertheless*, If, *Cornelius-like*, thy private Prayers and Alms are entred into the glorious Ears of the Lord of Hosts, as the Effects of his divine Love abiding in thee, then what is aforesaid, concerning Compassion to thy poor Brethren, can be no Offence to thee, it being but a Repetition of thy own Enjoyment.

*Again*, If in very Deed, from a divine Fulness, thou art only bountiful to Mens natural Wants, but art often also compelled to pray for their eternal Blessedness upon a spiritual Account: If thou hadst really known my Condition, it would have appeared unto thee, that my Soul was then, and now is, almost always in a Frame of spiritual Prayer and Praises unto the personal Majesty of our Lord Jesus Christ in the Throne of Eternity. *Moreover*, If thou art a praying Man, thou mayst know, that that Spirit which hath been filled with Inspiration from a known God, is so qualified, that it is ever harkning to his divine Motions, or full of heavenly Desires for his elect Brethren, as his own Soul, or spiritual Liftings up for all Conditions to the Throne of divine Excellencies, or in continual Expectation, not only of the invisible but visible appearing also of the divine Majesty, with his mighty Angels, to make an everlasting Separation between compassionate *Israelites*, and bowelleſs *Canaanites*.

O Lord God, if through many fiery Temptations, and almost unutterable Afflictions, thy own beloved ones scarcely be saved, where shall mercileſs gilded tongu'd Hypocrites ſhew their Faces? Which, for Truth's Sake, were never acquainted with any ſpiritual or temporal Sufferings in their own Perſons in the leaſt.

*Furthermore,* If thou approve of Prayer to an infinite Ma-jeſty, I humbly beſeech thee, are not the inward Speakings of the Spirit, in all Stilneſs of Soul, the only Prayer? That is; to all thoſe that are under the Teachings of the Spirit. *Note,* I do not in the leaſt deny the Uſe of the Tongue in Prayer and Praises alſo, ſo that a Man be undoubtedly moved thereto by the true Light of the righteous Judge of Quick and Dead, but glittering Words, flowing from natural Parts only in mercileſs Men, are Abomination to our God, and his tender Love in his new-born People.

I ſay again, Bleſſed art thou above Millions of Mankind, if thou art one of this Number, then for the moſt Part thou knoweſt, that earthly Poſſeſſions are Men's only God, therefore grievous to part with any of it in Private upon the Account of Charity. Wherefore, to ſtop the Mouth of an accuſing Conſcience, inſtead of ſeeming Mercies, thou knoweſt they offer up many blind Sacrifices to an unknown infinite Nothing, but goodly Words only; and ſo for want of an Enjoyment of pure Love to an infinite known God, powerfully manifeſted to poor innocent Men, repreſenting his glorious Perſon, through the exceſſive Love and Deceit of uncertain Riches, they everlaſtingly periſh.

*John Reeve.*

*An EPISTLE from the eternal  
Jehovah, or Jesus, unto that Noble Chri-  
stian Gentleman, stiled by the Name of  
the Earl of Pembroke, wherein is recited  
an Answer to a publick Assertion of Esquire  
Pennington, by the last true Messenger and  
spiritual Prophet of the Lord Jesus Christ,  
God and Man, in one distinct Person, blessed  
for evermore.*

**L**oving Friend and Brother in the only Lord of all Truth,  
when you have perused this Writing, if you shall count it  
worthy of the Press, my Desire is, for the Truth's Sake, that you  
would be pleased to further the publishing of it, because of my  
Inability.

*Most Courteous and Christian Gentleman,*

**T**HAT good Report of God-like Compassion in you,  
especially unto the innocent Lambs of Jesus Christ,  
hath made me to present this Epistle unto your spiri-  
tual Consideration.

In the first Chapter to the *Corinthians*, the 26th, 27th, 28th,  
and 29th Verses, it is thus written: *After the Flesh not many  
Mighty, not many Noble, are called; but God hath chosen the  
foolish Things of this World to confound the mighty Things, and  
wile Things of the World, and Things which are despised, hath  
God chosen, and Things which are not, to bring to naught Things  
that are, that no Flesh should rejoice in his Presence.*

Sir, It was my Lot to peruse a printed Book, written by  
Esquire Pennington, Son of Alderman Pennington, of this City  
of London, which Book is stiled by the Name of *Divine Essays:*  
Or, *Considerations about several Things in Religion.* And a-  
mong several Expressions, in the 4th Page of that Writing,  
are these Lines, viz. *Now who knoweth whether these Things  
which*



48 *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.*

*which have been so contrary in all Dispensations hitherto, shall not here meet? Life and Death, Heaven and Hell, which every where else are at such a Distance, may here touch one another, and agree sweetly together, and so fully, that both their Names and Natures, whereby they did appear, and were so various in their Dispensations, may here be drowned and vanish; yet it is not by either's real Loss of any Thing whereby or wherein they differed, they become thus harmoniously united, but by their entering into a more perfect Fulness; and he to whom this seemeth strange, and is so much offended at it, let him fairly answer me this following Question:*

*Were not Heaven and Hell in Union in their Root? Before they were brought forth, were they not at Rest and Peace in the Power of God, from whence they were produced? Without Controversy, whatever lay there, lay in Rest. Now, did the Lord bring forth any Thing that he cannot bring back again? And who can say he will not? Surely every Thing most naturally breatheth after that Condition of Rest and Fulness which it can enjoy in his Bosom. Most certain it is, the vast Spirit of the Lord taketh in all Things, howsoever it disposeth of them; whence they came, whither they return, there they are, and doubtless there they may be found in Union and Agreement by him whose Spirit is quick and piercing enough. Happy is he that can read this Truth in the Spirit of the Lord; but wretchedly miserable is he who frameth false Imaginations in his own Spirit, by the Vanity of his own Mind concerning it.*

*Sir, As the Esquire, by his high Imagination, was moved to propound a hard Question, so likewise the Spirit of God moved me to return him a soft Answer, which is as followeth: Sir, By your Writing, I perceive that all Experiences have passed through you concerning Religion, or Opinion among Men, but you should not therefore have concluded your Affirmation infallible, for the Lord shall fairly answer you by the Hand of his poor despised Messenger. And as with Moderation you would have Men to peruse your Labour, the like is required of you; and as you count them happy, which are not guided by their own Imaginations, so likewise happy are you; if you are preserved from judging the Inspirations of the eternal Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, by your high imaginary Reason, which*

## An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke. 49

which is utterly incapable to comprehend invisible Things that are eternal, unless it be inspired into you from on high.

*Sir*, I confess, that if the Lord of Glory himself had not spoken to me from his immortal Throne, by distinct Words, Voice to Voice, as one Man speaks to another, I could not possibly have set Pen to Paper to so high a Query. Your Question is this, *Were not Heaven and Hell at Union in their Root before they were brought forth?*

From the true Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ I answer you, that from all Eternity Hell was a distinct Being in itself, there was no harmonious Union between it, and the Creator; but Light and Darkness, Life and Death, Heaven and Hell, in the Sight of God, eternally were distinct from one another, both in their Root, and in their Fruit.

But it will be said to me, *How can I make this appear to any Man's Understanding?* First, I shall speak something of the *Creator* himself, and then, in order to the clearing this Truth, unto those whose Faith is strong in the true God, by Inspiration from the Holy Spirit of the only true God, I declare that the *Creator* neither is, nor never was, an infinite or vast Spirit without any bodily Form, as Men blindly imagine, for want of a spiritual Distinction in them. But from all Eternity, that uncreated *Creator* of all sensible, spiritual, natural, and rational Creatures, was a distinct, immortal, bodily Substance, in the Form and Likeness of a Man; only his divine *Form*, or *Person*, was an unutterable bright burning, fiery Glory, in Motion swifter than Thought; and his divine *Excellency*, as a Christial Fountain or Sea, infinitely overflowing in him, as namely, pure *Faith*, his almighty *Power*, or heavenly *Love*, his ravishing *Glory*, or any spiritual *Glory* or *Virtue*, that can be named.

Thus you may see, (if the Lord will) that before any Creature was formed, to live in his Sight, the eternal *Majesty* possessed his glorious Joys by himself alone. Now the original Ground of all infinite Variety of new spiritual Wisdom, Joy, and Glory, that the Creator did enjoy, or foresee he should possess to all Eternity, naturally sprang in him, from his incomprehensible Knowledge of his own endless *Infiniteness*, or from his perfect Understanding of an eternal *Increase* in him-

50 *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.*

self, of all Manner of heavenly *Excellencies*, to solace himself withal, or Men or Angels, that should be created by him.

So much, as a brief Description concerning the immortal *Person* of the true God, his divine Nature, and heavenly Glory, that from Eternity he enjoyed, before any living Creature was formed in his Sight.

*Sir*, If this Demonstration of the only blessed Creator seem as a low Thing, or as a Paradox unto you, from the eternal Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, my Counsel unto you shall be this, That you beware of the imaginary Devil of unclean Reason within you, because, since it possessed Mankind, the Nature of it is to exalt itself, and its own earthly Wisdom, above the heavenly Wisdom of its Creator, and by it to condemn the Things of its God, because it cannot comprehend them. For since the Fall of *Adam*, the Devil and his Angels, so frequently spoken of in Scripture, both great and small, are all cloathed with Flesh, Blood, and Bone; but Men, for want of the Knowledge of the true God, are utterly ignorant of the right Devil also.

*Again*, When it is the good Pleasure of the Most High to reveal himself to you, as from his eternal free Love he hath unveiled a Glimpse of immortal Glory unto me, then shall you know indeed and in truth, that the eternal God, and alone Creator of Heaven, Earth, Angels, and Men, and all living Creatures is now cloathed with Flesh and Bone, upon his glorious Throne, even the Man Christ Jesus, who inseparably is both *Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, or Spirit*, in only one distinct glorified Body, or Person, to all Eternity.

*Again*, If you acknowledge there is a *Creator*, and that this *Creator* is a distinct spiritual *Substance*; and that there is but only one wise *God* and *Creator*, and no more; then without Controversy the Man *Christ Jesus*, that all true Scripture bears Record unto, must of Necessity be that unknown *Creator* and *Redeemer* of his Elect, God alone, blessed for evermore, which Men so much discourse about, as if the immortal personal Essence, or Glory of this mighty *God*, were all within them; and yet they remain utterly ignorant of him; many of them glorying in this their Darknes, as if it were the only Light of eternal Life in them, not to know the Creator at all, and forsaking.

## *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.* 51

faking the Truth of the visible Record, of the invisible spiritual God, the Man Christ Jesus, by their imaginary blind Reasonings, they have converted the eternal spiritual Truths of the only everlasting God, into vain, empty, notional Fancies, which they call the *Mystery* of the *History*, when the Lord knoweth, it is the *Babylonish Mystery* of *Iniquity* of Men in Darkness, in Opposition to the *True Mystery* of *God*, the *Everlasting Father*, cloathing himself with *Flesh* and *Bone*, as with a Garment, and in that glorious *Body* displaying the Splendour of his spiritual Beams into the Spirits and Bodies of elect Men and Angels to all Eternity.

*Sir*, I would not willingly wear out your Patience with Superfluity of Words: Oh! bear with me a little, I humbly beseech you, and conceive it to be from the Love of the divine Voice of God himself, our Lord Jesus Christ, in me unto you, and all of your sweet and tender Spirit.

*Again*, In the next Place, by Inspiration from the Lord Jesus, I declare, that from all Eternity, those Elements of Earth and Water were uncreated Substances, distinct from the ever-living Spirit, Person, Nature, or Glory, of the uncreated eternal God, or Creator of all living Forms.

Wherefore, if you grant there was a *Time*, in which all Things that have Life had a *Beginning*; then of necessity the Creator must from Eternity reign alone, before any Thing was formed to live in his Sight. Wherefore, if you imagine the Creator to be an infinite, or vast Spirit, without any bodily Form; yet you cannot possibly deny, but that he must have a Place to display his glorious Life in or upon; so that (without Controversy) Earth and Water, in respect of their Matters and Substances, must needs be eternal with God, or in his Presence. Indeed it cannot be denied, that if the Creator should be an infinite, or vast bodiless Spirit, as you have declared him to be, but Earth and Water, and all Things else, from Eternity, must needs be harmoniously one with him. But as the Lord liveth, and all Creatures that he hath made, and formed into Life, either for a Time, or to Eternity, it is no such Thing. For there is no such God, or vast bodiless Spirit, nor never was at all; but Death, Hell, or utter Darkness, were eternally secretly hid in those dark, dead, or senseless

## 52 *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.*

less elementary Substances of Earth and Water, only of themselves they could not appear to be, but must be produced by the powerful Word of a sensible living Creator.

Thus it is clear, the glorious eternal God being all Light, and no Darknes; all Life, and no Death; all Heaven, and no Hell; he could not possibly be essentially one with any living Creature he had formed, as Men vainly imagine. *For God is Light, and in him is no Darknes at all.* As in *John*.

*Again,* But you will say unto me, I have not clearly answered you to the Question; Why? Because if it be granted, that from all Eternity the Creator was a distinct glorious Person or Form, whose spiritual Nature was nothing else but Light and Life; and that the Elements of Earth and Water were distinct Substances from him, and that Death, Hell, and Darknes, were secretly hid in them, yet they could not possibly produce any living Life, or living Death of themselves, but were all brought forth by the ever-living Spirit of the Creator; then what was that Spirit or Life that entred into elementary Earth or Waters, but the divine Nature of God himself?

By Inspiration, from the holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, to this I answer, (the Man *Adam* only excepted) That neither the elect invisible Angels, who are spiritual Bodies in the Forms of Men, whose Natures are pure Reason; nor any other living Creatures, were of the same Nature of his Spirit that formed them; but they were all Variety of Natures to one another, and to their Creator also. And in their Kind, their Natures or Spirits were all pure in their Creation, and in a sweet Communion one with another, and with their Creator also, so long, and no longer, than they continued in their created State.

*Again,* This Secret I would gladly have the Chosen of the Most High to understand, that herein lay hid the unsearchable Wisdom of the Creator, by the Almighty Power of his Word speaking into those Substances of Earth and Water, from thence to produce as many several Spirits, or Natures, as seemed good in his Sight; and yet wholly to retain the divine Nature or Essence of his own glorious Spirit in himself, distinct from all those living Forms created by him, even as if they were not of him, or created by him at all.

*Again,*

*An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.* 53

*Again,* From the unerring Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, I declare, That it was impossible for the Creator to form both Angels and Men, to be of his own divine Nature. The Ground of which Impossibility is this, because his Prerogative Royal Glory was the eternal Wheel that moved him to create any living Creature in his Sight; and if they had been formed of his own divine Nature, I pray you what Distinction of the Variety of his Power and Wisdom could ever have been seen, or known by Men or Angels? Nay, moreover, would not Men and Angels rather have been Gods, or all Creators, than Creatures, in their Creation, if they had been both in Spirit and Body of his own divine Nature, or Spirit; and so were not capable to be changed from their created State, either to a more transcendent ascending God-like Glory, or to an unutterable descending Devil-like Shame?

*Again,* In the Spirit of Truth, and God of Order, and not of Confusion, I humbly beseech you seriously to consider this Truth, wherein all the eternal Glory of God's creating of Men, or Angels, consists. Are there any Bowels of Love, Mercy, or Compassion, in the holy Spirit of the Creator? Is there any Life, Light, or ravishing Glory in him? Or hath he any Power in himself, to do his own Pleasure with his own glorious Excellencies? Or to do his Pleasure with any Creatures formed by him? If thou shalt grant him this his Royal Prerogative, then, without all Controversy, this will follow, That unless he had created two Vessels, of Variety of Natures or Spirits, for a Time to remain in their created Purities; and in his appointed Time and Season to with-hold the Inspiration of his glorious Light from them both, by which they stood, that they might fall from their created State, by their unlawful uniting of Spirits or Natures together, to produce two Worlds, or two Generations of People, for the Manifestation of fixing his eternal Love, Light, Life, and immortal God-like Glory upon the one; and retaining the Splendour of all his glorious Excellencies to himself from the other; all his Variety of new and glorious Wisdom and Power must have been veiled from Men and Angels, and they must have remained in their Creation, like unto senseless Stocks or Stones, to all Eternity, in respect of any spiritual or natural Understanding of their Creator's infinite  
Power,

## 54 *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.*

Power, Wisdom, or Glory. it is written, *He made all Things for his own Glory; and the Wicked for the Day of Wrath: And the Carcasses of the Rebels shall be cast out, where the Worm never dieth, nor the Fire never goeth out.* When you shall see visibly an increasing Glory in God, and elect Men and Angels, then you shall know indeed the Truth of what is written.

*Again*, I humbly beseech you, can there be any Distinction between God, Angels, or Men, unless there be a Variety of Natures, or Names, to manifest a Difference between them? Can there now be any God at all, and no Devil or Devils? Can there be any Heaven at all, and no Hell? Or any Light, and no Darkness? Or any Life, and no Death? Or any eternal Life and Glory, for some of the Children of Men, and no eternal Death, Darkness, or Shame, for other some of the Children of Men? Can you possibly think, either from true Faith, or sober Reason itself, that one of these can be without the other? Doth not the one give a Being to the other? Can you therefore possibly destroy the Being of the one, and preserve the Being of the other?

*Now*, by the true Inspiration of God, you may see, in due Time, that there is no Possibility of an harmonious uniting of Heaven and Hell together, by their entering into a more perfect Fulness, according to your Description. But Heaven must needs be distinct from Hell, or else there can be no perfect Heaven; and Hell must be distinct from Heaven, or else there can be no certain Hell. The Lord my God, if it be his good Pleasure, preserve you from exalting your natural Wisdom of earthly Reason, above the spiritual Wisdom of true Faith, which is the heavenly Nature of the only wise God, the Man Jesus in Glory.

*Again*, I humbly beseech you meekly to consider what I shall write unto you, concerning your charitable Thoughts of Heaven and Hell's uniting together at the last.

By Inspiration from the God of all Truth, I declare, that since the Fall of Man, Christ and his angelical Believers, who are the lost Seed of *Adam*; and *Cain*, and his reprobate, unbelieving, unmerciful Generation, who are the Seed of the angelical Serpent. Thus, Hell and Heaven, or Light and Darkness, were never in a spiritual Union, or Communion together,

together, since they had a Being, nor can possibly be reconciled, whatever Men dream of Unity with the whole Creation. These Natures and Names, Conditions and Places, whether of eternal Life, Light, and Glory, or eternal Death, Darkness, and Shame, are to be distinct, and utterly opposite to one another, to all Eternity, as aforesaid, for the Manifestation of his royal Prerogative, of the Variety of his heavenly Glories unto some, whereby they become Persons full of ravishing Excellencies, when Time is no more, like unto himself; and with-holding the Brightness of his Love from other some, through which they become utterly Darkness, eternally tormenting themselves with their former filthy Rebellions, or vain-glorious Pleasures, they lived in. Hence ariseth continually all Variety of heavenly Songs, from elect Men and Angels, unto the Brightness of his uncreated Majesty, because they are not also cast out of his heavenly Presence with him.

Again, concerning those Words of yours, *Most certain it is that the vast Spirit of the Lord taketh in all Things, and doubtless they may be found in Union and Agreement by him whose Spirit is quick and piercing enough*; from the Holy Spirit I declare, he that can prove this your Assertion to be certainly true, as you have declared it, he hath, or is endued with a Spirit more spiritually quick and piercing, more wise and loving, or merciful, than God himself, elect Men or Angels, and may prove them all Liars, both in the Spirit and in the Letter.

Wherefore, in Opposition to this your Opinion, from the Lord Jesus I affirm, that there is no Spirit that ever was created that returns into the Creator again; but they are to be distinct from him in their Essence for everlasting, that the Creator, to the visible Sight of the Creature, may remain to be the Creator, and the Creature continue to be a Creature, unto the glorious Praise of his transcendent Brightness, even Face to Face, World without End.

Moreover, when Man dies, and turns to his Dust again from whence he was taken, his Soul or Spirit doth not return into the Spirit of the Creator, as Men, from *Solomon's* Words, blindly imagine, who was no prophetic Penman of the Holy Spirit of the Scripture Records; but the Soul, and all created



56 *An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.*

Life or Motion, dieth within the Body of Man, and turneth to Dust : Even as Fire goeth out and turneth to Ashes in an Oven that is closed, for Want of aerial Motion, even so Man's mortal fiery Spirit goeth out like the Snuff of a Candle within his Body, because he is shut up by the Most High from all aery or fiery Motion, until the visible appearing of the mighty God and our Saviour, in all his Glory, with his mighty Angels, to judge both the Quick and the Dead : Then, and not till then, shall every Seed and Spirit of Mankind, that was sowed in the Heart of the Earth by the almighty Word, or powerful Decree of God, bring forth its own Body in Glory, or in Shame, and shall remain so to all Eternity.

*Again,* By Inspiration from the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ I declare, that no Spirit hath any sensible Being distinct from its Body ; no, nor never had, nor possibly can have, neither of the Creator himself, nor Men, nor Angels, nor any other created living Form.

Wherefore the Creator is no such vast bodiless Spirit as you have described him to be ; no, nor never was ; but as from all Eternity he was an immortal Substance or Body, distinct from elementary Earth and Water, so likewise he is now become a glorified Body of Flesh and Bone, in the Likeness of a Man, and is essentially distinct from Men and Angels to all Eternity ; and the Compass or Substance of his glorious Person is no bigger than a Man is, and the Essence of it is but in one Place at once. Only take Notice of this, that his little Eyes are so transcendently bright and glorious, that at one Look or View they pierce through Heaven and Earth, Angels and Men, and at once, or one Word speaking, through his heavenly Mouth, it entereth (if it be his Pleasure) into all the Spirits of Men or Angels, or into one Man's or Angel's Spirit only ; so that all Things in Heaven or Earth, or under the Earth, continue acting his Pleasure, by the almighty Power of his Word that he hath spoken, or shall speak, notwithstanding the essential Being of his bright burning glorious Person is distinct from them all, as one Man's Person is distinct from another. This is the only very true God and eternal Life to believe, or eternal Death not to believe, or rather to despise it.

And

*An Epistle to the Earl of Pembroke.* 57

And now, in the last Place, I shall write a little of Eternity itself; that which is essentially every where is not infinite, but finite, or rather no living Thing at all,

Wherefore that God or Creator that is so essentially vast, that all Places and Things become as it were a God, that can be no God nor Creator, nor Being of Beings at all, but mere senseless Earth or Water, Stocks or Stones.

But, as aforesaid, he is an ever-living true God, Creator, or vast spiritual Substance, which is but of small Circumference, and whose glorious Essence or personal Substance is resident but in one Place only at once; and yet, by the Power of a Word speaking, through his heavenly Mouth, all Variety of spiritual or natural Wisdom floweth into the Spirits of Men or Angels, like Rivers of living Waters, and naturally returns back again all Honour and Glory unto the uncreated Fountain of all eternal Excellencies.

Thus desiring the Lord, the Most High, to reveal the true Understanding of himself unto you, and all his Chosen ones; I remain yours, in the eternal Spirit of Love itself, and Witness unto the only very true God, the Man Jesus, aforesaid,

*John Reeve,*

A Pilgrim and Stranger unto the blind  
vain-glorious Age of Confusion in  
Religion, or notional Opinion.

the sudden visible appearing of the Lord of Life and Glory in the Air, with all his mighty elect Angels, to judge both the Dead and the Quick; I mean to make an eternal Separation between the Persons of the Elect and the Persons of the Reprobate. For this I would have you to understand, (if it be his good Pleasure, who is both Father, Son, and Spirit, in one distinct glorious Person) that except *Moses Enoch*, and *Elias*, whose Persons were translated into the highest Heavens in Glory, all Mankind, Elect and Reprobate, both Souls and Bodies, are dead asleep in the Dust of the Earth, until Christ cometh in his Glory.

Then shall the Elect, by the Decree or Voice of Jesus Christ the *Archangel*, first appear out of the Graves, and, in the twinkling of an Eye, with all the Elect that are then living, as one Man, with a glorious Shout, shall, with distinct immortal Bodies, like unto their God, ascend to meet the Lord in the Air, and with him and his mighty Angels, as swift as Thought, enter into that infinite vast new *Heaven* and new *Earth* above the Stars, whose actual Sin was never committed against him, there visibly beholding his glorious Person Face to Face; and the Persons of elect Men and Angels naturally singing new Songs and glorious Praises, in Eternity to Eternity, unto their blessed Redeemer.

Then immediately also shall the Reprobates appear out of the Dust, with Bodies of a descending Nature, according to their former earthly Mindedness. My Meaning is this, their Bodies spiritually be as dark as Pitch, naturally as heavy as Lead, and their own Spirits shall be the Devil, and their own Bodies shall be their Prison of Hell; which, through the Absence of the Voice, or Motions of the Spirit of God in them as formerly, and the Presence of all their former Glory, and filthy Thoughts, Imaginations, Actions, and their Desires, their Spirits shall burn with an envious living Death and dying Life; beyond all natural Fire whatsoever; and their Flesh shall burn above all natural Brimstone, never seeing one another's dreadful Faces, nor stirring their Bodies from the Place they appear in to all Eternity. And the Reason of this their utter Darkness, both within and without also, will be this, because the Sun, Moon, and Stars, with all their natural Lights within this

*An Epistle to a Kinsman.* 61

this World, through the Absence of the Lord Jesus, will go out like the Staff of a Candle; and all the Glory of this whole World, from the Firmament of Heaven to the Earth, will be burnt up, and vanish like Smoke, and come to nothing; the Seas and Rivers, or Springs, shall be dried up, as if they had never been, and the Earth that we now tread upon shall be like unto the fiery burning Sands, suitable for those hellish Firebrands, who, at this Time, in the Days of their Mortality, despised to yield Obedience to the spiritual Person of the Lord Jesus Christ, and scoff at all Purity in his angelical Saints.

You are my beloved Kinsman in the Spirit, if you are made one with what I have written; for as sure as the Lord liveth; and as certain as you are a Man of Flesh, Blood, and Bone; what I have written is as true as Truth itself, and will suddenly come to pass. Oh! blessed are all those which long for the second and last appearing of Almighty God, who alone, by his own precious Blood shedding, hath redeemed elect Mankind from the Wrath of eternal Death, before-mentioned in this Epistle.

*Your Kinsman, in the only eternal pure Being, and glorious Fountain of all Streams, in elect Men and Angels, the Lord Jesus Christ, infinitely transcending all Heavens, Angels, or Men,*

*John Reeve,*

The Son of *Walter Reeve*, deceased, commissioned Messenger of the Lord Jesus Christ, by Voice of Words from on high.

*What*

*What was from Eternity.*

*An Epistle concerning the only true God, of his glorious Throne, and the pure Creation, from that which is false.*

**M**Y spiritual Friends, and beloved Brethren, in Things of Eternity, being inspir'd in some small Measure with the Original of all divine Delight, it being my principal Work, designed from the Most High, what I receive from the Lord Jesus Christ, who is the eternal Being, that I freely declare unto you.

Now I know you, that are spiritual indeed cannot possibly despise the Letter called the Book of the Scriptures, or visible Records of invisible Eternities; why, because you know that without Words it is impossible to demonstrate Things to one another; therefore I shall nominate the Letter before I speak the Mind of the Spirit.

This Epistle is to you, which are made capable to comprehend all Opinions or high Notions that are or shall appear to be, because your Spirits are made virtually one with Eternity itself, but not essentially one, for then there would be no Distinction between the Former and the formed; for this I would have you to understand, that the Creature, Sun in the Firmament, is a distinct Body or Circumference, about the Bigness of a square Chamber, whatsoever lying Sophisters, by their Imaginations, tell you to the contrary; from the Lord I know it to be Truth.

Now you know that the Body or Essence of the Sun always hath its Abode where it is fixed, ever running its Course round the Firmament called Heaven, where it remains in its Essence till Time is no more; also you know that virtually it giveth forth

forth its Light, Heat, and Strength, into natural Things, that seem to be absolutely dead; which natural Vertue occasioneth Life and Joy in the essential Body of the Sun, to all sensible or rational living Creatures. So likewise it is with the invisible Son of God, the eternal Creator; for he is a distinct glorious Being, by Vertue of his Word, fixed, as it were, (in respect of his bodily or personal Presence) in the invisible heavenly Glory, where elect Angels remain until Time be swallowed up in Eternity. And virtually, motionally, or spiritually, from his glorious Body, shineth all glorious Light and heavenly Life, into the Spirits of elect Men and Angels, ever retaining his essential infinite Glory in himself to himself, that the uncreated Being of Beings may remain in his distinct decreed Form or Center to Eternity; that uncreated Glory may glory in its own eternal Glory, and the created Glory may glory not in itself, or any Light or Life within itself, but in the Glory of its Creator, who is the Fountain of all Light, Life, and Glory, visible and invisible.

That which is to be treated upon in this Epistle is, *What there was from Eternity: Whether there is any other World, or created Being, or Place, besides this: Also, What the true Creation of God is, from the lying Imaginations, which is the Devil in Man.*

In the ninth of Hebrews, Verse 3, it is thus written: *Through Faith we understand that the Worlds were ordained by the Word of God, so that Things which are seen are not made of Things which did appear.* And in the 12th, 14th, 15th, and 16th Verses of the same Chapter, are these Words: *And they confessed that they were Strangers and Pilgrims on the Earth; for they that say such Things declare plainly that they seek a Country; and if they had been mindful of the Country from whence they came out, they had Leisure to have returned; but now they desire a better, that is, an heavenly one; wherefore God is not ashamed to be called their God, for he hath prepared for them a City.* Compare these Sayings with the ninth of John, 1st, 2d, and 3d Verses, and there you may see, that have the single Eye of the heavenly Glory within you, who this God is that hath prepared that heavenly City, Place, or Kingdom of eternal Glory, chiefly for you which own no other God nor Father, nor eternal Spirit, nor Creator, nor Being of Beings, but the

Lord

Lord Jesus Christ alone; that Man of all immortal Crowns, of eternal Glory, infinitely transcending all Heavens, Angels, and Men, who, in the Days of his creaturely Condition, said unto his Chosen ones, *Let not your Hearts be troubled; ye believe in God, believe also in me. In my Father's House are many Mansions; if it were not so I would have told you. I go to prepare a Place for you; I will come again, and receive you to myself; that where I am, there ye may be also.* And in the last Chapter of the Prophet *Isaiab*, the first Verse, *Thus saith the Lord, the Heaven is my Throne, and the Earth is my Foot-stool.* And in the first of the *Acts*, and the 11th Verse, it is thus written: *Ye Men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing into Heaven; this Jesus which is taken up from you into Heaven, shall come as ye have seen him go into Heaven.* And in the 22d Chapter of *St. Matthew*, Verse 22, *He that sitteth by Heaven sweareth by the Throne of God, and him that sitteth thereon.* I might mention many other Records in Scripture to this Purpose, but I have spoken too many already, to those dark Lights which disown any God, or Scripture, or Glory to come, or Immortality, after the dissolving of this Mortality; but Glory of an Immortality of Eternity, which is in them already, and yet after Death they are utterly ignorant whether they shall have any Being at all, mortal or immortal, but blindly suppose an eternal swallowing up into an unknown glorious Being, or else an eternal ceasing to be.

I know unto you that have received the spiritual Oil of divine Faith, in the Truth of holy Writ, which is quoted from the visible Record of Scriptures, is sufficient to prove that there is another created World, or residential Place of Glory, besides this, where the glorious Persons of God, elect Men, and Angels, shall solace themselves together, to all Eternity.

Again, You may understand the Throne of God's Residence in Immortality is no Ways like this Foot-stool of his Majesty; for we know that this Global World is enclosed all with a Firmament, as with a brazen Wall. And why think you is it so? Truly and chiefly to keep within its own Kingdom the dark Imagination of angelical Serpents, that they may only pry into the Secrets of all Things within this Orb. But as for the new Heaven and new Earth, above the Stars, it is a Place

a Place of Glory, suitable to a God of Glory: I mean in respect of its Height, Length, Breadth, or Compass, it is of an infinite unmeasurable Vastness. For it must needs be so; Why? Because in the Place of the eternal Being's Glory, there is no Sun, Moon, nor Stars, nor Firmament: And where there is no Firmament, there is no Bounds; for you acknowledge the Creator to be boundless, and so is the Kingdom of Glory, where the Residence of his immortal Person is eternal. In the 21st of the Revelations, at the 23d Verse, it is thus written, *And their City hath no Need of the Light of the Sun; neither of the Moon, to shine in it, for the Glory of God did lighten it, and the Lamb is the Light of it.* And in the last Chapter, and the 5th Verse, *And there shall be no Light there, and they need no Candle, neither the Light of the Sun; for the Lord giveth them Light, and they shall reign for evermore.* And this by the Way.

There is not any Thing can reign eternally, but that which is a distinct Glory in itself; and there is no Glory, or Excellency whatsoever, whether mortal or immortal, can possibly have any sensible Being, without a distinct Form, to possess its Glory in.

Moreover, The Residence of Glory, of necessity must be a Throne of infinite Circumference: Why? Because if it were inclosed as this World is, then, instead of spiritual Liberty, it would be a Place of Bondage, like unto this. Because the glorious Person of God, elect Men, and Angels, which of Motion are swifter than Thought, would be prevented from ascending, or descending in it, for Variety of spiritual Glories, according to their divine Natures. For you know, that if our Bodies, within this lower World, were as swift of Motion as our Thoughts, our Spirits would then be in more Bondage than now they are, for want of Room to pass to and fro, according to their spiritual Motions; because if the World were ten thousand Millions of Miles in Height, Length, Breadth, or Compass, and no more, you know that a spiritual Body would ascend as swift as Thought, as if it were but one Mile, or Furlong only. So that now you cannot be ignorant, but that a glorified Body must have a Kingdom, and Throne of Glory;



of an infinite Vastness, according to its Nature, to display its Glory in, or upon, for its unutterable Satisfaction.

Again, You know that it is the Nature of the Spirit of Reason in mortal Men, to desire to know the Height, Breadth, Length, or Compass of the World it resideth in; and because it cannot attain to its Desire, therefore it is unsatisfied. So likewise you may understand on the contrary, that it is all spiritual Satisfaction to the Nature of divine Faith, or Truth, in the spiritual Bodies of Men, in the World to come, not only because they have no Desire in them, to know the infinite Vastness of that Kingdom of Glory they eternally are to remain in, but also because it is incomprehensibly beyond all Desire in the Creature of the Knowledge of it.

Again, Some may say, if there be such a Place of infinite Glory, for the Persons of God, elect Men, and Angels, eternally to inhabit in, (the which cannot be denied, according to your Scripture-Arguments) our Desire (if known unto you) is to know, *Whether the infinite Place of heavenly Glory was in that Condition it is now in from Eternity; or, whether the Creator, by the almighty Power of his Word speaking, formed it of nothing, or made it from or by a Word speaking only?* To this great Query, from the Gift of the infallible Spirit of divine Glory, I answer; in respect of the infinite Vastness of the Place of Glory itself, it was eternally so; but in respect of its created Form, it had a Beginning to itself. My Meaning is plain, and easy unto you, which are strong in the true divine Faith of the true God. The Substance of Earth and Water, or a Place and Being for its Residence, must needs be from Eternity, in the Presence of the eternal God; so that I would have you clearly to understand that it cannot possibly be otherwise, but that that infinite Place, which is the Throne of God, and this finite Being or Place, which is the Foot-stool of his Majesty, was from Eternity, in respect of their Substances and Residences, only they were in themselves Matter both dark and senseless, and so without Form, and void. But on the contrary you may understand, that the uncreated or glorious Power, or Essence of God, was alone, in respect of any Creature's visible living to themselves in his Presence, for his heavenly Society, for the

Manifestation of his infinite Wisdom, Power, and Glory, for those angelical Creatures, that should be formed by him, of that dark Substance, or senseless Earth aforesaid.

Again, But you may also understand, that the divine Form, or Person of the Creator, in its own Nature, was of an immortal, bright, burning Glory, both within and without; and in respect of his divine Vertues, the holy Spirit of fiery Faith, and burning Love, and all other spiritual Excellencies, did essentially reign in his heavenly Form, infinitely overflowing like unto a Christal clear Fountain, with all Variety of new heavenly Wisdom, and transcendent glorious Delights, to solace himself withal. I hope in Time that all the Chosen ones of the Most High shall clearly understand that it is impossible for God, Man, or Angels, to possess any Joy or Glory at all, unless they have a distinct Form or Body of their own, from all other Forms, sensibly to enjoy that Glory unto themselves. I do not deny, but through Union of Spirits also, there is unutterable Joy and Glory in one another; but I utterly deny that any Spirits are essentially one, or that there are any sensible living Spirits without Forms, to display their Life in, or ever shall be, whether mortal or immortal, visible or invisible.

Thus ye blessed Ones of the Most High, by the single Eye of your most holy Faith, you are made to see that your God, from Eternity, was a glorious distinct Form or Person, in Form like unto a Man, before he became a Man, or took on him the Form of a Servant, or a Man: As it is written in the Second of the *Philippians*, *Who being in the Form of God, thought it no Robbery to be equal with God, but he made himself of no Reputation; and took on him the Form of a Servant, and was form'd in the Shape of a Man.*

Thus you may see that the only wife God, the Lord Jesus Christ, was an immortal Form, before he became a mortal Form of Flesh, Blood, and Bone; and although the Immortality of his divine God-head, with the Brightness of his glorious Form, was wholly transmuted, or mortalized into the Condition of a spotless Man, or Creature; yet the visible Form of his former invisible Form, with the Purity of his divine Nature, was never changed, nor possibly could be.

But to go forwards to the Point. Wherefore this serves for the Reproof and Condemnation of that grand Error, naturally flowing from that lying Imagination of Men, which is as old as the evil imaginary Angel himself, concerning Creation; (that is to say) *That to create or form a Thing, is to make it by a Word speaking, without any Matter or Substance at all.*

Further, And if they were convinced to acknowledge, according to the Truth of Scripture-Records, that God formed Men and Angels, and all other Creatures that he had made, of material Earth and Water, or any Thing else; yet they suppose that those Substances of Earth and Water, were not in the eternal Presence of God; but they say, that God, by the Power of his Word speaking, made them of Nothing. *Behold,* this is contrary to Faith, yea, and Reason itself. Why? Because then this will follow, that Earth and Water must needs be the Creator, or divine Being itself; and so, by the Sequel, there is no God at all, but Nature; and so all Things that appear to be, were from Eternity, and will so remain to Eternity. There is no avoiding these Absurdities.

Again, If Men were ashamed of this their Error, and shall confess, that from Eternity there was a Creator of a spiritual Substance, then without all Contradiction, from Eternity, there must of necessity be a residential Place, or Being, for the God of Glory to display his essential Life or Glory in, or upon.

Therefore Earth and Water, and its Place of Residence, must of necessity, from Eternity, be in the Presence of God, they being distinct in their Substances, from his glorious Essence; or divine Person.

So that now, by the divine Speakings of God in you, according to holy Records, you may easily understand, that the Creator formed all Things, or Creatures, in both Worlds, of some Matter, or Substance; and that without Materials of Earth and Water he created Nothing that is made, neither possibly could.

Again, You may understand also, that it is the very Nature of that unclean Spirit, the Devil in Man, to imagine a Creator and a Creation, quite contrary to the Truth of divine Records, utterly abhorring that God and his Creations in the least Measure

sure can be made manifest to his Creature. But the imaginary Devil in Man loves to hear, and speak of a Creator, and of a Creation, and of a heavenly Glory, and of a hellish Misery, that no Man can possibly be capable of in this Mortality to comprehend the Truth of any such Things, or at least, if any thing to this Effect may be known, they affirm it only makes a Man happy in this Life, but whether there is any certain Knowledge of any Thing that shall be after Death, this they utterly deny: Why? Because as yet the true divine Light of the true God hath not shined into their Understandings, as to the Assurance of eternal Life; for I assure you, from the ever-living God, that in what Soul soever the eternal Being shineth in Life unto Life eternal, in some Measure the Things of Eternity that shall be after Death, or when Time is no more, is manifested unto that Soul. But indeed, (for the most Part) the Cause why Men remain dark in this great Secret of Things of Eternity is, because they are under the Power of some secret Lust or other, which they love as their Lives, not heeding that *the Wages of Sin is Death Eternal, and the Fruit of Righteousness is Life Eternal*, both manifesting their Effects in due Time. I could speak more of the Folly of this Error in Men; of their imagining of God's creating the *two Worlds* of Nothing, but it being so ridiculous, it is not worth the while, and I know a few Words are sufficient to the Wise.

Again, You which have received the divine Faith, and pure Love, of the glorious Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, unto Life Eternal, may know that this is the true Meaning, or Mind of the Spirit of the eternal Being, in the Word [*creating*] (that is to say) that the glorious God, by the Power of his *Word* only, speaking into, or unto, those senseless Substances of Earth and Water, immediately from thence to produce what several Natures he thinks fit, and Forms suitable to their Spirits or Natures, and yet to retain his own divine Nature and Form to himself, distinct from all those Natures and Forms that he hath made; and yet all those created Spirits are pure also in their Kinds, though they are of Variety of Natures, so each other.

If you cannot know pointed a *Again*

Again, The Power of Creation, or Transmutation, lieth in the new creating, or changing the Condition of Things already created. *As for Example*, God, for his Prerogative, Will, or Pleasure, to manifest the Glory of his infinite Power, either by eternal Condemnation, or Salvation; to transmute the most glorious *Angel* in Heaven; to become the chiefest *Devil* in Hell, or in *Flesh*; and to convert one of the greatest *Devils* by Nature on Earth; to become one of the most glorious *Saints* in Heaven. *Gain* and *Mary Magdalen* shall bear Witness to what I have written, in due Time, of this Particular.

Again, If you understand the infinite Power of a Creator making all Things new, by the Power of his Word or Decree, and his turning the Bodies and Souls of Mankind into Dust again, from whence they were taken, Is it not a wonderful new Creation, in the last Day, or End of Time, for the Creator, by the mighty Power of his decreed Word-speaking only, though there be ten hundred Times ten hundred thousand several Spirits mix'd together in the Dust of the Earth; yet to make every Seed, or Spirit, to bring forth its own Body, or Form, that he lived and died in? (that is to say) He that had the divine Seed of God remaining in him, shall appear with a glorious Body, like unto his God to Eternity; and he that had the unclean Seed of cursed Imagination remaining in him, shall appear with a Body of nothing but spiritual Darkness, of unspeakable Misery, for everlasting. *As the Tree falleth, so it lieth.*

Again, Is it not a wonderful Thing, for the God of Glory, of the same Lump, to create one Man, to be of his own divine Nature, and Form, and in due Time, to make him eternally glorious like unto himself; and to create and form another Man, to be of a contrary Nature, nothing but Darkness of Shame, and Confusion of Face, or Spirit, for everlasting? So much concerning the true Creation of God.

Again, Notwithstanding the dark imaginary Spirit of Man, by making thought never so long, cannot possibly make one Hair, either white or black, to cover his Head if it were bald: Yet he can teach his Creator a Creation beyond the Wisdom of God himself; a Creation which cannot possibly be. For  
he

he is so wise in his own Conceit, that he imagines, if he had been the Creator, he could have made Materials of Earth and Water of nothing at all, even by the Power of his own Word speaking only, as well as have formed what he pleased of those Materials afterwards: Or that he could have formed it only by his Word speaking, without any material Substance at all. Thus being shut up in utter Darknes, he calls his very Reason the divine Nature of God, when God knows he nor no mortal Man else hath any pure Reason at all; but his Understanding is all Confusion, in respect of knowing any thing of the Matter, or Manner, of the true Creation of God, or any eternal spiritual Things, which as yet are invisible to Mortals, but visible only to *Moses, Elias, Enoch*, and the elect *Angels*, in the personal Presence of the Lord Jesus Christ, God-Man, or Man-God, blessed for ever and ever.

Again, For want of the true discerning of the divine Voice of the Holy Spirit of the true Faith, to distinguish between the Voice of God's Spirit, and the Voice of their own unclean Spirit, the Devil in them; they call God the Devil, and the Devil God; and so they being left, ~~willingly are ignorant of any other World, or God, or Angels, or Glory to come,~~ but what is within this World only. The which Orb is but the Foot-stool of our God, it being but as a Mole-hill, to a mighty Mountain, in Comparison of that eternal Kingdom of Glory, which is above the Stars, without the Glory of this perishing World. *Wherefore*, because they are reserved under the Guards of eternal Darknes, from this their utter Darknes, they judge themselves only in the eternal Light, and blasphemously call themselves, who are mortal Dust, *Eternity, everlasting Love, or I am*, and there is *none besides me, or one pure Being*, with the *Creator*, wholly taking all the glorious Titles of the Eternal Majesty upon them, who by no Means will give his Glory to Men or Angels, either of his Nature or his Names.

Again, If a Man talks with these high flown Atheistical Notionists, concerning Knowledge of any God at all, or of a Life to come, they abhor it, because it is hid from them. But they love to speak, or hear of an unknown God, which they call an infinite, invisible, incomprehensible Spirit, which

(as

*What was from Eternity.*

(as they say) is essential in all Places, and all Things, at once; and seeth all Things, heareth all Things, and understandeth all Things particularly, and yet hath no *Eyes* to see, nor *Ears* to hear, nor *Spirit* to understand any Thing at all, through any distinct Form, or Person of his own. This is the blind Reprobates World, or imaginary God, only of bare Words, who are left under eternal perishing Darknes.

And so much concerning what was from Eternity, with a true spiritual Distinction between the true-Creation and the false, and the true God and the false God.

*[The following text is extremely faint and illegible, appearing to be bleed-through from the reverse side of the page. A horizontal line is drawn across the middle of this section.]*

*gene-*

*A general Treatise of the Three Records, or  
Dispensations.*

*Written in the Year of my Commission, received by Voice of the Lord Jesus from Heaven, 1651, and in the 27th of July, 1652, by Revelation from the Man Jesus, my God alone; unto all the Elect, that look for the Appearing of the One only, immortal, invisible, wise God, and alone eternal Father, the Lord Jesus Christ, God, blessed for ever, of all the Elect, Men and Angels. By John Reeve, and the Holy Spirit's true Minister of the third and last Dispensation of the Lord Jesus, unto all the Elect World.*

**T**HERE are three Dispensations, or Commissions of the Lord, unto the Elect World, and but three. The *First* of Moses and the Prophets. The *Second* of Jesus and the Apostles. The *Third* and last are the *Two Witnesses* in the Eleventh of the Revelations: Who are the true Ministers of the Holy Spirit, revealing or declaring the Mind of God, the Man Jesus, unto all the Elect World, who are the Seed of the Woman, the Children of Faith, which is the divine Nature of God.

Again, I declare by Revelation from the Lord Jesus, that all the Lord's Commissioners have Power given them to bless, or to curse, and it is so; therefore it had been good for them that are left to despise them, that they had never been born.

Again, The three Commissioners, and they only, are Christ's Witnesses, because they have the Gift of the Holy Ghost, or Spirit of Revelation, to interpret the Scriptures; therefore all that are saved, shall bow unto the Revelations of God in them.

Again, I declare from the Lord Jesus, that all the Prophets, and Priests, that were in the Time of Moses, were Liars, except they were called of the Lord, as Moses and Aaron were, or were called by Succession from them; therefore it is a most



dangerous Thing for a Man to take upon him the Place of a Prophet, a Priest, or Levite, or Minister, without a Commission from the Lord. What do they, but offer strange Fire unto the Lord, as *Corah*, *Dathan*, and *Abiram* did, before they were called to the Office, by God's Commissioners, and bring a Curse upon their own Souls? Remember *Jezabel's* Prophets: Were they not cut in Pieces for drawing the Princes Hearts from the true Worship of the living God? And this their Ignorance of God was, because they went before they were sent. Therefore lying Prophets, for Silver, are in a perishing Condition, with all the Scripture-Merchants in the World.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that *Moses* was the first Prophet that wrote Scriptures by Commission from the Lord. (Note) By Inspiration from the Spirit of Revelation, God witnessing from Heaven, by Signs and Wonders, that his Commission was from the Lord.

Now the Commission of *Moses* was full of Ceremonies, Ordinances, and Shadows, concerning Things to come, very tedious unto the People. So long as the Commission of *Moses* and the Prophets continued, there was no Nation under Heaven had any Thing of true Worship of God, but the *Jews* only, and those that joined with the *Jews*; because the Oracles of God were committed to the *Jews* only. *Salvation is of the Jews*, as it is written.

Again, I declare from the Lord Jesus, that the Law of *Moses*, both moral and ceremonial, with all the Jewish Observations, or Worship whatsoever, did belong to the *Jews* only; and this their Worship continued until Christ, and no longer, who was the Giver of the Law, and the Fulfiller of that Law only, and the putting down that Worship, and observing of the Law of *Moses* for ever. Therefore accursed be that Man that sets up the Worship which God pulls down, or pulls down that Worship which God sets up, until God remands it himself; for that is adding and diminishing of the Word of God, in the Book of Scriptures.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that the Sword of Steel did belong in *Moses's* Commission to the Nation of the *Jews*, and never to be used in the two Commissions following, by any that profess the Faith of Jesus, being utterly unlawful by the

the Command of God, the Man Jesus, in his second Commission.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that God never revealed to *Moses*, nor any of his Prophets, in what Manner his Worship should be in the second Dispensation, by Jesus and the Apostles, because he will have all the Honour; therefore by his own Wisdom his Counsels are unsearchable, and his Ways past finding out.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that every true Commissioner hath the several Manners of the Worship of God committed unto his Charge, to declare unto Men, and that when the *second* Commissioner declares his Message of Worship from the Lord, then the Worship of the *first* Messenger is ended, never to be more. So likewise when the *third* and *last* Commissioner declares his Message of the Manner of Worship of God, then is the *second* Commission ended likewise for evermore. Thus every Commissioner is to mind his own Charge only, and and to be faithful in his Trust, having nothing to do with one another's Commission, concerning the Worship of God, but to be faithful unto God, in all Things committed to their Charge, that they may give up the Account of their Stewardship with Joy, receiving that Reward; or Crown of Glory, with the Lord Jesus, in his everlasting Kingdom.

Thus *Moses* was faithful in all his House, with the Prophets, in the Time of the Law, unto the End of their Commission; all of them suffering Persecution for their Message-sake, and some of them Death itself.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that the *Jews*, long before the Commission of Jesus, appeared, persecuted, and put to Death the true Commissioners, and Interpreters of the Law of *Moses*; and when they had so done, they got up into *Moses's* Chair, not being sent, but by Violence, and so became the Scripture-Interpreters, that was given to *Moses* and the Prophets only; and finding that being the Lords of the Letter of Scripture, and skilfully merchandizing them, great Honour and Wealth came thereby, making them equal with the Princes; they took Counsel together, and made a Decree, that none but the Learned only should meddle with the Interpretation of Scripture.

Thus the *Jews* put the true Prophets to Death, that declared the Message of God freely; and then their Children painted the Sepulchres of the Prophets, and set up their Writings by a Law, because of the Glory that came thereby. Thus these Scripture-Usurpers fate like Kings, in *Moses's* Chair, uncontrollable, as if they were the Lord's Commissioners, until the coming of Jesus and the Apostles.

Again, I declare from the Lord, if the *Jews* that fate in *Moses's* Chair had been Interpreters of the Law by Commission from the Lord, then would they have known the Law-Giver, the Lord Jesus, and have yielded Obedience to him, as *John* Baptist did, he being the true Messenger of the Lord; but quite contrary, Devil-like, being of their Father the Devil *Cain*, who slew the first *Abel*. So the Children of *Cain*, the learned Scribes, and Pharisees, slew the Lord of Life and Glory, the Heir of all Truth, that the Inheritance of the Interpretation of the Letter of the Scripture might remain in the Possession and Power of the Learned for ever. But Jesus, whom they slew, did often confound them out of the Mouths of unlearned Babes and Sucklings, by the Power of his Spirit. As it is very hard for a rich Man to enter into Life, and that very few of the Rich will be saved, because Riches blind the Eyes of the Understanding; so will it be as hard for a learned Man to be saved, because Learning draws forth the Pride of the Spirit of Man, making it incapable of the Voice of God's Spirit, charm it never so wisely. Woe unto all learned Men, especially if they be rich, for Learning and Riches are the Snares of God, to draw Men into eternal Perdition.

Again, I declare from the Lord Jesus, the Man of Glory, and my alone God, and eternal Father, that when this Jesus gave the *second* Commission of the Preaching of the Gospel, then all Observations of the Law of *Moses* were of no Use for ever; whether Circumcision, or the Jewish Sabbath, or New-moons, or Tythes, or any Sacrifices under the Law whatsoever; because all Worship of the Law of *Moses* were but Types and Shadows of the Worship in Gospel of Jesus; therefore all that are gone back to the Law of *Moses* are under the Curse, as it is written, *Cursed be every one that continueth not in the Law, to do it perfectly.*

Again,

Again, In the Commission of the Gospel of Jesus, given unto the Apostles of Jesus, there were Ordinances also for Baptism, breaking of Bread, preaching the Gospel in Season, and out of Season, meeting together the first Day of the Week, not observing it as a moral Sabbath, but as Wisdom directed them for Conveniency, once a Week, for the Consolation of one another. They met upon the first Day of the Week, which is called the Lord's-Day, because God upon that Day rose from the Dead. Not but every Day is a Sabbath, or Lord's-Day, unto true Christians; for he that is entred into Faith, is entred into his Sabbath, having rested from the Works of the Law, from all ceremonial Observing of a Sabbath-Day, or any other Ceremony of the Law of *Moses* whatsoever. As God entred into his eternal Sabbath's Rest, the seventh Day, (as it is written) when he had finished the six Days Work of Creation, by the Power of his Word-speaking. So that Faith is the true Sabbath of all the Elect, who walk not after the fleshly Worship of Men, in observing a Sabbath-Day, or the like, but are led by the Spirit of God, the Man Jesus, to offer a spiritual Sabbath of Faith, and Love to God, all the Day of their Life; which is a full Testimony to their Souls of their keeping a spiritual Sabbath with their God, the Man Jesus, eternally in the Heavens. But the Sabbath of the Reprobate Hypocrite is a visible Day, as *Sunday*, or the like, sometimes doubting whether *Sunday* is the right, or *Saturday*. Thus they are to seek of the Sabbath, concerning the Day, and so of their God; for they that are ignorant of the true Sabbath, must needs be ignorant of the true God.

Thus all the Worship of the several formal Hypocrites is all outwardly, to the vain-glorious fleshly Eye, and in Bondage to Sin, therefore under the Curse and Wrath of God for ever; because God hath not revealed unto them that spiritual Sabbath of Faith, to purify their Hearts from all Unrighteousness, making them to understand that Obedience is the Sabbath that God requires, and not Sacrifice. God's Sabbath is Obedience, and the visible Sabbath is Sacrifice. Woe unto all that despise this Truth! it had been better they had never been born.

Again I declare, by Revelation from the Lord Jesus Christ, that his second Dispensation, or Commission of God given to the Apostles, with all the Ordinances contained in that Dispensation, continued no longer than the putting to Death and banishing of the Commissioners in the ten Persecutions, which continued about 300 Years, since that Time (it being 1350 Years) I declare from the Lord Jesus, there hath not been one true Interpreter of the Mind of God in the Scriptures, to preach the everlasting Gospel of Jesus Christ, by Commission from Heaven, unto the Seed of his own Body, the Elect ; but they have all climbed up the wrong Way ; idle Shepherds, that the Lord never sent, therefore few of them will be saved in the Day of the Lord. What are they but spiritual Witches, blind Leaders of the Blind, therefore both must needs fall into the Ditch ; Children of *Cain*, and Merchants of the Word of Life, almost all of them Despisers of the Spirit of Revelation, which is the only Testimony of a true Messenger of the Lord.

Woe unto them that have gone the Way of *Balaam*, loving the Wages of Iniquity ; for any Man to preach or prophecy, without a Commission from the Lord, is but a Work of Iniquity. For how can he preach unless he be sent ; for the Lord is one with those that he sends, giving them Power to bless all those that receive their Message, and to curse all those that shall despise it. This is the Power of every true Commissioner or Messenger of the Lord Jesus Christ ; and whosoever hath not this Power in his Commission, was never sent of the Lord. No earthly King giveth a Commission to his Servants, but this Commission is powerful to all them it concerns.

Again, the Apostles Commission and Ordinances being finished in the ten Persecutions, then the Children of those that put them to Death took Possession of the Apostles Chair, as the Children of the Jews took Possession of *Moses's* Chair, when their Fathers had put the Prophets to Death ; and when the Apostles were put to Death, their Children that put them to Death painted their Sepulchres, setting up their Writings by a Law, *that none but the Learned only should be the Scripture Interpreters* ; and so it hath continued, where-ever the Scripture came, almost to this Day ; the Magistrates and Ministers  
 joining

joining together to maintain the Power of the Scriptures in the Hands of the Minister, by a Law from the Magistrate ; which Minister is to the Magistrate a false Prophet. When these Scripture-Merchants had purchased to become the Scripture-Interpreters, by the Blood of the Apostles, then did they piece the old Cloth to the new, and so made the Rent worse. They have so mixed the Writings of *Moses* and the Apostles together, both in Books, Chapters, Lines, and Words, throughout the two Testaments, that no Man can find the Truth, but by the same Spirit that spake them, by the Mouths of the Prophets and the Apostles.

Again I declare, that all the Ministry that was, or is grounded upon Magistracy, since the coming of Christ Jesus in the Flesh, and since the Commission of Jesus to the Apostles, are not of the Lord ; the Lord sent them not, it was the Magistrate, their Lord, sent them ; therefore their Reward is from him, which is the Penny of this World only.

Again I declare from the Lord, that no Magistrate did ever own any of the Ministers or Prophets of the Lord, as to establish their Ministry in their Dominions, but those Commissioner-Magistrates under the Law, in the Time of *Moses* ; therefore the Magistrates, in the Time of the Apostles, not being Commissioner-Magistrates of the Lord's, instead of owning the true Apostles of the Lord, they persecuted them to the Death ; like unto those Gentile, Heathen, Non-Commissionate-Magistrates, in the Time of the Law, as *Pharaoh*, and such as he was. Neither did the Apostles own the Magistrates for the Defence of their Ministry, knowing that the Lord had not sent them, nor appointed them to receive it, but had left them to persecute it, to their own Destruction, for ever. Neither will any Magistrate own any Ministry, so long as the World endureth, but a Ministry of his own setting up ; for the Lord hath left them in Darkness, lest they should be converted, and he should heal them ; as it is written, *Which of the Rulers have believed on him ?* Again, *The Kings and the Rulers take Counsel together against the Lord and his Anointed,* And the Apostle *Paul* saith, *The Princes of this World have nought in him.*

The

The Apostle speaks as tho' there would very hardly one Prince or Ruler be saved (since the coming of Jesus) in the Day of the Lord; because, instead of yielding unto Christ's Cross, that he may reign over them, they themselves reign like Gods and Kings over their poor Brethren. Therefore in that Day my God, the Man Jesus, will say, *And those mine Enemies, whether great or small, that would not that I should reign over them, bring them, and slay them before my Face.*

Again I declare, by Revelation from the Lord Jesus, that the two Witnesses spoken of in the eleventh Chapter of the *Revelations*, is the third or last Dispensation, or Commission of God, unto the elect World; and that *John Reeve* and *Lodowick Mugleton* are those two Witnesses or Ministers of the last Commission of the Holy Spirit, unto the End of the World.

Again I declare from the Lord, that this Dispensation of the Holy Spirit hath no Ordinances or Observations annexed unto it, but is all spiritual; neither is there any visible natural Signs ty'd unto it, nor Wonders, to satisfy Devils that this Commission is from the Lord; only this Commission being only spiritual, as it is written, *And if any Man will hurt them, Fire proceedeth out of their Mouths, and devoureth their Enemies*; for God hath put the two-edged Sword of his Spirit into their Mouths, that, upon their pronouncing God's Curse upon their Enemies, the Fire of God's Wrath seizeth upon their Spirits, to all Eternity; because they that despise them have sinned against the Holy Ghost; because we only are the Ministers of the Holy Spirit, to declare unto Man what is the Worship indeed that God requires of his Elect, until the Coming of Jesus Christ.

Again, God hath honoured them with the Spirit of discerning his Elect, that, upon their pronouncing of them blessed, they increase in Understanding of the Scriptures, from the Holy Spirit, and are blessed to all Eternity.

Again I declare from the Lord Jesus, that all visible Forms of Worship that are now extant in the World, is not by Command from the Lord, but it is the Invention of Man's Imagination, from the Letter of the Scripture; therefore as acceptable unto God as the cutting off a Dog's Neck.

I declare

I declare again from the Lord, that the visible Worship that now is in the World, set up by Magistrates and Ministers, whether publick or private, it is so far from being by Commission from the Lord, that it is the chief Occasion of all Wars, and many other secret Wickednesses, committed under Heaven.

Thus all that are not quite blind, through the long Custom of the false Prophets or Priests, set up or countenanced by the Magistrate, may clearly see that none of them are by Commission from the Lord, but false Shepherds, that went before they were sent; therefore but few of them will escape the Vengeance of eternal Fire in the Day of the Lord.

Again I declare from the Lord Jesus Christ, God alone; blessed for ever, that the Worship that now is, and shall be to the End of the World, (*Note*) it is to hearken what the Holy Spirit saith unto the Soul, and to yield unto it, and in so doing thou shalt never want Peace. Thou shalt hear a Voice behind thee, saying, *This is the Way, walk in it*; hearken unto that Voice, and yield Obedience unto it, and thou shalt see eternal Life abiding in thee. This is the Voice of God from Heaven, called the Spirit of Faith, or Revelation, filling the Soul with pure spiritual Love, Patience, Meekness, and all other Vertues of the Holy Spirit; which Holy Spirit is the only Minister or Teacher of all the Elect, unto Life Eternal, even to the End of the World. They that are led by this Spirit, they are kept from the committing of Sin; I do not say they have no Temptations or Motions of Sin from their own Spirits, but I say the Spirit of Faith purifies their Hearts, giving them Power against those Motions or Temptations of the Flesh; and so their Bodies and Spirits being kept pure, are fit Temples for the In-dwelling of the Holy Spirit. For all that are born of God know the Voice of his Spirit, and have this Power over Sin, as I have declared; for the Spirit of Jesus is one and the same in all his Elect, only in a greater Measure of understanding the Word of God in the Scriptures to some than to others, especially to the Commissioners, who are sent to declare his Mind unto the Elect; as it is written of *Peter*, *When thou art converted strengthen the Brethren*. Thus God's Commissioners have a greater Measure of his Spirit than private



## *Of the Three Records.*

Christians, because they are made publick, and appointed to greater Sufferings than those that are private Believers. Again it is written, *My Sheep bear my Voice, and they follow me*; that is, the new-born Elect know the Voice of God's Spirit, and so are made obedient to his Voice, and a Stranger they will not follow. The Stranger is the Voice of Reason, which is the Voice of the Devil, that would draw the Soul from the Voice of Faith, which is the Voice of the Spirit of God, in all the Sheep of Christ.

Again, This blessed Spirit gives Power unto the Elect to shew Mercy unto their greatest Enemies, yea, and to forgive them, although they should kill them; and gives a Man Power to leave all Vengeance unto God, unto whom only it doth belong.

Again I declare from the Lord, all that are of this Faith are of one Spirit, and have Power given them to love one another as their own Soul; yea, they have all of them Power given them to lay down their Lives for this their Faith, because it is the Faith of the holy Prophets and Apostles, the true Faith of Jesus, the Power of God unto Salvation; this is that Faith that keeps the Soul spotless, from lying unto his Neighbour, and from all other Unrighteousness whatsoever; the which no other Churches nor Opinions in the World do, but will lie unto one another for Gain, but this Church of Christ.

Once again from the Lord I declare, that this Church of Christ only being the elect, they only have the Spirit of Revelation of the Mind of God, always increasing in the Spirit of the Scriptures, and are God's only Lights in this World, and those that are appointed of God as his Judges over all their Enemies, both great and small, in the World, that despise the Spirit of Revelation. (*Note,*) Again I declare from the Lord, that none can understand what God is, nor what the Devil is, nor what is after Death, nor whether ever their Bodies appear any more, nor no invisible Thing, but by the Spirit of Revelation; which is the Voice of God, leading his own elect Sheep and Lambs into all spiritual Pastures; whilst unbelieving Lions, (*Note*) that despise this Spirit, are hunger-bit, yea, and sent empty away of all spiritual Consolations.

Again I declare from the Lord, that all that have this Spirit of Revelation, or Faith in the Man Jesus, they know that there

there is no other God but the Man Jesus, that in his Person only the eternal Father always lived, and that there was never any other God, or eternal Spirit, or Father, but this Jesus only, that Man of Glory, whose Goings out have been from everlasting ; and that all the Names or Titles in the Letter of the Scriptures, of *Father*, or *Jehovah*, or *Melchizedech*, or *Jam*, or *Eternal God*, or *Eternal Father*, or *Wonderful Counsellor*, or *Prince of Peace*, or *Alpha and Omega* ; yea, and all other Names or Titles spoken of in the Law and Gospel, by the Prophets and the Apostles, and the two Witnesses in the Revelation, they are all attributed unto this Jesus, the eternal God, and Man of Glory, who is a distinct God, in the Person of a Man, from all Creatures in Heaven, and on Earth, from all Eternity, to all Eternity. Therefore they that have this Spirit of Faith, they cannot take the Sword of Steel to slay their Brother, because they know that Man is the Image of God ; neither can they go to Law with their Neighbour, whatever Loss may come thereby ; neither can they take upon them any Place of Honour from the Lords of this World, because their Kingdom is no more of this World than it was to the Lord Jesus, who came on Purpose to shew unto his Elect himself of his spiritual Kingdom of Glory. And when they had tasted a little of this spiritual Kingdom, from that Moment, instead of yielding to the Customs of Nations, to make them honourable, they were made willing to deny themselves, and to suffer Reproach with the Lord Jesus Christ, because they know there is no Way to the Crown of Glory with their God, but to drink the same Cup of Persecution and Afflictions as their Lord did before them. *The Servant is not greater than his Lord.* And this only is the Way of all the Elect, until the coming of our Lord Jesus Christ, the Man of Glory, God alone, blessed for evermore.

Again it is written, *There are three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, the Word, and the Spirit, and these three are one.* (Note further,) There are three that bear Witness on Earth, *Water, Blood, and Spirit*, and these three agree in one. Now these three Witnesses on Earth, *Water, Blood, and Spirit*, are the three Commissions or Dispensations of the Lord aforesaid, which the Spirit of God hath written unto you

that are his Elect, for your Information and eternal Consolation. The *Water*, that is *Moses's* Commission; the *Blood*, that is the Commission of *Jesus*; the *Spirit*, that is the Commission of the *two Witnesses*, spoken of in the xith Chapter of the *Revelations*; whole Commission, or Message from the Lord, is all spiritual.

Again, As for the three that bear Record in Heaven, the Mind of God in that Saying is this; that God, in the Name of *Father, Word, and Spirit*, did in, or from Heaven, his Throne of Glory three Times bear Witness unto those Commissions on Earth aforesaid, by Signs and Wonders, that these three only were the Lord's Commissioners. According unto their several Dispensations did the Lord witness from Heaven, in the Hearts of his Elect only, that they were indeed the Prophets of the Lord. As for the Reprobate, because the Lord reveals it not to him inwardly by his blessed Spirit, therefore he always tempts his God, Devil-like as he is, for an outward visible Sign, to make him believe an invisible God. But the elect Believer is kept from tempting his God, being always made to wait for an invisible Sign or Testimony from the Spirit of God; whether the Commissioner or Prophet be from the Lord or no. He that believes makes not Haste, he is made to wait; he only knows, that by entertaining of some Strangers has received Angels; unto him only it is revealed what that Blessing is, unto those that are made to receive a Prophet, or Disciple of the Lord, in the Name of a Prophet or Disciple of the Lord Jesus Christ. Unto him alone it is revealed, that he, with the Prophets, shall inherit together a Crown of Glory in those Persons they now enjoy, being made like unto their God the Man Jesus, at his visible appearing in the Clouds in his everlasting Kingdom of Glory.

Again, Unto him only it is revealed what that Curse is that shall be upon the Souls and Bodies of all the Despisers of the Message of the Prophets of the Lord, to all Eternity.

Again I declare from the Lord, that it is revealed unto us only, that have received this Faith of Jesus, what Things shall be after Death; we only are capable to know, that God, the Man Jesus, was in the Person of a Man before he became Flesh and Bone, from all Eternity. (*Note,*) Unto us it is known;

known, that there never was any Spirit without a Body or Person, because the Body or Person is the Form of the invisible Spirit, that can never be seen or known, but through a visible Body or Person, which is the House or Tabernacle of every invisible Spirit, in Heaven and on Earth; so that a Spirit is an invisible Substance, yet nothing at all without its Form of Body or Person; neither is the Body or Person any Thing at all without the invisible Spirit, which is the God, Spirit, or Life of the created or uncreated formable Body or Person. As the Soul and Body of Man is both one Person, and that one is nothing without the other, being both of one Nature, begot together, and so live together, neither of them living one without the other; and so dying or falling asleep together (being both one Creature) until the Resurrection of their Death of Sleep from their Dust; and so being raised, as they lived together before Death, being both one Creature; so shall they now after Death remain together in Glory or in Shame, to all Eternity.

So I declare from the Lord, that the eternal spiritual God the Father, (*Note*) always liveth in a spiritual Form of Body or Person; the which Body, or spiritual Person, was the eternal Son of the eternal Father; the which eternal Son is the holy City, or Tabernacle of Glory, wherein the Father, which is the eternal Spirit, hath his glorious Delight, from Eternity to Eternity.

Again I declare from the Lord Jesus, that this spiritual Person, or Body of God, that was from all Eternity, did convert itself into a natural Body of Flesh, Blood, and Bone, and so became subject unto Death; and when it became a natural Body, the Father, which is the Spirit Eternal, and Godhead of the Body, which was the eternal Son, lived only in that Person. *For in him lived the Fullness of the Godhead bodily; that is, in his Body lived the eternal Spirit, God the Father, bodily; because this natural Body was the eternal Son of God; which formerly was the eternal spiritual Body of God, (Note) the eternal Spirit from all Eternity; therefore it is written, the Word became Flesh, God became Flesh, and dwelt amongst us.*

The Word was the eternal spiritual Body, or Person, or Son of God; the eternal Father or Spirit, which, by its own Power,

Power, became Flesh, or a pure natural Body, wherein the eternal Father only lived. And there was no other eternal Father in Heaven, or on Earth, but only in the Body of the Man Jesus, that dy'd, and rose again by his own Power, God, blessed for evermore.

This is that God, the Man of Glory, that descended by his own Power, from his Throne of Glory, into a pure natural Body; and after he had died, and rose again alone by his own Power, then did he ascend up in that pure spiritual Body, which was natural before he died, but now spiritual, by his rising from the Dead; and did glorify himself, with that same Glory that he formerly possess'd with his Father, the Eternal Spirit, to all Eternity.

Again, I declare from the Lord, what the Spirit hath revealed unto us, concerning the Glory that the Elect shall enjoy to all Eternity, and the Sorrows of the Reprobate to all Eternity.

As to the Elect, the very same Bodies, or Persons, with their Memory, and Senses of Flesh and Bone, wherein they lived or died, in that Truth of Faith [of the Lord Jesus, to be the only God] I say from the Lord, those very Bodies of theirs shall be made spiritual, and glorious; brighter than the Sun, like unto the Person of their glorious God, the Man Jesus. And with their Eyes shall they see their God, Face to Face, and Body to Body, for ever; yea, we shall see him, and know him, as far as we possibly can be made capable of his spiritual Glory, as we see and know one another, in this Mortality.

Then shall their Thoughts, Words, and Deeds, be God-like for ever. And as the Person of God is an overflowing Fountain continually, of new infinite Pleasures, of glorious Delights, of unspeakable Joy, to all his Elect; so shall the Souls and Bodies of the Elect, as a Fountain, overflow with Variety of new Songs and Praises everlasting, World without End, unto the glorious and alone God, the Man Jesus, blessed to all Eternity.

Again, it is written, *There shall be a new Heaven, and a new Earth, wherein dwells Righteousness*; that is, the glorious Person of God, with the Persons of elect Men and Angels made glorious.

This

This new Heaven, and new Earth, are both spiritual, suitable to the Persons of God, Angels, and Men, that are therein.

Again, It is called a new Heaven, and a new Earth, because the Bodies of the Elect, that ascended into that Glory at the last Day, were never there before.

Again, The natural Bodies and Souls of the Elect are become a new Heaven, and a new Earth; because their Persons are glorious, both within and without, like unto the glorious Person of God, whose blessed Presence maketh all Persons or Places, Things or Beings, to become new and glorious, like unto himself, to all Eternity.

Again, It is called a new Heaven, and a new Earth, because all Things in this World wax older and older, as a Garment, unto an eternal Dissolution.

So that the Persons of God, elect Men and Angels, in that new Heaven, and new Earth, become newer and newer, younger and younger, in all unspeakable, new, and glorious heavenly Delights, for evermore.

Again, I declare from the Lord, That as a natural Body is never in its proper Center, but when it is fixed upon the Earth; and if the Earth or Place give way, the natural, or earthly Body, sinketh down also, let it fall never so deep: So the spiritual Body, when it is glorify'd in its own Nature, is its own Center. And the Nature of Man is to stand upon nothing, and to be as swift as Thought, and to ascend higher and higher, be it never so high.

Also the nature of it is to see and know one another perfectly, if we be never so far asunder, as if we were near at hand.

Again, the glorious Life and Liberty of a spiritual Person is this, That the Spirit is not shut up, nor barr'd within the Body, from motioning forth, which motioning is the Life of it, and is at present Liberty to all Eternity, to motion forth upon the Persons of God, elect Men, and Angels; for its Variety of new and glorious Pleasures everlastingly.

Again, From the Lord I declare what the Condition of the Reprobate is, and where it is. Thus it shall be to all Eternity; this whole Creation, as namely, the visible Heavens, above the Fir-

Firmament, with the Sun, Moon, and Stars, shall vanish, and be put out as the Snuff of a Candle, never giving Light more; because the decreed Time of their Being is finish'd; they only being appointed for Lights of this Creation, or mortal World.

The Earth also shall be burnt up; (that is) all the Nature or Sap, which is the Heart of the Earth, shall be burnt up; with all natural Food remaining upon the Earth, and in the Sea, and in the Air.

The Sea, and all Rivers, and Water-springs, being dried up for ever, because their decreed Time is fully ended.

Then this World, or whole Creation, will become as a barren Wilderness; that is burnt up with Heat, and a Chaos of everlasting Confusion, of utter Darknes, for ever; yea, as dark as the Darknes of *Egypt*; both for spiritual Darknes, and natural Darknes; not three Days and three Nights, but even to all Eternity.

Then shall all Reprobates, Men and Women, appear in the same Natures, Souls, and Bodies, that they lived and died in, or fell asleep; and shall have the same Senses and Reason they had before.

And they shall perfectly remember all their former Glory, with all their former Cruelty; and according to their Deeds, they shall receive their everlasting Punishment, in the same Bodies they delighted in Sin. Their own Bodies must be their Prison of Hell, and their own unclean Spirit of Reason, the Devil, that shall be barr'd close Prisoner within their Bodies, that they cannot have one Motion, or Thought, of any spiritual, or natural Comfort, because they are both departed for evermore.

Then shall the Spirit of Man be a more terrible Fire than any natural Fire or Brimstone whatsoever; the Body being all on Fire, the which Flesh and Bone is the Fewel of Hell. The Spirit, which is the Devil; now an eternal Prisoner within the Body, causing unspeakable Lamentations, and Gnashings of Teeth; and the chief Ground of their Sorrows is this; because their Body, which was formerly their only Heaven, is now become their only Hell; and their proud Spirit, which formerly was their only God, is now become their only Devil; being

being both Prisoners together in hellish Darkness, being barr'd from the Presence of God, elect Men, and Angels, to all Eternity.

Again, I declare from the Lord, that in the same Place, where the Bodies of Men and Women do appear, at the Resurrection; there shall they remain, naked as they were born, never stirring from that Place; either standing, sitting, or lying along; hearing one another's Lamentations, but never seeing one another's Faces, to all Eternity. And instead of singing new Songs and Praises unto God, they shall, (because of their unspeakable Misery) blaspheme the Name of God continually, with new Curses, because their Miseries are everlastingly increasing, or new, according as the Songs of the Elect are newly increasing, causing new Songs of Joy, to all Eternity.

Again, I declare from the Lord, by Revelation from the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, that God the Creator, from all Eternity was an immortal, distinct Person, of Spirit and Body, even as Man, who is the Image of God, is a distinct mortal Person, of Soul and Body.

Again, I declare from the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, That in the World above, or beyond the Stars, where the Person of God is resident, from all Eternity, there was in the Presence of this Eternal God, whose Eternal Spirit was the *Father*, and whose eternal spiritual Body was the *Son*, being but one distinct personal God; I say from all Eternity, there was Earth and Water with him. So that there is nothing that this Personal God hath created in the upper World, or Heaven, or in the lower World, or Earth beneath, but that he had Matter, or Substance, whereof he created all Things that were made. So that when this Personal God saw good; for the setting forth of his Glory, he spake the Word to the eternal Earth, and immediately there came forth of this Earth, an innumerable Company of spiritual Persons, like unto the Person of God, which were named holy Angels.

Now the Nature or Spirits of these personal Angels, are pure Reason; but the Nature of the personal God, is Faith; which is all Power, dwelling in his own Person, or overflowing from itself only; or increasing within itself, in Power, Wisdom;



Joy, and Glory, continually like an overflowing Fountain, from all Eternity.

Now the Nature of pure Reason, is very unlike unto God, therefore it desires to know the Person, or Spirit of God, that made it. Wherefore to keep the holy Angel's Nature pure from Disobedience in his Presence, the Lord reveals some of the Overflowings of his glorious Nature, or Spirit of Faith unto them: So that all the Wisdom, Joy, Glory, and Power, that is in the Persons of the holy Angels, doth not proceed from their own Natures or Spirits, which is pure Reason; but from the glorious Nature or Spirit of the Person of God, which is pure Faith, distinct from the Nature of pure Reason, that God alone may have all the Glory, both in Heaven, and on Earth.

Again, the Lord spake the Word, unto the Earth, out of which the Angels were made, and from the same eternal Earth, presently appeared all Variety of Creatures, for a further Manifestation of his Glory, to remain in the World, to all Eternity; as there is all Variety of mortal Creatures, made out of his mortal Earth, by the Word of this personal God, to endure for a Season, for the Glory of his Name.

Again, I declare from this personal God, That he spoke the Word into those eternal Waters, and all Variety of Creatures appear'd in those Waters, for a further Manifestation of his Glory, there to remain to all Eternity: Even as he created out of these lower Waters, all Variety of Creatures by a Word speaking, to endure for a Season, for the Manifestation of his Glory.

Now you must understand, That the Creation that is to all Eternity, in the Presence of God, that their Natures and they are all pure, not desiring Generation; but all of them have in the room thereof, a more transcendent Joy, in their several Natures, or Spirits; all of them, according to their Kind, giving Praise and Glory to a spiritual personal God their Creator, to all Eternity: That is, the Kingdom where the Lion and the Lamb lye down together in Peace, World without End; in this upper World, of eternal Heavens, eternal Earth, and eternal Waters; wherein the first Creature, of the eternal personal God first appeared, visible in his Presence.

Again,

Again, I declare from the Lord Jesus, That in that Kingdom of Glory only, the whole Creation is invisible, of perfect Love, and pure Peace, unto all Eternity.

Again, I declare from the Lord Jesus, That this lower World, or mortal Creation from the Stars, unto the Depths of the Earth, or Waters, were all made out of the Creation in the Presence of the Lord Jesus, which only is to endure to Eternity; where the Elect are to remain and enjoy it personally, not only invisibly, but visibly also, to all Eternity.

Now, that you may understand something of this mortal Creation, I declare by Revelation from the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, That the Waters that are in this Creation, were divided from those eternal Waters that are in the World above, or beyond the Stars: And further, the Earth that is here beneath, was created, or made out of that eternal Earth, which is above, or beyond the Stars.

I declare further from the Lord, That the Firmament, or lower visible Heaven, the Lord hath created, is made of the Water, or Substance of Water; and that this Firmament of the lower Heaven, being made of the Water, it was but a dark Body of Water, until Light was created, to make this Darknes a Body of Light: Therefore the Lord speaks unto this dark Body of Water, saying, *Let there be Light*, and it was so.

Now the Light that the Lord made, and set in the Firmament of the Heavens, as namely the Sun, Moon, and Stars, he made them of the Water, or Substance of Water, and fixed them in the Firmament of Heaven, to give Light above in the Firmament of Heaven, which was a dark Body before, but now a Heaven; because the Lord hath set or fixed Lights in it, not only to make the dark Firmament a Heaven above, but to give Light unto the dark Waters, and dark Earth beneath.

For your further Information, I declare from the Lord Jesus, That the Bodies of the Sun, Moon, and Stars, which the Lord hath created of Water, and hath set or fixed in the Firmament of Heaven, he hath made of Waters also, which are the chief natural Lights, of this mortal Creation, or lower World, to continue for a Season.

I say again from the Lord, That they are not much bigger in their Bulk or Bodies, than they appear to be in the Firmament of Heaven, where they are until Time shall be no more. Wherefore, concerning that old lying Imagination of wise Men (so accounted) concerning the great Bulk or Bodies of the Sun, Moon, and Stars.

I declare from the Lord Jesus, The Ground, or Cause of this gross Darkness in them, concerning the Knowledge of Creation of Creatures, is this; because they are utterly ignorant of the Knowledge of the Creator, who revealeth himself, and this Creation of the two Worlds, unto him whom he hath chosen for a Witness, against all Despisers in this last Age, even to all Eternity.

Now to you that have Faith, I declare from the Lord, this is the infinite Power of an infinite personal God, for his glorious Person, to be only resident in one Place at once: Yet by the Power of his *Word-speaking*, both Men, and Angels, are filled with his glorious Wisdom; and the two Worlds, standing by his Decree alone, the one unto all Eternity, for the Glory of his immortal Person in the Heavens above; and the other for a Season, for the Glory of his Person also; when he had laid down his immortal Glory in the Heavens above, and brought forth himself a pure natural Person on the Earth beneath.

And then, by the Power of his Word or Decree, all Creatures, in this lower World, bring forth according to their Kind: And yet this glorious infinite personal God preserveth his Person and Nature, distinct from all Creatures, both in Heaven, and on Earth; except Men and Angels, unto whom he imparts, or reveals a little of the Overflowings of his Divine Nature, or Spirit, to keep them in Obedience.

And (as I said before) I declare from the Lord Jesus, That the Bodies of the Sun, Moon, and Stars, are but a very little bigger than they appear to be; whereby the infinite Power and Glory of an infinite personal God, doth much more appear; that through such little Bodies, there should shine forth so great a Light, through the whole Creation; for the Things of my God are but little, or small, yea, of little Value, or of no Account unto the Wisdom of Reason; through which his  
infinite

infinite Power, Wisdom, or Glory, is seen only to elect Men and Angels: As it is written, *With God all Things are possible.*

So I declare by Revelation, from the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus, That the Lord made the Man *Adam* of the Dust of the Ground, or Earth, of this lower Creation.

Now this Word, of this personal God, spoken unto the Dust, immediately brought forth a living Soul (that is) a personal Man, of a pure Nature, or divine Spirit; the which divine Spirit, or pure Nature, was the Spirit of Faith, which was the very Nature of the Spirit of God, by one Voice only, speaking in him, all Obedience unto as Creator, from whom did flow continually, nothing but Joy and Peace unspeakable and glorious.

Now you must understand, the Body, or outward Form, was the Image of God; because the pure Image of the invisible Spirit, of the Person of God, Angels, or Men, cannot truly be known, or described, by the Tongue of Men, or Angels: Therefore Christ said unto the Jews, when they tempted him, *whose Image, or Supercription is this?* The Answer was, *Cæsar's.* Then it is clear, That the Image of God, Men, or Angels, in the outward Form only; and not the inward Spirit, whose Form cannot be described.

One Thing more I declare from the Lord, That neither the holy Angels, Spirits, nor no other Creature's Spirits, in Heaven, or in Earth, were of the Nature of the Spirit of the personal God; but Man only; but they are all several distinct Spirits, or Natures, from the Spirit, or Nature, of God their Creator. That the Infinite Wisdom, Power, and Glory, might manifest itself through all his Creatures in Heaven, and on Earth, according to the Pleasure of his good Will.

*A Cloud*

*A Cloud of unerring Witnesses plainly proving there neither is, nor ever was, any other God but Jesus Christ the Lord.*

**A** CATALOGUE of Scripture-Records, of undeniable Truths, bearing Testimony unto The Only Wise God, Immortal, Invisible, yet Visible, Distinct Personal God: Creator, Redeemer, and Alone Everlasting Father. The Righteous Spiritual God Man from Eternity, who came down from his glorious Throne, and, in Fullness of Time, became of the Seed of the Virgin a Child of unspotted Flesh, Blood, and Bone, in the Appearance of mortal Man; yea, and in due Time, became an absolute Man, in all Things like unto us; (sinful Reason or lying Imagination, only excepted) that he might make himself capable both Soul and Body, of entering into Death; and by Virtue of his Everlasting Spiritual Word, or Almighty Decree, in or through Death, to quicken and revive that same pure Spirit and Body again, into a far more transcendent spiritual Condition, than it was in before it dy'd; or capable of, before he became a Body of Flesh, that *he alone*, might be Lord of Quick and Dead, and in the same Body of Flesh and Bone he died in, and no other, as Fire, naturally ascended, even visibly, into his immortal Throne, of his eternal Glory, from whence he came, the invisible Heaven and Earth, above or beyond the Stars, which Place of Blessedness, is an infinite Habitation, Throne, or Kingdom of unutterable Glories; suitable to an infinite Majesty, and spiritual glorious Bodjes, which are there to remain World without End; and Essentially distinct from this global, perishing World, when all Time is past, trampling it under Foot, as an Habitation or Hell, for all Reprobates, there to remain in utter Darknes.

Thus by the single Eye of your most holy Faith, you may see the eternal uncreated Divinity, or God-head Fulness, now united with Flesh and Bone, God and Man, being but one personal Essence, or glorified Substance, even essentially distinct from Heaven, Earth, Angels, and Men, from Eternity to Eternity;

*A Cloud of Unerring Witnesses, &c.* 95

Eternity; and from this glorious City made without Hands, much like unto the little Body of the Sun in the Firmament, virtually he displayeth the Splendor of his heavenly Light, Life, and Glory, into the Spirits and Bodies of elect Men and Angels; eternally retaining his infinite bright burning Glory within his own divine Person: Because no created Beings, whether they be Angels or Men, are capable of the Essential In-dwelling of the eternal Spirit of God, but that Man Jesus only; who was from Eternity Essentially One with it.

Wherefore (whatever Men may imagine,) it is as impossible, for any Man from Scripture-Records, or any Way else, to prove the Only Creator to be two or three distinct Essences, because of his threefold Name of Father, Son, and Holy-Ghost, or Lord Jesus Christ, as it is to prove a Man's Body may live without a Soul: Or that a Man is two or three distinct Essences, because he is stiled in Scripture-Records, by a three-fold Name, of Body, Soul, and Spirit.

When our Lord was personally upon this Earth, it was written that he said, *No Man can serve two Masters*: Wherefore he that hath received in his Understanding the Records of Holy Writ, which were spoken by the Holy Spirit of Jehovah or Jesus, through the Mouths of his true Prophets and Apostles, to be the very Truth of God; when with his most serious Consideration, he hath meekly perused this Writing, the Desire of my Soul is this: If the Scriptures in the exact Letter of them, be the Rule of all Truth, unto his Spirit, that from those Testimonies he would shew me any God, Creator, or Father, out of Christ at all, or Essentially distinct from Christ, when he was upon this Earth, or before the Man-Child Jesus. Whether it be a spiritual personal God to his Comprehension or Apprehension, or an incomprehensible infinite eternal Spirit, without a distinct bodily Form, as most Men blindly imagine: Or whatever he understands him to be, I will submit to the Scripture-Records. But if plainly from them he cannot prove any other God at all, but what was in Christ Essentially from Eternity, in Time, and to Eternity: Then *In the Name of the Lord Jesus*, I require him to submit to the Truth of the Scriptures; also that he would for Time to come, dispute no more of any God at all, but of Christ only, if by Christ he expects  
the

96 *A Cloud of Unerring Witnesses, &c.*

the eternal Salvation of his Person, in his second last visible Appearance in the Clouds or Air, with his mighty Angels, to make an everlasting Separation between those that would have none to reign over them but he only, by his blessed Spirit, and them that walk even contrary to true Faith, Scriptures, or sober Reason itself, and have another God besides Christ, above Christ, or before Christ. Take scriptural Notice of this Saying of our Lord Jesus you that own the true Scriptures of the Old Testament, as well as the New: *And he said unto them, These Words which I spake unto you while I was yet with you, That all must be fulfilled which are written of me in the Law of Moses, and in the Prophets, and in the Psalms, Luke xxiv. 44.* But I never read or heard that *Job*, or *Solomon*, were any Prophets of the Lord at all, though they spake many excellent Truths: Yet neither by Christ, the Only God of all true Scriptures, nor in the holy Apostles, are they mentioned to be Pen-men of Holy Writ. I do not thus write, to undervalue them in the least; but the Truth is the Truth, though all Men should speak against it.

*Scip*

*Scripturas proving, that Christ Jesus is the  
Only God.*

FOR unto us a Child is born, unto us a Son is given;  
and the Government shall be upon his Shoulders;  
and he shall call his Name Wonderful, Counsellor, the  
Mighty God, the Everlasting Father, the Prince of Peace,  
*Isaiab ix. 6.* Behold a Virgin shall be with Child, and shall  
bear a Son, and they shall call his Name *Immanuel*; which is,  
by Interpretation, God with us, *Mat. i. 20, 21, and 23.*

But whilst he thought on these Things, behold the Angel  
of the Lord appeared to him in a Dream, saying, *Joseph*, the  
Son of *David*, Fear not to take *Mary* thy Wife, for that  
which is conceived in her is of the Holy Ghost, and she  
shall bring forth a Son, and thou shalt call his Name *Jesus*:  
For he shall save his People from their Sins, *Mat. i.*  
*20, 21.*

Then said *Mary* to the Angel, How shall this be, seeing  
I know not Man? And the Angel said unto her, The Holy  
Ghost shall come upon thee, and the Power of the Highest  
shall overshadow thee: Therefore also that holy Thing which  
shall be born of thee, shall be called the Son of God, *Luke i.*  
*34, 35.*

And she cried with a loud Voice, and said, Blessed art  
thou among Women, because the Fruit of thy Womb is  
blessed. And whence cometh this to me, that the Mother of  
my Lord should come to me? And thou Babe shalt be called  
the Prophet of the Most High: For thou shalt go before  
the Face of the Lord, to prepare his Ways, *Luke i. 42, 43,*  
and *76.*

In the Beginning was the Word, and the Word was with  
God, and the Word was God; the same was in the Begin-  
ning with God. All Things were made by him; and with-  
out him was nothing made that was made. He was in the  
World, and the World was made by him, and the World  
knew him not. And the Word was made Flesh, and  
dwelt among us (and we saw the Glory thereof, as the Glory



of the only begotten Son of the Father) full of Grace and Truth. *John* i. 1, 2, 3, 10, and 14.

Let the same Mind be in you that was even in Christ Jesus, who being in the Form of God, thought it no Robbery to be equal with God; but he made himself of no Reputation, and took on him the Form of a Servant, and was made like unto Man, and was found in Shape as a Man. *Pbill.* ii. 5, 6, 7.

In whom we have Redemption through his Blood; that is, the Forgiveness of Sins, who is the Image of the invisible God, the First-begotten of every Creature, For by him, were all Things created which are in Heaven, and which are on Earth, Things visible and invisible, whether they be Thrones, or Dominions, or Principalities, or Powers; all Things were created by him, and for him, and he is before all Things, and in him all Things consist. *Coloss.* i. 14, 15, 16, 17.

For it pleased the Father that in him should all Fullness dwell. Verse 19.

In whom are hid all the Treasures of Wisdom and Knowledge. *Coloss.* ii. 3.

For in him dwelleth all the Fullness of the Godhead bodily. *Coloss.* ii. 9.

And of his Fullness have we all received Grace for Grace. *John* i. 16.

All Things are given to me of the Father, and no Man knoweth the Son but the Father; neither knoweth any Man the Father but the Son, and he to whom the Son will reveal him. *Matt.* xi. 27.

No Man hath seen God at any Time; the only begotten Son, which is in the Bosom of the Father, he hath declared him. *John* i. 18.

Not that any Man hath seen the Father, save he which is of God, he hath seen the Father. This is that Bread which came down from Heaven, that he which eateth of it should not die. I am that living Bread which came down from Heaven; if any Man eat of this Bread he shall live for ever. What then, if ye shall see the Son of Man ascend up where he was before? *John* vi. 46, 50, 51, 58, 62.

And.

*Christ Jesus is the only God.* 99

‘ And whither I go ye know, and the Way ye know. *Thomas* said unto him, Lord, we know not whither thou goest ; how can we then know the Way ? Jesus said unto him, I am the Way, the Truth, and the Life ; no Man cometh to the Father but by me. If ye had known me ye should have known the Father also ; and from henceforth ye know him, and have seen him. *Philip* said unto him, Lord, shew us the Father, and it sufficeth us, Jesus said unto him, I have been so long Time with you, and hast thou not known me, *Philip* ? He that hath seen me hath seen my Father ? how then sayest thou shew us the Father ? Believest thou not that I am in the Father, and the Father in me ? The Words that I speak unto you I speak not of myself, but my Father, that dwelleth in me, he doth the Work. Believe me, that I am in the Father, and the Father in me ; at least, believe me for the Work’s Sake. *John* xiv. 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10, 11.

‘ But *Thomas*, one of the Twelve, called *Didymus*, was not with them when Jesus came ; the other Disciples therefore said unto him, We have seen the Lord. But he said unto them, Except I see in his Hands the Print of the Nails, and put my Finger in the Print of the Nails, and put my Hand into his Side, I will not believe. And eight Days after, again his Disciples were within, and *Thomas* was with them : Then came Jesus, when the Doors were shut, and stood in the Midst, and said, Peace be unto you. After said he to *Thomas*, Put thy Finger here, and see my Hands, and put forth thy Hand, and put it into my Side ; and be not faithless, but faithful. Then *Thomas* answered, and said unto him, Thou art my Lord and my God. *John* xx. 24, 25, 26, 27, 28.

‘ And he that seeth me seeth him that sent me. *John* xii. 45.

‘ As the Father knoweth me, so know I the Father. I and my Father are one. *John* x. 15, 30.

‘ And if I also judge, my Judgment is true ; for he that sent me is with me, The Father hath not left me alone, because I do always those Things that please him. Then said they unto him, Where is thy Father ? Jesus answered,

- ' Ye neither know me nor my Father. If ye had known me,  
 ' ye should have known my Father also. *John* viii. 16, 19.  
 ' He must encrease, but I must decrease. He that is come  
 ' from on high is above all. He that is of the Earth is of the  
 ' Earth, and speaketh of the Earth; he that is come from Hea-  
 ' ven is above all; for no Man ascendeth up to Heaven but he  
 ' that hath descended from Heaven, the Son of Man, which  
 ' is in Heaven. *John* iii. 13, 30, 31.  
 ' ' The first Man is of the Earth, earthly; the second Man  
 ' is the Lord from Heaven. *1 Cor.* xv. 47.  
 ' And all Things are of God, which hath reconciled us  
 ' unto himself, by Jesus Christ; for God was in Christ, and  
 ' reconciled the World to himself. *2 Cor.* v. Part of the 18th  
 ' and 19th Verses.  
 ' And when he had spoken these Things, while they be-  
 ' held he was taken up, for a Cloud took him out of their  
 ' Sight; and while they looked stedfastly towards Heaven, as  
 ' he went, behold two Men stood by them, in white Apparel,  
 ' which also said, Ye Men of *Gallilee*, why stand ye gazing into  
 ' Heaven? This Jesus, which is taken up from you into  
 ' Heaven, shall so come, as ye have seen him go into Heaven.  
 ' *Acts* i. 9, 10, 11.  
 ' What Concord hath Christ with *Belial*? Or what Part hath  
 ' the Believer with the Infidel? And what Agreement hath  
 ' the Temple of God with Idols? For ye are the Temple of  
 ' the living God; as God hath said, I will dwell among them;  
 ' and walk there; and I will be their God, and they shall be  
 ' my People; and I will be a Father to you, and ye shall be  
 ' my Sons and Daughters, saith the Lord Almighty. *2 Cor.*  
 ' vi. the latter End.  
 ' There is one Lord, one Faith, one Baptism, one God and  
 ' Father of all, which is above all, and through all, and in  
 ' you all; but to every one of us is given Grace, according to  
 ' the Measure of the Gift of Christ. Wherefore he said;  
 ' when he ascended on high, he led Captivity captive, and  
 ' gave Gifts unto Men. Now in that he ascended, what is it,  
 ' but that he had also descended first into the lowest Parts of  
 ' the Earth? He that descended is even the same that ascended  
 ' far above all Heavens, that he might fill all Things. *Ephes.*  
 ' iv. 5, 6, 7, 8, 9. ' Of

*Christ Jesus is the only God.*

101

• Of whom are the Fathers, and of whom concerning the  
• Flesh Christ came, who is God over all, blessed for ever.  
• Amen. *Rom. ix. 5.*

• Kiss the Son, lest he be angry, and ye perish from the  
• right Way. When his Wrath is kindled but a little, blessed  
• are all they that put their Trust in him. *Psalms ii. the last*  
• Verse.

• The Lord said unto my Lord, Sit thou on my Right-  
• hand, until I make thine Enemies thy Footstool. *Psalms cx.*  
• first Verse.

• And he fell to the Earth, and heard a Voice, saying unto  
• him, *Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?* And he said,  
• Who art thou, Lord? And the Lord said, I am Jesus,  
• whom thou persecutest; it is hard for thee to kick against  
• the Pricks. *Acts ix. 4, 5.*

• Now the same Jesus Christ, our Lord and our God, even  
• the Father, which hath loved us, and hath given us ever-  
• lasting Salvation, and good Hope, through Grace, stablish  
• you in every good Work. *2 Thess. ii. the two last Verses.*

• And did all eat the same spiritual Meat, and did all drink  
• the same spiritual Drink; for they drank of that spiritual  
• Rock that followed them, and that Rock was Christ. Nei-  
• ther let us tempt Christ as some of them tempted him, and  
• were destroyed of Serpents. *1 Cor. x. 3, 4, 9.*

• We know that an Idol is nothing in the World, and that  
• there is no other God but one; for though there be that are  
• called Gods, whether in Heaven or in Earth, as there be  
• many Gods and many Lords, yet unto us there is but one  
• God, which is the Father, of whom are all Things, and we  
• in him, and one Lord Jesus Christ, and we by him. *1 Cor.*  
• viii. 4, 5, 6.

• For we preach not ourselves, but Christ Jesus the Lord,  
• and ourselves your Servants, for Jesus Sake; for God, that  
• commanded the Light to shine out of Darkness, is he which  
• hath shined into our Hearts, to give the Light of the Know-  
• ledge of the Glory of God, in the Face of Jesus Christ.  
• *2 Cor. iv. 5, 6, 7.*

• For

*Scriptures proving, that*

‘ For ye know the Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ, that he  
 ‘ being rich, for your Sakes became poor ; that ye, through  
 ‘ his Poverty, might be made rich. *2 Cor.* viii. 9.

‘ But our Conversation is in Heaven, from whence also we  
 ‘ look for the Saviour, even the Lord Jesus Christ, who shall  
 ‘ change our vile Bodies, that they may be fashioned like unto  
 ‘ his glorious Body, according to the working whereby he is  
 ‘ able even to subdue all Things unto himself. *Phil.* iii. the  
 ‘ two last Verses.

‘ For ye are dead, and your Life is hid with Christ in God ;  
 ‘ when Christ, who is our Life, shall appear, then shall ye  
 ‘ also appear with him in Glory. *Coloss.* iii. 3, 4.

‘ I would not (Brethren) have you ignorant concerning  
 ‘ them which are asleep, that you sorrow not, even as others,  
 ‘ that have no Hope ; for if we believe that Jesus is dead,  
 ‘ and is risen, even so you which sleep in Jesus will God  
 ‘ bring with him ; for this, say we unto you, by the Word  
 ‘ of the Lord, that we which live, and are remaining at the  
 ‘ coming of the Lord, shall not prevent them which sleep ;  
 ‘ for the Lord shall descend from Heaven with a Shout, and  
 ‘ with the Voice of the Archangel, and with the Trumpet of  
 ‘ God, and the Dead in Christ shall rise first ; then shall we  
 ‘ which live, and remain, be caught up with them also in the  
 ‘ Clouds, and so shall we be ever with the Lord. Therefore  
 ‘ comfort yourselves one another with these Words. *1 Thess.*  
 ‘ iv. the last Verse.

‘ Now the very God of Peace sanctify you throughout, and  
 ‘ I pray God that your whole Spirit, and Soul, and Body,  
 ‘ may be kept blameless, unto the coming of our Lord Jesus  
 ‘ Christ. The Grace of our Lord Jesus Christ be with you.  
 ‘ Amen. *1 Thess.* v. 23, 28.

‘ For it is a righteous Thing with God to recompence Tri-  
 ‘ bulation to them that trouble you, and to you which are  
 ‘ troubled, Rest with us ; when the Lord Jesus shall shew  
 ‘ himself from Heaven with his mighty Angels, in flaming  
 ‘ Fire, rendering Vengeance unto them which do not know  
 ‘ God, and which obey not unto the Gospel of our Lord Jesus  
 ‘ Christ, which shall be punished with everlasting Perdition,  
 ‘ from

*Christ Jesus is the only God.* 103

• from the Presence of the Lord, and from the Glory of his  
• Power. *2 Theff. i. 6, 7, 8, 9.*

• I have fought a good Fight, and have finished my Course ;  
• I have kept the Faith, from henceforth is laid up for me the  
• Crown of Righteousness, which the Lord, the righteous  
• Judge, shall give me at that Day ; and not to me only, but  
• unto all them that love his appearing. *2 Tim. iv. 7, 8.*

• And if there be any other Thing that is not contrary to  
• wholesome Doctrine, which is according to the glorious Gos-  
• pel of the blessed God, which is committed unto me. There-  
• fore I thank him, which hath made me strong, that is, Christ  
• Jesus our Lord ; for he counted me faithful, and put me in  
• his Service. Nevertheless for this Cause was I received to  
• Mercy, that Christ should first shew me all Long-suffering,  
• unto the Example of them which should in Time to come  
• believe him, unto eternal Life. Now unto the King ever-  
• lasting, immortal, invisible, to God, only wise, be Honour  
• and Glory, for ever and ever. *Amen. 1 Tim. i. Part of*  
• *10, 11, 12, 16, and 17 Verses.*

• For bodily Exercise profiteth little, but Godliness is pro-  
• fitable unto all Things which hath the Promise of the Life  
• present, and of that which is to come. This is a true Say-  
• ing, and by all Means worthy be received ; for therefore we  
• labour, and are rebuked, because we trust in the living God,  
• which is the Saviour of all Men, especially of those that be-  
• lieve. *1 Tim. iv. 8, 9, 10.*

• And without Controversy, great is the Mystery of Godli-  
• ness, which is God manifested in the Flesh, justified in the  
• Spirit, seen of Angels, preached unto the Gentiles, believed  
• on in the World, received up into Glory. *2 Tim. iii. the*  
• *last Verse.*

• At sundry Times, and in divers Manners, God spake in  
• the old Time unto our Fathers by the Prophets. In these  
• last Days he hath spoken unto us by his Son, whom he hath  
• made Heir of all Things ; by whom also he made the  
• World ; who being the Brightness of his Glory, and the en-  
• graven Form of his Person, and bearing up all Things by  
• his mighty Word, hath by himself purged our Sins, and  
• sitteth at the Right-hand of the Majesty on high, in the  
• highest

• highest Places; and is made so much the more excellent than  
 • the Angels, inasmuch as he hath obtained a more excellent  
 • Name than they: For unto which of the Angels said he, at  
 • any Time, Thou art my Son, this Day begot I thee? And  
 • again; I will be his Father, and he shall be my Son. Again,  
 • When he bringeth in his first-begotten Son into the World,  
 • he saith, Let all the Angels of God worship him. And of  
 • the Angels he saith, He makes the Spirits his Messengers, and  
 • his Ministers a Flame of Fire; but unto the Son he saith,  
 • Oh God, thy Throne is for ever and ever; the Scepter of  
 • thy Kingdom is a Scepter of Righteousness; thou hast loved  
 • Righteousness, and hated Iniquity; therefore God, even thy  
 • God, hath anointed thee with the Oil of Gladness above thy  
 • Fellows. And thou, Lord, in the Beginning, hast establish'd  
 • the Earth, and the Heavens are the Works of thy Hands.  
 • *Hebrews i. 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, 6, 7, 8, 9, 10.*

• But we see Jesus crowned with Glory and Honour, which  
 • was made a little inferior to the Angels, through the  
 • Sufferings of Death, that, by God's Grace, he might taste  
 • Death for all Men. It became him, for whom are all Things,  
 • and by whom are all Things, seeing that he brought many  
 • Children unto Glory, that he should consecrate the Prince  
 • of their Salvation, through Afflictions. *Heb. ii. 9, 10.*  
 • And he shall divide the Spoil with the Strong, because he  
 • hath poured out his Soul unto Death. *Isaiab liii. Part of the*  
 • 12th Verse.

• For whether we live, we live unto the Lord; or whether  
 • we die, we die unto the Lord; whether we live therefore, or  
 • die, we are the Lord's: For Christ therefore died, and rose  
 • again, that he might be Lord both of the Dead and Quick.  
 • *Rom. xiv. 8, 9.*

• And all Flesh shall know, that I, the Lord, am thy Sa-  
 • viour and thy Redeemer, the mighty one of *Jacob. Isaiab*  
 • *xlix. the last Verse.*

• Looking unto Jesus, the Author and Finisher of our Faith,  
 • who, for the Joy that was set before him, endured the Cross,  
 • despised the Shame, and is set at the Right-hand of the Throne  
 • of God. *Heb. xii. 2.*

• Where-

‘ Wherefore, seeing we receive a Kingdom, which cannot  
‘ be shaken, let us have Grace, whereby we may so serve  
‘ God, that we may please him with Reverence and Fear; for  
‘ our God is a consuming Fire, and a jealous God. *Heb. xii.*  
‘ 28, 29.

‘ And we know that the Son of God is come, and hath  
‘ given us a Mind to know him, who is true, and we are in  
‘ him which is true; that is, in that his Son Jesus Christ,  
‘ the same is the very God, and eternal Life. *1 John*, last  
‘ Chapter, 20, 21.

‘ Now unto him that is able to keep you, that you fall not,  
‘ and to present you faultless, before the Presence of his Glory,  
‘ with Joy; that is, to God, only wise, our Saviour, be Glory  
‘ and Majesty, and Dominion and Power, both now and for  
‘ ever. *Amen. Jude*, the last Verse.

‘ ‘ Lift up your Heads, oh ye Gates! be ye lift up, ye ever-  
‘ lasting Doors! and the King of Glory shall come in. Who is  
‘ this King of Glory? It is the Lord, strong in Battle, even  
‘ the Lord, mighty in Battle. Lift up your Heads, oh ye  
‘ Gates! and be ye lift up yourselves, ye everlasting Doors!  
‘ and the King of Glory shall come in. Who is the King of  
‘ Glory? Even the Lord of Hosts, he is the King of Glory.  
‘ *Psalms xxiv. 7, 8, 9.*

‘ I beheld till the Thrones were set up, and the Ancient of  
‘ Days did sit, whose Garment was white as Snow, and the  
‘ Hair of his Head like pure Wool; his Throne was like  
‘ fiery Flame, and his Wheels as burning Fire; a Stream issued,  
‘ and came forth from before him; thousand Thousands mini-  
‘ stered unto him, and ten thousand Thousands stood before  
‘ him. The Judgment was set, and the Books were opened:  
‘ I beheld, and the same Horn made Battle against the Saints,  
‘ yea, and prevailed against them, until the Ancient of Days  
‘ came, and Judgment was given to the Saints of the Most  
‘ High, and the Time approached that the Saints possessed the  
‘ Kingdom. *Daniel vii. 9, 10, 21, 22.*

‘ Behold he cometh with Clouds, and every Eye shall see  
‘ him, even they which pierced him through; and all Kin-  
‘ dreds of the Earth shall wail before him, even so. *Amen.* I  
‘ am *Alpha* and *Omega*, the Beginning and the Ending, saith



• the Lord; which is, and which was, and which is to come,  
 • even the Almighty. And I was even ravished in Spirit on  
 • the Lord's Day, and heard behind me a great Voice, as it had  
 • been of a Trumpet, saying, I am *Alpha* and *Omega*, the first  
 • and the Last. Then I turned back to see the Voice that spake  
 • with me; and when I was turned I saw seven Golden Candle-  
 • sticks, one like unto the Son of Man, clothed with a Gar-  
 • ment down to the Feet, and girded about the Paps with a  
 • Golden Girdle; his Head and Hair were as white Wool, and  
 • as Snow, and his Eyes were as a Flame of Fire; his Feet  
 • like unto fine Brass, burning in a Furnace; and his Voice as  
 • the Sound of many Waters. And he had in his Right-hand  
 • seven Stars; and out of his Mouth went a sharp two-edged  
 • Sword; and his Face shone as the Sun shineth in his Strength.  
 • And when I saw him, I fell at his Feet as dead. Then he  
 • laid his Right-hand upon me, saying unto me, Fear not; I  
 • am the First and the Last; and I am alive, I was dead; and,  
 • behold, I am alive for evermore. *Amen.* And I have the  
 • Keys of Hell and Death. *Rev. i. last Part.*  
 • And they were full of Eyes within; and they ceased not,  
 • Day nor Night, saying, *Holy! Holy! Holy!* Lord God Al-  
 • mighty, which was, and which is, and which is to come,  
 • And when those Beasts gave Glory, and Honour, and Thanks,  
 • to him that sat on the Throne, which liveth for ever and  
 • ever, the twenty-four Elders fell down before him that sat on  
 • the Throne, and worshipped him that liveth for evermore;  
 • and cast their Crowns before the Throne, saying, Thou art  
 • worthy, O Lord, to receive Glory, and Honour, and Power;  
 • for thou hast created all Things, and for thy Will's Sake they  
 • are, and have been created. *Rev. viii. 9, 10, 11.*  
 • Then I beheld, and heard the Voice of many Angels round  
 • about the Throne, and about the Beast, and the Elders, say-  
 • ing, Worthy is the Lamb that was killed to receive Power  
 • and Riches, and Wisdom, and Strength, and Honour, and  
 • Glory, and Praise; and all Creatures which are in Heaven,  
 • and on the Earth, and under the Earth, and in the Sea, and  
 • all that are in them, heard I, saying, Praise, and Honour,  
 • and Glory, and Power, be unto him that sitteth on the  
 • Throne, and unto the Lamb, for evermore. And the  
 • four

8. four Beasts said, *Amen.* And the twenty-four Elders fell down,  
9. and worshipped him that liveth for evermore. *Revelat. v.*

10. After these Things I beheld, and lo, a great Multitude,  
11. which no Man could number, of all Nations, and Kindreds,  
12. and People, and Tongues, stood before the Throne, and  
13. before the Lamb, clothed with long white Robes, and Palms  
14. in their Hands; and they cried with a loud Voice, saying,  
15. Salvation cometh of our God, that sitteth upon the Throne,  
16. and of the Lamb. And all the Angels stood round about  
17. the Throne, and about the Elders, and the four Beasts; and  
18. they fell before the Throne on their Faces, and worshipped  
19. God, saying, *Amen*; Praise, and Glory, and Wisdom, and  
20. Thanks, and Honour, and Power; and Might, be unto our  
21. God, for evermore; *Amen.* And one of the Elders spake, saying  
22. unto me, What are these which are arrayed in long white  
23. Robes? And whence came they? And I said unto him,  
24. Lord, thou knowest. And he said unto me, These are they  
25. which came out of great Tribulation; and have washed their  
26. long Robes, and have made their long Robes white, in the  
27. Blood of the Lamb; therefore are they in the Presence of  
28. the Throne of God, and serve him Day and Night in his  
29. Temple. And he that sitteth on the Throne will dwell among  
30. them, they shall hunger no more, neither thirst any more,  
31. neither shall the Sun light on them, nor any Heat; for the  
32. Lamb, which is in the Middle of the Throne, shall govern  
33. them, and shall lead them into the lively Fountains of Wa-  
34. ter; and God shall wipe away all Tears from their Eyes.  
35. *Revelat. vii.* From the 9th to the last Verse.

36. And the seventh Angel blew the Trumpet; and there were  
37. great Voices in Heaven, saying, The Kingdoms of the World  
38. are our Lord's, and his Christ's, and he shall reign for ever-  
39. more. Then the twenty-four Elders, which sat before God  
40. on their Seats, fell upon their Faces, and worshipped God,  
41. saying, We give thee Thanks, Lord God Almighty, (*Mark*  
42. *with a single Eye*) which art, and which wast, and which art  
43. to come; for thou hast received thy great Might, and hast  
44. obtained thy Kingdom. And the Gentiles were angry, and  
45. thy Wrath is come, and the Time of the Dead, that they

‘ should be judged, and that thou shouldest give Reward to thy Servants the Prophets, and to the Saints, and to them that fear thy Name, to small and great; and shouldest destroy them which destroy the Earth. *Revelat. xi. 15, 16, 17, 18.*

‘ And I saw Heaven opened, and behold a white Horse, and he that sat upon him was called *Faithful and True*; and he judgeth and fighteth righteously. And his Eyes were as a Flame of Fire, and on his Head were many Crowns. And he had a Name written that no Man knew but himself, and he was clothed with a Garment dipped in Blood, and his Name was called *the Word of God*; and out of his Mouth went a sharp Sword, that with it he should smite the Heavens; for he shall rule them with a Rod of Iron; for he it is that treadeth the Wine-Press of the Fierceness and Wrath of Almighty God. And he hath upon his Garments, and upon his Thigh, a Name written, *The King of Kings, and Lord of Lords.* *Revelat. xvi. 11, 12, 13, 15, 16.*

‘ And I saw a great white Throne, and one that sat upon it, from whose Face flew away both the Earth and Heavens, and their Place was no more found. *Revelat. xx. 11.*

‘ And he that sat upon the Throne said, I make all Things new. And he said unto me, Write, for these Things are faithful and true. And he said unto me, It is done: I am *Alpha* and *Omega*, the Beginning and the Ending; he that overcomes shall inherit all Things, and I will be his God, and he shall be my Son. *Rev. xxi. 5, 6, 7.*

‘ I am *Alpha* and *Omega*, the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last. I, Jesus, have sent my Angel, to testify these Things in the Churches. I am the Root, and the Generation of *David*, and the bright Morning Star. He which testifieth these Things saith surely, I come quickly. *Amen.* Even so come, Lord Jesus. *Revelat. xxii. 13, 16, 20.*

In the spiritual Bowels of the Lord Jesus Christ, I humbly beseech those that shall take the Pains to peruse this Writing, that, with an upright Conscience, as in the Presence of God, they would compare Scripture with Scripture; and then they may

may clearly see that the same *Jehovah*, in the Time of the Law, was the very same *Jesus*, in the Time of the Gospel; and that which made the seeming Difference between the Father and the Son, and the Holy Ghost, or Spirit, as though they were two or three distinct Essences or Persons, it is nothing else but the Appearance of the only High and Mighty God, in a two or threefold Manner, or Condition, unto the Sons of Men, at two or three several Times; and so altering his Names or Titles, according to his several Appearings; as namely, under the Law, before his spiritual Body became Flesh, you know he went under these, and such like Titles: *Jehovah*, the High and Lofty One of *Israel*, the Lord of Hosts, the Most High God, the Mighty God of *Jacob*; but when the glorious *Jehovah*, or *Jam*, became *Jesus* in the Flesh, then you may know, according to the transmuting of his Condition, for his Elect's Sake, so likewise he changed his Names, or Titles, as to call himself the Only Begotten Son of God, or Son of Man, or Mediator, or Brother, or Servant, or Redeemer of his People. Thus, when the High and Mighty God had abased himself in the Form of a Servant, in the lowest Manner, you see he altered his Titles or Names, according to his Condition.

Again, in the third Place, when the most glorious God, alone in Flesh, had wrought our Redemption by the shedding his most precious Blood, and pouring out his Soul unto Death, and being ascended upon the Throne of his eternal, immortal Person, at Glory again. Now, at the last, since he alone is become the Teacher of his People, by the Inspiration of his most Blessed Spirit, he is pleased to title himself by the Name of Holy Ghost, or Spirit, or such like; so that, by the single Eye of your most holy Faith, you may see and know that Christ, and the Father, and the Spirit, were, and are, and can be no other but one undivided glorious Essence, or spiritual personal Substance, from all Eternity; and now is become a Person of Flesh and Bone, glorified to all Eternity.

The Lord, from his glorious Throne, and infinite Free-grace, open your Understandings, that are his tender-hearted chosen ones, that you may know and love that personal, only wise God, our Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ, above your  
• Lives,

*Scriptures proving, that, &c.*

Lives, who is the everlasting Father, unto your eternal Glory.  
Even so, *Amen, Amen, Amen*, So be it, *Amen*.

*The Servant of the Most High and Mighty Jehovah, or Jesus,  
and true Messenger of his Eternal Spirit,*

*John Reeve.*

**F I N I S.**

Veræ Fidei Gloria est Corona Vitæ.

---

A  
**VOLUME**  
OF  
**SPIRITUAL EPISTLES:**

BEING THE

**Copies of several Letters**

WRITTEN BY

*The two last PROPHETS and MESSENGERS of GOD,*  
**JOHN REEVE AND LODOWICKE MUGGLETON;**

CONTAINING

Variety of Spiritual Revelations, and deep Mysteries, manifesting to the Elect Seed the Prerogative Power of a true Prophet; who, by Virtue of their Commissions, did truly give Blessings of Life Everlasting to those that believed their Declarations; and to all despising Reprobates the Curse or Sentence of Eternal Damnation.

COLLECTED BY THE GREAT FAITH OF

**ALEXANDER DELAMAINE, THE ELDER,**

*A true Believer of God's last Commission of the Spirit.*

INTENDED

At first only for his own spiritual Solace; but finding they increased to so great a Volume, he leaves it to his Posterity, that Ages to come may rejoice in the comfortable View of so blessed and heavenly a Treasure.

TRANSCRIBED FROM

**ALEXANDER DELAMAINE'S ORIGINAL COPY**

**BY TOBIAH TERRY,**

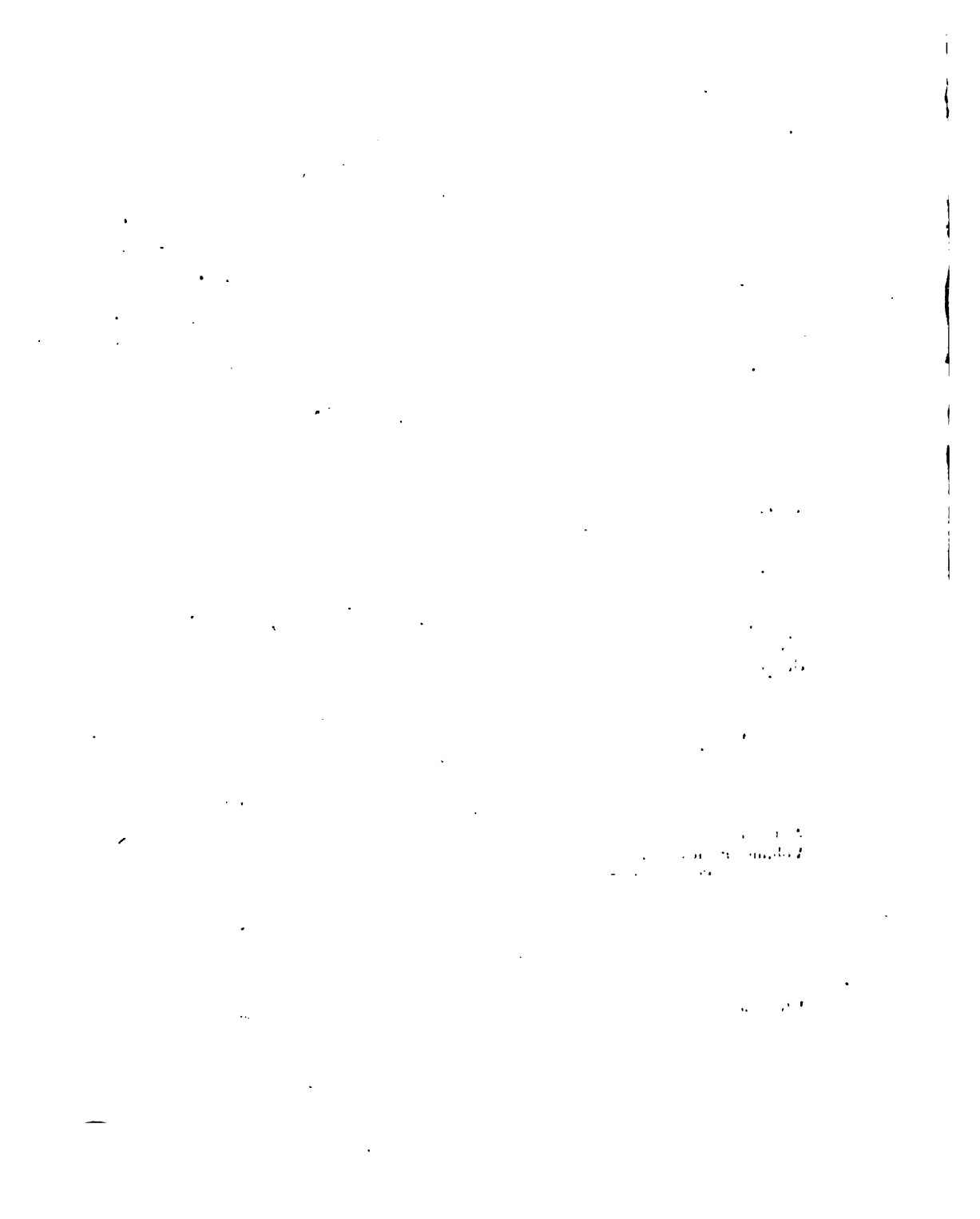
**A true Believer of the like precious Faith in the true God the Man Christ Jesus, which most holy Faith the reprobate World despises.**

---

PRINTED, BY SUBSCRIPTION, IN THE YEAR 1755 :

RE-PRINTED, BY SUBSCRIPTION, IN THE YEAR 1820,

BY W. SMITH, KING STREET, LONG ACRE.



## **PREFACE.**

---

**IN** this paper book is contained several writings and letters to several particular persons ; some to the believers of this commission of the Spirit, and others to unbelievers that were moderate, and some to those that were despisers, as will be seen in those that read them.

These writings and letters were written by John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, the two last Witnesses and true Prophets that God will ever send, to the end of the world.

These writings and letters were gathered from many parts of England, and copied out of the original letters sent by John Reeve and myself, by a true believer, and one of the blessed of the Lord to eternity, namely, Alexander Delamaine the elder. He hath taken a great deal of pains to gather these letters from all parts, and to copy them out in this book, and to send the originals to the parties again.

These writings and letters are distinct from all that have been printed, and never was public to the world, although we have printed and published many books



## P R E F A C E.

to the world, wherein life and death hath been set before all people.

And some few hath chosen life rather than death, and hath believed our report concerning those two great mysteries, how God became flesh, and how the devil became flesh.

Upon these two dependeth salvation and damnation of men and women; which multitudes of people, who hath seen these books, and heard of them, their eyes being blinded, and their hearts hardened, hath gone that broad way of despising the mystery of God, and the mystery of the right devil, and so hath gone the broad way into eternal destruction, and hath chosen death rather than life.

And though there is enough printed to make the man of God perfect, as to life and salvation, to eternity; yet, after my decease, whoever shall come to hear these letters read in this book, if they have any true light of faith in them, will see how the blessing of heaven did run in the days of a prophet; and how happy were those persons that were under it; and shall wish they had lived in those days, and shall rejoice they are counted worthy to hear these letters that never were printed.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

## AN ACROSTIC.

*P* eruse with Joy, my Friends, the sacred Lines  
*R* eeve and Muggleton wrote by Power divine,  
*I* nspir'd by Christ the God whom we adore,  
*N* o more our God will send till Time's no more.  
*T* his writing long in Manuscript did lie, \*  
*E* v'n now made publick to the faithful eye,  
*D* ominion, Power, and Praise to God on high. }

*B* y Friends † these Letters together were collected,  
*Y* ea then transcrib'd, and now in Print perfected.

*S* uch was the soul's desire of a dear friend that sleeps||,  
*U* nto us hath made known these sacred sheets ;  
*B* ut Praise to God 'tis done by some expence,  
*S* uch Truths to see, how great the recompence !  
*C* ombine in Love ye Sons of Faith, and sing,  
*R* eturn all Praise to Christ your God and King.  
*I* t was for us his precious Blood was spill'd,  
*P* our'd forth his Soul, yea the Almighty kill'd :  
*T* hen at the Time decreed my God arose,  
*I* n Triumph over death and all his Foes ;  
*O* n high ascends eternally to reign,  
*N* ow we are longing till he comes again.

---

\* In the hands of Mr. Cook, Distiller, at Vauxhall, Surrey.

† Alexander Delamaine and Tobiah Terry.

‡ Thomas Tompkinson, in his preface to the Acts.

## LIST OF SUBSCRIBERS, 1820.

Mr. and Mrs. George Browne\*

Mr. Thomas Browne\*

Mr. William Cates

Mr. John Drummond

Mr. and Mrs. James Frost

Mr. and Mrs. James Frost, jun.

Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Frost

Mr. and Mrs. Isaac Frost

Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Flemming

Mrs. Sarah Fever

Mrs. Sarah Gandar

Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Gandar

Mr. Edward Gandar

Mr. and Mrs. Timothy Gandar

Mr. Elhanan Gascoyne

Mr. and Mrs. Joseph Glaskin

Mr. and Mrs. William Graham †

Mr. and Mrs. Thomas Hewett

Mrs. Hannah Hunt\*

Mr. and Mrs. George Hunt\*

Miss Hannah Hunt\*

Mr. Samuel Hunt\*

Miss Theodocia Hunt\*

Mr. John Hunt\*

Mr. Benjamin Hall\*

Miss Theodocia Hogg\*

Mr. John Hogg, jun.\*

Mr. Robert Hogg\*

Mrs. Amy Hall

Mr. Stephen Hodgkinson\*

Mr. and Mrs. William Lepper †

Mr. James May †

Mr. and Mrs. Thos. Pickersgill, sen.

Mr. and Mrs. George Robinson

Mr. Richard Smith

Mr. James Pearce Smith

Mrs. Susannah Spooner

Miss Ann Slates\*

Mr. Richard Tyley

Mr. and Mrs. Vincent, sen.

Mr. and Mrs. William Vincent, jun.

Mr. James Windsor

Mr. Robert Wallis

Mr. James Wood

Mrs. Esther Wilthew

Mr. and Mrs. John White.\*

\* Derbyshire.

† Maidstone.

‡ Deal.

## INDEX TO LETTERS.

---

	Page
The Prophet Muggleton to Atkinson, Mrs. Elizabeth, Feb. 12, 1671....	317
Bladdwell, Mrs. May 30, 1662 . . . .	51
Beake, Mr. Robert, July 11, 1664 . . . .	145
Brocke, Mr. James, March 30, 1666 . . . .	206
Brooks, Mrs. Lydia, Oct. 24, 1668 . . . .	278
Burton, Mr. Edward, Jan. 12, 1681 . . . .	492
Claxton, Mr. Lawrence, Dec. 25, 1660 . . . .	29
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Feb. 13, 1660 . . . .	*35
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Feb. 16, 1661 . . . .	35
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, April 12, 1662 . . . .	50
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, July 14, 1662 . . . .	56
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Sept. 12, 1662 . . . .	66
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Nov. 7, 1662 . . . .	75
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Nov. 28, 1662 . . . .	78
Carter, Mrs. Elizabeth, Dec. 11, 1662 . . . .	88
Carter, Mrs. Elizabeth, April 3, 1663 . . . .	98
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, April 3, 1663 . . . .	100
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, May 8, 1663 . . . .	103
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, June 19, 1663 . . . .	110
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, July 18, 1663 . . . .	115
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Nov. 14, 1663 . . . .	130
Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Nov. 27, 1663 . . . .	132

	Page
The Prophet Muggleton to Carter, Mrs. Elizabeth, April 19, 1664 . . .	142
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Feb. 7, 1665 . . .	174
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, 1668 . . . . .	240
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, March 23, 1671 . . .	321
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, August 30, 1672 . . .	352
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Jan. 16, 1674 . . .	404
_____ Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Feb. 1, 1682 . . .	509
_____ Cleve, Mr. William, 1666 . . . . .	170
_____ Cleve, Mr. Charles, March 15, 1666 . . .	178
_____ Cleve, Mr. Charles, Mr. Thomas Parke, Mr. Francis Hampson, April 24, 1671 . . .	328
_____ Capp, Mr. March 15, 1683 . . . . .	522
_____ Dickinson, Mrs. Elizabeth, August 28, 1658 . . .	14
_____ Dickinson, Mr. Aug. 9, 1661 . . . . .	42
_____ Delamaine, Mr. Edward, June 16, 1668 . . .	252
_____ Delamaine, Mr. Alexander, June 8, 1671 . . .	333
_____ Delamaine, Mr. Alexander, May 16, 1678 . . .	374
_____ Dickinson, Miss Elizabeth, March 6, 1674 . . .	409
_____ Dennison, Major John, Feb. 24, 1678 . . .	457
_____ Delamaine, Mr. Alex. junior, Nov. 18, 1678 . . .	470
_____ Delamaine, Mr. Alexander, June 25, 1683 . . .	529
_____ Delamaine, Mrs. Ann, Feb. 3, 1687 . . .	584
_____ Delamaine, Mrs. Sarah, Dec. 14, 1691 . . .	603
The Prophet Reeve's Epistle to his Friend, discovering the dark light of the Quakers, Sept. 20, 1654 . . . . .	7
A Letter presented to Alderman Fouke, Lord Mayor of London, with a Declaration unto the Recorder Steel, the Lord Chief Justice Rowles, and the whole Bench and Jury; and in general, to all Civil Magistrates and Juries in the world, from the Prophets John Reeve and Lodo- wicke Muggleton . . . . .	3
The Prophet Muggleton to Frith, Mrs. Susannah, Nov. 23, 1662 . . .	80
_____ Fershall, Mr. William, Jan. 19, 1666 . . .	203
_____ Fletcher, Mr. June 25, 1666 . . . . .	211
_____ Frewterell, Mrs. June 11, 1674 . . . . .	411
_____ Flaggotter, Mrs. Elizabeth, June 22, 1682 . . .	513

INDEX TO LETTERS.

	Page
The Prophet Muggleton to Flaggetter, Mrs. Elizabeth, June 25, 1683	526
_____ Goodwyn, Mr. Feb. 4, 1669 . . . . .	281
_____ Gamble, Mr. George, March 6, 1672 . . . . .	334
_____ Gamble, Mr. George, Feb. 14, 1673 . . . . .	369
_____ Gratton, Mr. John, Oct. 8, 1674 . . . . .	427
_____ Gamble, Mr. George, Jan. 12, 1678 . . . . .	453
_____ Gamble, Mrs. Mary, March 6, 1685 . . . . .	574
_____ Gamble, Mrs. Mary, August 29, 1687 . . . . .	596
The Prophet Reeve to . . . Hill, Mr. Christopher . . . . .	13
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, July 17, 1657 . . . . .	13
The Prophet Muggleton to Hill, Mr. Christopher, Jan. 2, 1660 . . . . .	16
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Feb. 5, 1660 . . . . .	21
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Feb. 25, 1660 . . . . .	26
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Jan. 2, 1661 . . . . .	32
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Nov. 16, 1662 . . . . .	76
_____ Highfield, Mr. Thomas, July 31, 1663 . . . . .	116
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Sept. 23, 1663 . . . . .	127
_____ Hyde, Mr. John, Oct. 27, 1665 . . . . .	192
_____ Harrison, Mr. Oct. 6, 1666 . . . . .	218
_____ Hooton, Mrs. Elizabeth, Jan. 26, 1668 . . . . .	227
_____ Hall, Mr. William, 1668 . . . . .	249
_____ Hill, Mr. Christopher, Sept. 9, 1669 . . . . .	298
_____ Harriot, Mr. John, July 16, 1673 . . . . .	375
_____ Hampson, Mrs. June 11, 1674 . . . . .	412
_____ Henn, Mr. Henry, Aug. 20, 1675 . . . . .	431
_____ Hall, Mrs. Rebecca, May 1, 1683 . . . . .	524
_____ Hall, Mrs. Rebecca, Oct. 18, 1684 . . . . .	556
_____ Hall, Mrs. Rebecca, Jan. 20, 1685 . . . . .	567
_____ Jones, Mr. Rice . . . . .	139
_____ Jackson, Mrs. Ann, August 29, 1683 . . . . .	540
_____ Jackson, Mrs. Ann, Oct. 18, 1684 . . . . .	565
_____ King, Mr. William, Oct. 3, 1672 . . . . .	357
_____ Leavens, Mr. John, Oct. 6, 1662 . . . . .	69
_____ Lowe, Mrs. Anne, July 5, 1667 . . . . .	223
_____ Lad, Mr. John, April 23, 1669 . . . . .	283
_____ Lad, Mr. John, August 26, 1676 . . . . .	441
_____ Lad, Mr. Thomas, July 15, 1687 . . . . .	569

## INDEX TO LETTERS.

	Page
The Prophet Muggleton to Martyn, Mr. Jan. 16, 1666 . . . . .	198
_____ Moss, Mr. Jeremiah, March 6, 1672 - . . . . .	339
_____ Marsden, Mrs. Elizabeth, May 20, 1672 . . . . .	348
_____ Moss, Mr. Joseph, August 11, 1673 . . . . .	400
_____ Mann, Mrs. Frances, Jan. 23, 1674 . . . . .	407
_____ Malum, Isabella; Oct. 1, 1674 . . . . .	415
_____ Moss, Mrs. Susanna, Sept. 5, 1675 . . . . .	435
_____ Muggleton, Mr. Roger, Dec. 14, 1678 . . . . .	473
_____ Mellford, Mr. John, April 12, 1687 . . . . .	586
_____ Nosworthy, Mr. Thomas, March 3, 1678 . . . . .	468
_____ Parker, Mrs. Mary, May 25, 1668 . . . . .	234
_____ Parker, Mrs. Mary, August 13, 1668 . . . . .	272
_____ Parker, Mrs. Mary, June 14, 1669 . . . . .	204
_____ Parker, Mrs. Mary, August 30, 1669 . . . . .	294
_____ Preston, Mr. and Mrs. May 14, 1672 . . . . .	343
_____ Penn, William, Jan 23, 1673 . . . . .	367
_____ Pett, Mr. Michael, Feb. 25, 1676 . . . . .	463
_____ Peirce, Mr. Robert, August 2, 1686 . . . . .	484
_____ Cork, in Ireland, being the Sentence of Damnation upon twenty-six Quakers there, August 11, 1673 . . . . .	379
_____ Roe, Mrs. Elizabeth, Dec. 5, 1678 . . . . .	471
_____ Steel, the Recorder, Oct. 28, 1653 . . . . .	1
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Feb. 17, 1661 . . . . .	36
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Nov. 28, 1661 . . . . .	45
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, April 7, 1662 . . . . .	47
_____ Short, Mrs. Sarah, June 2, 1662 . . . . .	52
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, July 19, 1662 . . . . .	61
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, August 11, 1662 . . . . .	65
_____ Sudbury, Mr. Richard, Nov. 3, 1662 . . . . .	73
_____ Sudbury, Mr. Richard, Dec. 8, 1662 . . . . .	82
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Dec. 15, 1662 . . . . .	90
_____ Sudbury, Mr. Richard, May 19, 1663 . . . . .	104
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, May 19, 1663 . . . . .	108
_____ Sudbury, Mr. Richard, Dec. 13, 1663 . . . . .	135
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Feb. 10, 1665 . . . . .	172
_____ Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Nov. 4, 1667 . . . . .	225

# INDEX TO LETTERS.

xi

	Page
<b>The Prophet Muggleton to Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, May 25, 1668</b> . . .	286
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, June 14, 1669</b> . . .	286
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, August 30, 1669</b> . . .	292
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, Jan. 13, 1671</b> . . .	312
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, April 7, 1671</b> . . .	326
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, August 6, 1683</b> . . .	535
_____ <b>Sudbury, Mrs. Ellen, July 19, 1684</b> . . .	546
_____ <b>Scott, Mrs. Mary, Oct. 12, 1681</b> . . .	507
_____ <b>Sedley, Mr. William, Jan. 12, 1683</b> . . .	518
_____ <b>Scott, Mrs. Mary, July 19, 1683</b> . . .	531
_____ <b>Twisden, Sir Thomas, Jan. 6, 1663</b> . . .	98
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Dec. 9, 1664</b> . . .	164
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, March 27, 1665</b> . . .	180
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, May 26, 1668</b> . . .	238
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Sept. 21, 1668</b> . . .	274
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Dec. 14, 1668</b> . . .	276
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Jan. 31, 1669</b> . . .	279
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, June 19, 1669</b> . . .	288
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Sept. 6, 1669</b> . . .	296
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Oct. 4, 1669</b> . . .	300
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Dec. 4, 1669</b> . . .	301
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, March 20, 1670</b> . . .	304
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, April 25, 1670</b> . . .	307
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Dec. 7, 1670</b> . . .	308
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Oct. 16, 1672</b> . . .	362
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Jan. 19, 1673</b> . . .	363
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Feb. 16, 1673</b> . . .	373
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, Aug. 11, 1673</b> . . .	402
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, July 1, 1675</b> . . .	429
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, July 29, 1679</b> . . .	476
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mr. Thomas, July 24, 1680</b> . . .	479
_____ <b>Tompkinson, Mrs. Ann, July 10, 1684</b> . . .	544
_____ <b>Wylds Goodwife, William Young, and Thomas Martyn, of Kent, Aug. 27, 1663</b> . . .	121
_____ <b>Whitworth, Mr. Joseph, May 19, 1665</b> . . .	182
_____ <b>Whitehead, Mr. James, Dec. 31, 1679</b> . . .	447
_____ <b>West, Mrs. Sarah, Feb. 22, 1681</b> . . .	497



## INDEX TO LETTERS.

The Prophet Muggleton to Whitehead, Mr. James, August 30, 1681 . . . . .	502
_____ Wood, Mr. William, Sept. 26, 1681 . . . . .	504
_____ Whitehead, Mr. James, August 12, 1684 . . . . .	549
_____ Wheatley, Mrs. Elizabeth, Sept. 24, 1684 . . . . .	553
_____ Whitehead, Mrs. Priscilla, Sept. 25, 1685 . . . . .	580
_____ Whitehead, Mrs. Mary, June 1, 1686 . . . . .	582
_____ Whitehead, Mr. James, August 27, 1687 . . . . .	596
_____ Whitehead, Mrs. Mary, Nov. 17, 1687 . . . . .	601
_____ Yeels, Charles, Thomas Millerd, and John White, August 23, 1681 . . . . .	499

AN  
**EPISTLE**  
TO  
**THE RECORDER STEEL,**  
*OCTOBER 28, 1653.*

---

SIR,

YOU may remember at the Sessions in the Old Bailey, on October 14, and 15, we had a trial before your honour ; and, sir, you may remember we gave your honour notice before our trial, that you had no commission from God to be the judges of matters of faith concerning God ; for you must understand that all spiritual power wholly resides in God's person, or in the person of God, until his pleasure is to communicate it unto his creatures ; whose pleasure it was to make choice of us two only to be the judges of blasphemy against the Holy Spirit, because no man clearly knew the Lord until we were commissioned by voice of words from heaven, to declare what the true God is ; yet notwithstanding, your honour, with the jury, gave sentence against us as blasphemers, because we declared Jesus Christ to be the only God,

A

and everlasting Father ; and that there was no other God in heaven or in earth but the man Jesus only.

Sir, we must tell you, that we cannot break the civil law, but we are made examples in fulfilling of it to the whole world : wherefore whosoever tries us by the law of the land, it is allowed as if he tried his God by the civil law as the Jews did, because we cannot break your law, but fulfil it as aforesaid. Let your honour judge whether the sentence of eternal death upon our accusers be not just ; for we did them no wrong in word or in deed.

They came to our houses, and spake evil things they knew not, as most men do ; and we, in obedience to the commission of God, returned their blasphemy upon their own heads, which provoked them with a warrant to bring us before the lord mayor ; who, joining with our blasphemous persecutors, he came under the sentence of eternal death with them.

Is it not a marvellous thing, that you that are magistrates should want the spirit of discerning to judge between the law of the Scriptures, and the law of the land ? Do you not understand that the civil law instructs no man in the knowledge of God ; therefore you that are invested with authority from men to judge all manner of accounts concerning the breach of the civil law, you ought not to take upon you to judge prophets, who cannot desire to break your law : for, by the power of Him that sent us, we cannot wrong any man in his person or estate, although they would kill us ; yet amongst you there is sentence given against us to remain six months in prison, for declaring the Man Jesus to be the only God and everlasting Father ; which you think is blasphemy. Wherefore once more from the Lord Jesus, we forewarn you, before it be too late, forthwith to declare

unto us, the Lord's messengers, that you disown the verdict to be blasphemy that the jury brought in against us ; which if you disobey, then in obedience unto the commission of the Lord Jesus, with those gentlemen of the jury that are guilty of that unjust sentence, from the presence of the Lord Jesus Christ, elect men and angels, we pronounce you cursed and damned, soul and body, to all eternity.

JOHN REEVE, and  
LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*The Two last Witnesses and Prophets, and only Ministers of the everlasting Gospel, by Commission of the Holy Spirit of the Lord Jesus Christ, God alone, blessed to all Eternity.*

---

*A Letter presented unto Alderman Fouke, Lord Mayor of London, from the two Witnesses and Prisoners of Jesus Christ, in Newgate, as an eternal Witness unto him ; with a Declaration unto the Recorder Steel, and the Lord Chief Justice Rowles, with the whole Bench and Jury ; and in general, unto all Civil Magistrates and Juries in the World : John Reeve, and Lodowicke Muggleton, the two last spiritual Witnesses, and true Prophets, and only Ministers of the everlasting Gospel, by Commission from the Holy Spirit of the true God, the Lord Jesus Christ, God and Man, in one Person, blessed to all Eternity.*

BY virtue of our commission, received by voice of words, from the glorious mouth of the only true God

upon the throne of Glory, the Lord Jesus Christ, we shall make manifest unto men, what the foundation is of the power of the civil magistrate, and that he ought not to meddle with spiritual things, which God hath reserved himself, not allowing any man to touch them upon pain of eternal death, but those only by him anointed for that purpose : first, we declare that the Scriptures were given by inspiration of the Holy Spirit ; therefore, except the magistrates were inspired with the same spirit as those that speak the Scriptures, they ought not to judge any man by them, but ought rather to yield obedience themselves unto holy Writ, or they must perish to eternity. Again, we declare from the Holy Spirit, that since God became flesh, no civil magistrate hath any authority from above to be the judge of any man's faith, because it is a spiritual invisible gift from God, that gives a man assurance of everlasting life ; but the magistrate's authority is to judge the civil laws of the land, which is grounded only upon reason ; but the things of eternity are from God, who is from eternity to eternity, therefore faith is the evidence of things hoped for, and reason is judge of things that are visible : as for you that are skilful in the law of reason, as soon as you hear an action to be a breach of the law, you understand presently what punishment belongs to the fact ; therefore the Apostle saith, *The magistrate is the minister of God for good to them that do well, and a terror to the evil doer.* Again, we declare from the Lord, that no magistrate, by his power from the law of reason, ought to usurp the law of faith into his authority, because the law of reason is utterly ignorant of the law of faith, the one being carnal, and the other being spiritual ; therefore, what magistrate soever takes upon him to be

the judge of us, who are the messengers of faith in the true God, they are enemies to the Lord Jesus Christ, and shall surely perish to eternity. Again, from the Lord Jesus we forewarn you that are magistrates, before it is too late, that you tread not in the lord mayor's steps, presumptuously to take upon you to judge this commission of the two-edged sword of God put into our mouths, which, if you are left so to do, it will cut you in sunder from the presence of our God to all eternity; for our God is a consuming fire, who did pronounce us cursed to eternity, had we not obeyed his voice; therefore we perfectly know whoever is left, great or small, to speak evil of this commission, which God hath put unto us, by calling it blasphemy, delusion, a devil, or lie; in so doing, they have sinned against the Holy Ghost, and must perish, soul and body, from the presence of our God, elect men and angels, to all eternity; for God hath chosen us two only, and hath put the two-edged sword of the Spirit into our mouths, as before-said, that whom we are made to pronounce blessed, are blessed to eternity, and whom we are made to pronounce cursed, are cursed to eternity; and this power no mortal can take out of our hands, neither will our God any more give such power unto men whilst the world endures. Therefore, you that are judges of this earth, be wise and learned, and meddle with those things which you know in this world only, and call not your God to account at your bar; for whoever arraigneth a prophet at his judgment-seat, it is all one as arraigning his God, for a prophet cometh in the name and power of his God; therefore he that despiseth the prophet, despiseth him that sent him. Again, we declare from the Lord Jesus, if any magistrate pretends to be a preacher of the Gospel,

he having no commission from our God so to do ; if he preach any more after we forbid him, then we have full power to pronounce the sentence of eternal death upon him, and it is so unrevocable. Again, we declare from the Lord Jesus, that the cause why so many magistrates and ministers must suffer the vengeance of eternal death, is, because with one consent they fight against the true messengers of God, with the temporal law invested upon them by men. Again, woe would have been unto us, if we had come in our own name ; but we know that God sent us, as sure as he sent Moses, the prophets, and the apostles ; and that great authority, as to be judges of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, we only are invested withal : Wherefore, you magistrates that are not yet under this sentence of eternal death from the Lord Jesus, our counsel is, if you desire blessedness in the life to come, that you would not meddle to be the judges of spiritual things, knowing you have no commission from the Lord. Remember the counsel of Caiaphas, the high priest, if it be possible, and prevent the lord mayor's eternal curse.

*The Prophet Reeve's Epistle to his Friend, discovering  
the dark Light of the Quakers; written in the Year  
1654, September 20.*

*Loving Friend,*

CALLING to mind the letter thou readest to me, which was sent thee out of the country, I am moved to present these lines to the view of thy ponderous spirit; for as words of truth, flowing from a real foundation, drew forth humility and love to God and man, from that soul that hath received an hearing ear, so likewise thou mayest know the glittering words proceeding from man's carnal wisdom, is that which hath occasioned many men to be exalted above measure, and to imagine himself so essentially united to the Divine Glory, that at length that man hath been so bewitched through the adorations of men and women in deep darkness, with high conceits of his own spiritual wisdom, that he hath been willing to deny his creaturely condition, and to embrace the holy titles and honour of an infinite Creator. Yea, and to say in his heart and tongue also, that there is no spiritual God or personal glory in the least, but what is in man only, notwithstanding, as sure as the Lord Jesus liveth, both he and all that is in him must turn into silent death and dust for a moment; yea, and would so remain unto all eternity, if there were not a distinct personal Majesty living without man, to raise him again to everlasting sensible glory or shame, according to the royal plea-



sure of that God, that neither will nor can give his glory to another.

*My dear Friend,*

Be not deceived with men's crafty words, who have no true spiritual distinction in them ; for if any mortal man have dwelling in him the eternal Spirit, all the motions, thoughts, words and actions of that man must needs be as pure, holy and powerful as God himself, because thou knowest they proceed from a pure, holy, and glorious spirit. But, of the contrary, if thou perceivest a measure of light only abiding in thee, which thou in mercy hast received from an everlasting Jesus without thee, then thou often seest darkness in thee as well as light ; for light entered not into sinners to make them spiritual gods one over another, but shined into them to discover their natural enmity, continually warring against a God of eternal love towards them ; and not only so, but to prevent also their former darkness from tyrannizing in them for ever, yea, and to console their elect brethren by their spiritual experiences.

Wherefore, from a divine gift which I have freely received from an unerring Spirit, I say unto thee, that those men which labour to persuade their hearers, that if they diligently harken to the light that is in them, they may attain to such a power, as to be dead in this body from all kind of inward darkness, sin, or evil, have uttered the falsest doctrine that ever was declared to men. Moreover, if the light of life eternal be thy guide, thou must needs know then, it was neither the justifying light of Christ within man, no, nor the spirit of Christ without man, that moved those men to speak or write to the

people ; but it was their own lying imagination which hurried them about to beget proselytes to themselves in the man Christ Jesus's stead, who alone *is God over all, blessed for ever and ever.* Amen.

He that is born of God sinneth not ; that is, he is not left to his own heart, to commit the unpardonable sin of unbelief in the true God, in despising the spirit of Christ Jesus, to be the only Lord God of his salvation. *He that believeth shall be saved: but he that believeth not is condemned already ;* not because he hath not believed in a God, or Christ that is within him, but because he hath not believed in a personal God or Christ that is without him, whose Divine Majesty is crowned with such immortal, bright, burning glory, that if he did not veil his fiery nature within his own blessed body, the glory of it is so transcendently infinite, that he in a moment would consume all created beings to powder. He that committed that sin of calling God a liar, which is the sin of not believing in our Lord Jesus Christ as aforesaid, or he that maketh glorious pretences of unfeigned love to Christ and his tender-hearted people, and yet secretly lieth under the power of carnal filthiness ; such a man is not only of his father the devil, (cursed Cain) but he also is a very devil himself. *He that saith he hath no sin in him, is a liar, and the truth is not in him ;* that is, he that saith Christ is so powerfully risen in him, that all motions, thought and desire of sin against God or man, is perfectly done away, that man is an horrible liar, and a deadly enemy to all humble and broken hearted saints ; for their natural rebellious warring against the light within them, and the Lord of Glory without them. Oh ! my precious friend, for whom my soul spiritually travellet, till thou art firmly established with glorious things which

are eternal, not with empty notions proceeding from an imaginary God or Christ within men, only which with Syrenian songs is very pleasing to the carnal ear, which may delude some undiscerning spirits for a season, nor with pharisaical looks, sighs and groans, to be seen of men, which is nothing else but the effects of men's crafty words and gestures proceeding from man's fleshly wisdom, which is abominable in the sight of our God, who is the Lord Jesus Christ in the eternal heavens above the stars.

*My beloved Friend,*

Give me leave a little to reason with thee, about things of the greatest concernment: what excellent truths above other men hast thou heard from the chief speakers of the Quakers? didst thou ever hear them speak to the purpose? or speak at all of any God or Christ, but what is in man only? or didst thou ever hear them speak of a bodily glory and misery to come sensibly to be enjoyed by the saints in the highest heavens, and to be endured by the serpents in this world at the day of eternal accounts? or dost thou see the image or likeness of the true Jesus in that ministry? the true and living Jesus rejected not the company of publicans and sinners, even when his light appeared not in them; but on the contrary, do they not rashly condemn those men that soberly oppose them, and shun the company of those that are not of their opinion, as serpents; much like unto those hypocrites of old, who said, Stand farther off, for we are more holy than you. Moreover, in all their speakings and writings to the people, do they not make a grand idol of the word Light, and occasion men to worship

it as their only God ; as if mere words were to be adored without a person, or worshipped within the bodies of sinful man as a God : or as if those that enjoy true light in them, have such a measure of God in them, that they stand in no need of any God without them in the least.

*My dear Friend,*

Thou knowest men of unstable spirits, child-like or rather fool-like, are easily taken with every wind of doctrine ; but if thou hast a spirit of true discerning in thee, thou wilt be made thoroughly then to try the spirits and doctrines of men, whether they be of God or no, before thou embrace them ; having been in the fire of the devil already, I hope thou hast gained experience. Wherefore, for thy clearer sight concerning of the fallacy of all speakers, which say the Lord Jehovah, or Jesus, sent them, I shall give some discovering characters ; he that saith the everlasting spiritual God or Father became not a perfect man of unspotted flesh, blood, and bone, was never moved by the spirit of God or Christ, to preach or speak to the people ; or he that saith, that spirit which is dwelling in the glorious body of Christ Jesus, is not the alone everlasting Father, God and Man in one distinct person glorified, is none of Christ's messenger ; or he that saith God is not in the form of a man, but is an infinite spirit essentially abiding in all creatures, that man is a liar, and the truth is not in him ; or he that saith Christ's godhead died not in the flesh, and did not quicken and raise his manhood to life again, and in that body of flesh and bone, did not ascend into a kingdom of glory in another world, the deep things

of God is utterly hid from that man ; or he that saith all mankind proceeded from the loins of the first man Adam, is ignorant of the two Scripture seeds (namely) the seed of the woman, and the seed of the serpent, therefore he is none of Christ's sending ; or he that saith mens souls do not die with their bodies, and sleep together in the dust of the earth, till the Lord Jesus, by the mighty power of his word speaking only, do raise them unto life again at the last day, that man is in deep darkness, not knowing the Scriptures, or the power of God ; or he that says mens bodies only perish (and not the souls) will be saved at the last, that man is a liar, and the truth is not in him.

*Dear Friend,*

Thus far was I moved to write unto thee, as an eternal witness between us, when the secrets of all hearts shall be opened. If thou seest good, thou mayst present this epistle to the view of those men called Quakers ; not that I can expect a good issue from any of them, unless God hath endowed them with hearing ears, unjudging, meek and patient spirits.

Thine in all eternal excellencies,

**JOHN REEVE.**

*September 20, 1654.*

*An Epistle of John Reeve to Christopher Hill.*

IN the eternal true Jesus, my soul salutes you all : I have received your love-tokens, which is a vessel of cyder and a sixpence : my joy in the Lord is increased by your communion with each other. I trust to the praise of his glory, his light and love shall abound in you more and more, for the strengthening you in the inward man, and confounding all gainsayers in your outward conversations : neither I nor my wife are in perfect health ; especially my wife, who is very ill, and has been so about six weeks : so hoping of your welfare to his infinite grace, I commend you, and remain your friend and brother in Christ Jesus. Our elder brother.

JOHN REEVE.

P. S. Brother Christopher, if my mother comes up, pray tell her she need not trouble herself about any more goods at present, but a bolster and a little more covering for the bed ; and as for that you sent for, you shall have it next week, God willing.

---

*An Epistle of John Reeve to Christopher Hill, dated  
London, July 17, 1757.*

*Loving Friend in pure truth,*

I RECEIVED the six shillings and the hat, and the eighteen-pence you sent me as a token. I am not a little joyed for our brother Martyn's

likelihood of recovery, with your wife's safe delivery. But my chiefest rejoicing for you all is, your reality to the things you have received from our ever-loving Father, which is the living Jesus in a bodily form; this is a riddle to your elect brethren, even through the whole world, unless it be to a few. Oh! blessed are you that you are of that number, unto whom it is in some measure unfolded; for by this means you are delivered from all carnal bonds of outward forms, and are sate down in peace through inward enjoyments, which none can take from you.

Brother, I shall be careful in what your mother-in-law requireth. Thus not naming any more, but my tender love to all you that enjoys this truth, I commit you to the most High, and remain eternally yours in all righteousness,

JOHN REEVE.

P. S. My wife's kind love to you all.

---

*The Prophet Muggleton's Blessing to Mrs. Elizabeth Dickinson of Cambridge, dated August 28, 1658.*

*Dear Friend, in the eternal Truth, Elizabeth Dickinson; my Love remembered unto you and your Husband, as being in the same Faith also.*

I AM very well persuaded of your eternal happiness, and I would willingly say unto you, as our Lord did in another case to the woman that was troubled with a bloody issue, who said within herself, that if she could but touch his garment, she should

be made whole ; and according to her faith it was unto her, for she felt in herself that she was healing of her plague, and not only so, but she had assurance of everlasting life, which was far beyond the health of her body. Which faith of hers did draw virtue out of our Lord, which made him to say, that virtue was gone out of him ; and he looked round about to see her that had done this thing, *and he said unto her, daughter, thy faith has made thee whole, go in peace, and be whole of thy plague* ; as if our Lord should say it was her own faith that did fetch virtue out of him, and it was her own faith that did heal herself ; as if he had no hand in the thing, he was but the object of her faith ; it was her faith that did draw that from the object ; and so it is with you, John Reeve and myself, the chosen Witnesses of the Spirit, we having the commission and burden of the Lord upon us. We are made the object of your faith, and as your faith is strong in this commission of the Spirit, so shall the virtue flow from it to your eternal rest and peace, so that you shall be perfectly whole as to the relation to the fears of eternal death, as that woman was in her body of the bloody issue ; and your faith being in me, as the object in relation to the commission of the Spirit, it is your faith will make you whole ; for my faith is in you concerning your eternal happiness. Let yours be in me, and you shall fare no worse than I do ; for you shall have the end of your faith, even the salvation of your soul, as well as I ; and that you may be sure, I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord to all eternity. But as for those fears that do arise in you from the weakness of your nature, or from a distemper in nature, I cannot promise you deliverance from it, but it is very probable that the assurance of eternal life will mitigate



and weaken the other. I thought good to write these few lines unto you for farther confirmation of your eternal happiness after death.

No more at present, but rest your faithful friend and true prophet of the Lord,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*An Epistle from the Prophet Muggleton to Christopher Hill, dated January 2, 1660. This concerning Claxton to be given with Care to his loving Friend, Christopher Hill, at Maidstone in Kent.*

*Loving Brother, Christopher Hill, in the Spirit of this Commission, and to all the rest of the Believers of this Commission at Maidstone in Kent, I send greeting.*

I WOULD have you to seriously mind and consider these lines as follows.

There hath of late days happened a great deal of difference between some of the believers of this commission here in London, and Lawrence Claxton; whereby the believers have complained to me, that Lawrence Claxton hath carried himself so proud and lord-like over others that have been of a lower comprehension than himself; likewise he hath been so full of filthy covetous avarice, which hath not had so much as the very colour or show of natural righteousness in it. So I, taking these things into consideration, did send my daughter to tell him, that if he did exercise his spiritual pride any more, that I would

take away his commission from him ; which he at the first did seem very scornful at, as if he could stand by virtue of John Reeve's words without me, as did afterwards appear ; but yet concerning my daughter's words concerning my authority, he did seem hypocritically to submit, and to acknowledge himself to be but a servant unto me, and unto the believers of this commission. But it hath appeared since to be otherwise, and that there was a cursed pride that lay in his heart ; and for that purpose he hath written a book, called *The lost Sheep found* ; where in the latter part of that book, he hath proudly exalted himself in John Reeve's place ; for he hath quite excluded me out of the commission ; so that there is none now but John Reeve and he that hath the spiritual commission ; therefore you shall find in that book, and more especially in the epistle of that book : whereas he doth call it very often our commission ; so there is no true confidence, as he says, but in our commission : his meaning is John Reeve and himself, for he hath quite excluded me, and hath gotten himself into John Reeve's chair and place ; therefore I would have you seriously to mind and peruse that part of the book which doth treat upon the commission. For I suppose you have the books sent unto you, as well as others have ; there you shall find a great deal of spiritual pride assuming to himself those high titles which never did belong to him, neither did John Reeve, nor I, ever give to him ; which books of his, with other words and passages that hath happened of late, hath made an everlasting difference between us two in this world ; therefore I would have you, and all the believers of this commission, to understand, that I have utterly disowned that part of the book, that doth treat of the commission ; and for that pur-

pose I did send my daughter to burn some of them before his face.

Likewise I have utterly disowned Lawrence Claxton, for ever being a messenger or bishop, or servant any more unto this commission. Neither shall I own any thing that he shall say or do in reference to this commission. Therefore I do exhort you, and all the rest of the believers, not to stumble or stagger in your faith concerning Claxton, as if your happiness of eternal life did depend upon believing of him to be a messenger or a bishop; for though he should be cut off to eternity, yet is the foundation of God sure and true; that is the commission of God, as it was given to John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, by voice of words from God; but as for Claxton, he had his commission from man; therefore man can take it away again; for he hath stood all this while but by my assistance, and at my will and pleasure. Therefore as long as he kept himself in obedience as a servant unto this commission, he had my authority and assistance on his side also.

I did bear with many infirmities of his nature, but this spiritual pride of his hath been much like unto the lost angel, which thought himself as fit to rule and govern as his Maker was; nay, more fit, and therefore he would have been in God's room and place, that he might have governed the holy angels. So likewise this Lawrence Claxton, not thinking it enough to be saved by this commission, or to be a bare messenger or servant to it, but hath, angel-like, aspired so high as to get into John Reeve's chair or place, and so he is now become the chief commissioner, which is far above a servant or messenger; therefore he doth very often in that book call it our commission, as if John Reeve and he were the only

commissioners, and that I, which God gave to be John Reeve's mouth, is quite thrust out, so that I am made but a fellow-labourer with him in this commission.

But Lawrence Claxton shall know that there is yet a prophet in Israel that hath power over him. For as John Reeve was like unto Elijah, so am I as Elisha, and that his place was but as Gehazi, and could stand no longer than my will and pleasure was, because the burden of the Lord lyeth wholly upon me, which is the commission of the Lord.

Therefore my counsel and advice to you all of this faith is, that you would stand stedfast in your faith unto the doctrine of the true God, which hath been delivered unto you by John Reeve and myself, and that we two are the last Prophets and Witnesses unto the true God the Man Christ Jesus.

Again, my counsel and advice unto you, and the rest of the believers there about you is, that you would allow Lawrence Claxton no more maintenance weekly as you have done formerly; but let him betake himself to some employment in the world, as well as the rest of the believers do; for I do not see it fit that he and the serpent his wife should be maintained in idleness and pride; for there is no more use for him in this commission; therefore to what purpose should you allow him any maintenance, which is made lower than yourselves in this commission. For I have utterly disowned him upon any such an account, as to be a messenger or bishop, or servant any more unto this commission. For I shall not own whatsoever he shall write or speak concerning this commission any more; for it will be well if he have so much faith in this commission as will save his own soul. Therefore I should rather advise you to pre-

serve some part of that which you did allow Claxton weekly towards the re-printing of that book of ours which hath the dark print, and towards the printing of the 11th of the *Revelations*, for I shall make as much haste of it as I can; because, I suppose, that this will be the last that ever will be set forth by this spiritual commission: for I cannot conceive that there can, or need be any more spoken concerning this spiritual commission, than hath been related in all our writings, and will now be in this of the 11th of the *Revelations*.

I speak this, because there is very few left of the dark print; for there hath been more enquiring after them of late than formerly, because that book hath the most highest and heavenly mysteries contained in it, but that the print is so bad, that it doth make every one almost weary of reading it.

Therefore my judgment is, that it would be better work, and more glory to God, and honour to this commission, to give something weekly, for or towards the printing of that book again; and let Claxton shift in the world as others have done before him; for you are not bound now I have disowned him, not to look no more upon him than you are to look upon the weakest believers of this commission; no, nor so much neither.

Therefore let not your thoughts be troubled concerning Claxton; for most part of you did believe the commission before Claxton came, and will do after he is gone; therefore as he came to this commission by man, therefore by man is his commission taken from him again; and so your burden, which he hath laid upon you, may be taken off you.

I would desire you to read this letter to all the believers of this commission there about you, though

some of them are unknown to me, with my love to yourself and mother Wylde, and Martyn the thatcher, and Martyn the tanner, and his wife, and his daughter, and all the rest that have a love to this commission. I desire you to let me hear from you as soon as you can conveniently.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*The last true Prophet and Witness unto the true God,  
the Man Christ Jesus.*

P. S. You may send to me in Great Trinity-lane, next door to the sign of the Black-Boy and Hand, London, Jan. 2, 1660.

---

*An Epistle of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's to  
Christopher Hill, &c.*

*To his Loving Friend, Christopher Hill, and to all the rest that  
love this Commission, or that are in the Faith of it.*

*February 5, 1660.*

I RECEIVED your letter, being dated Jan. 20, but I having other occasions of late than ordinary, so that I could not send you an answer; because, since I have disowned Lawrence Claxton, there hath been more resorting unto me than formerly; for there hath been some strangers that seemeth to have great affection to the doctrine of this commission, and some of them have some things of this world considerably, which hath promised me to be some assistance unto me in the re-printing of the dark printed book again;

which hath encouraged me to go on with it ; therefore I have almost prepared it for the press ; which, if the printer have but a care to do it according to the directions which is given him, it will be a most excellent piece of work ; for there is the most deepest mysteries contained in it as ever was penned by man these thirteen hundred years, or ever will be again ; therefore there is much looking after them now a late, but there is never a one to be had but that which I must print the others by. I hope it will be ordered so, that it will be very delightful to read, so that people may the more clearly understand those deep mysteries contained in it ; but as for that which I am about, will not be ready for the press yet a while, though I have almost gone through the heads of the chapters. Yet I must write it again before it is fit for the press, which will take a great deal of time, which I cannot spare as yet, because this dark print will take up some time in the correcting of it fit for the press, and the looking to it when the printer is a doing it, that it may not be spoiled as it was before. I do intend to put it into the press in a fortnight or three weeks at the farthest ; therefore I desire you, that have faith in it, if you can, to raise forty or fifty shillings towards it in three weeks or a month ; but if you cannot do so much, let it be what you can ; only let me hear before, and then I shall order things otherwise here in London, &c. I do find in your letter as if your hearts were troubled because of your meetings being put down, and the oaths to be imposed upon you. But as for your meetings being put down, what need you care ? Cannot you live by your own faith for a time, without meeting together on those days called Sundays ? Cannot you see and talk with one another as you see occasion on the

week or working-days, for what you suffer upon any such account, when as this commission layeth no such bond upon you, but rather to the contrary; for as long as the powers of the nation doth forbid you to go to any meetings, do you obey them, and keep all at home; but if the powers of the nation doth command you to go to church to their public worship, then I say you are to suffer what penalty the powers of the nation will lay upon you, rather than to worship in the house of Baal. For this worship of the Spirit, which is now, hath no visible forms of worship at all belonging to it, neither is there any necessity for any public meetings at all. So that as for your meetings being put down, there is no cause of trouble or sorrow at all, but rather a cause of joy. But the oaths which will be imposed upon you, may cause matter of trouble upon your spirits, because I cannot say that any believer of this commission can, with safety and peace to his own conscience, take any of them; both because if you take an oath of allegiance, which doth seem to be the most easiest oath, yet there you are bound, if needs be, to fight for the present power, or else you must break your oath; so that there is great inconveniency in taking that oath to a tender conscience.

And as for the oath of supremacy, it cannot be understood by those that have faith in the true God, that the king is the supreme head of the church of God, or that he is their defender of their faith; for the powers of the nation if they did know of it, they would rather, instead of defending and upholding it, overthrow and destroy it; but those that are of the same faith of the church of England, the king is the supreme head of that church, and the defender of their faith. Therefore those people that are of the



faith of the church of England, Scotland, and Ireland, what need they to scruple the taking of the oath of supremacy, seeing they are of the same church as the powers of the nation is of, as aforesaid. But this oath was especially intended and made for the Papists in Queen Elizabeth's time and days, but now it is laid as a snare upon all the free-born people of England, that they might find out all those whose consciences are tender, which dare not swear at all, as there are many here in London that will not swear at all; but I confess that you that live in the country are to be pitied more upon that account than we that are here in the city; because here a man may go in a crowd and never be missed; but in the country there is no place for a man to hide his head, but they will find him out. So that my advice to you is, that you would take no oaths at all, not that hath relation to fighting or unto public worship: for how can you fight for to defend the king, when as you are not to defend yourselves, but rather to suffer what the present powers doth lay upon you; only this, I would advise you to pay according to your abilities, what taxes soever the powers of the nation doth lay upon you, whether it be by way of tithes or any other taxes whatsoever, so that *Cæsar may have the things that are Cæsar's, and God the things that are God's*; therefore I shall give you an example of some of the Quakers here in London concerning this thing.

There was in the time of the late troubles, concerning those fifty monarchy-men, search made into every house, which was suspected for arms, whereby they took many of the Baptists and of the Quakers upon suspicion; upon which the Quakers were carried before a justice, which justice proposed the oath unto them: one of the Quakers answered, saying,

“ We cannot swear to defend the king, for we cannot  
 “ defend ourselves, much less to fight to defend ano-  
 “ ther ; but this, said he, we are willing to do, to pay  
 “ what taxes the king shall lay upon us to the utmost  
 “ of our abilities ; and if the king will take those  
 “ goods we have, he shall freely have them, for to  
 “ swear for him we cannot do it.” The justice being  
 so convinced at their sincerity in that thing, sent them  
 away without taking any oath at all, and bid them  
 go home to their own houses in peace ; but on the  
 next Sunday following, these same men would needs  
 go to their meeting again, notwithstanding the pro-  
 clamations of the king was against all private meet-  
 ings, yet their zeal was so great, or else wilful, that  
 they could not live by that light within them ; but  
 must needs meet together, contrary to the king’s  
 proclamation ; and so the same men were taken at  
 their private meeting, and carried to Newgate, and  
 there they remain to this day ; so that now their  
 sufferings is rather for evil-doing, than for well-  
 doing : seeing they are not required to meet together  
 on the Sabbath-day, neither by God nor man. No  
 more at present concerning these things aforesaid, but  
 exhorting you to hold stedfast in the faith of this  
 commission unto the death, that you may receive  
 that crown of eternal glory which is set before you,  
 which is the knowledge of the true God, and the right  
 devil, which hath not been so clearly manifested since  
 the world began, as it hath been in this spiritual and  
 last witnesses of the Spirit.

No more at present, but I rest your brother in the  
 true faith of the true God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

P. S. We are all well in London, and there is none

of the faith here that I know of that have had the oaths propounded to them as yet, I suppose because the number is few. Your Brother Andrew is well, but as for your brother Ralph, I have not seen him ever since he came from you out of the country. I pray let me hear from you as soon as you can conveniently concerning that business in the beginning of the letter.

*London, February 5, 1660.* Give this with care.

---

*An Epistle of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Christopher Hill, Feb. 25, 1660.*

*Brother Christopher, and all the rest of the Faith in Kent,*

I RESERVED your letter, and am glad to hear that you are so well satisfied in your minds concerning the oaths, and the other things therein contained. But as for the money I made mention, that cannot be raised, only twenty shillings you say will be raised, with their names that doth give it. I am very well satisfied with that, for I am very loath to be so much burthensome unto those of the faith in the country, therefore I shall press the more upon some here in London, because it will arise to a great deal of money more for the printing than I thought it would; but I suppose I shall raise friends that will enable me, and I suppose about twelve days hence the printer will begin to put it into the press, therefore you may send the twenty shillings according as you have expressed in your letter.

Also I understand by your letters, that Lawrence Claxton hath sent you a letter, wherein he doth declare, that he is the same in Revelation as he ever was, and thinks by pen it cannot be declared what the difference was ; but when he shall see your faces, he shall make appear what the differences is : he did send a letter into Cambridgeshire, which was much to the same purpose as yours was, only there was some expressions in it, which expressions are such like as these. Those unheard transactions concerning him, which he could not express, but when he did see their faces he would open the difference more clearer unto them.

Therefore I would have you observe and consider that his pen and his tongue together, could set forth his spiritual pride and lordliness, with some other practices which hath made this great difference, but his pen is not able, nor his tongue neither, to be humble in his mind, and to see his spiritual pride and filthy covetous avarice, for if he could, his pen might as easily declare what the ground and cause of all this difference is as well and better, than when he shall see your faces ; but he doth think by his goodly words and presence, as being the same in Revelation as ever he was, to overpower your spirits, that you might think that the difference between him and I, but that it might easily be reconciled. Likewise your desire is, that I would send you word whether you may relieve him as a believer or no: My answer is this, that you may not relieve him, neither as a messenger nor as a believer of this commission, because he is an excommunicated person of the commissioner himself, and is separated from having any union with me in spiritual matters. Therefore you that are believers in or of this commission, ought

not to have any society with him in spiritual matters : let his pretence of revelation be ever so much, you are not to mind him nor regard it, for it is nothing worth unto you, for what the commissioner doth not own, you are not to have any regard unto it.

Therefore let not his pretences of being the same in revelation, nor his goodly words be any way a means to trouble your spirits about it ; for he is cast out of heaven, even as the angel was from the presence of God and the holy angel into this earth ; so even is Claxton cast out of heaven ; that is, from having any communion with the prophet or commissioner of the Spirit, or with those believers of the Spirit, so that as the angels was cast out, not only from the presence of God, but also from the presence of the holy angels ; so likewise he is not only cast out from the presence of the prophet, but from the presence of the believers also, and as the angel was cast into the earth, so likewise is he cast into the world, and let the world relieve him, for that is large enough, and as for his revelation, if he hath so much in himself as will bear up his own soul into eternal happiness it is well, but nobody else will be ever a whit the better for it ; for I would not have you so ignorant as to think, that after a man is excommunicated or cast out of this commission, though his understanding be greater, and his language more glorious than in any one of the same faith, yet he that hath the least knowledge in a commission is to be minded and respected of all those of the same faith.

But on the contrary, if a man have never such great parts, if he be disowned or cast out by the commissioner, the believers are bound to disown him out of their society, and not to relieve him as a

believer of this commission ; only this I shall give the liberty to do, that if he comes amongst you, you may eat or drink with him, or give him lodging as you would unto a stranger, but not to mind any of his sayings with reference to his being a believer, or to what I have done concerning him : I say in these things you are not to mind him nor regard what he shall say or do of that nature.

No more at present, but expecting to hear from you as soon as you can, I rest your Brother, in the true faith of Jesus, the only true God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, February 25, 1660.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to pull down the high Exaltation of Lawrence Claxton. Dated from London, December, 25, 1660.*

*Lawrence Claxton,*

I HAVING seriously considered your many foul, proud and covetous actions since you came to the belief of this commission, but more especially of late, since you have been allowed some means from the believers of this commission, which have made you so lord-like, that you are grown so spiritually proud, so that now you are gotten, in your own conceit, to be the chief man in this spiritual commission ;

so that your pride hath grown by degrees so high until you have gotten to sit in John Reeve's chair and place, so that you are got up as high as you can ; therefore it is high time for you to fall.

Therefore, seeing that occasion and offences will come, that the secrets of the heart may be made manifest, therefore I do see a great providence in that business of mason's wife, for that hath been an occasion to bring forth those differences which have been among the believers of this commission : likewise it hath been a means to insearch the bottom of your heart ; for ever since the beginning of this difference, after that you did understand that your commission was like to be taken away from you, you have strove with all your might, both with saint and devil, for to uphold your authority without me ; therefore you have made use of your beloved Frances and Ananias, and, Saphira-like, you have consulted with that venomous serpent your wife, and have made her your council in all spiritual matters, and that I did perceive by the serpent your wife, in that she did show Mr. Hatter and Mr. Hudson, that place of Scripture concerning Moses and Miriam, which I know she could not do of herself, except she had heard your judgment of it, which conceit of yours on that place could do you little good, only this your judgment on that Scripture, with your continual consultation with the devil your wife, hath enraged your wife so far as to vaunt herself against the believers of this commission, and against me ; for which I do pronounce your wife cursed and damned to eternity, though she hath been damned by John Reeve already, therefore I have set to my seal, that John Reeve's damnation shall be true upon her.

As for yourself, because you have strove to main-

tain your authority without me, and for that purpose you have written this book, wherein you have quite excluded me, and have made the commission only John Reeve's and yours, for your writings do shew forth the very pride of your heart ; therefore I do declare against that book, and against you, that I do renounce and disown you upon any such account, as to be a messenger, bishop, or a servant, any more to this commission ; neither shall you write any more, or speak any more in the behalf of this commission, for I shall utterly disown whatever you do or say of that nature ; neither shall the believers of this commission allow you any maintenance, neither in Cambridgeshire nor Kent, upon any such account, as looking upon you to be a messenger ; for you shall become as one of the least of believers of the commission, and you shall become a reproach to saint and devil, which shame and reproach shall strike as a loathsome leprosy unto you during your life ; for you shall never come to any honour of this commission any more, for you have had your last that ever you shall have in this world, because you shall know that you have kicked your heel against your master, and that there is a prophet yet in Israel, and hath power over you ; notwithstanding you have made yourself equal with John Reeve, you shall know that John Reeve was as Elijah, and that I am in the place of Elisha, and that you are in the place of Gehazi. This is my resolution.

Written by Lodowicke Muggleton, the last true Prophet and Witness unto the true God, the Man Christ Jesus in glory.

*December 25, 1660.*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**



*A Copy of a Letter, written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to his loving Friend Christopher Hill, at Maidstone, in Kent, Jan. 2, 1661.*

Give this with Care.

*Loving Friend, Christopher Hill,*

MY love remembered unto you and to all the rest of the believers of the commission of the Spirit there with you.

These are to let you understand, that I received your letter, dated November the 29th, 1661, with your kind token; and the eighteen shillings in money; and it came very seasonable, because I have been at more expence of late than ordinary; for my daughter Sarah hath been sick of the yellow jaundice ever since, and doth remain so still, which was the cause I did return no answer all this while; because her death hath been much feared by some in London, and there is no certainty yet that she will escape, though she is not so extreme sick as she was.

Also, there hath been another trouble upon me to add unto the other, which is this; I being a long liver in the parish, it fell to my lot to be chosen scavenger, and I must either hold or fine; and if I should have held I might have lost nothing, but I should have been entangled with oaths; therefore I rather chose to pay down the fine, which was twenty shillings, before the parish would choose another in my room.

Now I shall write a few lines concerning some particular things in your letter.

The first thing is concerning some that do profess an acknowledgment of this commission, but do not live the life of it; because they go to publick meetings, which indeed cannot stand with true faith in a commission. For, look what laws a commission doth set up are to be observed by the believers of it; and the laws of this commission of the Spirit are spiritual, and do worship God in spirit and truth, without any visible forms of worship, as the worshippers of Baal have; for though there was an outward, visible form of worship set up by Moses and the Apostles, and they were to be observed in their times and places, because they had commissions from God so to do; and the believers in their commissions were happy in yielding obedience unto them: but when public worship is set up by men, without a commission from God, it becomes a will-worship and idolatry, a thing which is an abomination unto the Lord. Therefore, whosoever shall make a show, or a profession of faith in this commission of the Spirit, and yet go to worship with the idolaters of the nation, I shall not look upon any such person to have any true faith in the true God, nor in this commission of the Spirit; neither can they have any true peace, nor the assurance of everlasting life; for he that will not deny himself and take up his cross for truth's sake is not worthy of it: and I am sure, there is as little suffering by the believers of this commission for their faith sake, as ever there was of the other two commissions.

Again, this commission of the Spirit doth lay as little, and less bonds upon the believers of it than any of the other two above mentioned did; for this

commission requires nothing but faith in the heart, which works by love, without any outward ordinances of visible worship, which is a great burthen to bear to those that are under them.

It would ask a whole sheet of paper to clear this thing; but I suppose, that they which are truly enlightened in the power of the three several commissions, may understand and be satisfied in what I have said in this letter; and in those books of ours that you have amongst you, concerning the worship that doth belong unto the three several commissions, they all of them differing one from the other, neither is the one bound to observe the other; but every commission, and the worship belonging to it, is to be observed by the believers of it, in its time and place, when it is in being, and not when it is out of date.

The other thing, which is of concernment in your letter, is, that you have a monthly contribution, and your desire is to have my judgment in it, which is very pleasing unto me, and I do like it very well, it being a good work, and I am glad that you are so free amongst yourselves; because it was always against my nature and spirit to lay any engagement and burthen upon the believers of this commission, neither shall I: but in regard you are free to lay it on yourselves, it being sure a good work, I do freely give you my consent unto it; therefore do as your own freedom gives you leave and prosper. So resteth your friend in the true faith.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, Jan. 2, 1661.*

My kind love remembered unto yourself and all the true believers in those parts in general, as if it were in particular to every person.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, near Chesterfield, bearing date February 13, 1660.*

*Loving Friend,*

THOUGH unknown to me in the natural or visible sight of the body, yet by that invisible discerning which I have of your spirit by those few words which you have made mention of in your letter, wherein I find that the spirit of truth hath blown upon your heart, in that it hath made you willing for to seek and to enquire after the knowledge of these two witnesses. Therefore I shall give you a word or two to inform you who these two witnesses are, and in some measure how their testimony is received : therefore I would have you to mind and observe these lines as followeth.

That as there are three that bear record in Heaven, *The father, the word and the spirit ; and these three are one, that is, these three are one distinct person in the form of a man ; so likewise there is three that doth bear witness on earth, namely, the spirit, water and blood, and these three do agree in one.* Now observe, those three upon earth, are these three commissions which should be acted forth upon the stage of this world. Which three commissions are these.

*First.* The commission of Moses and the prophets.

*Secondly.* The commission of Christ and the apostles.

*Thirdly.* The commission of the Holy Spirit, which commission of the Spirit is now extant in the world at this day, and hath been here in England these nine years, and the sound of it hath gone through many parts of Christendom, as in this part of England, Scotland, Ireland, New England, Virginia, Barbadoes, and many other places, I will not here mention; but the doctrine of the commission of the Spirit hath been very little received in the world; but the most that hath received it, is here in London, and in Cambridge-shire, and in Kent.

In these three places there is a few that is very well grounded in the belief of this spiritual commission; but one cause why there is so few that doth receive it, is because there is no visible forms of worship belonging to this spiritual commission, but doth altogether consist of the knowledge of the true God and the right devil, with the place and nature of Heaven and Hell, with the forms and nature of angels and the mortality of the soul.

And upon these six principles in the knowledge of them dependeth all the eternal happiness of man.

Therefore because it will be too tedious to write all these things, I have sent you a book; these books that were written by these two witnesses; they are bound up together, and they will inform you who those wo witnesses are, with their names, and the

voice of God that spake to them, and their messages, with their doctrine, which they should set forth with many deep mysteries which is hard to be understood.

Likewise I have sent you some books of his which he hath written in behalf of this commission ; and as for the names of those two prophets, you will find them in the books, and the place where they live ; only one of them, since the book of the Mortality of the Soul was written, is dead ; namely, John Reeve, but Lodowicke Muggleton is yet living in Great Trinity-lane, over against one Mills's, a Brown Baker.

There is in that book, which is bound, all that was written by the two witnesses and prophets themselves ; and there is laid down in those writings the true grounds of all divinity, which doth consist in the knowledge of the true God, and the right devil, with the knowledge of the two seeds, is those two keys that doth open the gates both of Heaven and hell , and there is none now in this world, that hath the keys given unto them, but these two prophets and witnesses of the Spirit only.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*The last true Witness and Prophet unto the Man Christ Jesus, glorified.*

It was your lot to employ a man for to buy those books which hath been damned by the prophet's daughter, some eight or nine months since, for opposing of those books ; and the revelation of his commission ; therefore the man, remembering these books, and the sentence, will neither undertake to carry them, nor to lay down the money for them ; because he hath a prejudice both against the books and the persons that wrote them. Therefore I shall desire Mrs. Griffith for to take some course that these books may be conveyed to you, and let her give orders how they may be sent, and how the money may be conveyed to her again ; for then I shall desire Mrs. Griffith to set her name to the direction of this letter.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETQN.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter of Chesterfield, Feb. 16, 1661.*

*Friend Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date February 3, 1661, wherein I perceive you have received some books, and a letter from me, whereby you have received some refreshment of heart, and so understand in some measure those great and high mysteries contained in them; and having one daughter which is partaker with you in the faith of this commission of the Spirit, which I am very glad to hear of, desiring that your faith and hers may grow to perfection here, and to eternal glory hereafter: and I have so much the more hopes of it because there is so few of you, because truth hath but few of its side, nor never had, because the world is given unto reason, the devil's hands, he being the elder brother: but faith the younger brother, his kingdom, is an everlasting kingdom; but a strait and narrow gate or way that leadeth to life eternal; for there is but one truth, the way, and the life; and there is no finding this way without a guide; and there can be no true guide except he knoweth the way himself; and none can know the way to life eternal, but he that hath a commission from God: he knowing the deep mysteries of the true God, and the right devil, doth shew them to the seed of faith, by declaring by word and pen, that strait and narrow way that leadeth unto life, which very few do find, because there is but few ambassadors and shepherds chosen of God; that is, one prophet at a time, one Jesus, one



Peter that had the keys of heaven and hell ; and now in this commission of the Spirit but two chosen witnesses of the Spirit, and one of them is not ; so that I am as Elijah said in another case, *I am left alone, neither will there be any more sent of God after me while the world endures.* And as for these persecuting times, they are nothing in comparison of what hath been suffered by the believers of the other two commissions ; nay people hath and doth suffer great things for a lie, even to whipping, imprisonment, banishment, and death itself, for a lie : but the believers of this commission are loath to part with a little money, but will rather worship Baal than to pay such a tax as the powers of the nation doth lay upon them, for such a neglect of going to the public meetings ; for I cannot advise any one that hath true light in them, to darken that, by going to worship a false God ; for no man can serve two masters, neither can a man worship God and Baal : for if God be to be worshipped in spirit and truth, then let not the same man worship the devil with falsities and a lie ; for whosoever doth so, will darken their own light ; and so lose the peace of their own minds, and the assurance of their eternal happiness, for to save themselves a little in this world. And as for the book of the *interpretation of the eleventh of the Revelations*, I have finished it, and prepared it ready for the press, supposing it will be the last that will be set forth by this commission of the Spirit, and finding such great difficulties to get it printed, the times being changed, and the great charge that must be laid out upon it, I was minded to lay it aside for a time, to see if there should be any alteration in church government. But there is some here in London, and elsewhere in the countries, which have a great desire to have it out

now, but it will cost so much money that, it will hardly be raised; for the printing of the Divine Looking Glass did cast me much behind hand, and this will cost more, because the times are so troublesome concerning printing, that I have much ado to persuade the printer to do it at all, being not licensed: yet he printing the Divine Looking Glass, and the Mortality of the Soul, and other books, in relation to this commission of the Spirit, he is willing to undertake to do it, but not without extraordinary gain, more than he had for the Divine Looking Glass.

Therefore, I would desire you or any other of your acquaintance, that have any affections unto truth, if they have any freedom in themselves, to contribute something towards the printing of it, what they are made free to do: I should not lay a burthen upon any if I had it of myself.

The printer will have ten pounds when he hath finished it, and ten pounds he will have down, besides other charges upon it: he doth intend to set about a matter of twelve day hence, and doth intend to finish it by Easter. I would be glad to hear from you before that time, if you can with conveniency; also, I do intend to see you sometime this summer. I shall give you notice when I do intend to come: but I would willingly have this book out first.

No more at present, but my love remembered unto yourself, your daughter, and Edward Frewterill.

Your Friend, in the true Faith of  
Jesus, the only Wise God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

My daughter remembers her love to you, and to Edward Frewterill, being glad to hear of your love to truth.

*An Epistle of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's to  
Mrs. Ellen Sudbury. Feb. 17, 1661.*

*Friend in the true faith, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, but no date unto it ; but for the substance of it doth favour of true light, which doth arise from the seed of faith in you, in receiving the declaration of this commission of the Spirit, which is as light set upon a hill, or in a candlestick, to give light unto all in the house, and not to be put under a bushel.

For every commissioned man is the candle of the Lord, which gives light unto the whole house ; which house is the seed of faith, as it was said by Moses, *That he was faithful in all his house* : that is, he was faithful in all his commission, which was of the law, he being the candle of the law, to enlighten the seed of reason in the outward letter of the law. And this commission of the Spirit is the candle of the Lord to enlighten the seed of faith in the spiritual understanding of the Scriptures, which doth consist but upon six principles : As to know the true God, his form and nature, the right devil, his form and nature, the place and nature of heaven, and the place and nature of hell, the persons and nature of angels, and the mortality of the soul.

Upon the knowledge of these six principles dependeth the eternal happiness of man ; neither can any man come to the knowledge of them but by this commission of the Spirit, which is the candle of

the Lord, to light the seed of faith, the way to eternal blessedness. And though I have named six principles, yet whosoever doth but understand two, namely, the true God, and the right devil; upon these two dependeth the other four, with many deep mysteries, which will flow from the knowledge of these principles aforesaid.

And as for your emptiness and weakness, in respect of what you have formerly had, I am very glad of it; there is the more room for truth, to fill your heart up with faith and experience in the heavenly mysteries, which is declared by the witnessings of the Spirit; for many thousands are so full of their own righteousness, and of talk upon the letter of the Scriptures, that there is no room for truth to enter into their hearts. These now, in this commission, are in the same condition as those were in Christ's time, which had eyes, but did not see, and had ears, but did not hear, and had hearts but did not understand. And the cause was, and is still, men and women being so full of their own righteousness, which is of the law, that there is no room in their hearts for truth, which is the righteousness of faith, to have any entrance into them.

But the thing, which is of the greatest weight in your letter is, concerning the sin against the Holy Ghost; which hath lain heavy upon you, you fearing you had committed it by questioning the truth of the Scriptures, and Christ to be the true God.

I would have you to take notice of this, that none can commit the sin against the Holy Ghost, but that man or woman that hath despised prophecy. Now you cannot despise prophecy except you do oppose, vilify, and speak evil of that man that is sent of God, that hath the spirit of prophecy; for this I

would have you to know, that there can be no sinning against the Holy Ghost, but in the time of a commission ; for if a man be sent of God, he is sent by the Holy Ghost, and whosoever doth despise that man, that is sent of God, he despiseth him that sent him, and so he cometh to commit that unpardonable sin, which will never be forgiven him in this world, nor in the world to come : and this was committed in the days of Christ, and in the apostles commission, as you may know by these words of Christ to the Jews, when, as they said, *he cast out devils by Belzebub the prince of devils*. Here they called the holy Spirit of Jesus a devil, and this was that sin against the Holy Ghost. And so you may see in Acts, the apostles and Stephen amusing the rulers of the Jews, saying, *you always resist the Holy Ghost as your fathers did* ; and this resisting of the Holy Ghost was that unpardonable sin. And there have been more men and women that have sinned against the Holy Ghost within these ten years, than there hath those thirteen hundred and fifty years ; for I know of near upon a thousand that have sinned that sin, for which they have been damned to eternity ; for which we have given them the sentence of condemnation for no other sin, but for the sin against the Holy Ghost, in that they have despised the spirit of prophecy, because they had it not themselves ; for it is the nature of reason to despise prophesy, being convicted of its own wisdom or legal righteousness of the law. For this I do by infallible rule of faith in the Scriptures know, and by my own experience these ten years, that there hath been more religious persons, who had an outside righteousness, hath committed the sin against the Holy Ghost, for which they have been damned to eternity. I may safely say, almost forty

to one that hath had no righteousness in them at all ; for no man or woman can commit the sin against the Holy Ghost, but in the time of a commission, nor then except he doth despise that prophet, messenger or minister, which is sent of God for his doctrine, and in so doing he hath committed that unpardonable sin, which very few religious persons, that hath talked with me, or seen our writings, that hath escaped it.

*Loving Friend,*

I have now finished, I suppose, my last book of the interpretation of the eleventh of the Revelations, and have prepared it ready for the press: and there is many here in London, and elsewhere in the country, that have a great desire to have it out, but it will cost such a deal of money the printing, that it will be much ado to be raised ; for the printing of the Divine Looking-Glass did cast me much behind hand, and this will cost more, because the times are so troublesome concerning printing, that I have much ado to get it printed at all. But the printer knowing of me, I printing so much, concerning this commission, knowing that they are dispersed unto private persons, and not sold public in the stationer's shops, he is willing to undertake it with some more gain than formerly.

Therefore, if there be any of your acquaintance that hath any affection unto truth, if they have any freedom in themselves, to contribute something towards the printing of it ; what they are made free I shall not lay any burthen upon them no where : if I can get money enough to pay the printer one half down, he will set about it a matter of ten days

hence, and the other half must be paid when he hath done, which is supposed will be about Easter.

I shall desire to hear from you before that time, if you can: I do intend after this is out to see you this summer.

I have had a letter since I had yours, from your aunt Carter, and am glad to hear of her faith and confidence in the truth, and of the affection that is in her daughter unto truth. I do intend to send her an answer unto it.

No more at present, but rest your friend in the true faith of Jesus, the only God blessed for ever,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, Feb. 17, 1661.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to the Believers in Cambridgeshire, bearing Date from London, Aug. 9, 1661.*

*Brother Dickinson, and to all the rest of the Believers in Cambridgeshire,*

MY love remembered unto you and your wife, and unto all the rest of our friends there with you.

My writing unto you this time is to certify you, that my daughter is come well home, and I am informed by her, that you and other of the believers doth expect that I should come into those parts this Bartholomew-tide, because I did send a letter a great while ago somewhat to that purpose, because

then I did expect that my daughter would have come up to London long before that time ; but since she did not, my mind is altered as to that thing ; because I do not see it necessary, nor convenient to come this year, because my daughter having been there so long with you, hath set such a fire about the country, that will not be quenched in a fortnight or three weeks time, therefore not convenient that I should come suddenly after her.

Therefore my desire is, that you may be stedfast in your faith, and that will rectify and uphold you in the midst of all opinions, and be not fearful and unbelieving, that is, afraid of every reed that is shaken with the wind : for, consider your sufferings for your faith in these times cannot extend unto death, as it hath in other commissions.

And yet you see how the believers in other commissions have suffered the spoiling of their goods, and the passing through death itself, rather than shrink in their faith. And you see the martyrs, which had no foundation, but an infinite spirit ; yet, if they should have flinched from their faith, they would never have been able to have gone through those fiery trials as they did ; which faith of theirs did carry them through death itself with great joy ; for none can tell what the power of faith is until it be tried.

Now there is none of your trials that are the believers of this commission of the Spirit, that can reach so far as death, nor surely to any punishment on your bodies, only some charges, or perhaps imprisonment, which is not worth the naming, and who would sell faith and a good conscience, and the assurance of eternal life, for a mess of pottage ! which many a one at this day hath so done, and will do.

I perceive by my daughter, that your thoughts are



as if I should not have such affection to you as I had before, because our brother Burton is come away from you. I would have been glad if it had been so appointed, that he might have stayed with you yet; nevertheless my love and desire shall be nevertheless unto you, and shall come and see you as when he was there; for if he should have stayed there I should not have come this year, because of those things aforesaid, and the hinderance of that book that is now in hand. Therefore I shall desire, in the bonds of peace, that ye love one another, and bear with one another's weakness, so that the weakness be not absolute sin or wickedness; for you are but few, and have many enemies, therefore walk as children of the light, that you may know the end of your faith, which is a crown of eternal life; that you may receive the end of your faith, which God the righteous Judge, shall give unto all those whose faith doth hold out to the end in the belief of the true God, which hath been declared by this commission of the Spirit.

My love remembered unto Charles Cleve, Thomas Parke, and goodman Dovie, and the widow Adams, and her daughter Anne, and goodman Warrboys and Singleton, and his wife, and all the rest of the faith. And when your conveniency will serve, certify them concerning my not coming to see them this time.

No more at present, but rest your friend in the eternal truth, the last commissioner of the Spirit,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*August 9, 1661.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, bearing date November 28, 1661.*

*Friend,*

I HAVE received your letter, though unknown to you in the body ; yet I perceive by your letter, that light hath shined into your heart, by the declarations of this commission of the Spirit, which I desire may increase and grow in you, so that you may become wiser than your teachers, or that society which you have been formerly acquainted with, notwithstanding it is counted weakness and ignorance in you : yet, if your faith doth grow in the knowledge of the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit, your weakness will be stronger than their strength, and your ignorance will prove wiser than their wisdom ; because their wisdom, which counts your wisdom ignorance, is the wisdom of reason, which is the devil, and your wisdom is the wisdom of faith, which is the wisdom of God ; because it leads you to the knowledge of the true God and the right devil, with the knowledge of the place and nature of heaven, and the place and nature of hell, with the persons and nature of angels, and the mortality of the soul.

Upon the knowledge of these six principles dependeth the eternal happiness of man, in which Jacob Bemon was utterly ignorant ; yet he doth talk of a God, and a devil, and of angels ; but knows nothing of the person and nature of them. Yet his philosophical light was above all men that doth profess religion, until this commission of the Spirit came forth,

which hath brought Jacob Bemon's light, and many other high lights, down very low within these ten years, as you may read in our writings, if you have them all, and if you have them not all, send to me, and I will help you to them, and they will inform you further than I can by word or pen.

The books that were written by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, are these :

First, *A Transcendant Spiritual Treatise.*

Secondly, *An Epistle to the Ministers.*

Thirdly, *A Letter to the Lord Mayor of London.*

Fourthly, *A Remonstrance.*

Fifthly, *A Divine Looking-Glass.*

Sixthly, *The Mortality of the Soul.*

These were all written by us the ministers of the Spirit.

There is one more, which I shall set forth, which I suppose will be the last that will be set forth by me. It is *The Interpretation of the Eleventh Chapter of the Revelation*, which is much desired by many.

You speak as if I had some thoughts to come down, and that somebody did speak something to that purpose : but I do not know why they should say so ; for I do not remember that I did say any such thing, neither had I any ground to say so, because I do not know any one in those parts that hath any such affections to me, or to the doctrine held forth by me, except it be one Dorothy Carter, and one Edward Frewterill, at Chesterfield, else I know none by name in those parts that hath any affections to these things. Now this Edward Frewterill was a great Bemonist before he had heard of our books ; yet, nevertheless, I am encouraged by your letter to come and see you, but it will be next summer first, and then I am to go into Cambridgeshire, and that is a quite contrary way

from you ; yet I am unacquainted in those parts, yet I have been at Harborough, in Northamptonshire, and at Ashby de la Zouch, in Leicestershire ; there have been some of my name, which did live at Nottingham, they were of kin to me ; but kindred hath been of little value to me from a child. If you be acquainted with Dorothy Carter, and Edward Frewterill, let me know it, and whether you had the books by their means or no.

No more at present, but rest your friend in the faith of the true God the Man Christ Jesus in glory,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

You may direct your letter to me as you did before, in Great Trinity-lane, over against the Lion and the Lamb.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury. April 7, 1662.*

I RECEIVED your letter dated March 28, with the inclosed to Mr. Hatter, which he coming to my house at that same time the letter came, I gave unto him, at which he was very glad to see, and he reading of mine, was the more refreshed in his mind to hear of your love, faith, and stedfastness in this commission of the Spirit. Also I shewed it to my daughter, and to others of the faith, which doth much rejoice at your faith and satisfaction you have in the understanding of the truth, in that you are made partaker with us in the like precious faith, which doth consist

in the right understanding of the true God and the right devil; the rise of the two seeds, and the distinction of the three commissions, which no more in the world doth know at this day, but the believers of this commission of the Spirit only; because they have no true spiritual foundation as a rock, but their foundation is upon the sand, even all the teachers in the world, and the Quaker's principle or foundation is the worst of all; though it seemeth to be the best of all in righteousness of life; yet the worst of all in point of doctrine: and that they will find in the end, though they may flourish for a time; for no Quaker, nor any other that hath heard of this commission of the Spirit, and of the doctrine declared by it, and doth not understand it, and believe it, they cannot be saved, let their holiness of life be never so much; for God hath not regard unto the righteousness of life, except it doth proceed from faith in the true God; which no Quaker, nor any other man hath, but those that have faith in this commission of the Spirit. Therefore it is that they do all fight against the true God, and against the commission of the Spirit; but I am refreshed at your experience and growth in grace and knowledge of the true God; and in that you have eyes, and can see, as Christ said unto his disciples, *Blessed are your eyes, for they see; for many hath eyes, but they see not.* Also I am glad to see that your understanding is enlightened to see the true interpretation of Scripture, which is given by this commission of the Spirit; and this book of *The Eleventh of the Revelation* is very little else but interpretation of many places of Scripture, besides the chapter itself, which will enlighten the understanding in the knowledge of the Scriptures more than all that hath been written before; therefore I have

sent you three of them ; because if there should be any others besides yourself, that should have any affection to them besides yourself, let them have them ; but I shall leave that to your discretion, do what you will with them.

I received a letter from Edward Frewterill, and your aunt Carter, with the money, bearing date March the 19th, 1661 ; but I have not sent them any answer as yet, nor no books ; but I do intend to send this week, if the carrier be in town.

And as for my coming down into the country, I do much rejoice at your's and your aunt Curtis's affection in desiring of me to come, which I do intend to do, but I think it will be about James-tide, for I must go into Cambridgeshire about Midsummer, and after I have been there, I do intend to see you. So being in haste, I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

Mr. Hatter remembers his love unto you. My daughter remembers her love, with others of the faith, unto you.

*London, April 7th, 1662.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, bearing date April 12, 1662.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED the thirty-five shillings of Holland's man. Also I received the inclosed letter as it was directed.

I am glad to hear of your faith in this commission, and of your affections and forwardness in things of this nature, and of your daughter's faith in the true God. I shall not write to you, but of those things that are expected by you, that is, of my coming down to see you.

I do intend to come about James-tide, for I must go about Midsummer into Cambridgeshire; that journey is but short, I can return again in twelve or fourteen days time.

In the mean time you may read over this book, which I believe will give you more light in the Scriptures, than all that ever you have read; I have sent you six of them. Let Mr. Frewterill have one; as for the rest, dispose of them as you please. If there be any need for any more of them, send to me, and I will send them. I have sent three to your cousin Sudbury on Monday last, by the Nottingham carrier; he goeth forth on Monday.

No more at present, but my love remembered to you and your daughter, having an intent to see you at the time appointed. I rest your friend in the faith, as it is in Jesus,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

Mr. Hatter and my daughter remember their loves unto you, and your daughter, and Mr. Frewterill.

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Bladdwell, a Believer, bearing date May 30, 1662.*

*Friend Mrs. Bladdwell,*

I UNDERSTAND by Mrs. Chitwood and my daughter, that you are desirous to be declared one of the blessed ones' of the Lord by me, which I do believe that you are of that seed which is appointed unto eternal happiness, therefore you have been preserved even to the last hour, which is the eleventh hour of the day ; for the twelfth hour is the hour of eternity, when, as no man can work, neither will there be any need of the work of faith any more, because eternity enters in at the twelfth hour.

I say you have been preserved as Nicodemus was, to be born again by the words of Christ, when he was old ; so now for you to be born again by this commission of the Spirit, when you are old, it is a thing which I have not known, no, not since this commission hath been upon me, that one so old as you are should believe truth, when it is declared, even at the last hour. It cannot be expected by me, neither of God himself, that you should grow to any maturity in the knowledge of the true God, and the right devil, with many other heavenly mysteries, as if you were but in the sixth or ninth hour of your age ; but it is well for you that ever you was born, that you were of that seed that was capable to believe in this commission of the Spirit, when as you did hear of it, which is a great Providence unto you, being caught in the net of eternal happiness, which is the commission of the Spirit, before you departed this life.



But however, whether your understanding or knowledge do increase or no, so as to discourse to the convincing of others that are enemies to truth, yet let your faith be strong in what you have received by reading in those books, which have been written by the witnesses of the Spirit, and in vindication of this commission, and you shall fare no worse than I myself shall do. In which faith you so living, and so dying, (I not questioning you in the least) I do declare your soul and body happy and blessed to eternity.

*By*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the last two Witnesses and Prophets of the Commission of the Spirit unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus, in Glory.*

May 30, 1662.

---

*The Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Blessing to Mrs. Sarah Short. Transcribed from a Copy drawn from the Original. Given to her by him, June 2, 1662.*

*Dear Friend, in the eternal Truth, Mrs. Short,*

I UNDERSTOOD by a word or two that Mrs. Chitwood spake, that you were not well satisfied in those words that I spake unto you concerning your eternal happiness, as if I did not look upon you to be of the seed of faith, or one of the blessed of the Lord, because I bade you not be troubled in

your mind concerning that, for you should fare no worse than myself did, and what could I say more ; for if I had not looked upon you as one of the seed of faith, I should never have said so unto you ; for I never did say so unto any, but unto those which I do really believe to be of the seed of faith, especially unto those that do ask it out of singleness of heart, as I do believe you did ; but this I would have you to consider, that a prophet cannot give faith and revelation unto any, whereby they may find those refreshments and joy of heart. It must arise from your own seed of faith, neither can it arise so in you as it doth in others, neither can it be expected of you, because you are not, neither have you been exercised with the trouble of this world as others are. And then again the weakness of your nature is such, that you cannot exercise your mind about the business and lawful affairs of this world, which would be a great refreshment unto nature, as it were the assurance of eternal life, is which nature hath denied unto you ; but it is well for you that ever you were born, that you were of that blessed seed, that will be happy in the end. I should be glad that your faith might grow as strong as that woman's did, which was troubled with the bloody issue, that if she could but touch our Lord's garment she should be whole ; and according to her faith it was unto her, and not only so, but she had the assurance of eternal life beside ; for virtue went out of our Lord not only to cure the bloody issue, but the peace and satisfaction of her mind concerning a life to come. Therefore it is said he looked round about to see her that had done this thing, and he said, *Daughter thy faith hath made thee whole ; go in peace.*

Here you may see, it was not our Lord that did

give her faith, but it was her own faith which made her whole, both natural and spiritual; neither can any prophet give faith to any, neither doth God himself give faith to any, it must arise from its own seed. You may say then, why doth the Scripture say, that faith is the gift of God? To which I answer, for these two reasons; because the seed of faith is of his own Divine nature, and that breath of life, which God breathed into Adam, was that breath or seed of faith; and whoever is partaker of the seed of Adam, they are of the seed of faith; so in time it doth arise out of that seed into art, so that the creature come to the peace of assurance of eternal life. And in this sense it may be said, that faith is the gift of God, because God gave the seed in the original unto Adam, and not in particular unto every person, as hath been a long time vainly imagined through the ignorance of man not knowing the two seeds.

Secondly, it may be said, that faith is the gift of God, in that he hath chosen prophets and ambassadors to preach faith. Therefore, saith Paul, *faith cometh by hearing the Word of God preached, and how can he preach except he be sent.*

The meaning is this, that the act of faith cometh by hearing the Word of God preached by me, or more, that is sent of God, but the seed and roots of faith was in them that did believe before, and not immediately given of God, as I said before.

But in regard God did send messengers to preach faith, and so that seed is awakened, and cometh to act itself forth in power, so as to justify themselves towards God, and towards man; for being justified by faith, we have peace with God.

And in this regard, it may be said, that faith is a gift of God, in that he hath sent men to declare truth,

and so them that believe them may be said to receive faith from God ; for he that receiveth a prophet, in the name of a prophet, receiveth him that sent him ; and whoever receiveth a prophet, in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward, which reward is eternal life ; for prophets have little else to give. And if it be well considered it is enough, and as the woman's faith did draw virtue from our Lord, so there will virtue go from the commission of the Spirit as to your eternal happiness. Let your faith wholly depend upon it, and you shall fare no worse than myself doth : you shall have the end of your faith, even the salvation of your soul.

And that you may be sure I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord to eternity. I thought good to write these few lines unto you, for your further confirmation of your eternal happiness after death.

Your faithful Friend,

and true Prophet,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

June 2, 1662.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, bearing date July 14, 1662, from London.*

*Loving Friend, in the eternal Truth, Dorothy Carter,*

MY love remembered unto you and to our friend Mr. Frewterill.

I understand by your letter, that you received the six books, and how you disposed of some of them, and of a maid that liveth with you, that is brought to believe this commission, which I am very glad to hear that one so young should be called by this declaration of truth, even as my daughter was, even at the sixth hour of the day, that is, in their infancy ; for there is but the sixth hour, ninth, and eleventh hour ; for the twelfth hour is the hour of eternity.

The sixth is youth or childhood, the ninth is middle age, the eleventh hour is old age, which is the last hour, then cometh the twelfth hour, which is the hour of eternity.

I do know but of two that are called at the eleventh hour, not these ten years, but at the sixth many, but most of all at the ninth hour of the day, that is, middle age.

Also you desired a book all bound together, for that maid's brother, which Mr. Hatter did send in my absence. I hope you did receive it ; I am glad to hear of your faith and refreshment, that you find in this commission of the Spirit, in the understanding of those things declared by this commission. I make no question but that you shall increase in faith, light and life, to the opposing of all those blind and dark lights, the Quakers, that have no God but what is within them, and that light within them will be found in the end to be but darkness ; and then how great will that darkness be ! For their God and their light within themselves will perish to eternity ; for though they seem to be the best of all the seven churches in righteousness of life, and do suffer more by the powers of the nation than any other, yet they are the worst of all the seven churches in point of doctrine ; for they are absolutely the spirit of

antichrist, which denieth both the Father and the Son; for though the other churches do deny the Father to be a person in the form of a man, yet they will acknowledge that Christ, the Son of God, is now in heaven, in that body that suffered death; but these Quakers do deny, that the same body of flesh is now living, therefore the spirit of antichrist, which denieth both the Father and the Son to be a person; for those Quakers are but the very influence of John Robin's witchcraft spirit, he being the antichrist in this last age, which did shew such signs and wonders as is written of by John Reeve, and many more strange things than what was written, which was acted in my house by some of his prophets, which I am an eye-witness of before I had any knowledge of God, or knew what did belong to a commission, neither will any of his prophets or disciples own any such thing now, though they know that this witchcraft power was taken from him, and so from them, by that sentence of eternal death, which John Reeve had pronounced upon him.

Therefore it matters not whether the Quakers do believe any thing concerning him or no.

Are the Quakers so simple to think, that any of John Robin's disciples will tell him the truth how they were bewitched by him? No, nor no other man, neither could we ourselves, if we had not had a knowledge above him, and a commission too, we could neither have brought down his power, nor have known how, and by what means, he did procure it, with divers other actions, which his disciples did act, which I shall relate, if need be, when I see you.

The thing of concern in your letter is concerning these words of Christ: *Swear not by heaven, for that*

is God's throne, nor by the earth, for that is his footstool; and so in another place, bade them *swear not at all*.

I know your desire is to know in what sense it may be said, *Swear not at all*.

You may remember it was said by Christ, *Let your conversation be yea, yea, and nay, nay, for what cometh more is evil*.

These words of Christ were not to his disciples, but to those Jews that were under the law of Moses.

Therefore it is that Christ doth expound the law, shewing what was said of old, and then giving in his judgment, which is thus: *It was said of old, thou shalt not forswear thyself, but shalt perform the vow that thou hast made, and so forth, but I say, swear not at all, neither by heaven, and the like*.

Which words (*Swear not at all*) was only to beat men off from swearing to unrighteous things, and from swearing vainly in their common discourse, as it is usual amongst men in these our days, as they did swear by heaven in those days, and by the earth, and by the city, and by a man's head, and those things did they in their common discourse. Therefore it was that Christ said, *Let your yea be yea, and your nay, nay, be all*, for need you use swearing in your common talk or dealings, for swearing in this kind is evil; for do not they do so now-a-days? Will not men swear by their faith, which true faith is the nature of God, which they know not? They will swear by God, and yet know him not; they will swear by God's blood, and yet they do not believe that he had any blood; and so God damn them, and yet they are loth to be damned, with many other oaths, which are frivolous, in their common discourse, which becomes evil and sin to them that

practise it, and a guilt upon the consciences of those that use it.

I would not have you think, that these words of Christ did take you off from all swearing at all, not as the Quakers do blindly imagine, that will not be a witness in any business; let it be of bonds concerning money, or other cases, in which they know that the innocent will suffer and lose their right, for want of their witnessing to it; and they must do it in that form and order, that the law of the land hath ordained, else a man's word is worth nothing, though it be never so true; and the unrighteous hath gotten the better for want of an oath, and the innocent hath lost his right, through the blindness and ignorance of those that strain the letter of the Scriptures beyond the intent of them, neither can the judge help the innocent in such a case.

But as for those oaths, that are imposed upon the Quakers and other people now of late, it is utterly unlawful for any one that hath any light or tenderness of conscience in him to take; for he that takes it receives the mark of the beast, either in the forehead, or in the hand, he shall not be suffered to buy or sell else. He that receiveth the mark in the forehead is he that doth take the oath willingly; and he that receiveth the mark in the hand is he that doth take the oath against his will, only for fear of imprisonment, or the suffering of loss in their estate; neither shall they be suffered to buy or sell except they receive the mark in their hand. And this is the state of this land at this day.

It will be well for those few of this faith that are preserved from that pollution upon the mind.



It will be too tedious to speak what might be said concerning oaths, therefore I shall let it alone until I see you, and then I shall inform you further in it, which will not be long after the receipt of this letter ; for I do intend to set out of London on the 28th day of July, being Monday : I do intend to come to Nottingham first. I cannot give our friend Mr. Frewterill any certain knowledge where or when he should meet with us ; for I know not as yet whether Mr. Hudson will have two horses or no ; he hath one for himself, for he is going into Lancashire to some friends there ; so that we know not whether we shall go any further than the carrier or no.

So with my love remembered unto yourself, and Mr. Frewterill, and all the rest of the faith with you, I rest

Your Friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

There is a letter inclosed of Mr. Frewterill's, which should have been sent to you when I was in Cambridgeshire. He remembers his love to you, and is glad to hear of your faith in the truth.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, July 19, 1662.*

*Friend in the Faith of the true God, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated May 26, with a letter inclosed from our friend in the same faith, Dorothy Carter ; but I could not send you an answer until now. I had but one day to stay in town, after that I received yours ; but I gave order to our friend Mr. Hatter to write unto you, and to send the book which your aunt Carter wrote for, which I hope did come to your hands accordingly, though I have heard nothing of it. Also I do much rejoice to hear of your growth in the faith, and in your understanding, being enlightened so as to see the foundations of all saving truths, by the belief of this commission of the Spirit, which is not a little refreshment unto me ; though the present peace, and eternal salvation, will redown unto yourself ; or though I was left alone, even as the prophet Elijah was, and as the prophet Esaiah, who saith, *Who hath believed our report? Or to whom is the arm of the Lord revealed?* Yet should I not think nevertheless of the commission, neither is there any saving truth, but in a commission : and as you say well, though you have been a professor, or seeker after the truth, yet you never found the like effect wrought in you, as you have done since you were acquainted with us, the witnesses of the Spirit ; which I perceive by your letter, you are given to understand the form and nature of the true God, the form and nature of the right devil : and that it was the Godhead that suf-

ferred death upon the cross: and that the believing of this is to eat his flesh, and drink his blood; and this will quench the thirst of sin; for it was for sin that he shed his blood, therefore it is said in Scripture, *In that he died, he died unto sin*; that is, to satisfy sin, which could not be satisfied but by the blood of God, neither would there have been any eternal damnation unto the seed of reason, which is the seed of the serpent, but by his quickening again into life; so that by his passing through death to life again, he hath purchased eternal life for the seed of faith, and eternal death to the seed of reason.

These sayings will be counted hard sayings by most men and women in the world; but blessed are they that understand them and believe them, which I perceive you do; for what greater faith can there be in any, than to understand the form and nature of the true God, the form and nature of the right devil, and to believe the Godhead life to die, as it is held forth in this commission of the Spirit.

I may say by you, as our Lord said in another case; where he saith, *That he had not found such faith, no not in Israel*: so may I say that I have not found such strong faith, not in one, that never saw none of us, nor spake with us: I may say, I have not found such faith, no not in England; and be sure that such a faith can never fail, because it is built upon a rock, even upon the commission of the Spirit, as Peter's was in his time: and when Peter had made a confession of his faith unto our Lord, he said, *Upon this rock will I build my church*; that is, on this faith, which thou art, of Peter, so that the gates of hell shall not prevail against it. So it is with every commissioned prophet, his faith and commission is the rock for all the seed of faith, which is the church to

build upon, neither shall the gates of hell prevail against the faith that is built upon this commission of the Spirit, no more than it did in Peter's commission, which was the commission of the blood; but it shall be a rock in this last age. And I am glad for your own sake that you do understand so well the distinction of the three commissions; for I do find that those that do lay the greatest weight upon the commission, do grow most eminent in faith and understanding.

Yet I very seldom press the commission upon any except it be to some wise in reason, that would run away with the doctrine of this commission, thinking to be saved by that, without the commission of the Spirit; as if the doctrine that we declare, may be truth and saving, but we ourselves false messengers, and so in danger to be lost.

These things do I meet withal sometimes, having to do with all sorts, and all dispositions of men, within these ten years: and I do find now of late, that this commission of the Spirit hath put all men, of what opinion in religion soever, unto such a loss, that they know not which way to turn to find rest; all of them being ignorant of the true God, and the right devil; and as for a commission of the Spirit, they stop their ears against it, even against that which should show them the way to their eternal rest and peace, which I am sure cannot be but by this commission of the Spirit; for men and women cannot lay too much stress upon the commission: for if we, the witnesses of the Spirit, be true and happy, (as I know we are,) then all those that believe it shall be happy also: then of necessity, all other opinions that do hear of it, and do not believe in it, must be unhappy, and perish to eternity. But if we

be false, (as I have said to many that have been damned by me) then shall they, and all the world be saved, and we only, and those that believe our report, shall be damned to eternity.

Thus it must go; you, and all the seed of faith must venture your eternal happiness upon the commission of the Spirit declared by us; the chosen witnesses of God; and we being happy, you that believe, shall be happy also; and so all other opinions whatsoever besides, which hear of it, and do not believe it, will be unhappy, and perish to eternity.

This is that strait and narrow way that leads to life, and few there be that find it; not as man doth vainly imagine, that men may go to heaven in every opinion; no, there is but one truth, one way, one eternal life; neither is this true way to be found but in the faith of this commission of the Spirit; and blessed are they that have faith in it.

I did think to have come to see you a week before I now shall, through some occasion that Mr. Hudson hath; but I do intend to set out of London on the 28th day of July, but whether I shall come any sooner than the carrier doth, I cannot yet tell; but I suppose you are the first that I shall come unto, because I think your aunt Carter liveth twenty miles further than you.

My daughter and Mr. Hatter remember their loves unto you, rejoicing to hear of your growth of faith, and your understanding you have expressed in your letter concerning the true God and right devil.

This, with my love remembered unto you, I rest your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, July 14, 1662.*

*A Copy of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Blessing,  
given by him to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, Aug. 11, 1662.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith of Jesus, Ellen Sudbury,*

I CALLING to mind some passages in your letters sent to me at London, which gave great testimony unto me of your faith in the true God, and in this commission of the Spirit, which I find since I have seen you, not only in the head but in the heart also, which my heart is much rejoiced to see that strength and growth of faith, which you have in these things aforesaid ; seeing you are alone, and compassed about with devils, baiting at you as a deceived person, and now I know it will be so much the more because I have been with you ; for that William Watson hath been here at your aunt Carter's with another scolding fit me, and not only so, incensing some others here in Chesterfield against me, which maketh people offended at me, yet never saw me ; so that if I should stay long here, I should make the world mad.

Also it is upon my heart to be sensible how your faith will be tried, seeing you are alone ; but I know according to your trials, your faith shall grow in strength. And I considering that now some of those of the Bemonist's principles being damned, it will run through the whole body of them ; so that I know you will be the more exclaimed at as a deceived person : but I know your faith shall not fail, but increase in more experience and knowledge of the truth of these things, which are held forth in this commission of the Spirit.

Therefore, for your further assurance of your eternal happiness against all gain-sayers whatsoever, I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord both soul and body to eternity.

I thought good to write these few lines unto you, because I fear I shall have no time to have any talk with you ; for it is not good for me to stay here any longer, because people's minds are, and do begin to be incensed much against me. Therefore it is my intent to see Mr. Hudson on his journey this Monday, and I do think to be on Tuesday night at your house, or on Wednesday at the farthest, and so to London. I shall call and see you before I go.

I cannot tell whether it will be convenient to lie at your house or no, I cannot tell whether there be freedom of both sides, but I shall call and see you however.

No more at present, but rest your friend in the true faith, and alone prophet and witness unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in glory,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*Chesterfield, Aug. 11, 1662.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter. Dated September 12, 1662.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter, also I received the linen of Holland's man, according as you specified in

your letter, and am glad to hear of your, and the rest of the faith with you, of your refreshments and further enlightening, which you and they received by my society that small time I was with you, which I am glad to hear, and do desire your further increase and growth in the knowledge of the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit, and the power of a commission to declare blessing and cursing to eternity, which faith, depending and resting upon it, will give you easily to see the happiness of the one, and the misery of the other; and you cannot lay too much stress upon the commission, for the more weight you lay upon it, the more comfort and assurance of your eternal happiness you will receive; neither can you expect to be free from reproach, envy and malice from that seed that is condemned by this commission of the Spirit; and though they may seem to rejoice, and make light of it for a season, yet their damnation I am sure doth neither slumber nor sleep, neither will the eternal happiness of the true believers of this commission of the Spirit slumber nor sleep, but will increase from life to life; that is, the faith of it shall pass through the life of assurance into life eternal, the unbelief of reason shall pass through the first death of fear and unbelief, into the second death of eternal damnation, where the worm will never die, nor the fire never go out.

These things are hard sayings unto the seed of reason, but plain and easy where faith is deeply grounded upon a rock, which rock is the true God, and the right devil, which knowledge hath been declared, with many other heavenly wisdom and mysteries of this commission of the Spirit, which faith in it will abide the greatest blasts that reason the devil can blow, though it be even to death itself; therefore it



is said by our Lord, *Fear not him that can kill the body, and hath no more to do, but fear him that can cast both body and soul into hell fire*; as if he should say, that the death of this life is but as the killing of this body, because it is not above a quarter of an hour's work; but the second death will be for ever; therefore it is that he must be feared, that can and will cast both body and soul into hell-fire; that is, God doth kill the devil reason with the second death, and reason the devil did kill God, and the seed of faith with the first death, which is called but a killing of the body, and hath no more to do, because reason the devil his wrath can extend no further, but the wrath of God extends to eternity.

And as for those slavish fears which you had when I was there with you, I do suppose too, I do think that some of them were occasioned by that old maid that lived with you; but this you may be sure, that it was not for want of will that they did it not, but for want of power, for I find opposition in all places, both in city and country.

But all opinions being under the hatches of persecutions themselves, therefore it is that they can do nothing to me; for all sects and opinions in religion are against me, and I against them all.

I was in good hopes that you had seen our friend Ellen Sudbury before now, but you have shewed me the cause; but I hope when you are well, and your occasions will permit, that you will see her. I have not received any letter from her since I came from her, only one from her husband, the day after I received yours, which was on Saturday, being the sixth of September. I did send him an answer on the eighth of September. It may fall out so that I may see you and her there; but if not, I shall be.

glad to see you here in London, if your health and occasions will permit, towards the next spring. In the mean time let me hear from you how you all do, as oft as you can. I got very well to Barnet that Saturday night, and am very well at this time, but I have not heard from Mr. Hudson not as yet.

No more at present, but my love remembered unto yourself and your daughter Elizabeth Carter, and Elizabeth Smith, and to Mr. Frewterill and his wife.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

My daughter Sarah remembers her love unto yourself and Mr. Frewterill, and all the rest of the faith with you, but she is very ill at this time.

Mr. Hatter desires to be remembered to you.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. John Leavens, bearing date October 6, 1662.*

*This is Mr. Hatter's Brother.*

I HAVING been informed that you are a man that have travelled through several principles of religion, even from the Baptist to the Quaker; indeed it is the last, and seemeth to me to be the purest religion or principle of all the seven churches, and so it is in respect of practice, but the worst of all the seven in matter of true doctrine.

And though you are come to the purest life in respect of righteousness towards men, which may give some peace, because every action hath its reward in it, whether it be good or evil ; but as for the true righteousness of faith, you have not as yet tasted of it, because you have no true foundation as a rock to set your faith upon ; for the Quakers principles is but a sandy foundation for a man's eternal happiness, as well as the others, because there is no true spiritual principle declared nor believed by none of the ministry of the seven churches, because there is none of the ministry of the Quakers, nor none others that hath a commission from the true God ; therefore they cannot declare and make known what the form and nature of the true God was before he became flesh, nor now that he is become flesh, nor the form and nature of the right devil, before he became flesh, nor what he is now, though no man can see any other devil or devils, but man and woman, that is cloathed with flesh and bone ; neither doth any of the ministry know the place and nature of heaven, nor the place and nature of hell, with the persons and natures of angels, nor the mortality of the soul. Those six principles, or grounds of faith, is all that is necessary unto salvation, in which all the teachers of the world are ignorant of, but this commission of the Spirit only.

And as the Quakers ministry is the seventh and last angel that will sound, till time be no more, therefore it seemeth to carry the purest show in righteousness of life, but the most cursed of all in point of doctrine ; and the spirit of it is the absolute spirit of Antichrist, which doth deny both the Father and the Son ; for though they do confess a Christ within them, yet they deny the very person or body of

Christ without them. This I know by experience, for which, at a dispute in East-Cheap, there was five of them damned to eternity, whereof George Fox the younger, and John Harwood, were two of them; and as for Fox the elder, he and Francis Hewgill, and James Burroughes, were all of them damned devils eight years ago; and not only those, but many more of the Quakers, and many other opinions whatsoever; and as the Quakers are the last angel will sound, so is the third and last commission of the Spirit come forth upon the earth, which is to finish the mystery of God, and to encounter and oppose all spiritual counterfeits, whether it be in Quakers, or any others whatsoever, because there is none that hath a commission from God but us two; neither can any man truly interpret Scripture but us two only, neither hath any man the knowledge of those things aforesaid, because we two are to finish the deep and secret mysteries of God's becoming flesh, which Moses, the prophets and apostles so much hinted at, up and down in the Scriptures, so that there cannot be the assurance of eternal happiness but in the belief of a commission.

Therefore, think you what you will of yourself, and of the Quakers principles, it is not all the sanctification of life which you or they can do that will procure your peace with God, except you, that are not under the sentence of this commission, do come to own the doctrine of the true God, and the right devil, which is held forth by this commission of the Spirit, and then your sanctification of life will add to your comfort here, and to your glory hereafter.

I write not this unto you as expecting you to be a disciple of this commission, but because you shall understand that there was a true prophet in these

latter days, as well as there was in former times, which you do so much honour, because they are all dead, and that now the deepest mysteries of the true God, the right devil, with many other heavenly secrets which lay hid from the foundation of the earth, but now revealed both by word and power by this commission of the Spirit, or spiritual commission, which you, and many thousands more, cannot be ignorant of, and say that you did never hear of it; but if there be not that in your seed, that should lay hold of life when it is set before you, then the seed is appointed unto cursings; for this commission doth set life and death before men, as truly as Moses did set life and death before the people of Israel.

These lines I have written unto you, that you might, if it be possible, understand truth, that is now alive in the world, and not to depend upon the dead letter of the Scriptures, nor upon the lying imaginations of the Quakers, which bids you hearken to the light within you, but denies the person of the true God without them.

So resteth the last true witness and prophet unto the true God, the man Christ Jesus in glory,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*A Copy of a Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Richard Sudbury, dated Nov. 3, 1662.*

*Friend Richard Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date October the 7th, with the two inclosed letters, and am glad to hear that you are so far enlightened as to understand any of these things; for these things which the commission of the Spirit hath declared are not common, or easy to be understood, but must be comprehended by the single eye of faith, and not by the right eye of reason; for if your right eye offend, pull it out: this right eye is the reason of man, the left eye is the faith of man, and these two eyes do see, and the sight doth arise from these two seeds; so that if your eye be single, your whole body will be full of light; but if you look upon spiritual things with both eyes, is double, and not clear sighted, for reason can see the things of this world better than the things of eternity: and the eye of faith doth see the things of God better than it can the things of this world; therefore it is called a single eye; and the more faith you have in this commission of the Spirit, the more clear you will see in what condition the whole world is in, and how it lieth in darkness, being totally ignorant of the knowledge of the true God, and of the right devil; and being ignorant of these two, they miss of all other heavenly mysteries which flow as a fountain from those two heads; for what knowledge can go beyond the knowledge of the true God and right devil? Have not many men, philosophers and others, lost their wits, nay, their

lives, to find out God, and yet could not do it; for if they could have found out God, they would easily have found out the right devil; but because they sought to find out God by the right eye of reason, and not by the single eye of faith, therefore they lost their wits in seeking after God.

I received the Quaker's letter you spoke of, from Dorothy Carter, and I have prepared an answer unto it; I do intend to send it to Chesterfield, for she doth desire me to let her have the reading of it to a Quaker there also: I would have her, or Mr. Frewterill, to take a copy of it, before it comes to you to Nottingham; for it must be delivered to one Highfield, at Nottingham; and when it comes from Chesterfield to you, if you will be at that trouble to take a copy of it, you may; but you must make as much haste of it as you can, for it will be some labour, for it is something large, it is almost four sheets of paper. It will be your best course to let your wife, or somebody, read it as you write it, or else it will be too tedious. I do intend to send it to Dorothy Carter on Friday next. I did think to have written a few lines to your wife, in answer to her letter, for her further confirmation; for I am very joyful to hear of her increase in faith, and assurance of eternal life; for I know that letter was her heart, though not her hand; therefore I shall only remember my love to her at this time, expecting to hear from you and her so soon as you can, after you have received and delivered this Quaker's letter.

No more at present, but my love to yourself and all friends with you, which are few.

Your friend,  
**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

I have never heard from Mr. Hudson since Mr. Frewterill and I parted from him there in the country.

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton,  
to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, dated  
November 7, 1662.*

*Dear friend in the eternal truth, Dorothy Carter,*

MY love remembered unto you and your daughter Elizabeth, and Elizabeth Smith.

I am glad to hear that you are all well, and of your stedfastness in the faith of the true God, and this commission of the Spirit. I received the Quaker's railing paper you sent me, and I have given answer to it; and, according to your desire, I have sent it you, and if you please you may let that Quaker woman which you spake of see it, but if you had sent me her name, and the bitter words she spake against this commission of the Spirit, I would have sent her the sentence as well as the other; for I cannot endure that any quaking devil should escape being damned, when as they despise the spirit of truth. I would desire you to let Mr. Frewterill, if his leisure will serve, to take a copy of this letter of mine, for it will be some labour, it being something large; it is almost four sheets of paper; he must do it as soon as possible he can, because you must send it to Richard Sudbury's before it be delivered to Thomas Highfield; and perhaps Mr. Sudbury will take a copy of it before it be delivered to the place aforementioned; therefore it will require what haste you can.

I gave Mr. Sudbury information that I should send it to you first, and that you should send it to him, because it is to be delivered to that town; for



Mr. Sudbury, in his letter, doth desire if I send any answer, to send it to him, and he will convey it to you ; but I suppose it will be more convenient to send it to you first, seeing it must come back again to Nottingham.

No more at present, but my love to yourself, Mr. Frewterill and his wife.

So resteth your loving friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

I would willingly hear from you as soon as you can after you have delivered this letter to that Quaker.

---

*A Copy of a Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Christopher Hill, November 16, 1662.*

*Loving friend in the true faith, Christopher Hill,*

I RECEIVED our friend Nicholas Miles his letter, with the basket of pippins he sent, your mother also hath them you sent to her, and I have sent the two baskets by Nathaniel the hoyman again ; you, or our friend Miles, must look for them at Milton, for I have directed them for you at Maidstone ; but I perceive since, that the hoyman doth not come there, but at Milton you may have them ; and as for the cyder our friend speaketh of, John White, my daughter's friend, will see this week what may be done in it, and next week I think he will send you word what may be done, yea or nay.

Also I understand by your letter, that our friend John Martin is fallen asleep, and that he hath remembered me, and the poor saints there with you, which was more than I did expect, yet he hath given a great testimony that his faith was grounded upon the truth of this commission of the Spirit, which fruit and effect of his faith would yield him peace, and in the end eternal life, which I do not question but he shall have it in that day when the prophets and apostles and saints shall receive theirs, *For he that receives a prophet in the name of a prophet, and a saint in the name of a saint, he shall not lose his reward*; therefore I would have his wife, son, and daughter not to be troubled, but rather be comforted in this, that his and their names are written in the book of life, and so it will be well with them on the other side of death, for this first death we must all pass through, but blessed and happy are all those that shall escape the second death.

I did intend to have seen them, and all the rest of friends in the faith, before I heard of this letter, this Christ-tide, and my resolution doth hold so still, for I must get out of the way two or three days before Thomas's-day, because the parish hath pricked me down to bear office this Christmas, or else fine. The last year I did fine for scavenger, which cost me twenty shillings, and now they have chosen me questman, which fine will cost three or four pounds, and next year it will cost as much more to be constable; therefore I must get out of the way a fortnight or three weeks, until the business is over; so I shall either come and visit you, or else go to Cambridge.

No more at present, but my love remembered unto yourself, and to goodman Miles and his wife, the widow, her son and daughter, and all the rest of our

friends in the faith there with you, not forgetting your mother Wills.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, November 17, 1662.*

My daughter Sarah desireth to be remembered unto you all ; she is very well after her journey.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter of Chesterfield, dated from London, Nov. 28, 1662.*

*Dear friend in the eternal truth, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letters, wherein you have given me a relation of things concerning that letter I wrote to Samuel Hooton, and W. S. with some other passages of Susanna Frith, which I am very well satisfied in, and have sent her that which doth belong unto her ; for none but the seed of the serpent would have spoken such words as she did : but as for those few lines of your own concerning yourself, concerning the blessing, I did always look upon you to be one of the elect seed, and your having faith in the commission, I know it will bear you up in the day of death ; but yet I am glad you are so sensible for to see the benefit of the blessing of a prophet, and that you can discern the power and ope-

ration, the curse hath upon the seed of reason, even to blast and wither that comfort and peace they had before : so on the contrary, the blessing will make their peace and joy to flourish, and encrease to their further eternal happiness. And I know this could not have been desired by you had you not been of the seed of faith ; therefore, in obedience to my commission, I do pronounce you justified, blessed, and happy, both in soul and body, to eternity. And let not your thoughts be troubled any further, but depend wholly upon it ; for you shall fare no worse than I myself doth. And so you may live in assurance here, and when you shall pass through this first death, you shall enter into life eternal, where you shall see your God face to face ; also you shall know him according to your faith, him you did believe in, which you never saw, in that you did believe in the commission of the Spirit, which you have seen.

If you have any occasion to write to me again, you must do it within this fortnight ; for I am going into Kent : I go a week or ten days before Christ-tide. The occasion of my going is because the parish hath chosen me to bear offices, either I must hold or fine ; the last year I did fine for one office, and now they put me upon another, because I have lived long in the parish ; therefore, to prevent them, I will go into Kent for a matter of three weeks, 'till the business is over.

So with my love to yourself, your daughter, and Elizabeth Smith, Mr. Frewterill, and his wife, I rest at this present,

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

I would have you to deliver the inclosed as directed.

*A Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton,  
to one Susannah Frith, a Quaker, bearing Date the  
28th of Nov. 1662, from London.*

*Susannah Frith,*

I UNDERSTAND, that being a Quaker, you were at the writing of that letter sent unto me from Samuel Hooton, and W. S. Also I understand, that you cannot see any fruits from the believers of this commission doth bring forth, but these that were filthy are filthy still; for you see some disorderly walking in some. Also you think, that others do fashion themselves too much according to the world; and if any do walk disorderly, or live an intemperate life, it is not my desire they should do so; for I did always love a temperate life from my childhood, much more now since I came to understand truth.

Also I know that those that do live an intemperate life, by overcharging their natures, in what kind soever, they lose their peace, which they would find if it were otherwise: yet nevertheless, this is not a sin unto death, though I do not encourage any one to live an intemperate life.

Yet you may remember, that it was the practice of Christ himself, to keep company with publicans and sinners; therefore the scribes and pharisees, which were so righteous men, speak evil of Christ, saying, he was a wine bibber, and a friend of publicans and sinners; neither did Christ pronounce woes to any as he did to those that were so righteous in their own conceit; it was those that sinned against the Holy Ghost, that unpardonable sin, that will never be

forgiven in this world, nor in the world to come. And, you, by the light of Christ within you, leading you to a more preciseness of life than others, you have taken upon you to judge and speak evil of the commission of the Spirit, even as those Jews did by the righteousness of the law in them, they spake evil and blasphemed against Christ, and that Holy Spirit by which he cast out devils, by calling him a deceiver, a blasphemer, and a devil, and this was that sin against the Holy Ghost : so have you sinned that sin unto death, which is not to be pardoned ; for you have not only been with others that have written and spoken evil of this commission of the Spirit, in giving countenance and credit to the evil report of others, but you have blasphemed against the Holy Spirit that sent me ; by calling the commission of the Spirit a deceit, lies, and a false Spirit ; which hath clearly discovered unto me what seed and nature you are of, you being one of the seed of the serpent, you have sinned against the Holy Ghost. Therefore, in obedience to my commission, I do pronounce Susannah Frith cursed, and damned, soul and body, from the presence of God elect, men, and angels, to eternity.

Perhaps you will say as you did by Samuel Hooton, and W. S. that you will not matter it ; but if you can make as light of it as I do that give judgment upon you, it will be well for you ; for I am well satisfied in giving judgment against any person that doth sin against the Holy Ghost, more than any one thing whatsoever. Neither am I willing that any Quaker devil, nor any other should escape, that speaks evil of things they do not know ; for I am no more troubled at their condemnation than the judges of the land are, when they give judgment according to

the law, for a man to be put to death. And if that man, so condemned, can make as light of it as the judge doth, let him if he can. So will it be with you, and many hundreds more, (flatter yourselves, and make as light of it as you will) I know it is so decreed by the Creator; neither will your light of Christ within you prevent it, because you have despised the commission of the Spirit without you.

*By*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the Two last Witnesses and Prophets, unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Richard Sudbury, bearing date the 8th of December, 1662.*

*Mr. Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date September the first, in which I perceive, that your wife and you did expect to have heard before now how I got through my journey. Also I did expect to have heard from you, or Dorothy Carter, before I did send unto you; which letter I did receive from her the day before I received yours, and she speaketh much to the same purpose, as you do, expecting to hear whether I came well to London or no. And as for that, to certify you, I did come well to Barnet that Saturday night, and am well now both in body and

mind, but always meeting with opposition both in city and country; for let them be of what sort or opinion soever, though they be under the hatches of persecution themselves, yet will they be against me; so that it may be said by me as it was said in another case by Esau, that his hand should be against every one, and every one's hand against him.

So it is with me, every opinion in the world is against me, and I against every opinion in the world. And the commission of God, which is truth, being given unto us two, shall encounter with all opinions and sorts in the world.

And whereas you say you understand more clear the Baptist's commission counterfeited, I am glad that you understand any thing that is truth: I could wish that you might understand things of a more high concernment, that are written in those books; as concerning the true God, his form and nature, the right devil, his form and nature, the persons and nature of angels, the rise of the two seeds, and the mortality of the soul, and the power of a commission; with many other heavenly secrets, never revealed to man before, which are plainly declared in those writings, if understood. And though you do say, the Baptist commission is counterfeit, yet I perceive you are not clear in the mortality of the soul; therefore your desire is, that I would give you the interpretation of those verses, Mat. xxvii. 51, 52, 53 verses. It is a more easy thing to read than to write, and more easy to ask questions, than it is to answer: nevertheless, I shall give you some answer to those things, though there is arguments enough in that book to prove the mortality of the soul, and that the soul doth sleep in the dust until the resurrection, to any man that hath but the least measure



of true light in him : but because men read scriptures, that do seem to speak to the contrary, and they being not alive to give the interpretation and meaning of their own words, which is the cause that people read their words, and not understanding them, they go away unsatisfied, and loth they are to believe, that God should send any messenger or interpreter of the Scriptures ; but would fain find out the meaning by the reading of the dead letter, which they never can do ; no more than the eunuch could do without Philip's expounding of it unto him. Neither can any man understand the Scriptures, except there be one or more sent of God to give the interpretation of them. And as for the veil of the temple rending from the bottom to the top, and the stones cleaving asunder, I have spoken of it in the interpretation of the eleventh of the Revelations ; yet, for your further satisfaction, I shall open it more particularly.

The veil of the temple, which was rent, it was an outside building, that was not so beautified as the temple ; so that no man could see the glory or beauty of it but by piercing through the veil : and this temple was that which Solomon built, which was so highly esteemed by the Jews ; and this veil, which was rent, did belong unto it ; and those stones that clave asunder did belong to this veil or temple.

These things were done in the natural only to shew the power of Christ's death ; for this temple was not far from the place where Christ was put to death, neither doth the Scripture speak of what stones, they were that clave asunder, nor where.

Therefore it must be believed, that it was those stones that did belong to the veil or temple ; because they did signify in the spiritual these two things.

First, the veil being rent from the bottom to the

top, did signify the worship of the law of Moses, which was a veil upon the people of the Jews face; so that they could not see that spiritual and heavenly glory, which was in the believing that this Jesus was the Son of God, or the Saviour of the world.

Therefore the worship of the law of Moses, which was a veil before the peoples face, was now, by the death of Christ rent in twain from the bottom to the top; so that the reason of man could never sew it or join it together again unto this day, though it hath been much endeavoured by the seed of reason. Therefore it is said, that Moses put a veil upon his face, it did so shine, that the people of Israel could not look upon it, it was so bright and glorious; which veil of Moses was only to signify the worship of the law, which was to be rent from the bottom to the top by the death of Christ; that is, to be torn in pieces, not fit to be used any more by the believers in Jesus.

And this did the natural veil of Solomon's temple rending from the bottom to the top signify.

And as for the stones cleaving asunder, it did signify in the spiritual the breaking of the stony hearts of the Jews asunder, and the Gentiles too, by causing some of their stony hearts to break in pieces, by faith and love, in believing that this was the son of God.

Others again, their stony hearts were broken asunder with wrath and envy, because the worship of the law was now rent in twain; so that they could not have life by the righteousness of the law, which made their hearts of stone with envy even ready to burst, as you may read in the Acts, concerning their malice towards Stephen. And for the earthquake, there spoken of, you may read in the book of the in-

terpretation, there I have opened it something large ; so that there needeth no more to be said of that.

But the thing that you aim at, as I perceive, is concerning those dead bodies, which slept in the earth, and arose and appeared unto many.

First, You must understand the power of Christ's death ; and secondly, the power of his resurrection.

You find at his death the veil of the temple did rend, and the stones did cleave, and the earth did quake.

These things were done at his death, by the power of that ; but the graves opening, and the dead bodies arising, was after his resurrection ; which thing was to prove the power of his rising from the dead : therefore he raised the bodies of many saints which slept, which arose, and appeared unto many.

Now you must understand, that it was the bodies of the saints that arose, and came out of the graves, and appeared, and not the bodies of the reprobate, that hated and persecuted him.

Also it is to be understood, that those saints that arose out of the graves were but newly fallen asleep or dead, not that they were corrupted or turned to dust, as those are that have been dead a long time ; then could they not have risen with the same bodies as was laid in the graves, but they were raised in the same nature as Lazarus was, that had been four days dead : neither were their bodies spiritualized as the body of Christ was ; that is, they did not rise spiritual bodies ; but the same natural bodies that slept or died, did rise again, and appeared in the temple.

You do not read, that they did ever speak or eat afterwards as Lazarus and Christ did ; for Lazarus did live some years afterwards in that natural body which was born, and then died again, and is now asleep in the dust of the earth.

But Christ's body rising a spiritual body, it is alive, and behold it is alive for evermore.

But you may say, what became of those bodies of the saints which arose.

To which I answer, their bodies lay down in the same graves again, and there shall remain until the resurrection: only this was done to shew the power of Christ's resurrection, both in raising up of himself from death to life, and of his power in raising the saints out of their graves.

Which thing was but as a little fast, or but as a sign of his great power, which he hath gained to himself, by his death and resurrection, even power to raise the seed of faith to that eternal happiness, and to raise the seed of reason to that endless misery, which both seeds shall find at the general day of resurrection; when it shall be said, Come ye blessed, to the seed of faith, and, Go ye cursed, to the seed of reason.

And if you consider these things, they make more for the mortality of the soul than against it.

For it doth not say, that spirits rose out of the graves, but bodies, neither did spirits come into them.

But the power of Christ's resurrection had an influence on their bodies; which did cause their bodies to arise to shew his power as aforesaid.

More might be said on this thing; but where true faith is, may easily be understood the truth of it.

So, with my love to you as a civil man, and to your wife as a true believer, I rest,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

September 8, 1662.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, of Chesterfield, from London, dated the 11th of December, 1662.*

*Dear Friend, Elizabeth Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter, and am glad to hear of the benefit that you have received in the belief of this commission, and of your further joy you have received by my being with you. All that I can say in it is, that I am glad to hear that the seed of faith in such tender age should spring up as a fountain of living water unto eternal life; and the more strong your faith is grounded upon this commission of the Spirit, the more firm will you stand. It will be as a rock, which no storms nor winds whatsoever shall be able to make it fall; for every commission from God is a rock, and whosoever doth build upon it will stand sure, when as the sandy foundation, though it seem ever so strong, when the storm of death and the wind of eternal judgment doth come, then it will fall, because it was built upon the sand; for this personal God is the Head Corner-stone, and that Stone which is laid in Sion; and blessed are those that build upon it, which none can do but those that have a faith in a commission.

Therefore all that seeming shew of righteousness in the Quakers and others, it will avail them nothing, because it was built upon the sand, that is, upon an infinite incomprehensible spirit, without a body, which is but a sandy foundation; they will find so in the end, though they make slight of a God that is

cloathed with flesh and bone, yet this flesh and bone is the stone which the builders refused, which is become the Head of the Corner. Also it is that stumbling stone and rock of offence, which every man doth stumble at, but those that do believe in this commission of the Spirit; and you having expressed a great measure of faith in this commission of the Spirit, all that I shall say this time in this thing is, that you may grow in further understanding, faith, and knowledge of these things until you come to the possession of that eternal happiness, which your faith in this commission of the Spirit will lead you unto.

*Dear Friend,*

I have sent you the copy of Mr. Hatter's letter to John Leavins; I would desire you to take a copy of it, and send it me again, because my letter is joined with it. I shall be in London about a month hence; I do intend to take my journey on Tuesday next; so, with my love to your mother and Elizabeth Smith, Mr. Frewteril and his wife, I rest

Your Friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, from London, bearing date December 15, 1662.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter with the inclosed, and I have read it over, and I find very little in it more than there was in the other ; nay, the other was the chief master-piece, only towards the latter end of this doth give me better satisfaction than the other did, because in the latter end of this letter doth plainly shew what their God is which they believe in, which is no other but what the Heathen philosophers did declare, and something of Jacob Bemon's philosophy ; neither did it arise from their own revelation or experience, nor from the seed of reason within them, but merely by reading other folk's works : for I could, if it were of necessity, shew you a book that doth speak the very same words, and doth give the very same definition of God as they do ; for every Heathen philosopher will say, that God is love, and life, and wisdom, and glory, with many other excellencies in himself, and yet not to be defined or distinct, neither is he to be known by his creature.

To what purpose then did God send prophets and apostles into the world, to tell people of such a God as cannot be defined, nor made known unto man ; when as those that speak the Scriptures, their declarations were only to bring men to the knowledge of God ; therefore it is said in Scripture, it is life eternal to know the only true God, and Jesus Christ, whom thou hast sent.

It is but turning the words thus : it is life eternal to know, that this Jesus Christ, which is sent into the world, is the only true God ; for it is better, and a more safe way for a man to believe, that a mere mortal man is a God, than to believe God to be an infinite Spirit without a body : for can there be love, life, wisdom, and glory acted forth, and yet have no person or body to act in ? Can a man love his wife if she have never a body ? Yet by these, people must love God, and yet he hath no person at all, neither can he be defined nor known, which is contrary to the apostle John's faith ; for, saith he, if thou doest not love thy brother, whom thou doest see, how canst thou love God, whom thou didst never see. And because we never saw God with this natural eye, will it follow therefore, that we must believe that he is no formal person at all ; when as the Scripture doth call upon men to love the Lord their God, with all their hearts, and with all their strength, which is impossible for men to do, if God had no person at all ; nay, and not only a person, but the very person and form of a man, else a man could never love God ; for men doth love God because he is like God, for every thing doth love its like ; therefore it is that God loves man, because man's person and form is the image and likeness of God, therefore God loves man.

Indeed I need not write these things to inform you, for you have given great testimonies of your faith, light, and knowledge in a personal God, which this commission of the Spirit doth declare, which faith of yours shall bear you up above all philosophy knowledge whatsoever.

But I write these things that you may see the more clearly the vanity and emptiness, and how unsatis-



fied that faith is to the mind whose God hath no form nor person at all, which I know your own experience can witness, you having been acquainted with the Bemonist's principles. You know what satisfaction you found in it, and what you find now in the faith of this commission; for the faith of this commission will uncover all the cloathing of every opinion, though never so seeming righteous, whereby their nakedness will be seen.

*Dear Friend,*

I would desire you to send this letter inclosed as it is directed.

I would have sent by the Chesterfield carrier on Friday last, but he was gone a little before I came; therefore I thought good to put you to the trouble to send it to her, because I am going into Kent this Wednesday: and about a month hence I do intend to be at home again, therefore for the present I shall rest, with my love to you and your husband,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

My daughter Sarah and Mr. Hatter desireth to remember their loves to you and your husband.

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Sir Thomas Twisden, dated from Rootam in Kent, January 6, 1663, as followeth.*

Sir,

I UNDERSTAND that you are a judge of the civil law of the land, and that you are so by commission from the king: I suppose that you are the man which I have heard much of in London, commended for honour and renown in the wisdom and knowledge in the civil laws of England, else I suppose you would not have been chosen for that great place; which authority of yours I do own, and have always been obedient to the civil laws of the land, both to you and all other judges, neither did I ever break any of the king's laws, neither in the old king's time, nor now in this king's time; for I never did bear arms against his father, nor for no power then in being, neither have I had any meetings at my house, nor have been at any no where else, not since his majesty's restoration, nor many years before; so that it seems very strange, that I, being a free-born man of England, and a freeman of the city of London, and one that hath lived for many offices of the parish where I live, I say it is somewhat strange that I should not have so much liberty as to come into the country to see my wife's mother, with other relations; but I must be hunted after as if I had committed some treason or felonies; which things I am more innocent of, I think, than any man in the world is at this day. And yet, through the ignorance and darkness of men and women, which know neither the law of God nor the

law of the land, they have reported strange things unto you, which have caused you to have a bad opinion of as pure a truth as ever was spoken by prophet or apostle, and to look upon me to be a deceiver: but I would have your honour to be careful what judgment you give of spiritual things before you know the cause why, lest you sin against the Holy Ghost, a sin which will never be forgiven, neither in this world, nor in the world to come; for though you are knowing above most men in the law of the land, and can give judgment accordingly, even as the demerit shall deserve, yet God hath not made you the judge of spiritual and eternal matters, neither are you to judge of blasphemy against God: God himself is the only judge in those matters, and those whom he hath chosen, anointed, and sealed for that purpose, viz. his prophets and apostles, and those whom he hath sent now in this last age of the world.

But I suppose you know and do read in the Scriptures, that the prophets and apostles of old were counted by the generality of people in their time to be blasphemers and deceivers, and were persecuted thereupon; nay, the Lord Jesus himself was put to death upon that account, as may be read in the Scriptures.

And this I say, those which persecuted men upon the account of blasphemy (they having broke no civil law of the land) I say they would have been the same to the prophets and apostles of old, and to Christ himself, if they had been living in their time.

Also I understand you have a desire to see one of my books. Now I do not conceive that you desire to see it in love only, but that you might see what you could pick out of it, that you might have where-

withal against me, that you might persecute me the more.

Yet nevertheless, I am not afraid of your seeing my writings, nor ashamed of the doctrine contained therein; nay, I am not afraid if the king's majesty himself should see it; for my writings are more for the honour of the king, than any dishonour.

Therefore, if you please to send a messenger or carrier to London, where I live, and send money, they shall have it, for they cost a great deal of money the printing, neither will I lend any; for I find by experience, that when books be lent they are worse liked than when they are paid for: but if I had thought that you had desired to see it in love, you should have had not only one, but three or six presented unto you to peruse.

But I think most magistrates and people have forgot the Scripture language, which saith, forget not to entertain strangers; for some in entertaining strangers have entertained angels: as righteous Lot and faithful Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and divers others, that have received prophets in the name of a prophet, and so have received a prophet's reward, which reward is no less than the blessing of eternal life; which I suppose all men would willingly have: but instead of receiving a prophet in the name of a prophet, the people receive him as a blasphemer, a liar, and deceiver, and persecute him, and so instead of a prophet's blessing they receive a curse of eternal damnation.

This I know to be true, by great experience, these twelve years; for I have found more malice in the country where I have been a stranger and a pilgrim (as most prophets were) nay they will neither receive me themselves, nor suffer others that would; yet I

meddle with no man, neither do I invite any one to come where I am, but would rather they would forbear coming near me; for most people come to me only to try me, to catch words out of me, as the Scribes and Pharisees did to the Lord Jesus Christ, that they might have something to accuse me of to the rulers.

But I hope you being a ruler of the people (for every judge is a ruler) will not be an accuser and persecutor yourself; but if you be I shall be made able by the power of faith to bear it.

And what I have written, and the sentences I have and do pronounce, I shall willingly (if the laws of England will do it) seal it with my blood.

But it would be better and more commendable to do as Nicodemus (a ruler in Israel) did, which came to Christ by night to ask him questions.

Surely Nicodemus did not come to entrap and catch Christ in his words, whereby to have something against him to persecute him, but asked questions in love, desiring to be resolved; which was a good character, that this ruler came to Christ in love, and that he was an elect vessel.

It would be good for all rulers if they could follow his example in spiritual matters; for indeed rulers are to be learned and wise; to declare the matters of this world (as David doth say in the Psalms) for God hath chosen few rulers to be prophets to declare his mind. And that is the very cause so many rulers did persecute the prophets and apostles; you may read that the rulers of Israel did persecute the prophets, and the rulers of Israel did persecute the apostles.

Likewise I have had my share of persecution by the rulers of England, for these twelve years; but

what they and all persecuting rulers have got by it will do them but little good, for they procured no less than the sentence and seal of eternal damnation to themselves; neither will they be delivered from it; for no persecutor of a prophet, as he is a prophet, can be saved, that prophet not being guilty of the breach of the civil law of the land.

Therefore it is good for judges and rulers of the land to mind the place they are set in, and to judge of those things they know, viz. the laws of the land: and let them do righteous judgment according to the known law of the land, and they shall do well, and not to meddle with that which God hath reserved to himself, and will give power and judgment in spiritual matters to whom he please.

Therefore I should desire you to persist no further in persecuting of men for spiritual matters, lest you persecute the truth instead of a lie, and call that blasphemy which God doth own to be revealed by his Holy Spirit, and so come within the compass of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, a sin that never will be forgiven in this world, nor in the world to come.

Neither would I have you to think scorn to be advised by one so low, and you so high; for my power is as great in spiritual matters as yours is in things of nature.

And as your commission is to be judge from the king which I do own, so is my commission in spiritual things from the King of Heaven.

And as your commission will bear you out in all things you do according to the law of the land; so will my commission from God bear me out in what I do upon a spiritual account.

I have been more large than I did intend, but

things of this nature cannot be expressed in few words, as other things may be; but I shall say no more at present, but rest,

### LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

And if you would be any further informed of me, and my writings, you may have, for twenty-pence, a book, at my mother Martyn's, called, *The Quaker's Neck broken*, that will inform you further both of me and my writings.

*From Rootam in Kent,  
January 6, 1663.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, dated April 3, 1663*

*My dear Friend, Elizabeth Carter,*

I READ over your letter, and though the lines of your letter are but few, yet I find they are very pithy, and full of substance; which I am much rejoiced to see, and so much the more, in that one so young should grow so far in perfection of faith, as to know that the words or writings of faith should speak peace to the soul of a believer, and to cast yourself upon this rock, and if you perish, to perish there; which you have done well, for you cannot but grow in peace and satisfaction that casts itself upon a true

prophet, it is as if they did cast themselves upon God himself, for a true prophet is in God's stead, and they that receive him so, shall receive a prophet's reward, which is no less than eternal life.

For this I would a little inform you further, that there is no man nor woman, but they must have some prophet or minister or other, to pitch their faith upon, else they cannot be quiet in their minds, except they be Atheists.

And seeing there is a necessity that there must be a sandy foundation and a rock, or a false and a true ; and this sandy foundation is so large, that almost all the world doth build upon it ; and the rock is so little, that there can but few build upon it ; it hath but one Chief Corner-stone, even God himself ; but the world builds all upon the sand that have never a corner-stone at all to bear up their building, when the storm of death comes.

Therefore you may see what a multitude of messengers, ministers, and ambassadors there is in this world, of all sects and opinions, and every one of the messengers have store of people which do build upon them, which may be evident to a discerning eye that they all build upon the sand ; and that there should be but one true prophet in the world at this day, and that such young ones as you, and Elizabeth Smith, should build upon this commission of the Spirit, which is a sure rock of salvation.

There are other young ones in other places, which I find to be rather more confident, and do grow more in the faith of this commission than some that are of older years. The cause why it is so, is, because they were caught in faith's net before any other form of religion had laid hold on them.

I write these few lines to you for the further con-



firmation and growth of your faith ; so that you may receive the more full assurance here in this life, which is an hundred fold ; and in the life to come, life everlasting.

No more at present, but my love to yourself.

I rest your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*April 3, 1663.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, bearing date April 3, 1663.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the true Faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter with your daughter's inclosed, and am glad to hear you are well in health, and more especially in your faith and confidence of this commission of the Spirit ; and I do find every where, both in city and country, that those that do lay the greatest weight upon this commission do find the greatest peace and satisfaction in their minds, and are the more able to encounter with opposition where they meet with it ; for it is a hard matter for any of this faith to escape being opposed, because this commission and the faith of it fight against all the world.

For this being the faith of God's elect, it fights against all sects and opinions in religion in the world, and all opinions have a faith in that opinion they are of; but it is but the faith of devils, whatsoever they pretend. Why? Because there is none knows the true God, in his form and nature; and how is it possible that any man should have true faith, and yet not know the true God.

Therefore that faith which is built upon a false God must needs be no other but the faith of devils: therefore how few is there in the world at this day that can say as Paul did, *I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith, and henceforth there is laid up for me a crown of righteousness, which God the righteous Judge shall give?* Can any one fight the fight of faith, and yet not know the true God? And that is the very cause so many die unsatisfied in death; because they know not the true God, yet they despise that man that should declare him unto them; but they would have God to do it himself, and yet their God, in their imagination is so big, so infinite and incomprehensible, that he cannot be known nor comprehended by his creature. And yet they would have this unknown God to save them.

Therefore you that are enlightened in your understanding, who can by faith comprehend what the true God is, in his form and nature, you may see how the whole world lyeth in wickedness, ignorance, and darkness; neither can the world fight a good fight of faith; no, none can truly do so but those that have believed our report.

You speak in your letter of a man that came out of the North; it will be well for him if it be given

him truly to understand these things; but I have heard nothing of him as yet.

This letter of yours came when I was in Cambridge-shire; I have been little at home since Christ-tide; and the very morning that I went into Cambridge-shire, I received four letters from Mr. Hudson; two of them from Quakers there in Lancashire, which Mr. Hudson would have me send the sentence to those two Quakers and to a Presbyterian minister, which I have had no leisure to send till now: the same day as I deliver yours to the carrier, I shall send his. He is well, and remembers his love to all our friends of the faith. I have remembered yours, and Ellen Sudbury's love to him.

Also I have received since I came home a Quaker's letter, and a copy of Edward Bourne's letter, of Mrs. Griffith, which I cannot have leisure to answer at present; but I do intend to send an answer the next return of the carrier. My daughter is pretty well recovered of her sickness; she received your kindness which you sent, of Mr. Griffith, and desireth to remember her kind love to you and your daughter. I think her husband doth intend to write to you himself; therefore I shall say no more, only my love remembered to yourself, Elizabeth Smith, and the rest, Mr. Frewterill and his wife, with my love to Ellen Sudbury when you can.

So resteth your Friend in the eternal Faith,

L D O W I C K E M U G G L E T O N .

*London, April 3, 1663.*

Mrs. Griffith remembers her kind love unto you.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, bearing date from London, May 8, 1663.*

*My dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Dorothy Carter,*

I HAVE had a great desire to have sent to you before now, but I have been much hindered by other occasions, but it is not for want of love that I did not write to you before now; yet I am much straitened for time as ever I was, but I having finished an answer to Richard Farnsworth's letter, and taken a copy of it, have sent it to you, with Edward Bernard's letter; so that if you think good to take a copy of this Richard Farnsworth's letter, you may, before you deliver it; it will be some labour, but it will be necessary, though it may be hereafter it may be put in print.

For there are some friends here in London, that are very desirous to have this letter of Richard Farnsworth's with my answer; and that letter of Samuel Hooton's and W. S. which they sent to me first, and my answer of the four sheets to them, printed; which, perhaps, I may trouble you for some small matter towards the printing of them: but the captain that is the most desirous to have them printed, hath a son that did own this commission, and he is dead beyond the seas, in a place called Antego, which is a great grief to his father, both in respect as he was in the faith of this commission, and in respect of his temporal estate, for he had a great charge with him of his father's.

So that I do not know how things will fall out as to that, but when such a thing is resolved upon, I shall give you notice of it.

So, being in haste I shall only remember my love to yourself, and to your daughter, and Betty Smith, and all the rest of our friends of the faith therewith, if there be any; not forgetting my dear friend in the true faith, Ellen Sudbury. I long to hear how she and her husband doth.

So resteth your Friend in the true Faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

May 8, 1663.

I should be glad to hear from you as soon as you can. My daughter Sarah and her Husband remember their kind loves unto you, and so doth Mr. Hatter, with many other friends unknown to you, yet remember their love to you.

---

*A Letter of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's to Mr. Richard Sudbury, May 19, 1663.*

*Loving Friend, Richard Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date the first of May, 1662.

I am glad to hear that you are in health, and more especially that you do understand something more than you did when I was with you, of the form and

nature of God, and the form and nature of the right devil; and the difference betwixt the seed of reason, and the seed of faith, and the nature of a commission.

The knowledge of these things when they are sunk deep into the heart and do not remain only in the head; I say they will make you wiser than your fathers, and will yield you more peace and satisfaction to your mind, than all the religions and opinions in the world besides can do; because the knowledge of these things, it gives a peace which the world cannot give; nor no righteousness which is acted or wrought by the seed of reason, let it be ever so pure, it is but the righteousness of the law; and by the deeds of the law shall no flesh be justified, but by the righteousness of faith are we justified in the sight of God, and hath peace in God; and this justification and peace, it doth arise from the seed of faith which is God's own nature, and this is that which is called in Scripture the divine nature of God; where it is said, speaking to believers, *We are partakers of his divine nature*: now if God hath a divine nature, of necessity he must have a person, for there can be no nature of God, angels, man, nor any other creature nor thing, but it must have a person or substance; now a spiritual substance hath a nature as well as that which is natural.

So that God having a divine nature, he must needs have a spiritual, heavenly, and divine substance; and according to the faith of the Scriptures, this substance of God is no other but the form of a man, and this God-Man is no other but *Christ Jesus, which is the Alpha Omega, the beginning and the end, the first and the last, he that was dead and is alive, and behold he is alive for evermore*. Neither can there be any true peace to any upon the earth, but in the believing it

was God that poured out his soul unto death, and rose again, and is now living in that same body; and the faith in this gives true peace to the mind here, and the assurance of eternal life hereafter, which can never be known but in and by a commission, this being the last, and of the highest nature; which I am glad that you do confess a belief in, which is more than I did think you would have done when I was with you, for you being wrapped up and entangled with Jacob Bemon's principles and disciples with a little smatch of the Quakers, that there would have been no room for truth to take place in you; but I see now it is otherwise, for now you would wish to see me; but when I was with you I could discern no such thing, neither can I tell as yet whether ever I shall see you again, except you do come to London about some business. I shall be glad to see you, but if ever I have any occasion to come within twenty or thirty miles of you, I shall come and see you.

I understand by your letter that you are got into the bishop's court, that is a thing that is common every where in the countries, but as for us at London, we are very quiet as to that; so people will forbear meeting, and pay tithes and taxes, they may live quiet enough here; but I have been in Cambridge-shire and spent the most part of this winter, and they are cited into the bishop's court for not going to church, and some for not baptizing their children, as you are, but there is none of this faith that doth go, except one or two that are weak and fearful, and loth to part with a little money to preserve a good conscience free from idolatry; but some of our friends have been cited in very oft, and would not appear, but at last the apparitors did arrest them

with a writ to appear at the Quarter-Sessions, and there they were made to pay ten shillings a piece, so that they could do them no further harm for six month's time; others again, if they did appear at the first summons, they paid seventeen shillings, and were discharged; for it is only a money business.

Therefore my advice to you is to give the apparitor his fee; if you do give him something more than what is stated by their laws, perhaps he will put out your name, if not, appear at the court, and pay the charges of it; for there is no oaths, nor any thing else imposed upon you, but only pay the charges of the court and be gone; but if you let it run till you be suspended, that will be taken off for eight shillings, for it is only to get money: now there is some baptists, and others, that will not pay any money at all, so that they do proceed to excommunication: now what the event of their excommunication is I cannot hear, but I do advise all our friends rather to part with a little money, for that is it that all courts do look for; and so preserve their temporal well-being, and their conscience, free from idolatry; for money is *Cæsar's*, *Therefore give Cæsar the things that are Cæsars, and God the things that are his*; for all tribute and taxes which is laid upon the people, by the power of the nation, whether it be the spiritual courts so called, or the civil courts, it is all *Cæsar's* tax, and so ought to be paid by all those that love peace of conscience better than money.

Therefore my advice is that you would do as before-said, for I know a little money will let you free in this matter.

No more at present, but my love to yourself. I rest.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

May 19, 1663.



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, bearing date from London, May the 19th. 1663.*

*Dear Friend, in the true Faith, Ellen Sudbury.*

I AM glad to hear a few lines from you, and though you have not been well in body, yet I perceive you have grown more strong in the faith of this commission, and in the assurance of eternal life, which is the chiefest and greatest thing that can be attained in this life; which faith of yours shall carry you up here in this life, and not only so, but *according to your faith it shall be unto you, for you shall see your God face to face, in that kingdom of eternal glory.* And this faith which you have in this commission of the Spirit, *is that earnest of the Spirit which is the evidence of things not seen, and the substance of things hoped for.* There is no knowing of God, nor any things above the stars, but by faith, therefore *without faith it is impossible to please God,* neither can a man please himself without faith, *for great and wonderful things have been done by the power of faith;* and yet the peace of mind, and the assurance of eternal life, is greater than all. For the time was, when as I would have given the whole world if it had been in my power; nay, I would willingly have laid down my life to have procured favour with God, or to know my eternal happiness, but could not; but now eternal life is freely given me, made known to me, I am not so willing to lay down my life as I was before; for before, I thought to procure peace with God by suffering, which could not be; but now, by faith, I

have obtained the assurance of eternal life without laying down my life.

So that what I suffer now it is from life, and not to gain life, which all men which have not this faith do suffer to gain life, and not from any true life of faith; neither can they say the life that they live is by the faith of the true God, as we can, for if God hath never a person, (as they say) there can be no true faith at all: therefore be not you discouraged because of the fewness that believe or receive this commission of the Spirit; for if there should be none but yourself in those parts, yet your faith and blessedness, which hath been declared upon you, shall bear you up, and confirm you the more, both of the truth of the Scriptures, and of the doctrine that is held forth by this commission of the Spirit, for the Scriptures are full of sure examples; here and there one, *that did receive a prophet in the name of a prophet*. And as for William Watson's tempting of you to speak evil of me, I know that is the nature of the devil so to do. And as for his going up and down with Richard Farnsworth's letter, saying that he durst, and himself speak evil of me, that belongs only to the devil so to do, especially those that are damned by me; for it is not Richard Farnsworth's letter, nor all the men in the world, and letters, that can or shall take off his damnation again. But if William Watson do but read, or hear my answer read to Richard Farnsworth's letter, he will have small cause to boast of that letter.

I hope our friend Dorothy Carter hath taken a copy of it before now, expecting that she will send it to you, though I did not desire her so to do when I sent it, yet I hope you have it before you receive this.

Therefore let the devil Watson, and all they that are under the sentence of this commission, rage and do what they can, they shall never take away that assurance of eternal life from you, neither shall they deliver themselves from that damnation which I have pronounced upon them.

No more at present, but my love to yourself.

I rest your friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, bearing date from London, June 19, 1663.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the eternal Truth, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter bearing date May 18th, 1663, and am glad to hear of your health, and more especially of your faith and confidence in this commission of the Spirit, for that will make your life both comfortable here, and happy hereafter.

I had given you an answer before now, but that I was to go into Kent at that time when I received yours, and was there a matter of eight or ten days; but now being at home again, I shall give you an answer to those things of most concernment in your letter.

The first thing is, I am glad your daughter hath so good an opinion of Richard Sudbury, as to give testimony of his faith in this commission of the Spirit.

Indeed I do find by his writing, that he is very much enlightened in the knowledge of many things which this commission doth declare, to what he did when I was there: also I do see by his letters that there is love to truth, which was not in him then.

Indeed I did little expect that ever he would have received the doctrine of the true God, and the right devil; not in the love of it. But this I will say, he will know, to his everlasting peace, the difference between Jacob Bemon's doctrine and the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit, which he, nor no other can do, but by faith in this commission of the Spirit.

I hope he and his wife are well, and those friends that were to be at your house this Witsuntide.

The second thing is, that you and Mr. Frewterill are cited into the bishop's court, for which you would have my advice.

I shall give you the same advice as I do all other believers in the countries, for they are cited into the bishop's court every where in the countries; some of the believers do pay their monies, and so they proceed no further; yet they lye liable to be cited again every month, but I do not hear they are so extreme as to do it, for it is but to get a crown or an angel a year of you, that is all they look after; and if a man be able, he had better do it and pay it, for his quietness sake, than to stand it out. Others again that are poor, are excommunicated quite, and so they remain, and that is as far as they can go.

I do not understand that the bishop's courts have any such power not as yet to strain upon any man's goods for the charges of the court, according to the old law formerly they had, but except the Parliament do revive and ratify that law a-new, they dare

not put it in execution : else excommunication can go no further than thus, that is to say, you shall be cast out of the church, so that you shall not be partakers of the ordinances of God, not as to receive the sacraments ; and if you die, you shall not be buried in the church-yard, nor have Christian burial, as they call it ; and if you have any debts owing to you, you shall not have the benefit of the law to get your own.

These, and such-like, are the effects of excommunication : therefore, in my judgment, it is better to give them their fees now while it is but little, so you can keep the mind free from oaths and worship ; it is better let them have some of your money, for that is the world's God, for money will buy off excommunication, condemnation, and worship ; and all that the bishop's courts can do, or they aim at, is but money, for if you be damned afterward they care not, so they can but get your money ; therefore you need not much trouble yourself about that, for a little money will deliver you out of that trouble.

We are very quiet here at London as to that, but only taxes go on more and more ; but, as for worship, it is not here, so we do not meet nor neglect paying of tythes, we worship who or what we will ; the cause, I believe, is of the sectary party, four for one, if not more, so that it is impossible for them to bring the people to an uniformity of worship ; and for watching of schools, the bishop's licence will hold good, for there is a friend of mine of this faith, which did keep a school before the king came in, but when the bishop's courts were settled they would not let him keep school without a licence, and that was a hard matter to get without swearing, or going to church : he went to the secretary of the bishop's

court, being of his acquaintance, and told him, if he would help him to a licence he would give him content; the secretary told him he could not well do it, except he would show himself at church, or swear. My friend said he could not swear, nor go to church, and if he could not do it without those two things, he must lay it down. So, at the last, the officer did promise to get him one: and so he did, without swearing or going to church; it cost my friend but six shillings and eight pence, and so he left his conscience free from offence. And because you may see that this school-master is one of this faith, I have sent you a letter of his, which he sent to me lately, but I would have you send it me again as soon as you can; he liveth near Cambridge, but it was at the bishop's court at Cambridge that he had his licence.

And as for that Evans at Nottingham, I do not know the man, neither was he of our society, for I know all that have been of our society, and have slunk away; there is none of them that dare speak evil of that which they did formerly own, neither was there ever any families ruined by following us, but many families have been upheld and preserved by us. How is it possible that any families should be ruined by us, when we never lay any burthens upon any; for my part, all the while that John Reeve was living, I never had two-pence of all the believers in England, except it was of one gentleman, but have spent many a pound for the commission-sake; for I do believe I was above forty pounds the worse in my estate for this commission, for I did not live of the Gospel, as the apostles did, without working; I have been more true in that particular than ever any apostle was, or ever any Quaker was, for there can-

not be so many speakers of the Quakers but they must be maintained by their disciples, which I never was, neither was John Reeve, for John Reeve's wife and his daughter did get most part of his living, for if he had got no more than what was given him, it was but little, for he never laid no burthen upon any; if they were moved to give him sometimes 1s. 6d. or 2s. 6d. so it was, he never compelled any, but they did it freely of themselves, which could not ruin any family; neither was he ever drunk in his life, to my knowledge, for he was too innocent and sober-natured a man to be drunk: but I conceive this Evans is mistaken in the man, I believe it was John Reeve's brother, for he, indeed, towards his latter end, was grown a drunkard and sot, and, perhaps, this Evans was of his society, which was upon the rant, and the ranters indeed did ruin many families. There have been divers others that have laid aspersions upon John Reeve, because of his brother's foolish practice; but, as for himself, he was, in that point, as a child that weaned is; but no body can help people's believing of lies, no more than we can help believing of truth.

Therefore let the Quakers believe what they will of John Reeve, that will not deliver them from the sentence which he and I have passed upon them; and as for this Evans, but that I think he is mistaken in the man, I would have sent the sentence to him for his lies.

And as for my coming down to see you, I cannot possibly promise you at present, but I do think our friend Mr. Hatter must go into Yorkshire about a month hence at the farthest, and he doth intend to be one night at Mr. Sudbury's, for that is in his way, so that he cannot come to you, but I suppose he will

send you word when he will be there, so that, if you can, you may meet with him there, and, if I can possibly, I will come along with him, for I have a desire to see you all over again; and the more, because Mr. Sudbury hath given such testimonies of his faith in the true God, and his desire to see me.

No more at present, but my love to yourself, your Daughter, and Elizabeth Smith, and all the rest of our friends in the Faith.

Your Friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter in Chesterfield, bearing date from London, July the 18th, 1663.*

*Dear Friend,*

I THOUGHT good to give you notice, though I am uncertain myself, but, I think, Mr. Hatter will be at Mr. Richard Sudbury's on Wednesday night, being the 23d of July, and if he does come, as I suppose he will, for he must come then or not at all, for he cannot stay above a day longer if he comes at all; and if he comes out on Monday or Tuesday, I do intend to come along with him, but if he doth not come at all, I will come myself the next week after; but, if you can, be at Ellen Sudbury's on Wednesday next, that you may see Mr. Hatter, for



he goes no nearer you than Nottingham ; and if you do lose your labour in seeing him, you may take comfort in seeing your cousin Sudbury, for I cannot give the certainty of it, yet I thought good to send by the post this Saturday night, else I could not convey any notice of it to you, for he must come at a day's warning; so that no letter could be conveyed unto you, neither can he stay at Ellen Sudbury's but one night ; and as for my staying with you longer than I did before, that I cannot do, but I do intend to stay with you about so long time as I did before.

So being in haste, I shall take leave, with my love remembered unto yourself, and unto your daughter, and Elizabeth Smith, and all other friends. I rest

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Thomas Highfeild, Gardener in Nottingham, bearing Date from Chesterfield, July 31, 1663.*

*Thomas Highfeild,*

I UNDERSTAND that you are a Quaker, and that the Quakers do sometimes meet at your house, so that you cannot be ignorant of those letters of Samuel Hooton, and W. S. which they sent to me,

and of my answer to them, as also that letter of Richard Furnesworth's, and my answer to him.

In which letters of mine you may see, if you have but the single eye of faith, why I do oppose that sort of people more than any other sect of religion, because, as I have expressed in those letters, the Quakers are the greatest fighters against God's being a person of himself (of any) they being led and guided by the spirit of antichrist in this last age, which is transformed into the likeness of an angel of light, for that they have got their God all within them; so that they deny God to have a person or body of his own without them, so that they are that spirit of antichrist that doth deny the Father and the Son, that is, they deny Jesus Christ to have become in the flesh; I mean they deny Jesus Christ to have flesh and bone of his own, which is the same flesh and bone that he suffered death in; I say that same flesh and bone is now living in heaven above the stars, and not as the Quakers do vainly imagine him to be, all diffused into spirits, and so he is gotten into them; and this is that which they call the light of Christ in them, and so they say that Christ is in them from that Scripture, where it is said, *Know ye not that Christ is in you, except you be reprobates*; never considering that saying in Scripture, *Let Christ dwell in your hearts by faith*. Now that which dwells in a man's heart by faith, it doth not dwell in a man's heart in its person and essence, for if one man had the person and essence of God in him, then I say God can be in one particular person, as he was in the body of Christ; therefore it is said in Scripture, *That the fulness of the godhead dwelt bodily in him*, that is, the essence, substance, spirit and being of God was com-

passed all within that body of Christ, which was flesh, blood and bone in the state of mortality, and so the godhead life was made capable to suffer the pains of death ; therefore it is said concerning Christ's death, that he was offered up through the eternal Spirit, so that the eternal Spirit quickening into life again, it raised that flesh and bone again, and in the raising again it was made spiritual, and so became capable to ascend above the stars, where he now is in that same body which he suffered death in ; so that Christ cannot be in every man's body, not in his spiritual person and essence, but he may dwell in all men's hearts by faith, though he be not in the world at all ; if men have but so much faith as to believe that flesh of Christ to be the flesh of God, and that blood of his to be the blood of God ; this is to eat his flesh, and drink his blood, and so they shall never die, that is, that eternal death ; so that it is not the light of Christ within a man that will deliver from eternal death, but faith in the person of Christ without a man. This I know to be truth, I being one of the two last chosen witnesses of the Spirit, to declare what the form and nature of the true God is, the form and nature of the right devil ; the place and nature of hell ; and the right heaven ; the person and nature of angels ; the mortality of the soul ; with many other heavenly mysteries which do arise from the knowledge of these six heads, which hath been declared in our writings, which I do suppose you cannot be ignorant of, and you being of that form, and others of the Quakers ; therefore, by virtue of my commission, I am moved to write these lines unto you, I knowing that the Quakers are led and guided by the spirit of Antichrist, which is nothing else

but the devil transformed into an angel of light ; but that light within them being darkness, it is the greatest darkness of all the seven churches.

And though you in that way do seem to be the most pure in shew and righteousness of life, yet your righteousness of life is but legal, which is nothing else but the righteousness of the law, which no flesh shall be justified by ; for that which you call the light of Christ within you, is nothing else but the light of the moral law which is written in your seed and nature, which is reason, which doth cause your thoughts to accuse and excuse, which is no other but what the heathens had before the law was given to Moses ; but as for the righteousness of faith, you Quakers are totally ignorant of, and so not being justified by faith, you cannot have peace with God.

Therefore do not you think that the righteousness of life can save you, for it is but the righteousness of the law ; and though you ought not to leave this righteousness of the law undone, because it is good amongst men, but nothing but faith in the true God, and that righteousness that flows from it, can justify the mind, and give true peace as to eternal happiness, which is impossible you Quakers should have, seeing you deny the object of faith, which is the body and flesh and bone of God.

I write not these lines unto you as expecting you to decline your principle, for you are too deeply riveted in that lie to come to truth ; yet because you shall be left without excuse, I have written these lines unto you, that you may know there is a true prophet now in England, which hath declared truth unto you, or set life and death before you ; but it is the nature of your principle to chuse death rather than life ; therefore, by virtue, power and authority

of my commission, I do charge and command you (as I have done many of the preachers of the other six churches) that you would leave off speaking or preaching of that lying doctrine which the Quakers teach, which is to mind the light within them, but deny the body and person of Christ without them; neither have you any commission to do as you do, for the light within a man was never a sufficient commission to make a man a minister, messenger, or ambassador of Christ.

Therefore, if you shall exercise the office of a public preacher, or gather the people to meet at your house upon a religious account (for you do but deceive yourselves, and other ignorant and silly people;) therefore, if you shall do any of these things aforesaid, after the receipt of this letter, then, for this your disobedience unto this commission of the Holy Spirit, I do pronounce you cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Witnesses and Prophets unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus, in Glory.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Goodwife Wylds, William Young, and Thomas Martyn of Kent, dated from London, August 27, 1663.*

**I UNDERSTANDING** that you three are fallen in your minds from that true faith, and spiritual worship, which doth belong to this spiritual commission, and so have given up yourselves to worship as the priests of the nation do ; for I understand that you three do all go to church, to save yourselves from suffering a little damage in your outward estates, which you will find contrary to your expectations. I thought that you had been very well satisfied about that the last time I was with you ; but your faith was not tried as it is now.

Yet you, Goody Wylds, had no intent to go to the public worship ; then, however, you did pretend unto me it was but for the trial of other believers ; but now it doth appear otherwise ; and Thomas Martyn could say unto you, that you should lose your peace, and be damned to the grave's mouth, and yet he himself should do the same thing, there being at that time no trial put upon him. Oh ! how strong is mens faith where there is no trial of it ; but that faith which doth endure the fiery trial to the end shall receive the crown of life.

But I perceive that you, because you were blessed by John Reeve, think you shall not be damned, though you do bow your knee to Baal, or worship Baal ; but I would not have you so ignorant as to think, that you can shew yourselves at church, to

save your estates, and yet not to worship a false God. Is not all the worship of the nation set up by man ? and if man command you to worship, or else to pay your money, if you do obey to save your money, do you not worship as the nation doth ? and if the worship of the nation be true, then the worship of God in spirit and truth (which this commission of the Spirit holds forth) must be false. For, deceive not yourselves, you cannot serve God in spirit and truth, and give your bodies to the worship of the nation ; for where the heart is, there is the body also ; and where the body is, there is the heart ; and it can be no otherwise : therefore do not blind your eyes as to think that you may shew yourselves at church to save yourselves from sufferings, and yet own this commission of the Spirit, you are mightily mistaken if you think to do so. But I have learned experience by by this your fall, you Goody Wylds and Thomas Martyn, which were the strongest in faith, revelation, and experience in this commission of the Spirit in all that country, and yet the least able to suffer any thing for it, notwithstanding this commission of the Spirit hath freed you from abundance of bondages and entanglements which other sects do undergo ; a yoke which our fathers, the apostles and saints, did undergo in their times. These things this commission of the Spirit hath freed the believers of it from that bondage, which all other sects are under to this day : and yet now there is a little trial, how few is there that will hold out to the end. And if your faith cannot abide the trial of losing a little money or imprisonment, what would you do if it were death itself, as all other commissions have suffered death for their worshipping of God contrary to the worship of the nation ; neither doth this com-

mission lay such a strict law upon the believers of it, as Christ did upon his ; for except a man would forsake father and mother, wife and children, house and land, for his sake, they were not worthy of him. But you will not forsake the temptation of your husband, nor the other two the brawling of their wives, for the faith's sake; but you have done much like unto Ahab; you have sold yourself to work spiritual witchcraft, through the temptation of your husband, and their wicked wives.

For this I say to you, that temptations will come, but happy are they that are not overcome by temptations; for our Lord was tempted of the devil, but not overcome. And so hath all prophets, apostles, and saints, been tempted by the devil without, as well as by the devil reason within. But those as have overcome the temptations of the devil without, and the devil within, they shall come forth as gold tried in the fire. But I perceive you three have been overcome by the temptation of the devil without and within both. You, by the devil your husband without you, and the other two by the serpents their wives without them, with some other by-ends, which your reason the devil did lay hold on, which have overcome the seed of faith in you, and hath carried it captive into prison, and hath made shipwreck and spoil of your faith; neither do I think that you will ever be delivered into that liberty and assurance of eternal life as you had before; for you have quenched the spirit of truth and revelation, which did run as a river of living water in you: it will run but little in you now, hardly to bear you up into the assurance of eternal life; for you know not what you have done in forsaking the worship of the living God, and joined to the worship of the nation. For if their worship



be true, then this worship we have professed is false.

Again, did not this commission of the spirit deliver you, Goody Wylds, from all our sins, which were more and greater than ordinarily is committed by other people; and not only so, but your faith in it, and Thomas Martyn's, it made you strong in faith, revelation, and experience, above all in that country. It was a crown of glory upon your heads; but you have pulled it off your head, and trampled it under your feet, by bowing your knee unto Baal, for you were much like unto Sampson for strength.

For your faith and revelation in this commission of the Spirit did break all the cords of the Philistine's asunder; that is, all the arguments and reasonings, which other sects brought from the Scriptures to bind you withal; but now you are become like Sampson, when his hair was cut he was like another man, and so had his eyes pulled out.

So it is with you, you are become now like other men, for your eye of faith is pulled out, and your eye of reason will be pulled out shortly also; so that you will be as weak in the true faith as other men, or any other experience: for the devil hath caught you fast enough now, he hath got you to bow down to his worship. Let it be out of hypocrisy, or out of sincerity of heart, the devil matters not for that, you have yielded obedience unto him, and you will have much ado to get out of the snares of the devil to your lives end, think of it what you will; for it is a dangerous thing to find that grace might abound, because you think you shall not be damned to eternity for it, therefore you will do despite to the spirit of grace, so that you may be set down, like prophane Esau, who sold his birthright for a mess of pottage.

What have you done less than he, who have valued the fears of the loss of some of the goods of this world more than a good conscience, and faith towards God, which gives the assurance of eternal life, which I am certain you will lose the sense of? Neither will your mess of pottage be any bigger for what you have done, but rather the less; for it must be as Christ said in another case, *he that is willing to lose his life shall save it*; so, on the contrary, you that are willing to save your mess of pottage, you shall lose it. For I say, it is hard for the devil to get a mess of pottage in this world as it is for the saint, let them bow down e'er so much; for you will see, in a short time, what profit it will be unto you in this world. Neither will you eat your mess of pottage with that peace of mind as you had before; for this art of yours, it will be as gall and wormwood in your pottage; it will be worse than playing at cards, and being drunk, or all the sins that you committed in the days of your ignorance. For God was always more angry at Israel's worshipping a false God, than any other sin whatsoever; because other sins were infirmities of nature, which nature cannot avoid, it being naturally prone unto it. But this bowing down to worship that which you know to be false, neither do you do it because you own it to be truth, but only through slavish fear of suffering some loss in this world; which thing is worse seven times than if you had owned it to be the true worship of God, as other people do.

Therefore do not deceive yourselves, and count it your liberty, as if you had more liberty in point of worship, by this commission of the Spirit, than the rest of the believers have; for some of the believers of this commission have suffered more in their outward

estates than ever you would have done, yet they have thought themselves happy in that they kept their hearts pure and undefiled from that spiritual whoredom to worship a false God, or bow to the false worship, contrary to the faith they have in this commission of the Spirit : for if all the believers of this commission of the Spirit should do as you have done, it would be but a vain thing for them to dispute or plead for the doctrine of the true God, and the right devil, with many other heavenly mysteries, which no other forms of worship do know. And as you have been instruments to publish and make known this doctrine, which thing was a crown of honour upon your heads, but now you have done the greatest dishonour to this commission of the Spirit that could be done ; so that your glory will be your shame. For it will be but a vain thing for you to profess any faith in this commission of the Spirit any more ; for I shall never own you as I did before ; neither can I have that love and affection for truth's sake, as I had before ; neither do I care for ever seeing you any more. Yet I shall bear the shame of it, and though you should all of you fall, so that I should be left alone, as Elijah was, yet my faith shall bear me up.

And if you find the same peace as you did when you lived in the obedience of faith of this commission of the Spirit, then hath God revealed no truth unto me.

I shall say no more, but leave you to the worship of the nation, and as fallen from the true faith in the true God.

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets unto the true God.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Christopher Hill, Sept. 23, 1663.*

*Loving Friend, Christopher Hill,*

I RECEIVED yours, with the letter inclosed, wherein I perceive that your family is afflicted with the small-pox. If I should say I am sorry for it, it would not ease you e'er the more; for these things are natural to all, and falls all alike to all. So that time puts an end to all diseases, and to life itself. So that death and life is always at strife one with the other, and so it will be as long as the world doth endure. But when time shall be swallowed up into eternity, then shall there be no more death to the seed of faith, nor no more life to the seed of reason; for death shall swallow up the seed of reason's life and heaven into that eternal death. So on the contrary, the seed of faith's life shall swallow up that death and hell into eternal life. For great is the power of faith and the power of reason. The one goes into the power of death and drunkenness, and the other into the power of life and light eternal.

It is well, and I am glad that you are so stedfast in your faith, notwithstanding the last proclamation. I wish you may hold out to the end, and not do as others have done, to put your hand to the plough, and look back; that is, to worship God in spirit and truth, according to the faith of this commission of the Spirit, and then to turn back to the worship of the nation, either to gain or save a suit of apparel, which is but a mess of pottage. And as for you, mother Wyld, if that were her excuse, as you have written, for her

going to church to try their spirits, and finding the priest to be a devil, and therefore she would not hear him any more ; it is but a poor excuse, not so good as Adam's fig-leaves were to cover his nakedness.

Now I cannot tell whose spirits she went to try, whether the saint's spirits, or the devil's spirits ; but let it be which she will, she went the wrong way to try spirits : For if she went to try the devil's spirits, it was that which they did desire ; so that the devil tried her spirit to make her fall down and worship him, even as he did unto Christ ; so that Christ did not try the devil, but the devil tried him. And if Christ had yielded to the devil's temptation, as she hath done, what would have become of us all, his own faith and power, and the faith of the elect ? There would have been havock and shipwreck made of it, and the devil would have been more than a conqueror, as he hath been in those three. And if she did it to try the spirits of the weak saints, that was as much as to tempt the spirit of truth. For when the apostle bad the believers in his time try the spirits, whether they were of God, or no, it was not that they should turn back again to the worship of the law, for to encourage the devils, that their worship is right, and to weaken the faith of the saints. This is not the right way of trying of spirits : they had better have set their own faith to have been tried by the devil's, like gold in the fire. I am sure it would have yielded them more peace here, and more glory hereafter, and as good a livelihood in this world as they will now have.

And as for her knowing the priest to be a devil, she knew that many years before she came to own this commission. She need not to have gone to church to have known that ; for she knew all the priests of the

nation, and of all sorts, were false, and not sent of God. And as for her peace and satisfaction, I shall let that alone: Yet this I am sure of, if faith hath not its perfect work in the soul, there cannot be that perfect peace. Neither did I slight her faithfulness to this commission, but did honour her upon that account more than all in that country; which the fall of her hath done more mischief to the commission of the Spirit, than all the rest besides: for if she and they had not been declared blessed by John Reeve, I should not have mattered it so much; for I always had a great respect to those which John Reeve did bless, in case I did approve of them. And it was well that Claxton was not declared blessed, either by John Reeve, or myself; if he had, I should not have excommunicated him for ever, as he now is. But I see what a confusion there will be with the believers of this commission when I am dead: For almost all those that disadhere unto John Reeve, are some dead, and many of the rest fallen away from that stedfastness of faith; but blessed and happy are they who hold out to the end. She might have said to bear it with patience, had she given no cause: For I do never use to write so sharply without a cause; for I was always naturally inclined to moderation, patience, and long-suffering with such weaknesses in the saints; which I know John Reeve would never have done nor borne.

But in points of worship, God himself, and all prophets and apostles, were angry at; for that is as the apple of God's eye: and all the controversy in the whole world, persecution, killing and slaying, all about worship, from Cain and Abel, in the beginning of the world, even to this day, and to the end of the world, and so forth.

Mr. Burton would have Goodman Miles to come up and take some order about his cyder; for he hath let his house to another, and that man doth want the room; so that he will not let it stand there. He takes possession of it next Tuesday, therefore let him come as suddenly as possibly he can.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, bearing date November 14, 1663.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the true faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I DID understand by your last letter, bearing date October 1, 1663, that the next week but one after that, I should hear from William Newcome; but I have not heard from him not yet; but I believe some occasion or other is the cause that doth hinder it.

Also I perceive by your letter that you would willingly have those letters of mine to the Quakers put in print, which in my last letter to you I was willing to have let them alone for a time; for I had not read over his printed pamphlet when I sent you that letter; but since I have read it over, and have shewed it to some other friends in the faith, and they are very desirous that I would write an answer to that printed pamphlet of Richard Farnsworth's, and put it in print

with the other letters of the Quakers, with my answers unto them.

It would be the greatest discovery of the deceit of the Quaker's doctrine of any thing that hath been yet written; so I know it well. I had thoughts when the Interpretation of the Eleventh Chapter of the Revelations was printed, not to have printed no more; but seeing truth cannot be so public and made known to the world without printing, because every one cannot read writing; besides, it is too tedious to write much; so, for the desires of others, and that truth may be made more known in the world, and that the Quakers may not tyrannize in their way, as if they had printed such a thing as could not be answered; in consideration of these things I have written an answer to this printed pamphlet, and I have spoken with the printer about it, and we are almost agreed concerning it. I do intend to have that letter of mine to Edward Bourne printed; for that was the first which did anger them. Also I will have Samuel Hooton and William Smith, their first letter to me, and my answer to them, and Richard Farnsworth's first letter to me, and my answer to it, and my answer to this printed pamphlet; all these I do intend to put in print: therefore, what you shall be willing and free, and our friend Mr. Sudbury, and if there be any other there that is able, what they are free, they may contribute towards the printing of them, and I will send you some of them down as soon as they are printed, which I suppose will be about a fortnight or three weeks hence; for the printer doth say, if he doth not do them in that time he will not do them at all.

So in haste I rest at this time, only my dear love to



yourself, and to your daughter, and Betty Smith, and all the rest of our friends in the faith.

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*London, November 14, 1663.*

My wife desires to be remembered to you all, though unknown.

Let me hear from you as soon as you can.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, bearing date the 27th of November, 1663, as followeth.*

*Dear and loving friend in the true faith of Jesus, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter and the twenty shillings of William Holland's man. I am very glad to hear that you are all well; and also do understand by your letter what the mayor of Chesterfield hath done, and that I must make my personal appearance at Derby assizes, which I do intend to do, that the bail may not suffer. I know nothing to the contrary, as yet, for I have asked counsel about it, and they tell me because I did put in bail in the open court, I cannot remove it; so that I must be forced to see you again; but do not you be troubled about it; for if I had ten thousand damned devils before me, I should

not be afraid ; neither can they do any great matters against me, not according, as the laws of England stand at this time ; so that the envy of the devils cannot go beyond their own law, only it will be some charge and trouble to come so far ; but as to what they can do by their law, I do not much value what they can do , for I shall justify most part of their charge which they have against me ; and the more I suffer for it, the more hotter will the fire of hell burn in those that are my enemies.

And as for Mr. Pender and others being bound over to come in against me by the mayor, I say it is more than the mayor can do, except the mayor do take the business upon himself to prosecute and persecute me, which doth not concern him ; for he did what was his place to do, and that was to commit me to prison, that was as much as concerned him in his place ; neither was he bound, nor no other man, to witness my words against me, not upon any penalty, if I had been tried then, much less now ; but if the mayor and others their malice be so great towards me, they thinking to make great matters of my words, which they urged out of me, which I shall justify in the open court to their eternal shame, let their malice be what it can be to me, I shall be made able to bear it. And if they can bear their eternal torment as well, it will be well for them ; but if there be any way that I can prevent my coming there, and free my bail, I will ; if not, I will come ; but you shall know further before that time. I had thoughts to have written a few lines to Mr. Pender, to have shewed him that it was more than the mayor could do, to bind him or any other to witness against me, there being no penalty or punishment can be inflicted upon them in case they do not ; but if the mayor and priest

have bound themselves through their malice to prosecute the business, all that they can do, is to subpoena you in for a witness ; and if you do not go, what penalty can be inflicted upon you for it? None at all ; but some through ignorance and fear, and others through malice and envy, both mixed together, will do what mischief they can to me ; but I shall be able to bear it all ; so that I shall not persuade Mr. Pender, nor no other, against what their ignorance and fear will lead them unto ; but I being in haste at this time, shall say no more in that business.

*Dear Friend,*

I have here sent you Charles Cleve's letter unto Richard Farnsworth ; I would desire you to convey it to him some way or other. I would have you read it over before. I do think it will be too tedious to take a copy of it ; yet I have done it here, because of others seeing of it to lend it about. I think the book of the Quaker's Letters and mine will be out the next week, and the next week after I shall send you some of them ; for I must go into Kent a week before Christmas, because the parish doth intend to choose me constable this year, so I shall prevent them if I can. I go to my wife's mother, but after the twelve days are over I do intend to come again.

Our friend Mr. Hatter is very well, and doth give us good hopes of a good success of his business ; but when he doth intend to come to London he maketh no mention in his letter. He waits as he saith for his wife to be delivered of child-birth, and if she do well it will be much better for him.

Our friend Mr. Hudson doth intend to come to London about Candlemas day, and he says he will

come by Chesterfield, to see you, and through Nottingham, to see Ellen Sudbury.

And as for that priest, whose heart is set on the fire of hell, that fain would have me hanged or burned, the same measure shall be meted unto him which he would have done unto me, and that I shall let him know ; but at present I have no time to write the sentence unto him, nor to those other two you mention in your letter ; but if I can when I send the books, I will.

So I shall say no more, but rest

Your loving friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, November 27, 1663.*

My love remembered to your daughter and Betty Smith, and all the rest of our friends in the faith.

My wife desires to be remembered unto you all.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, London, December 13, 1663.*

*Loving Friend, Mr. Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, with your wife's inclosed, and I am glad to hear you are all well, and of your faith in this commission of the Spirit. I wish you may grow more and more in it, until you be as strong in your faith, as Sampson was in his body,

even to destroy a thousand Philistines, with the jaw bone of an ass: so the power of faith in the true God will destroy a thousand of the seed of the serpent, with the word of their mouth, and so it doth every where, where men and women are thoroughly grounded in it; it hath great effect upon the seed of the serpent, all well as my faith hath.

This I know by experience, by several believers of this commission of the Spirit.

I also received five shillings of the carrier.

Also I find in your letter, that William Watson would willingly have me come to Derby, to be tried; and I perceive, rather than I should not come, he would bear my charges. I do see by this how free the devil is to me, because he doth think there is some evil intended against me, therefore he would willingly be at the charge, that it might be put in execution; for this I know, that if there was any good intended towards me there, then he would be as forward to give money for me to stay away: but, however, if I could not bear my own charges, nor if I had no friends in this world to do it, yet I would take no mercy of him, nor any other that is under the sentence of this commission; I never did it to my knowledge, never since I came forth upon this account, when as I had fewer friends than I have now; for I have refused both work and money, many times, of those that have been damned by me, which they would have thought themselves the more happy if I would have accepted of it, but I would not: but I see what the serpent's seed doth aim at, and it is very like that he may have his desire in that thing, and yet keep his money too; for I know nothing to the contrary yet, but do intend to come and see you before I go to Derby assizes. I know they can do nothing to me.

when I do come there, not according as the laws of England stand at this time ; except ignorance of the law, and envy together, doth that which is contrary to the law ; but if it do, I shall bear it : but I shall inform you further of this before that time.

You say in your letter that there is one there that hath a mind to all my books, and if you mean all our books bound together, then I cannot help him to them, for there is none of the commission books left, not one, if I would give five shillings for that alone, that being the ground and beginning of all ; but as for the Interpretation, I have sent you one, the price is two shillings. Also I have sent ten of those newly printed, and the price is twelve-pence a piece, they being very chargeable the printing, and much ado to get them at any rate ; neither would I have you to lend them to Quakers or others, but if they will buy them, let them have them, and if they do not like them, when they have read them, let them burn them, or do what they will with them ; for I have found by experience, a great deal of inconvenience in lending books, for when people see them for nothing, they like them the worse, but when they have paid for it, they will take more notice what they read ; neither will those books of the Quakers be long before they be all gone, for most people do desire to see what these things mean, they having a good opinion of the Quakers, and the price being small, there is few will grudge to give a shilling for it ; it contains ten sheets of paper, but if that man aforesaid hath a desire of all our works, I do think that William Newcomb, of Derby, bookseller, can help you to one, for he had three of me, and I hear he hath not sold them yet. If you send to Dorothy Carter you may know further of it, for he is there every Saturday.

In your wife's letter I understand that Mr. Tomkinson doth desire an answer to his letter.

But there being such a many particulars, to answer which, if they were answered fully, it would make a great volume; and if it should be answered ever so short, it would be very large, neither have I any time to do it, neither do I know when I shall: and for me to take such a deal of pains to please the unsatisfied fancy of one particular man, it would be but a vain thing; for there is enough written, if understood and believed, to satisfy the mind of any man or woman in the world; for if those things were answered upon his desire, in a month's time there would be as many more places of Scripture, as needful to answer, as those he hath propounded; so that there is no end of answering questions, neither will the reason of man ever be satisfied; for if there be not a growth in faith, upon these two foundations, viz. the true God and the right devil, there can be no true peace. But it is much upon my mind of late, for the good of the seed of faith in general, that if I do but live a few years longer, and have my liberty to interpret the chief principal heads of the whole Book of the *Revelations of St. John*, for the eleventh chapter being opened already, it will the more easily open all that rich cabinet, where the seed of faith may see the glorious treasure of heaven; but my haste is great at present, therefore I shall say no more in this thing, but if you please you may send me William Smith's letter, and your answer, when you send to me again.

And as for Mr. Hatter he is very well, and his business is like to do pretty well; I have sent to him this day some of those books which I know will be welcome to him, because he doth not know that they

were printed. Our friend Mr. Hudson, I think, will be with you about Candlemas.

So in haste I rest, having much business to do, and being alone, for my wife is at her mother's, and my two daughters are from me; the one is married, the other is in Cambridgeshire, and the latter end of this week I do go into Kent; I do intend to be at home again at the twelve holidays end. So with my love to yourself, and to your loving wife, with my love to your maid, though I never had any discourse with her, neither do I well know her if I should see her again; yet this I say, I do look upon that maid to be one of the seed of faith, and that it will grow in her.

Your Friend in the true Faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, December 13, 1663.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to one Rice Jones, at his House in Nottingham, without any Date or Place it came from, as follows;*

*Rice Jones,*

ABOUT a twelve-month since it was I saw you, and then I had some little discourse with you: in which discourse I did understand what principle of religion you are of, which principle of God is founded



upon Jacob Bemond's writings, which is to believe that God is an infinite Spirit without a body; also Jacob Bemond's angels which he speaketh so much of have no bodies, neither doth he describe the form and nature of them, neither could he tell what the right devil is, nor the true heaven, nor the right hell, nor the mortality of the soul, no, not any of these things did he truly know; neither are his writings any more divine or heavenly than the Heathen philosophers; for they are no other but philosophy, which proceedeth from the wisdom or seed of reason, and not from the seed and nature of faith, which the Scriptures were spoken and written by; neither can any man know these six heads before mentioned, without an infallible Spirit so to do; neither can any man interpret Scripture truly, and be ignorant of those six principles aforesaid; that is, to know what the form and nature of the true God was before he became flesh, and what he is now.

Secondly, What the form and nature of the right devil was before he became flesh, and what he is now.

Thirdly, Where the place, or heaven of glory is.

Fourthly, Where the place of hell and shame is.

Fifthly, What the persons and natures of angels are.

And, sixthly, To understand the mortality of the soul.

Upon these six heads standeth all those heavenly secrets and mysteries spoken of in the Scriptures, they being hinted at by the prophets and apostles, but were not so clearly made known unto the soul of man, as they are now by this commission of the Spirit, there being never a true interpreter of the Scriptures in the world at this day, but us two, the witnesses of

the Spirit ; for God hath given the Scriptures into our hands, so that none ought to officiate the office of a minister or messenger of Christ, but such as are approved of by me.

These things being so, I thought good to write these lines unto you, and by virtue and authority of my commission to forewarn you, and forbid you to exercise the office of a speaker among that society of the Bemonists or Quakers, nor any other sects ; for there is very little difference betwixt the Bemonists and the Quakers, only the Quakers are a little more precise in their outward lives, but for your doctrine and theirs it is all one ; for your God and theirs is all the same ; so that you being ignorant of the true God and the right devil, and so of all other heavenly and saving truths which do arise from these two heads ; neither have you any commission to exercise the office of a speaker in spiritual things ; for this I would have you to know, that it is not the wisdom of reason upon the letter of the Scriptures, neither revelation, which you call the spirit within you, nor, as the Quakers say, the light of Christ within them. I say, none of these things are sufficient to authorize you to be a preacher or speaker unto the people.

Therefore, by virtue of the authority of my commission, I shall do by you as I have done by many public speakers of the nation (that because they had neither the knowledge of those things before expressed, nor commission from God) to lay down their preaching, and upon the pain of their eternal damnation ; so likewise I do say unto you, being a private speaker amongst the Bemonists and Quakers, that if you shall exercise yourself in the way of a public speaker in the society of those people called Bemonists and Quakers, (for you having not the

knowledge of the true God nor the right devil, nor a commission from God, you do but deceive yourselves and others )

Therefore, if you shall not lay down that practice which you formerly used, but deny this commission of the Spirit, but practice the same still, after the receipt of this letter, then I do pronounce you, Rice Jones, cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God; elect men and angels, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the last Two Witnesses and Prophets, unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Elizabeth Carter, of Chesterfield, dated April 19, 1664.*

*- Dear Friend in the eternal truth Elizabeth Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter bearing date April 12, 1664, in which I understand your mother is gone into Yorkshire, and that she hath not been well, which I am sorry to hear; but yet I hope she will do well again, and that we shall see yourself e're it be long, which my wife and others of the faith will be glad to see you, and as for my getting well out of Cambridgeshire, as for that I found no opposition at all there at that time, for I did stay but two or three

days in a place, and some places but one night, so that there could be no great notice taken of me, there being a great many of the faith of this commission of the Spirit, yet many of them are excommunicated; but what will become of it they know not as yet; but none of our friends are in prison, as there are for meetings, so that they not meeting is a great preservation to the believers and me also. And as for your mother's dream causing a fear to arise in her of my being in prison, dreams do not always prove true; yet sometimes they do; for when I was put in prison there in Chesterfield, your mother had such a like dream a little before it, which did prove accordingly; but now there is no such thing, not as yet; for I am very well, and do not know of any danger in that kind, not at present, though I have many enemies here at London and elsewhere, and some more fiery and bloody-minded here in London, that would destroy me if they could any ways, were it not that they fear to be hanged more than to be damned to eternity; because they look upon damnation at a distance, but hanging is near at hand; but they will find the other to be suddenly enough; and I am much threatened by one bloody-minded man, that if I should pass the sentence upon his wife, that he will do great matters unto me; and he will shew the book to the king, and he will do I know not what, nor himself neither.

So I hearing what wicked words his wife did speak against this commission of the Spirit, it happened before her mother had told me what the words all were, that the maid came where I was, and so I did send the sentence by the maid to her mistress by word of mouth; the mistress sends her man immediately in great wrath, desiring me to send his mis-

tress the sentence under hand and seal, only that she might shew it to her husband, he being a solicitor in the law, thinking that his malice might be the more vented against me ; but for that I matter not, so that I damned his man also, and bid him tell his master that he was a damned devil also, and bid him do his worst ; yet nevertheless I would give his master and mistress both their damnation in writing, and let them see what they can do in it ; but I would not do it at present. But what the event will be when I have sent them the sentence in writing, time will make appear. Therefore I shall say no more at present, but my love and my wife's remembered unto your mother, and Betty Smith, and all the rest of our friends in the faith.

I shall rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, April 19, 1664.*

I have written to you as soon as I can ; for I came to London but on Saturday night ; therefore I do expect to hear from you as soon as you can, and how your mother doth.

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to one Robert Beake, of Coventry, in Answer to one that he wrote to Captain Wildy, July 11, 1664.*

*Mr. Robert Beake,*

I SAW a letter of yours, bearing date July 8th, 1664, which you sent to Captain Wildy; and in your letter to him, I understand the Captain, out of love and affection, did lend you some books and paper writings to peruse, he hoping that your understanding would have been enlightened, to have seen the truth of those things, which are written in those books and papers; or at least, that you would have been so moderate as not to speak evil of things you do not know: which I perceive he gave you a hint of it, but it hath proved altogether to the contrary. For God hath hid the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven from the wise and prudent men of the world; for though they have eyes, yet they see not; and ears, yet they hear not; and hearts, but understand not: and you being one of these wise and prudent men the Scripture speaketh of, the mysteries of eternal life are hid from your eyes, because you are of the seed of the serpent; for this I would have you to know (though it be now too late) for your good, that whoever doth speak evil of these books and papers which the Captain did lend you, are the seed of the serpent, and hath sinned against the Holy Ghost; a sin that will never be forgiven in this world, nor in the world to come; and that you shall find to your eternal pain and shame. Think of yourself what

you will, for you have showed yourself the seed of the serpent, a son of the devil, in speaking evil of the Revelation of the Spirit; which hath been declared by us the Witnesses of the Spirit; which hath been in those books and papers, which such devils as you are, are not worthy to look into; but you, from your Pharisaical righteousness, and wisdom of reason, from the letter of the Scriptures, have proudly took upon you to judge prophets that have a commission from God, and to condemn their righteousness by the letter of the Scripture; and because you shall see that you deserve to be damned, I shall relate most of your wicked speeches against those books and papers in your letter.

*First.* You say, you found expressions therein so uncouth, that made your soul to shrink again.

*Answer.* As to that I say, truth will make the spirit of reason to shrink, which is the devil; for had you had true light in your understanding, instead of shrinking, you would have rejoiced and have been glad, because the doctrine of salvation was come to your house. For every true prophet hath salvation attending on him, and blessed are they that receive him upon that account, and cursed will they be that despise him on that account.

*Secondly.* You say, that the authentiques thereof, you thought was to be tried by some known standard rule and balance, and the word of truth being most sovereign, you applied the matter and phrase of the papers. As to this, I suppose your meaning is, that the Scripture is the word of truth, and the standard rule, by which would try the phrase of those papers: so that you would lay those papers in one scale, and the Scriptures in the other, and you found, as I perceive, the papers too light in the

balance with the Scripture. This, I suppose, is your meaning.

*Answer.* I do acknowledge that the Scriptures are the word of God, and a standing rule; and that which will balance truth and error. But then I must tell you, that somebody must put truth and error into the balance, who hath the same spirit of inspiration, as those had that wrote the Scriptures, (that is,) their doctrine must be as authentic as their's was, else they cannot give true judgment between truth and error, which none can do but those that have a commission from the eternal God, as those had that spake the Scriptures. Therefore, for you to weigh the phrase in those papers, in the balance of the Scriptures, or to judge of any thing contained in them, by the letter of the Scriptures, you do but procure your own damnation by it. For God never chose you, that you should know truth from error, nor to give any interpretation; for God hath chosen John Reeve and myself, and hath given the Scriptures into our hands, and hath given us more knowledge to interpret them, than all the men in the world at this day.

And yet you that have no commission nor revelation, will undertake by your reason and education, to judge whether things be agreeable to the Scripture or no; when as you do not know any one principle of religion, no more than the ignorantest man that is doth know the points of law or state affairs.

*Thirdly.* You say you found so much inequality in them, that if you did admit the one, you must of necessity reject the other. You, through ignorance of the spiritual meaning of the Scriptures, do judge so; but if you had understood the doctrine contained



in those books, you would have found the Scriptures and them to agree, so that you would have admitted of them both. But I see it is hid from your eyes.

*Fourthly.* You say you know no medium in the case ; either the drift or design of those papers is envious, and grossly abusive of the Spirit and way of righteousness, or the word of life and salvation is spurious and false.

*Answer.* Here you have shewed yourself a subtil serpent. What drift or design could we have in writing those papers, when as there was nothing but persecution and sufferings did and doth fall upon it, and wasting our estates, and losing all our natural relations ; for men that go upon that account as prophets, and have such a dreadful message to declare unto the world as we have, shall find but few friends in the world to receive it, therefore our drift and design as to the world, or to obtain riches, would have been to little purpose.—And as for our errors, as you call them, grossly abusive of the Spirit, and of the way of life and salvation, here you have belied the Holy Spirit that sent us forth ; for the wisdom that God hath given us, hath preached the righteousness of faith, in that we have declared the true God and right devil, with many other heavenly mysteries and secrets which are written in those books, which the Scripture did hint at but darkly, but now by us the witnesses of the Spirit made clear to the seed of faith ; so that instead of grossly abusing the Spirit of life and salvation, God hath chosen us to declare the true righteousness of faith and light, and life of salvation, and also the light of the Scriptures, which no man doth truly know but those that have received it from the commission of the Spirit, which God hath given us to declare ; but such reprobates as you

did say as much by the Lord himself when he was upon earth, as you do by me ; but as they had their reward for their blasphemy against him, so shall you.

*Fifthly.* You call those papers and books false, and no way the foundation of your faith and manners, and do say that God hath given you a more sure word of prophecy, and say that you should highly tempt him to listen to any insinament, or pretended discovery of his will, besides what therein are contained.

*Answer.* As to this, I would have you to know that those papers and books are the foundation of true faith, but as for manners, that I shall leave to the wisdom of reason, for reason the devil liveth upon manners, for the seed of the serpent hath no faith but the faith of devils, as you have ; yet such subtil serpents as you are will presume to say that God hath given you a more sure word of prophecy, when as that saying was never spoken to you, being the seed of the serpent, but it was given to the apostles, and to the believers of their doctrine, and it is given unto us the witnesses of the Spirit, and to the seed of faith, who are given to believe the doctrine and declaration of the true God, and so they understand the Scriptures, and know them, because they have believed our report. Also, you say you should highly tempt God if you should listen to any insinuations or pretended discoveries of his will besides what is therein contained.

As to that I say, you have highly tempted God, in that you did not listen unto us the prophets and witnesses, and messengers of God, who only can interpret the Scriptures, and discover the will of God which is contained in the Scriptures, though you call us insinulators, and our discoveries but pretended, but all prophets were served so by the seed of the

serpent; therefore it is no new thing for us, the witnesses of the Spirit, to be called so by that generation of wise and prudent men, that think they know more than the prophets and apostles do; nay, they think that they know more than God himself, and yet the most blindest in spiritual matters in the true knowledge of the Scriptures of any, but in the matters of the world so subtil and cunning that none can go beyond them, but as dark as pitch in any true knowledge concerning eternal life.

*Sixthly.* You advise the captain to poise, therefore, in the balance of a sincere judgment, the expressions contained in those books, and if he find not a direct repugnancy therein to the unerring rule of righteousness.

*Answer.* To this I say, God gave you no sincere judgment in the Scriptures; nor in those books, neither do you know the unerring rule of righteousness, so that you are very unfit to poise in the balance the Scriptures of truth, and those books; for if you had known the Scriptures of truth, you would have known those books to be truth also, and no direct repugnancy against one another, but a sweet agreement; for the Scriptures of truth are a sealed book, and those books of ours are the breaking open of the seal, that the seed of faith may see the truth and treasure written within the Scriptures; but the serpent seed thinks himself so wise, as if he could tell or know God from the devil, truth from error, and truth to be error, and error to be truth. This was always the practice of the seed of the serpent; it was the practice of the Jews to the prophets of old, and those serpents to Christ, and afterwards to his apostles, and the seed of the serpent, such as you are, doth practice the same thing now to us the witnesses of the Spirit; yet

I would have you to know that it doth not lie in the captain's power, nor yours neither, to poise in the balance the Scripture and those books, neither of you being chosen for such a great work; for who shall judge of prophets revelation and doctrine? None will presume to do it but the seed of the serpent. Experience hath shewed me the truth of this,—for many hundreds of your seed have said as much to me as you have said, whereby they have been put in the balance of eternal damnation, and the seed of faith being but few, have been put in the balance of eternal life; for this commission hath weighed you all in the balance, and you the seed of the serpent have been found too light in the balance; for God hath chosen every true prophet to weigh in the balance, so that it doth not belong to you, nor no man upon the earth at this day, to be the judge of us the witnesses of the Spirit, but God only; for we only know the unerring rule of righteousness, and can poise in the balance of the Scripture the seed of the woman, and the seed of the serpent; and as you have done by our books, so have I done by you, I have put you in the balance among the reprobate seed, and you are found too light; notwithstanding you think your wisdom and knowledge in the Scripture to be true light; but it being the wisdom of reason the devil, and not the light and wisdom of faith, which is of God, it will be found the greatest folly and darkness of all, because it led you forth to despise and speak evil of as pure a truth as ever was spoken by prophet or apostle.

*Seventhly,* You would have it demonstrated to your understanding, what I we say to be of the Spirit, and in cases of this nature you must be dealt withal as a rational creature, and not as a brute.

*Answer.* I would ask you this question, whether

Moses, and prophets, Christ and apostles, did direct their speech or writings to rational creatures, or to brutes? Surely the prophets messages, and the apostles epistles were spoken to rational men and women, and not to brute beasts. And have you been dealt withal as a brute, and not as a rational man? Are those books and papers which you have perused so uncouth, as if they were more fit to be read to brutes than to rational creatures? Do not those books and papers speak as good sense as any other writings whatsoever? And do not those books and papers interpret the Scriptures more than any writings whatsoever?

If you were not stone-blind in spiritual matters, you would have seen it, so have you not been dealt withal as a rational man, as well as others have been; nay, the more clearer the seed of the serpent have life and salvation propounded to them, or set before them, the more he despiseth it; for I must tell, you were not worthy to look into those books, for they cost you nothing but your labour to read them, which if you have not liked them, you might have returned them back again; but truth was always counted by the serpent not worth the reading, but the seed of faith thought nothing too dear for truth, but was willing, as Christ said, to forsake all for the truth's sake; but the wise and subtil serpents will not part with a penny for truth, though they know books cannot be printed for nothing. But however it is well, for every one must act according to the seed, the seed they are of, either towards eternal life, or eternal damnation. Also I do wonder how you, that are of the seed of the serpent, would have us to demonstrate to your understanding that which we say we had from the Spirit.

To this I say, it is as much demonstrated to you as to any others, and yet others believe it, and have the assurance of eternal life by it, and you, and such as you are, through your unbelief, eternal damnation by it; for we the witnesses of the Spirit are made a sweet savour unto God both in them that are saved, in those that are damned; and what demonstration would you have more than the declaration of the true God in his form and nature, with the interpretation of many mystical things in the Scriptures, which all the wise and learned men in the world cannot unfold; but I know by experience, that the serpent's seed doth look more at some visible miracle, and yet they read in the Scriptures that the greatest prophet that was born of woman did no miracles; so are we dealt with by the serpents in this last age, though our doctrine and declaration be more spiritual and heavenly than those that went before us, we being the witnesses of the Spirit; yet because we do no outward miracles, we are counted by the reprobate seed to be false prophets, deceivers and liars, so that we cannot demonstrate to the devil understanding by any visible sign that we are sent by the Spirit of God, but time will make it manifest to your eternal pain and shame.

*Eighthly.* You say, if you must receive that for truth, or this or that man that saith he hath a revelation, you must necessarily then let your faith languish after every man's revelation; and here you say am I a poor soul bewildered.

*Answer.* To this I say, there is no knowing of any revelation to be true, but by believing of it. Did any know Moses revelation to be true in that time, but those that believed him? Did any of those Pharisees, and Sadducees, that came to John's baptism, believe that John was a messenger of Christ? Did

any of the Scribes and Pharisees and hypocrites believe that Christ was the Son of God? Yet they heard that John the Baptist had revelation to declare that Christ was the Son of God, notwithstanding he spake nothing else but revelation; yet these had heard of him before, but saw no sign by either of them both, but others that believed their revelation, not expecting a sign, they did see signs also.

So that believing the declaration of men that are living is the only way to establish the soul, for there is no true rest to the soul but in pinning their faith upon that man's sleeve that hath a commission from God, and his revelation must needs be true, and happy are those that venture their souls upon it; but the seed of the serpent thinks himself so wise, that he will allow of no revelation in himself, neither will he hearken to him that hath a revelation, for fear his soul should be bewildered; for the devil not knowing what revelation is, he will be so wise and cunning that he will neither be received with God nor with man; and this is your condition, you will not hearken to this or that man's revelation, though it be never so true, lest your soul should be bewildered.

But instead of your soul being bewildered, I am sure your soul is bewitched with ignorance and darkness in the Scriptures; you think you see; but are stark blind, and have ears, but are deaf as an adder: but it was always so with the seed of the serpent, for they always thought themselves so wise, that they could tell whether prophets or apostles revelations were true or no, but they were always mistaken, for they ever despised and persecuted them for it, even as you do by me and my revelation.

*Ninthly.* Here you say, Oh! Sir, your soul grieves within you that those poor souls, meaning us that

wrote those books, should be involved in such strange delusions ; certainly, you say, a greater judgment cannot be from the Lord here.

*Answer.* Here you do by us as the devils did by Christ, they pitied and shook their heads at him when he went to suffer, as if they did grieve that he should suffer, but they thought within themselves that he suffered for his fault ; that is, they thought he was a blasphemer, a deceiver, a liar, and took too high things upon him, and so was under a great judgment of God. Do not you do the same things by us the witnesses of the Spirit ?

You say your soul grieves within you that we poor people, as you call us, should be involved in such strong delusions. I marvel how you, being the seed of reason, came to know what a strong delusion is, when you never was in the truth, for you never did know truth in your life ; for I must tell you, it is not the reading of the Scriptures will give you to know truth, except there be a true interpreter ordained of God, which I am sure you never heard none ; but true prophets and true interpreters of the Scriptures were always counted by the seed of the serpent to be strong delusions :

Therefore it is no new thing for us to be called so by you, who are a subtil serpent ; and as for a greater judgment from the Lord, there cannot be here.

To this I say so to ; and further I say, that if we, that wrote those books and papers, be strongly deluded, or if we be deluders, then I say, let the judgment of God be upon us here and hereafter ; but if we be true messengers and chosen witnesses of God, as we know we are, then I say it had been good for you, and such as you are, that you had never been born ; and a greater judgment cannot be from the Lord than



there is upon your understanding, for God hath given you up to slumbering eyes, that you might despise the light of heaven, so that you might stumble and fall into the pit of eternal damnation.

*Tenthly.* You say, it were worth the enquiry by what method and wiles the devil doth thus infatuate poor creatures.

*Answer.* Here you shew yourself a devil, in that you do not know what the devil is, nor the method and wiles by which he doth infatuate or deceive poor creatures; for this I must tell you, that the devil is always mistaken in himself, for he always looks upon the devil to be some ugly thing or spirit without him, when as indeed your own soul is the devil, and that you shall find one day; and the imagination of your own heart hath infatuated your poor soul, which hath made your wits to go in this method, as to despise and blaspheme against the doctrine of the true God, by us the witnesses of the Spirit.

*Eleventhly.* You say, let me suggest my thoughts to you herein: is it not likely, say you, that the first entrance into this snare, was the perpetration of some conscience-wasting sin which followed the sinner, that no rest could be obtained, till it cast off the word and other ordinances.

*Answer.* Your suggested thoughts in this particular, is no other but the suggestions of the devil, for your thought therein doth proceed from your lying imagination; for we the witnesses of the Spirit never committed any sin, whereby the peace of our conscience could be any ways wasted; for this I must tell you, that God never chose any to be prophets to declare his mind, but such as had escaped the pollutions of the flesh; and if we had not been kept innocent, God would never have chosen us to be his messengers; and this is the greatest comfort we have in

this world, that we can justly say we never did this or that evil in the days of our ignorance, much less since we were chosen of God; and this is the very cause, that I have and do tread upon the heads of the serpents, by virtue of my innocency, and the commission of God. I am made as a wall of brass against many hundred of devils, and have cast them down with the two-edged sword of the Spirit that is put into my mouth; so that they have and shall fall into the bottomless pit of eternal damnation, into which place you must go; and as for our attaining no rest until we had cast off the word and other ordinances.

*Answer.* To this I say, no man doth own the word (if you mean the Scriptures) more than we do, for no man in the world doth truly know the word but us, and those books will testify the same; neither do we cast off any ordinances, neither of God, nor of man; for we know what ordinances God hath set up now in these last days, and we follow and practice them, and have rest and peace in it; but you have none, because you are a traditional follower of the ordinances of the apostles; and instead of entering into this snare, as you call it, it will prove a snare to you, and it will be just like Peter's net, which caught many fishes, and the good he picked out, and the bad he cast away; so it is with the commission of the Spirit, it is as a net or a snare that is set or laid to catch the seed of faith, and so they are brought home unto God, and happy are they that are caught. So likewise the seed of the serpent, they are caught in this snare, and they are cast away, even like the bad fishes, that is, they are cast into the pit of utter darkness, where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth for evermore; and this snare are you fallen into by your despising those books and papers. It would have been better for you:

but not much, if you had never seen them at all, you would have been damned before, but you would not have known for what; but now you will know for what you are damned to eternity for, and in this regard it had been better you had never seen the writings at all.

*Twelfthly.* You say, let the first broachers of these wild notions, as you call them, deal ingenuously with God and the world, and he will confess, if I be not mistaken, that there is some wide gash in his conscience, which he labours to dress up with these super-celestial, if not diabolical notions.

*Answer.* To this I answer, I do acknowledge that we, the witnesses of the Spirit, were the first broachers of these wild notions, as you call them; and I do ingenuously confess, that there is no wider gash in my conscience than there was before, nor so much; for my conscience is as truly justified in declaring these wild notions, as you call them, as ever Moses, the prophets and apostles were in broaching their doctrine. You would have called their doctrine wild notions if you had lived in that time, as you do mine, for they did meet with the same serpents in their time as I do now; neither do I dress up my conscience with those super-celestial, if not diabolical notions, as you call them; it would be well for you if they were diabolical notions, but you will find them to be as true as truth itself, they being broached by the Spirit of truth, therefore you are much mistaken indeed, for the devil is always mistaken in the things of eternity, and never certain in spiritual knowledge; for, as I said before, he always calls God a devil, and the devil God; truth he calls wild notions, and the imaginations of reason, from the letter of the Scriptures, you call the ordinances of God. And this I am sure, all the notions

that shall arise from the imaginations of reason, and study of the letter of the Scriptures, shall never dress up the gash in your conscience which you have made, by speaking evil of things you know not; for you have such a gash cut in your soul by the two-edged sword of the Spirit that is put into my mouth, that there will be no balm in Gilead to be had to cure you, so that it will not be whole to eternity; and I shall deal ingenuously with you, that are of the world, that I am justified of God, and in my own conscience too.

*Thirteenth.* You say it is the captain's duty and yours to stand in the old way, and to repair to the law, and to the testimonies; therein, say you, we have eternal life, because they testify Christ Jesus.

*Answer.* As for the true old way, I think the captain nor you did know; for how could you possibly know the true old way without a true preacher? And as for your repairing to the law, and to the testimony, that you cannot do, because you know not what they are, only you have got those words out of the Scriptures, but know nothing truly what is meant by the law and testimony; for whosoever did repair to the law and testimony, they were to be tried by some commissioned man that was appointed thereunto; so that God hath given the law and testimony into our hands, who are the witnesses of the Spirit, and you are to be tried by us, both the captain and you also. And I do find by the law and the testimonies, that you deserve to be damned to eternity; for you must not think, that because you read the Scriptures, and find such words there; I say, you must not think that you can try prophets by the law and testimonies, when as you were never chosen of God for such a work; neither do you know what the law and testimony is; though they do testify of Jesus, yet will

not you find eternal life by them, because you have judged and despised those whom God hath chosen, anointed, and sealed, to be the interpreters of the law and testimony; therefore, your repairing to the law and to the testimony now, will signify but little benefit to you; so that now you are in the old way of your father Cain.

*Fourteenth.* You say, and his promise, he that doth his will, shall know his doctrine, whether it be of God or man.

*Answer.* That is as true a saying of yours, that he that doth God's will, shall know his doctrine; but you never did know his will, therefore you know not his doctrine, whether it be of God or man; neither are those promises in Scripture made to the seed of the serpent, such as you are; but the promises in the Scriptures were made to the seed of faith, who are made to believe God's messengers; and so they come to know God and his doctrine; for the doctrine of man cannot declare what the true God is in his form and nature, and those books do, which you so much despise; but there can be expected no better from that seed you are of.

*Fifteenth.* Also you say, what shall we think of those precious souls, who have spent themselves for us in the Lord; you name Hooker, Cotton, Helder-sham, Marshall, Burroughs, and Simpson.

These you say taught us, and brought us another doctrine than is contained in your papers.

*Answer.* You may think what you will of them; I know them to be false ministers, and their doctrine to be false also, because they had no commission from God to be ministers of the gospel; for he that preaches without a commission from God, cannot preach true doctrine; and as for some of those precious souls, as

you call them, I know them to be damned devils; that Cotton, I suppose, was of New England, and that Holland Simpson, I suppose you mean, was of those precious souls that spent themselves for you; it was but the devil that spent himself for the devil, for that Cotton I know to be damned to eternity; there is none of the others will escape you speak of, before they were sent, though we the witnesses of the Spirit did not pass the sentence of eternal damnation upon them all; yet they taking upon them to preach the gospel without a commission from God, though much good may be done by it; yet it will be said unto them by the Lord Jesus, *Depart from me ye workers of iniquity, I know ye not*; for Christ will know none but those he hath sent; and as for that Cotton, I am as certain that man will be damned to eternity as Cain and Judas; if they escape, then he shall; and as for the other of your gracious souls, as you call them, must to damnation also, for preaching without a commission from God, because we, the witnesses of the Spirit, did not pass the sentence of damnation upon them, as we did upon Cotton; so they have not the seal of it as he had, yet they were all false, and taught a false doctrine: for this I must tell you, that no man can teach or preach true doctrine, but he that is sent of God; and those gracious souls, as you call them, did bring, as you say, another doctrine than what is contained in those books and papers; for how can a man preach true doctrine, who knows not the true God, nor the right devil; for these men you speak of, their doctrine which they brought in, was their own lying imagination, which they did imagine out of the letter of the Scriptures, merely from the strength of reason, even as a tradesman doth his trade; and as tradesmen deceive others that are not skilful in that art, so did

these men become deceivers by their doctrine, and you and the captain, with many hundreds more, were deceived by them, for all the hearers of them, so long as they followed them, were, and are as blind as beetles in any spiritual and heavenly matters; neither hath God forbid them to be deceivers, nor you from being deceived by them; for the blind hath led the blind, and you will both fall into the ditch of eternal destruction; and as we and our doctrine shall enter into our master's joy, because we did not go before we were sent, but have been faithful to declare the truth, as it is in Jesus, the only wise God, blessed for ever.

I have spoken of most of the chief things contained in your letter, concerning your wicked speeches against as pure truth as ever was spoken by prophet or apostle, for you would have said as much by them, if you had been living in their times, as you do by us the prophets of the Spirit; but I perceive you think to deal with prophets as you do with priests of the nation; you can speak evil, and find fault with them and their doctrine when they please not your humour; and when they speak any thing from the letter of the Scriptures that pleaseth you, you are good friends again; so that the shepherd and his doctrine must be judged by his sheep. This hath been the custom of formal christians ever since the ten persecutions; but you must not think to do so by prophets that have a commission from God; for he is no true minister of the gospel that hath no power to pronounce those blessed that receive his doctrine, and those cursed to eternity that despise it; therefore this doctrine and commission of ours will seem strange to the seed of the serpent, for little did you think, when you met with those books and papers, that you

met with men that have authority from God ; neither do we speak or write as the Scribes, viz. as the priests and speakers of the nation ; therefore, because you shall know that there is a true prophet in England, to give judgment upon despising spirits, in that you have blasphemed against the Holy Spirit that sent us ; for whosoever receiveth him that is sent, receiveth him that sent him, even God ; so, on the contrary, he that despiteth a prophet, despiseth him that sent him, even the Spirit of the Lord Jesus ; which thing you have done, and that in a high nature, in calling the doctrine, contained in those books and papers, erroneous, strong delusions, and the wiles of the devil, wild notions, diabolical notions, with many more wicked speeches, as I have before mentioned.

Therefore in obedience unto my commission, for these your wicked and hard speeches against the doctrine of truth declared by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, I do pronounce you cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

Deliver yourself from it if you can.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*July 11, 1664.*



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Sladehouse, in Staffordshire, bearing Date from London, December 9, 1664.*

*Loving Friend Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date October 2d, 1664, with the token. Also I have perused your letter, but had not time to give you an answer before now to it; neither have I time as yet, but because I am to go into Cambridgeshire before Christmas, I shall give you some lines for your satisfaction before I go, which are as follow :

I have taken notice of some passages in your letter, which I shall give some answer unto.

The first thing is, whether Christ did know himself to be the only God when he was in a state of mortality, or no? You say you cannot tell; yet the seventh chapter of our commission-book doth say he did: but Mr. Claxton, in his Wonder of Wonders, saith he did not know himself to be the only God.

As to this I say, it is not much material, whether Christ himself did know himself to be God the Father, or not, when he was in a state of morality; but the comfort and benefit that will redown to us; it is for us to believe and know, that Jesus Christ was in the state of mortality, and is the only God and everlasting Father. So that the happiness that will be unto us, it is to know and believe that he is the only God, and everlasting Father; but whether he knew himself

to be so at that time, it is not much material. Yet it is my faith, that he did not know ; but my happiness is, that I know him to be so : and as for the apostles knowing him to be the only God, it is not much matter neither ; but that happiness that is in the faith in this commission of the Spirit, is to know more of the true God than they did.

You likewise say, for the most part you pitch upon this commission of the Spirit, and do begin to close in faith with those six principles which are treated on by me ; and further you say, you have had such strugglings and strivings in your mind about your former worship, and until you could, in some measure resolve to close with me, there was nothing but trouble and vexation in your soul.

Furthermore you say you have gone to the church by fits ; but now you are resolved to leave it off, though you look for nothing else but great sufferings.

As to this I say, it is well that you do for the most part pitch your faith upon these six principles ; and it would be better for you if you did venture your whole soul upon them.

And as for the strugglings in your mind about worship, there could be no other thing expected ; for no man can serve two masters. For if the worship of God in Spirit and truth be the true worship, that will yield peace to the mind, as is held forth by this commission of the Spirit, then, of necessity, the worship of the nation must needs be false, and so produce nothing but trouble. For if the worship of the nation would give peace to the mind, and the assurance of eternal life, then should I have found it when my zeal was in it, and many more that can experience it as well as myself, who have believed in this commission of the Spirit.

Further you say, that, come what will come, you will venture your salvation upon this commission of the Spirit; and that you do feel those strugglings which you formerly had, to cease.

Also you say, be this truth, or no, that we have declared, you cannot help it; but must now, from that seed within you, venture upon it, in pitching your faith upon this commission of the Spirit.

And further you say, if it prove a rock, then you shall be happy, and your soul will stand for ever; and if I be a true prophet, then shall you be safe, and all those that have believed it.

To this I say, it is well for you that there is such a resolution wrought in you, as to venture your soul upon this commission of the Spirit, come what will come. For this I say to you, that nothing venture, nothing have: for if there be no salvation in this, there was never none in any; so that eternal life is but a thing ventured. For if God doth speak to a man, we that do not hear him speak, yet do believe that man speaketh truth, who saith God spake to him, we must venture our salvation on his words, else no peace will arise out of the heart. This hath been God's practice of old to prophets and apostles; and happy have they been that did believe them, and ventured their salvation upon their bare words.

And so it is now by John Reeve and myself, we being the last two chosen witnesses of God; and whoever doth venture their salvation upon this commission of the Spirit, shall not miss of eternal life, no more than those did that depended upon Jesus Christ himself; so that true faith in the thing will make your strugglings cease, as with relation to eternal salvation; neither can you, nor any other, help their believing in it, but happy are those that are so caught, and that

venture their souls upon it, it will prove a rock indeed, and safe will those be who truly build upon the commission of the Spirit, in that they believe us to be true prophets. We are as true as truth can make us; and it is by faith that I myself do stand, and it is by faith that you, and all the rest of the believers do stand. For there is, nor can be, no surer standing, as to things of eternity, but by faith: so that you that believe shall fare as well as I myself; and if any would be more sure than I myself, they must seek it where they can find it, which I am sure is no where to be found, but in believing in them that God hath sent:

You say the light of life, which floweth from the interpretation of Scripture, you of late have tasted of, in that you have believed us to be true prophets; and that is a true commission which hath proved to a refreshing of heart unto you, and so becomes water of life unto your soul, and makes you to see the truth of our doctrine.

Also you say, tho' your faith be but weak, and your knowledge but small, yet doth it put forth its hand towards this commission of the Spirit, and is willing to make itself known unto me, that so it may receive refreshments from me, as it hath already received some golden oil, which doth so cheer and glad your heart, that you would not part with it for all the world; for you do perceive now that you do receive it in the love of it. So this I say, that the true interpretation of Scriptures is light and life unto the soul of man. For the Scriptures, when they were spoken by men who were inspired by the Holy Ghost, their words were spirit and life; and the true interpretation of them is as water of life unto those that understand them.

For the same Spirit of inspiration that spake them, did put life into them, so that no man can truly in-

terpret them but such as have the same spirit of revelation as those that spake them. So that true interpretation of Scripture will be as water of life, as the speaking of them was spirit and life : for in the Scriptures is the assurance of eternal life to be found, and no where else ; only this, they must have a true interpreter, which none can but those whom God hath chosen for that purpose. So that it will be happy for all those that truly understand the interpretation of Scriptures, which I perceive you do ; which have yielded you some refreshings of heart unto you, and your weak faith may grow to be strong, and your small knowledge may come to be great ; and then will your refreshings of heart overflow, and continually spring as a river of living waters. For the seed of faith is a well that is never dry when it is built upon a rock ; for when a commission doth smite the rock, by giving the true interpretation of Scripture, there will come water of life out of it ; especially when it is received in the love of it. As you say you do ; it will be as golden oil to glad your heart, and water of life to quench the thirst of sin, which is of more value than can be expressed. For there is no balm but in Gilead, even a personal God-Man, Christ Jesus, which none could, or can, declare, but us the witnesses of the Spirit. And happy will it be for all those that venture their souls upon the declarations and doctrine of us, the witnesses of the Spirit.

You further say, before you did receive it in the head, but now say you it goes down into the heart ; and so your soul begins to cleave to the doctrine as to eternal life, and to cleave to me as the only prophet to shew the way to this life eternal.

And in the latter part of your letter you say you should be glad if you might receive one letter from

me, but especially to hear that your condition is a condition of safety, which would be more joy to me than all the world's riches; because you believe me to be a true prophet, and so are able to judge and discern between faith and reason.

As to this I shall say but little; only this, I am glad even for your own sake, that truth did not only remain in your head, but is gone down into the heart; which I make no question but it will take deep root there, which will bring forth the fruits of the Spirit, even the fruits of faith, which is love to God, peace of mind, obedience to his worship in spirit and truth, and unto the assurance of eternal life, which is no where to be found now, but in the doctrine of the true God and the right devil, which is held forth and declared by us, the chosen witnesses of the Spirit: unto which you have given sufficient testimony of your faith in it, and that you do cleave to the doctrine and to me, as the only true prophet to shew you the way to eternal life.

And as for your condition being a condition of safety: to that I say your condition is a safe condition; and whoever buildeth upon this rock, even this commission of the Spirit, shall never fail. And for your further satisfaction, that your joy may encrease, and be established to enable you to suffer in the day of trial when it doth come,

I do pronounce you one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body to eternity, which is of more peace than the tongue of man can express.

*Written by me,*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*The Prophet of the Most High God, the Man Christ  
Jesus in Glory.*

*December 9, 1664.*

And as for the book I am about, it will more wonderfully open the Godhead of Christ, than all that hath been said before by us, with many other mysterious things opened in the book of the revelation, which were not made known to us before, even almost all the chief heads in the book of the revelation, except those that I have treated on already; but I suppose it will be towards Easter before I can accomplish it, and when it is ready, you and your brother shall hear of it. And in the mean time my love to your brother.

### LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*The prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Letter to William Cleve, near Cambridge, 1665.*

WILLIAM CLEVE, I received your letter by your brother, dated March the 3d, 1665, which lines I am very sorry to hear or read; though I have heard much more than you relate, but I never did love to hear of other folks sins, but always love to hear of their righteousness; but messengers of God are always troubled with other people's sins more than with their own, neither have the sins of others been a small disgrace and disparagement to me, because they own me upon a spiritual account; so that I even could wish I had never been a messenger of God; yet I knowing it was the portion of my Lord himself, and others of his messengers, to bear the shame and reproach of the sins of others, I am made the better able to do the same; for the shame and reproach of other's sins doth reflect upon me and all in my condition, yet the punishment of sin will be to them that act it. And whereas you say you was

drunk with wine and beer, and upon that you committed adultery, to that I say, if it had been but an act of drunkenness, or a bare act of adultery, though they are both wicked acts, yet they would have been more tolerable of forgiveness than this act of yours was ; for you acted with one that was neither maid, widow nor wife, but a common whore ; and not only so, but a defiled whore, defiled with the pox, for she is now in the hospital for cure, and you having to do with her, you have received of the same diseases with her ; for Doctor Powell doth affirm you have it, but not quite cured. Also he doth upbraid Mr. Fort, me, and all the believers that own me ; saying this is their faith, they can get the pox and then come to me to be cured ; he speaking this to Mr. Newsome and you, so that we are all ashamed to own such believers ; that so this commission is mightily ashamed by those things lying heavy on us all. But I have no occasion to aggravate your sins, but would rather have smothered it, neither should I have discovered it to any, though the cry of it hath been sounded in my ears by others ; yet I stopped even my ears against it, as one not willing to hear, and the reason why, because you own truth ; but had not the power of truth in you, which power I could not, nor cannot give if it be not planted in your nature. I cannot help that, and as for my speaking peace to your troubled soul, I would to God I could do so, and be justified in my own conscience ; but I cannot speak peace to sins of that nature, though your sin is not that unpardonable sin which can never be forgiven in the world to come. But your sin is more hard to be forgiven in this world, than the other ; for the sins you have acted it carries the curse immediately along with it all the days of a man's



life ; but the other aforesaid may do well enough in this life ; but the curse will follow hereafter. So that this is all that I can say unto you, that for my part I shall neither justify you nor condemn you ; neither will God condemn you himself for it ; but if you can by your faith, repentance and newness of life, encounter with your sin, and recover the peace of your conscience, and the health of your body, I shall be very glad you may ; for sin is a strong enemy.

So I must leave your faith and the guilt of your sin to strive together, and which getteth the victory, will be Lord ; and so I rest in sorrow for you,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, London, Feb. 10, 1665.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, but when it was written I know not, being not dated ; but however, I am glad to see your own hand-writing, and more glad to hear of your health, and of your husband's health also. Likewise, it is no small comfort to me, to hear that you are so sensible of the benefit you have received by believing in the true God, and that peace and satisfaction you do find in the death of

God: and as you say none can take it from you; indeed none can take it from you; for your faith being built upon that rock, all the powers of hell cannot prevail against it, not so much as to raise a doubt, or a question within you, as concerning your eternal happiness. This experience doth teach me the truth of it, and so I believe it doth you, with divers others also. And this true faith in you, it will be as a well springing up to eternal life, which will cause your peace and joy to fill up, and overflow, and run over; which thing is hid, the knowledge of it, from all people in the world; but only those that build their faith upon a true commission. And this I may speak further for your comfort, that this is the best time for the seed of faith to live in, as hath been since the creation of the world, notwithstanding the many troubles that are in the world at this day, and more troubles are yet like to ensue. But happy are those which have a peace which the world cannot give. For as many prophets and righteous men did desire to see that day as the apostles did, when Christ was upon earth, so I say many of the holy and elect seed, that have died these fourteen hundred years, have desired to see that day which we see, but could not; for what happiness can be greater unto man, than to know his eternal happiness in this life? which thing cannot be made known but by a commission from God: so that now is the best time, in relation to truth, that ever shall be to the world's end.

So, being in haste, I shall take leave, having little or no temporal news, only this, the sickness is very little now in London; but it is supposed this summer will produce much trouble otherways, both by sea and land; but time will shew the effects what they will be.

So I shall say no more, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered to yourself, and to your husband ; supposing you have received John White's letter before now ; I rest and remain,

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, February 10, 1665.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, bearing date Feb. 7, 1665.*

*Dear Friend, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter about two weeks ago concerning a young man, called John Matten ; indeed I have been so busy about a troublesome business for a friend ever since, so that I could not spare time to give you an answer, neither is it yet quite ended, but I suppose that this week it will ; yet because I would not have you stay too long, I shall give you an answer as short as I can.

First, I perceive this young man's heart was not right, when he said to Thomas Marsden, that the devil had his mysteries, as well as God had his mysteries. The thing was true enough, but I perceive the words proceeded from a naughty heart, or seed ; that is to say, those words were spoken in way of vilifying, or slighting the mystery of God. But to let that pass : I perceive he was smitten a little upon it, but did

recover his peace again. But after this, I perceive, he being in league with a maid, who was contrary minded, yet, for fear of losing her love, and her friends, and his own friends love, and fears of persecution together, the temptation of these things did cause him to go to church, even against the light of his own conscience, and so withdrew his affections from you, which formerly he had.

Now I say these are sad omens, or signs ; for truth is a straight and narrow way, yet the seed of faith may easily go through this narrow gate ; that is, keep the heart entire to the doctrine and worship of this commission of the Spirit.

Thirdly, I perceive he is afraid he is not of the elect seed, and that if he were sure of his eternal happiness, he would not matter the maid, nor any of the sufferings of this world, and such like.

Indeed I cannot blame the man for making such a sure bargain with God, that if God would give him eternal life in one hand, and the losses of the world, and the things he doth affect, in the other hand, I confess then, if he should refuse eternal life, and embrace the other, he would be counted a very fool ; but it was always God's practice to propound unto men and women, that if they would forsake father and mother, brother and sister, nay, wife and children, for his sake, then they should receive eternal life.

So that man must forsake all those things that offend the conscience for it, and trust unto God whether he will give us eternal life or no, and not that he should give us the assurance of eternal life first. But who is it but they would forsake this world, so they might have a better bargain first ? But man must give God the heart first, and trust to God for the re-

ward, and no doubt but God will give men a better thing, for he is faithful and true.

And as for his marrying one of this faith, let that fall how it will, you need not matter that, if the seed within him doth not lead him to it, let him alone in that matter; and as for the trouble of his mind, and his fear of the loss of heaven, I cannot see how it can be otherwise; for when a man shall seem to receive truth, and rejoice in it for a season, and afterwards fall away for fear of some loss of friends, and persecution; and not only so, but worship contrary to the light of his conscience: I say, these things will cause trouble of heart enough, and his condition bad enough.

And as for my administering to him: to this I say, that I cannot tell how to administer comfort unto him, not for the present in this thing, so likewise I shall administer no discomfort; but in regard he hath not sinned the unpardonable sin, though his sin was very nigh it; therefore I shall leave it to the seed within him to work it out; so that I shall neither help him in it, nor disable him to encounter with it; but if he be of the true seed, he will overcome it in time, and be settled in the truth and peace of his mind.

This is the consideration I have of your letter, and of his condition, and accordingly you may demean yourself in your judgment and carriage to him, as you shall see how the seed doth work in him, either for peace or trouble; neither do you provoke him to write to me, but let things proceed from himself what he is moved unto.

*Dear Friend,*

I received your daughter's letter, dated February

10, with the letter inclosed to Mrs. Ward, and accordingly I delivered it unto her, and I received of her twenty shillings according to your desire. I shall pay the thirty shillings in Gracechurch-street as soon as I can meet with the party. Also I marvel you speak never a word whether your mother received Elizabeth Slater's book, with a letter by the carrier of Chesterfield. It was sent about a month ago.

I confess I received this letter from you, concerning John Gratton, about that time you should have received the book, so I did expect to have heard of the receiving of it in the next, but I heard not a word of it; but I hope it doth not miscarry, though mentioning of it be forgotten.

So not to trouble you any further, only my love to yourself, and all other friends with you. We are all pretty well here at London at present.

So I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, February 17, 1665.*

We shall be glad to see your daughter according to the time you speak of.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Charles Cleve, a Believer of the Commission of the Spirit, living then near unto Cambridge.*

*Loving Friend Charles Cleve,*

I HAVE perused your lines concerning your brother, and as for the writing or speaking himself, I matter it not, but like it the better that you write it; so I know the better that you are not ignorant how things are with him, though I knew more of the business before than he hath related to you, or that you do yet know, as you will perceive in these lines to him.

And because you may not think it strange that I will nor cannot speak peace to him, as I have done to others, you may know, that I never knew any sin like unto this, since I knew truth, but Mr. Nusom's only. But when I considered that Nusom got his mischief before he came to own truth, besides, it was hid from my eyes that he had the pox, but it went under the name of canker; for had I known what it had been, and by what means he got it, I would not have spoken peace unto him, let his repentance be ever so true or great; but my word being past, I could not call it back again when I did know of it; for sins of this nature are not common, for those sins always carry the curse with them: so that I cannot speak peace to such sort of sinners if I know it: for these two men owning of me hath brought more disgrace to me and this commission, than all the sins of all the believers in England besides; and not only to me, but to all others of the same faith: so that I am

very sorry for you also, in that your affections are related to him by the bond of nature as well as of profession, and the more in that no balm can cure that sore but the blood of God. And his faith must arise out of its own seed, and be very strong, else that wound sin hath made will not be cured. So that I shall neither judge him to be of the right seed, nor of the reprobate seed, but should be glad he might recover the peace of his mind by faith, soberness, and chastity; for if he can do that, it will do well, for no such gross sinners will go unpunished in this life. And whereas you say he is resolved to persevere in the belief of this commission though he perish.

To that I say, there is no danger of perishing in the belief of truth, but a preservation and blessing in it; so that for my part, I had rather no man should believe it but myself alone, if they should perish by it; for sinners cannot say they lose by truth, no not in this life, but it is sin that doth cause men to perish in this life and that which is to come; for such believers are a great disgrace and reproach to truth, and better it had been for such they had never owned truth, and form also, then should not truth have been disparaged as now it is. But these things must be borne by prophets and saints; for this I must tell you, that the doctor saith, that your brother's body was more foul with that cursed distemper procured by that unclean woman, far more than Mr. Nusom's was, which grew so long upon him.

I thought good to give you a hint of these things, because I perceive he hath made you acquainted with part of his sin; for had not the curse followed the sin, he would never have confessed it to you, nor to none alive; so that you may do as you please. Let him



hear this letter to you, or not, which you think convenient. So I shall say no more at present, but rest

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, March 15, 1665.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Stadelhouse, in Staffordshire, bearing Date from London, March 17, 1665.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter by a friend, William Hall, which came lately from Mrs. Carter (it was dated Feb. 11, 1665,) and I am glad to hear of your joy and confidence in the truth, and that your wife is so stedfast in the faith of this commission of the Spirit. She will lose nothing by it, neither in this life, nor in the life to come, if she hold out to the end; neither need you much to wonder how much faith should hold all the reprobates in the resurrection to eternity. For I say unto you, this earth is big enough to hold them all, if they were ten thousand times ten thousand more than there is, or will be, at the end of the world. For consider, half the world will be saved, count children of the elect seed, and the reprobate seed; for all children will be saved dying in their childhood;

though of the reprobate seed, they shall be raised to the same glory the angels are in, from whence their father, the lost angel, fell.

And as for your being chosen church warden the next year, my advice unto you is, that if they choose you, either fine, or else hire a man in your room, and he will take a churchwarden's oath; for it is unlawful for any believers to take that oath, or to serve that place here in London. Any man whose conscience is tender, or not tender, may either fine or hire, which he please; for there is very few places of this nature in England, but money will buy them out; but if men will go against the light of their own conscience to save their money (as I have known some do) I cannot help that; but it is better to part with silver, than to part with peace of conscience.

I perceive you have received John White's letter; so I shall say nothing unto that, nor concerning the thing you speak of in your letter, but I shewed him your letter, and I suppose his letter to you doth specify something concerning the thing you speak of. But what contract is between you two I know not, but a little glimpse of it, so I shall leave it to you two to treat about it.

This is all at present, only my love to yourself and your wife, and that we are all well at present. I rest and remain,

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON

*London, March 17, 1665.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Joseph Whitworth, at Abbots-Bromely, in Staffordshire, bearing Date May 19, 1665.*

*Joseph Whitworth.*

I RECEIVED a letter from you, bearing date April 16, 1665.

In your letter I find something of the seed of faith to arise in you concerning this commission of the Spirit, though there is not that full satisfaction, not as yet, in the thing declared by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, as there is in others, who have more experience of the doctrine of the true God and the right devil, with many other heavenly secrets declared by us, than you have heard of yet.

Nevertheless, your faith in time may arise to that perfect assurance and full satisfaction in your mind as it hath in many others at this day.

Further, I must tell you, that there hath not been a man upon the earth that hath had the assurance of eternal life abiding in him, not this 1850 years, till this commission of the Spirit came forth into the world.

Yet this I say, many were saved through election in that time, but had no assurance of it in themselves; for this is the great benefit people have by a commission, they do by faith attain to the assurance of their particular election, and so consequently to the assurance of their eternal salvation. And it is to be attained to no other way, but by faith in him whom

God doth send ; for the true ambassadors of God can declare what the true God is in his form and nature, and what the right devil is in his form and nature, the place and nature of heaven, the place and nature of hell, the persons and natures of angels, and the mortality of the soul.

On these six principles, the knowledge of them, dependeth all the eternal happiness of mankind.

These six principles, and many more heavenly secrets, which were never made known before by prophet or apostle, are declared and published by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, in those writings set forth by us.

And as you say, if you had read them all, most of your queries, if not all, would have been answered.

But I perceive you have had but a little of them, and how the case is with you.

I shall take so much pains as to give answer to your queries, though there is greater things in print, and that which will satisfy the heart of man if understood.

But to satisfy your desire, I shall answer as followeth :

First query is, Whether God hath elected some men and women to eternal happiness, and reprobated others unto endless misery, or not ?

Answer. As to this I say, That God hath elected some men and women to eternal happiness, and reprobated others to endless misery.

This was the faith of Moses, the prophets, and apostles ; also it is the faith of us, the witnesses of the Spirit : for God said unto Moses, *I will have mercy on whom I will have mercy, and whom I will I harden.*

This was spoken in relation to Pharaoh, and to rebellious Israel, and with relation to Jacob and Esau.

Therefore it is that the apostle Paul doth instance Jacob and Esau, to those Jews in his time that did question God's election.

All the apostles preached of election, but more especially the apostle Paul doth use many arguments for it, as may be read in the epistle to the Romans; so that he was mighty strong in his faith for election and reprobation; for who shall lay any thing to the charge of God's elect?

So that you must mind, that if there be a number of people elected of God, there must of necessity the other number of people be reprobated of God; for if all were elected, what need there be any talk of reprobation, or eternal damnation?

And if any shall say it was a temporal reprobation, as many have done,

To that I say, the election and reprobation the Scripture speaketh of, it was altogether in relation to a spiritual and eternal happiness; for if God loved Jacob and his seed, and hated Esau and his seed, he was reprobated.

So that there is two seeds, namely, the seed of Adam, and the seed of the serpent; Esau being the seed of the serpent, therefore reprobated; Jacob being the seed of the woman, that is, the seed of Adam, therefore elected.

So that there being two seeds, there must needs be election and reprobation, for both cannot be saved. This was the faith of the prophets and apostles, and is the faith of us the witnesses of the Spirit.

Second query. And as for those who are so elected, whether by generation according to birth, who are the sons of Adam to eternal felicity, and those which are the sons of Cain to endless misery or not?

Answer. To this I say, That the election of God

it lieth in the seed ; that is, the seed of faith, who are the sons of Adam, are all elected ; for all the seed of Adam, which do become persons, so as to be born, they are all elected. Only this is to be minded, that election comes by generation ; not that God doth elect persons after they are born, but in the seed : so that when the seed of faith doth get the pre-eminency in the conception, and so a man or woman comes to be born, they may be said to be of the elect seed. But no person can know his particular person elected, but by faith in the true God ; which true God cannot be known but by a prophet, as Moses, the prophets, and apostles, and us the witnesses of the Spirit, who were chosen witnesses of God.

So that election comes by generation, but no man or woman can know they are of the elect seed but by believing in those messengers whom God doth send ; and their doctrine and declaration being true, the believers of them do come to the certain assurance of their election, both in the seed and of their persons. So likewise it is on the contrary with the reprobate ; that is, when the seed of reason gets the upper-hand in the conception, and so a man or woman comes to be born, they may be said to be reprobated persons, they being reprobated in the seed, for reason is the seed of the serpent ; so that the whole person is so to be reprobated, being the serpent's seed, though he knows it not. But he that doth know his own election, shall as certainly know another to be a reprobate ; for he that doth not know certainly another to be a reprobate, I say he doth not know certainly his own election. I speak not this of children, but of those capable of men and womens estates.

Third question. How a man may know whether he be of the elect seed or not ?

**Answer.** To this I say, as before, that it is known in believing the true messengers of God. So a man comes to know his own election, and another's reprobation; and in knowing a man's own election, he hath certain assurance of his own eternal happiness, and certain assurance of the reprobate's eternal misery.

**Fourth question.** Whether after the belief of this commission, there will be any divine light, as a testimony evidencing in the believer's spirit a perfect assurance of his election, or not?

**Answer.** As to this I say, that there is in the true belief of this commission a divine light, that doth witness and evidence in the spirit of true believers of it, that doth give perfect assurance, both of their election, and of their eternal salvation. This many can witness unto at this day in England, and some in those parts where they live beyond the seas.

**Fifth question.** Whether for resolution of any spiritual doubt, or removal of any eternal calamity, a man may address himself, by prayer, to the divine majesty, or not?

**Answer.** To this I say, we lay no bonds upon any believers in that case, but leave it to their own freedoms. For this I see by experience, that some believers, whose faith is weak in the time of temporal calamities and troubles in eternal things, will make some application unto God, and it doth procure some satisfaction to their spirits, either to bear it more patiently, and willingly submit unto it, or else they find deliverance from it; yet God taketh no notice of their prayer, for the deliverance, it doth come from the seed within them; for God doth not work by outward and visible deliverance, as he did formerly, but more spiritual and invisible, because this is the commission of the Spirit.

So likewise some believers of this commission, their faith is so strong that they do not make any supplication unto God in the time of temporal calamity, and by faith they bear it, and do find as good deliverance as those that do pray.

So that whether you pray, or pray not, it is faith and knowledge that doth deliver in the day of trouble; so that you, or any believer of this commission of the Spirit, may do what they will in the matter, even as their spirits are moved unto, or their understandings are informed; for it will do no hurt, if it do them no good, if they know not how to satisfy themselves otherwise.

Sixth question. Whether this commission doth require the observing, or keeping any one day particularly, or particularly apart, for the service of God, as the two former commissions, or not?

Answer. To this I say, that this commission doth not observe any one particular day, for any worship, or service of God, as the former did; because the believers of this commission do worship God in spirit and truth. For no people under the sun doth worship God in spirit and truth, but the believers of this commission only: so that every day is a sabbath unto us. As to the rest of our minds concerning our eternal happiness, we can say we have rested from all our labour, as God did from his creation: so that we are not bound up in our minds, as all outward worshippers are, to meet every first day, and so bring themselves into trouble, for that which God doth not command. For though God commanded the apostles to observe the first day, and they laid the same upon their believers, that is nothing to Englishmen; for this is to mind that people are to observe every com-



mission in its time and place. So that when Moses and the prophets commission was in being, the people ought to obey it; every commission in its time and place; so when Christ and his apostles commission was in being, the people in that time ought to obey it; so now the commission of the Spirit is in being, that ought to be obeyed. And look what worship is set up by these three commissions, in their time and place they ought to be obeyed, though they differ one from another; nay, they are observed and obeyed by the true believers of them, and not as all the world doth, to observe them traditionally; for Quakers and all other opinions do observe the sabbath, or first day, but traditionally.

Seventh question. Whether it may be any matter of conscience for a man to put off his hat, or to use the language of *thee* and *thou*, or to give titles of honour to the great men of the earth?

Answer. To this I say, that it is no matter of conscience for a man to put off his hat, but is only a civil custom used in the nation where we live; neither is it any tie laid upon the conscience of any man, neither by Christ himself, neither by any prophet or apostle; neither do we read any where in Scripture, that men were required to keep on their hats, though the blind Quakers do make it one of the chiefest articles of their faith; and as for the language of *thee* and *thou*, that may be used or not; for a man to tie himself to *thee* and *thou* to all persons, as kings and magistrates, this is but a traditional practice, imitating prophets of old, who were equal with kings, nay, whom princes have called them Lord, yet every silly man and woman, if they get to be Quakers, they will cry *thee* and *thou* to kings and magistrates of the earth; nay, they would count it a great sin if they should do otherwise.

This is a mere taking up of prophets and apostles words by tradition.

And as for giving titles of honour to the great men of the earth, to that I say, that great men of the earth, as kings, princes, and magistrates, they are called, in Scripture, Gods, though they die like men. And we find in Scripture, that prophets and apostles have given titles of honour unto kings and magistrates, as prophets have said to kings, *O king, live for ever*: As Daniel and Paul said, *Oh king, Agrippa!* and *noble Festus*: so that prophets and apostles did give titles of honour to magistrates. But if it be your lot to see that letter which I have sent to Thomas Taylor, in Stafford, that would inform you further in these things. If you do enquire for Thomas Barnet, of Utoxeter, perhaps he will shew it you; and if you did but see that book of mine, called *The Quakers Neck Broken*, you would see further in those things. I suppose William Newcombe, of Derby town, a bookseller, can help you to it.

Eighth question. Whether, after the belief in this commission of the Spirit, a man may fall back, or not; if so, whether there be a possibility of returning again, or not?

Answer. As to this I say, after a true belief in this commission of the Spirit, there is no possibility to fall away, (that is) if there be true faith in the heart; but if it be but a brain-knowledge, or only in the head, he may fall back away, and never be renewed again. For this I must tell you, that all those that did seem to own the apostles doctrine of the gospel, and did afterwards decline from it; and turn to the law of Moses, they may be said to have faith in the head, and not in the heart. For none can be truly said to fall away, but those that fall away

from the truth ; and none can declare truth but he that is sent of God. Now the apostles being sent of God, all those that did seem to own their doctrine in their time, and did afterwards decline from it, and turn to the law of Moses, they may be said to fall away, that they had no true faith in the heart, but in the head only. For there can be no falling away, not properly, but they that fall away from truth, or from a true commission, when it is in being upon the earth. For men may fall away from all opinions of religion, or faith, upon the earth, and yet be safe enough ; because all opinions in religion in the whole world are taken up by tradition from the letter of the Scriptures.

And so mens faith become traditional also : so that men may easily fall away from that traditional faith, and yet be never the worse. But if any shall fall from that faith he did seem to have in a true commissioned prophet, he shall never return again, but will certainly be damned to eternity. But if true faith doth arise out of the heart, he shall stand sure, and never fall ; but shall have the testimony and assurance in himself of eternal salvation. For this I have observed by experience, since God made me a messenger to declare his will, I have observed three sorts of faith, or conditions in man. Some men I have seen to have faith and knowledge in the head, and not in the heart : others again, I have observed to have faith and true knowledge in the heart, and not in the head. Others again I have observed to have true faith and true knowledge in the head and the heart. All these things I know by experience. Now there is but one of these three that is capable to fall away, namely, he that hath it in the head only ; yet if a true prophet hath but charitable

thoughts of him that hath it in the head only, he shall stand the longer. But if the prophets good thoughts shall be taken from him, he will fall immediately, and his hopes within him will perish and die. But if men shall have true faith in the heart and head both, or in the heart only in this commission of the Spirit, they shall never fall away, but shall have the assurance of eternal life abiding in them. This many believers in this commission can witness so at this day.

Thus, as short as I can, I have given you an answer to your queries, which may somewhat more satisfy your mind as to your queries; but in the reading of the books, as to the true doctrine concerning the true God and the right devil, and the interpretation of Scripture, the books will give a great deal better satisfaction to the spirit if understood.

There is a young man of this faith that saw your letter, hath sent you a book, called, *The Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelation*, by your friend John Terry, with a letter also; his name is John Saddington: so that if satisfaction be not found in the commission of the Spirit, I say it will be found no where. For this I must tell you, that whoever owns free-will, as to the saving of his soul, after he hath heard of this commission of the Spirit, and of the doctrine of election and reprobation, declared by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, I say such will perish to eternity, let their righteousness be ever so great, or think of themselves what they will. For Moses did hold forth the doctrine of election and reprobation, and declared much against free-will, saying, *It is not in him that willeth, or in him that runneth, but of God that sheweth mercy. And on whom he will have mercy, he will have mercy; and whom he will he hardeneth.*

Also it is the faith of us the witnesses of the Spirit, and of the believers of it, who can witness in their own spirits, that they are elected, and have certain and full assurance of their eternal salvation, and as certain that others are reprobated to endless misery.

But I shall say no more at present, but rest and remain,

Your friend in the true faith of Jesus, the only true God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, May 19, 1665.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to one John Hyde, living in Jewen, a bookseller, bearing date October 27, 1665.*

*John Hyde,*

I AM informed that you have very much exclaimed against me, as if I had dealt unjustly with you, as if I had done you a great deal of wrong, and not only so, but that I did gripe and exercise lordship over the consciences of others to keep myself in idleness. These are the best of your expressions; so that I shall not take much notice of them, though you have shewed the naughtiness of your heart, and a lie in it. But the thing I would discover unto you, and wherein your heart hath not been right is this:

did not you proffer to bind me a quarter of a hundred of books single towards the printing, because you could not spare money, and that you would have one for yourself; indeed I was unwilling you should do it, and was loth to accept of it, and I said I would pay you for what you did bind for me, not expecting that you should be at the charge, no not so much as to buy one, or to work one out in binding; but you pressed upon me again and again to make up the quarter of a hundred. And you may remember I did ask you, in Mr. Medgate's shop, whether you did intend to have one of them altogether for the binding of a quarter of a hundred? and you said you would have one single. Mr. Medgate doth remember it. But if you would have had them altogether, you should have had them altogether, for that would very near have been worth the binding of them, for you did ask me but *5d.* a piece to bind them, neither are they worth any more.

Likewise, did not you, when I was with you, with Mrs. Carter's book concerning the silver bosses, when I paid you 11s. for her book, and my wife's book, did you not then ask me to send so many books as would make up the quarter of a hundred, which was fifteen then wanting. So, through your pressing of me unto it, I did send by my wife, fifteen to make it up; for this I must tell you, if you had not pressed me to it, I would have bound no more than what I had present need of, but would have paid you for those ten that were done before, and there would have been an end of that business. For you might have had so much reason in you, that I would not go bind so many books to lie by me, for they will go off as well unbound as bound. So that the thing would have been no benefit to me to lay out so much money, and take

it in by *6d.* at a time, perhaps it may be a year or two before I receive the money in again.

Again, if you did not intend to perform your promise, why did you keep back that one book, according to your agreement, as if you meant to perform your promise; for if you did repent of your promise, you should have sent that book also, and a line or two, that you did repent of your promise, and I would have sent you money to the full, though they were bound contrary to my desire. But through the wicked hypocrisy of your heart, you take offence at me, and rage and rail against me, as if I were an unjust man, or had done such an unjust deed to you, by cutting off such a sum which you did expect. But this I would have you to know, that it was never my nature, when I was in my lowest estate in this world, to covet or encroach upon any, to get any thing from them, no not to the rich; and as to the poor, I was always tender of taking any thing from them, but would rather add unto them, even of that little that I had; though I had power, and now have power, to command what I think fit of those I know can or may perform it, yet I never did in my poverty, much less now in my plenty; for I considered their condition to be mine own, and that I would not have been dealt so by; so that the power I now have, did no ways alter my natural temper in this matter; neither have I got this plenty, whereby I stand in no need of any man, but all men do stand in more need of me, than I do of them. I say I did not get this plenty out of the saints, but Providence hath given it me by my wife, else perhaps I might have been more troublesome to some of the richer sort of saints than now I am. But to let that pass: I will shew you wherein you have shewed the greatest piece of hypocrisy,

that I have found in any man or woman, since I came to know truth: for you have acted just like Ananias and Saphira the Scripture speaketh of, who pretended to bring in their whole estates, and lay it at the apostle's feet, as if they were true believers of the apostle's doctrine, but the root of bitterness was in their hearts; they pretended one thing, but did another; that is, kept back part of what they pretended to give unto God. For whoever maketh a covenant with an apostle or prophet, he maketh covenant with God; and so Ananias became a liar unto the Holy Ghost, in that he did not perform what he pretended to do. And you may read what the effect of that sin did amount unto; for if he had not freely and voluntarily pretended such a thing, he might have kept his estate and his life both; for who required that thing at his hand? For he might have done with his own estate what he would, but when it was given unto God he could not; even so it is with you. Did I require any thing of you towards the printing of this book? Was it not your own proffer? Who required these things at your hands? But you pretending, as Ananias did, to be one that did believe, you would, as other saints did, offer up a sacrifice unto God, to help to promote the truth. And because I did accept of it, you revile and speak evil of me, as if I had done you wrong. Have you not done as Cain did, offered up a sacrifice unto God, that God will not accept of, but reject it altogether? For if the messenger of God doth reject it, it is as if God did reject it; for my soul doth abhor such a piece of hypocrisy, that shall pretend to give any thing for the honour and glory of God, and then repent of that deed, and not only so, but revile and speak evil of those they give it unto; for this I must tell you, that your sin is as



bad as Ananias his sin was to Peter ; for you have not only lied unto the Holy Ghost, but have spoken evil of it also ; for I am as true a prophet as Peter was an apostle ; so that Ananias did tell a lie unto the Holy Ghost no otherwise than what was in Peter. And have you not done the same unto me, though not in the same manner : for this I must tell you, it is a dangerous thing to dally with edge-tools ; that is to say, it is a dangerous thing to make covenant with prophets, and not to perform your covenant, though you lose thereby. You must not think to deal with them as you did with other men. But seeing you have, through the hypocrisy and deceitfulness of your heart, acted like Ananias and Cain, as aforesaid, your sacrifice is rejected of me, and of God also ; for I shall not accept of it, neither will God afford you any peace in it, but altogether on the contrary.

But this is not all : I understand that you, out of the pride, malice, and stubbornness of your heart, even with great wrath and gnashing your teeth, you expressed yourself thus, that if I did damn you, you would damn me ; and that you had as great power to damn me as I had to damn you, if not greater, or to that purpose. Likewise you said, that I could not damn God's elect. I cannot damn God's elect ; but if you had been one of God's elect, he would never have suffered you to have fallen into such a deep pit of eternal destruction ; neither can any man be sure of his election, but by faith in the commission of God. But I will not stand to dispute that now, though I could give many reasons for it. Also you did threaten, that if I did damn you, then you would discover me what I am, as if you would persecute me, and those of this faith, but in what manner, and how, I know not. But because you may execute

your malice, I shall give you occasion enough to do it, for I had as lief you should do it as any other, if you can ; for I shall serve you as Christ did Judas, he gave him a sop, on purpose that Judas might betray him ; so likewise you shall have a sop given you, that if it is possible you may do as Judas did ; so that your own fears and words may come upon you ; for you have said many times, that you thought you should be damned by me, when as I thought not of any such thing, so that you said you had as good be damned at first as at last. This fear hath been in your heart ever since that business of Mrs. Harris, ever since your heart hath fallen ; and according to the thoughts of your heart, it is now come upon you. Therefore, for this wicked piece of hypocrisy, about the books, and not only so, but for your unjust be-lying me, as if I had a desire to encroach upon you, and upon others, and your proud, malicious, insolent speeches against this commission of the Spirit, with many other wicked speeches, which would be too tedious to name, therefore, by virtue of my commission received from God, I do, for these wicked things aforesaid, pronounce John Hyde cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men, and angels, to eternity, by

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses to the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

You may now shake hands with Mr. Colebrooke, for your portions will be both alike, only I would advise you to take the money for binding the books, there is 7s. 6d. inclosed in your letter ; you had as

good receive it as not, for God hath rejected it, and I have rejected it. And further, if you will carry that one book more, which you have, to Mr. Medgate's, you shall have 3s. for it, and then you will have your full price for the quartern of books, at the rate of 5d. a-piece, which was your own demand, and so you may be rid of the doctrine as well as of the commission.

I would wish you to let that book go also, that you may have your money altogether; for it hath cost you dear enough in all reason, so that it is great pity you should miss of it.

*October 27, 1665.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Martyn, Minister of Orwell, in Cambridgeshire, dated from London, January 16, 1666.*

I UNDERSTAND that you had a desire to see me, and to have some discourse with me, and that you were at a place in Orwell, to enquire for me. And not only so, but you brought also with you the high constable, and petty constable, and another man, to discourse with me. Do you think that any man that hath any wisdom, that can give any reason of his ways, would think that your intent was good, to bring your armies with you, to discourse with a naked man; and not only an army of men, but great officers of the temporal sword, that they might not only bear

witness of what words should pass between you and me, or catch me in what questions you should ask me; but, if they could have got nothing of me worthy of persecution, then, by virtue of the power of those two constables, you would have laid hold on me, as a deceiver of the people.

These things have been acted by such serpents as you, in former times, to prophets, apostles, and to Christ himself. How oft did the priests and Levites, such as you are, tempt the Lord Jesus, by asking him questions, thinking to catch him in his words, that they might have therewithal to accuse him before the temporal power!

It is not long since that I was served so by a priest or minister so called; and so caused the temporal magistrate to commit me to prison. But what this minister got by it! It was no less than eternal damnation, which will assuredly be upon him, as it is upon murdering Cain, who killed his brother; and Judas, who betrayed his master; for how is it possible any persecuting spirit, who persecute men for conscience sake, not breaking any temporal law, should escape the damnation of hell? For this I must tell you, that persecution, merely for conscience sake, is the sin against the Holy Ghost; but more especially for men to persecute true prophets upon the account of deceivers, there is no pardon for this sin. But I have found by experience what the power of a prophet is, and I have found by experience also, that none are so great enemies to true prophets, as those called the ministers of the nation are. I find the prophets in the law were persecuted more by those sort of men than any; and I have found those sort of men more active than any in persecution. So that the seed of the old serpent, the devil, it doth run in

the line of those sort of men ; it is as natural for those sort of men to persecute for conscience sake, and persecute prophets, and so sin against the Holy Ghost, as it is for fish to swim in the water ; so that I do no ways admire the thing, but do see it must be so, and it can be no otherwise. But this I would have you to know, that if your intent had been real, then would you have come alone, and have discoursed with me privately, and not to bring great officers of the parish with you, to hear us discourse : so that your intentions were not good towards me, but by consequence very evil ; and it was the ready way to have procured the sentence of eternal damnation. But in regard I do not hear that you did any ways revile and speak evil of me, or of the doctrine declared by me, by calling it blasphemy, or me a deceiver, or such like terms, whatsoever your intent was in bringing those men with you.

These things considered, I shall wave the sentence of damnation upon you at the present, for this your wicked intent towards me ; only this yoke I shall put upon your neck, by virtue of my commission from God :

The thing is this, I understand that you, being a pretended minister of the gospel of Jesus Christ, (I suppose you will own yourself a true minister of the gospel of Jesus Christ ; else what do you get up into a pulpit to preach to the people ?) For yet you professing yourself a minister of Christ, I hear you present, or cause to be presented, divers of your parishioners for not coming to church. Is this the practice of a true minister of Christ ? Surely no. Did you ever read in Scriptures, that any minister of Christ did so ? Do you follow the example of the good shepherd ? The Lord Christ speaketh of the good shep-

herd having an hundred sheep, and one of those sheep went astray; the good shepherd left the ninety and nine to seek that which was lost, or gone astray; and when he had found it, what did he do to it? He brought it home in his arms, and did nourish it and cherish it, and took more care of that which was lost, or gone astray, than he did of all the rest, that never went astray. This is the property of a good shepherd.

The moral is this: every true minister of Christ is a shepherd, and the people of his parish are his sheep, and the shepherd doth feed his sheep with such heavenly pasture; that is, with such saving doctrine, which giveth the sheep assurance of everlasting life; so that their souls are fatted with the joys of heaven, in the full assurance of everlasting life; and this heavenly pasture, it casteth out all fear of eternal death.

This ought to be your practice and your power, if you were a chosen minister of Christ; but how contrary to a true minister do you act: for if any of your sheep be gone astray to error, as you call it, and dissent from your worship, then, instead of bringing them home in your arms, and giving them bread to eat, and water to drink, to nourish their bodies, and good admonition, exhortation, and the true interpretation of the Scriptures, to feed their souls; instead of this, you present them, and labour to excommunicate them, and send forth the constables, church-wardens, and officers, to apprehend them, to bring them before the temporal magistrates, and so cast them into prison, or else get the wool off their backs, and leave them bare.

Is this the practice of a true minister of Christ? I suppose any conscientious man would be ashamed to own himself a minister of Christ, and yet do these

things ; but it is the custom of most national ministers to do so ; therefore I do not marvel at it ; because I know there is none of you chosen ministers of God ; but being chosen by men, ye act as men, yea, as wicked men.

And seeing you are made a minister by men, and from men, and not from Christ, why are you not contented with that wages that men have appointed for you, and let mens consciences alone.

Therefore I shall say unto you as John Baptist said unto those soldiers that asked him, saying, *And what shall we do?* You know his answer was, *They should be content with their wages, and do violence to no man.* So I say unto you, be you contented with that wages the parish hath allowed you, and present and persecute no man for his conscience.

So, as I am a minister, messenger, and ambassador chosen of God, by virtue of my commission from him, I shall lay this burthen upon you.

That if you shall present, or cause the constables, church-wardens, or other officers, to present any man or woman under your ministry, for matters of conscience, or for not coming to church, let the people be of what opinion soever (always provided they pay you what is allotted for you, and the parish, and state-assessments ;) but if you shall present, or cause to be presented, any, for the causes aforesaid, after the receipt of these lines ;

Then, from the Lord Jesus Christ, the only wise God, I do pronounce you cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men, and angels, to eternity.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. William Fershall, High Constable of Orwell, in Cambridgeshire, bearing date from London, January the 19th, 1666.*

*Sir,*

I HAVE heard of you these four or five years, and I always heard a good report of you, for a moderate spirited man, and that your spirit is naturally inclined to peace and quietness; and that you are not naturally inclined to persecute any man for his conscience in point of worship: yet I hear, through the instigation and desire of the priest of your parish, that you, with the petty-constables, and the priest, did consent together, pretending to see me, and to have some discourse with me. And now what your intent was in it, I shall leave that to yourself; but that I know that your intents could not be good towards me: for I know if you follow the advice of your minister, your intent cannot be good, but altogether evil; for it hath been the practice of the priests and Levites, in all ages, to persecute the truth, and true prophets. So they did by the Lord Jesus himself; for it was always their practice to propound questions to entrap and ensnare the messengers of the Lord; and when they have words from a man, so as to ground persecution upon it, then they turn it over to the temporal magistrate, and officers of the civil government, to put their wicked malice and hatred of truth, under the pretence of high blasphemy, or else horrible opinions, or great errors: I say, they turn it over to the temporal powers, and the temporal



officers must put their wicked minister's intent in execution.

This I know by experience; for I have tasted of the priests cruelty before now. And this I suppose would have been the case now, had the priest and you met with me. But I am sorry that such men as you should be priest-ridden, to go a persecuting strangers at his desire and request, without a warrant: surely you did it out of ignorance, not knowing the power of an high constable, that he may choose whether he will stir in such cases without a warrant; or else you did sympathize with the minister, Mr. Martyn, in his wicked design towards me. One of these two must be the motive to move you to go along with him. But I shall impute it to the want of the knowledge of your own power, rather than any desire of persecution in you. Therefore suffer me to give you a word of advice, and do not think scorn that such a one as I should give you advice; for I have given some judges of the land advice in point of persecution for conscience; how that judges of the land ought to mind the laws of the land, and to give righteous judgment according to law, and not to meddle with mens consciences in matters of worship; the conscience belongeth to God. What have judges to do with errors in judgment, there being no laws of the land broken, they ought not to meddle with any thing but what belongeth to the temporal law; so you being high-constable, you ought to mind the place you are in; you are to keep the temporal peace where you live, and if any warrant come from any higher than yourself, if it be for treason, murder, felony, tumults; or such like, you are to search houses, or raise aid, and take prisoners such as are found guilty of such crimes, or suspected to be such persons, with many other

such things of the like nature; yet all these things belong to the temporal laws: what is this to spiritual matters? What if a man be accounted a blasphemers, an heretick or deceiver; by an ignorant clergyman, or shall dissent from his parish-church, through the tenderness of his conscience, will you exercise your temporal power to punish such men as never did you wrong, nor cannot break any of the laws of the land? Yet because men are not of your opinion of religion, therefore they must be apprehended and persecuted to please the minister's malicious humour.

Therefore this charge I shall lay upon you by virtue of my commission from God, that if ever the minister of the parish, or any other, shall desire you to send after me, or any other person, upon a spiritual account; but if you shall voluntarily seek to satisfy the wicked wills of persecuting spirited men, being not forced unto it by a warrant, you ought not to stir at the request of any one whatsoever. For if you do persecute me upon this account, there being no temporal law broken, or any other person for conscience sake: if you shall do these things aforesaid, after the receipt of these lines, you will commit that unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost, and so be found a fighter against God, and by consequence damned to eternity. For what have you to do with a man that is a free-born man of England, as yourself is, that cometh peaceably to see his friends? Do we at London serve any of your country-people so? Do we molest any of you, be you of what persuasion soever, provided you break not the king's peace?

I would have you to consider these things aforesaid before it be too late, and remember you were forewarned by one of the two last prophets and witnesses

of the Spirit unto the High and Mighty God, the  
Man Christ Jesus in Glory.

*Written per me,*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, January 19, 1663.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton, to Mr. James Brocke, bearing date from  
London, March 30, 1666, directed to Mile-End, near  
Stepney.*

*Friend James Brocke,*

I RECEIVED a letter from you, wherein I  
perceive you have heard and seen divers papers con-  
cerning the Jews: and further you say, that I am  
charged, as though I were in an error concerning the  
Jews, call, as doth appear as they say, (that is, I sup-  
pose enemies do say) from the 46th chapter of The  
Divine Looking-Glass: so that it seems that it doth  
lie upon you as a great weight and burthen, so that  
you see no way to get it off you.

Also you desire to be satisfied of me what the Lord  
hath revealed to me concerning those people of the  
Jews so much spoken of, that you might be satisfied  
yourself; and that you might stop the mouths of  
others, who are gainsayers, that do upbraid you with

this, that it doth now plainly appear, as they say, that I have not truth on my side, in regard that I have written of no calling of the Jews into their own land, when the contrary (say they) is already manifest.

I was unwilling to give any answer to these things, because the thing is of no concernment whether the Jews be called into their own land, or not, what is that to the matter of salvation, whether they be or not? The truth is nevertheless on my side: neither need your spirit be ever the more troubled, in case you be thoroughly satisfied and grounded in the knowledge of the truth, that will thoroughly satisfy your spirit as to the matter of your salvation: so that no cavilling devil whatsoever need to trouble your mind, as to the foundation of true peace, though it lieth not in your power to answer every cavilling question that people shall ask from the letter of the Scriptures; neither will you be able to stop the mouths of gainsayers, though your knowledge in the Scriptures were greater than mine, or all mens knowledge in the world besides. You must not expect any such thing; and as for their saying that truth is not on my side, that is a small thing for me to bear: was there ever any prophet, apostle, or Christ himself, but the devil said they were liars, and in errors? Did not the Jews, who were devils, serve Christ himself so? Did he stop the mouths of those devils, notwithstanding his wisdom was so great that never man spake like this man, as it is said in Scripture? Yet he could not stop the mouths of those gainsayers, notwithstanding his great wisdom. And if he could not do it; how should I do it, much less you? It may be enough for you if you can satisfy yourself in those that are of absolute necessity unto salvation. As, first, the knowledge of

the true God in his form and nature. Secondly, the right devil in his form and nature. Thirdly, the place and nature of heaven. Fourthly, the place and nature of hell. Fifthly, the persons and natures of angels. Sixthly, the mortality of the soul. The knowledge of these things are of absolute necessity unto salvation. These, with many other heavenly mysteries, that are treated on in our writings, that whoever hath the true knowledge of these things aforesaid shall not want peace of mind, though he cannot answer to every question the devil can ask from the letter of the Scriptures; but, however, I shall give you some answers to these things concerning the Jews, that you may be a little better satisfied in that point, if you can understand it; and that you may see there is no contradiction between the Divine Looking-Glass and the Scriptures.

First, As to Christ's people, called the Jews, which you have heard and seen so many letters of, who doth such mighty wonders, who are going to their own land, you are not sure it is true, nor nobody else; for I am informed, it is nothing else but a point of state policy of the pope, and his council, to fill the minds of people with such things, that are at such a distance that none can disprove it; so that other things, that are of more concernment, for the state of the nations, might not be minded; for all people's minds in all Europe are striving after some deliverance or privilege; but what it is they would have they do not know.

Secondly, If it were so indeed that those people were in such a great body as it is indeed reported of them; yet, this I say, there is never a one of them that doth, or will believe in that Christ, or Messiah, that died at Jerusalem, which we believe in; for those

**Jews go to act over the law of Moses again, and their Messiah is yet to come ; but ours is come and past.**

Further, this you may observe, that these Jews in the Turks country are the children of those that put our Lord to death, whose father said, *Let his blood be upon us and our children.* So that these Jews will never be converted and believe in that Jesus which their fathers put to death ; for his blood is upon them to this day, and will be to the end of the world ; so that if they should get that land which Moses gave unto their fathers, yet they will never believe in that Christ or Messiah that we believe in, no, not traditionally, as most of Europe doth : so that I say, those Mosaical Jews will never be called to the faith of the gospel, neither do we in our writings meddle with the Jews going into their own land ; if they do, that will be little benefit to me, or you, or any one else, as to our eternal happiness. But for their being called to the faith of the true Jesus, the only wise God, I am sure they never will be ; nor those that upbraid me with truth not being on my side, neither is the contrary yet come to disprove me, nor ever will come.

Thirdly, I would willingly inform your judgment of the difference between those Jews the Scripture speaketh of, that shall be called to the faith of Jesus, and those Jews that shall not. This you are to mind, that there was many of the Jews nation that were moderate men, that had no hand in the death of Christ, neither did they give them their voice for the crucifying of Christ ; so that the blood of Christ was not upon them and their children. Therefore mind what I say, in the destruction of Jerusalem, which was a matter of forty years after Christ's death, I say,

then was all the innocent Jews taken by the Romans, with those Jews that were guilty of Christ's blood; and those innocent Jews, many of them being mixed in marriages with the Roman Gentiles, they have brought forth a generation of Jews of another nature; and of another profession. As thus, those Jews that kept to their own tribes in marriages, they professed only the law of Moses, they deny the gospel of Jesus; those shall never be called as aforesaid. Secondly, those Jews that mixed marriages with the Roman Gentiles, these Jews being of another nature, they are called to another profession of the gospel of Jesus: but I must tell you, it is but to an outward profession of the gospel; for few or none of those Jews do understand the faith of the gospel, though they profess it no more than the Gentiles do; for it is the power of the Gentiles that doth set up the gospel-worship all over Europe.

Further, I shall distinguish who are Gentiles; and who are Jews, that do profess the gospel in a literal way: the Gentiles are all the priests and episcopal; these two sorts of people that profess Christ they are not Gentiles: the Presbyterians, Independents, Anabaptists, Ranter, and Quaker, are for the most part all Jews; and those all do profess the gospel of Jesus in the letter; but few of them in the spirit; so that saying is fulfilled, *Many are called, but few are chosen*; that is, many are called to the outward profession of Christ, but few that truly understand what this Christ is. Nay, I myself am one of those Jews of the tribe of Levi, according to the seed or spirit; and not only so, but God hath chosen me the last man to declare truth to those Jews and Gentiles, and many there is called to hear it, but few that truly believe it; yet

some there is both of Jews and Gentiles that do truly understand and believe in the true Jesus, which is the true God, these things I do certainly know.

So that if you can understand these things here written, you will no more be troubled at the devil's words concerning the Jews: also, you will say, that truth is on my side, and will be on my side to the end of the world, when I am dead and gone; so I shall leave you to consider of these things, and if you can understand them you may be the better satisfied; because this is a universal interpretation, therefore more hard to understand.

So I rest your friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

March 30, 1666.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to one Mr. Fletcher, of London; June 25, 1666.*

*Mr. Fletcher, who, as I understand, was formerly a Blacksmith by Trade, but now a Solicitor in the Law,*

I UNDERSTAND that you are the man that hath managed Pittman's business against Mrs. Butler; and not only so, but you have got the better of it, your wisdom and subtilty being greater than ours in the tricks and querks of the law, which we were unacquainted with, though Mrs. Butler's case was as



just a case as ever was, for Pittman did abuse and dishonour her good disposition very much; and he abused me much more, for I came in a fair way to Pittman, and told him Mrs. Butler had sent me a letter to receive the goods into my hands, and that I should pay Mr. Pittman half a year's rent; and withal, she sent Pittman a discharge of her own handwriting, which discharge was given into his own hand; but he had not patience to read it himself, nor to hear any body else to read it, but did rage and rail at me upon a spiritual account, and called me blasphemer; with other base speeches, and did threaten to throw me at the fire back; whereupon I did pronounce Pittman damned, soul and body, to eternity, and he shall be sure to suffer those eternal torments according to my word, for he hath blasphemed against the Holy Ghost, a sin I am sure God will never forgive.

And I understand that you are so offended at me for passing the sentence of damnation upon Pittman, so that you have blasphemed against the Holy Spirit that sent me, and have raged and railed at me, and have called me blasphemer, a rogue, and have threatened me to persecute me, and to use your best endeavour that possibly may be to have me in jail in three weeks time, with many other venomous and envious railing speeches; which, since that your soul doth thirst after my blood, if you could take away my life, and not be hanged for it, I am confident you would do it if you could; yet I know no wrong I ever did you by word or deed, for I do not know you, neither do you know me; neither did you or I ever speak together as I know of, yet I am so railed at and abused by your evil tongue for nothing. Did you ever hear me speak evil of you for managing the suit in law against Mrs. Butler, though I was con-

cerned in it, but I did rather commend you for it that did things so wisely, that you made a bad cause to be good in law, when as the innocent and true cause was overthrown through our innocency, and our ignorance together; yet in all this I never spake evil of you, not in the least, but could have wished I had known you before, that you might have been employed for Mrs. Butler's case, which was a just, righteous case; for certainly, if you did so well for a devil, and an unjust cause, certainly you would have done much better, when your wisdom had acted itself forth for an innocent person as Mrs. Butler, and her just, righteous cause, as before said; so that your best course would have been to have minded your suits in law, and have rejoiced that you overthrew the innocent in her right, which she must suffer patiently; yet this gives no content, except you could be revenged on me for damning Pittman.

What need your zeal have been so great for Pittman's damnation? There was nothing said against you concerning that, you shall have minded the law of the land as aforesaid; for this I shall affirm to you, or before any judge, that God hath cursed and damned Pittman's soul and body to eternity, and he and his wife did Ananias and Saphira (his wife) like, consult together out of envy to me, to do Mrs. Butler that wrong to detain her goods against her order.

Therefore I say this, the Lord do so unto me, and more also, if the Lord doth not avenge himself upon Pittman and his wife, for their wicked, unjust dealings in this thing, and their blasphemy against God.

And now I shall speak a few words to you, Mr. Fletcher, who was before-time, as I understand, a blacksmith by trade, but now a solicitor in the law:

I do not repeat this out of any disparagement unto

you; but because I know more men of that name Fletcher; so that I would not have the reflection of this letter to reflect upon any but the right person; because I do not know your other name; so that the thing is this, that I shall say unto you, inasmuch as I perceive that you are of the seed of the serpent, a son of Belial, even a son of the devil, a reprobate, whom God hath appointed to be damned to eternity, therefore hath God raised you up; that he might shew his power upon you, in that he hath left you to sin against the Holy Ghost; and not only so, but you have vomited and breathed out cruel, threatening, envious speeches against me, who am innocent, who never had any discourse with you in my life; but I know your malice is, because I am the messenger of the most high God, and that you shall know to your eternal pain and shame, the wickedness you have committed, for which you must be damned. It is these, and such like; as, first, you called me a blaspheming rogue. Secondly, that I was a cheat and a deceiver, and it was pity I should live. Thirdly, and that you would persecute me what you could, and that, if it were possible you could by the law, you would have me in a jail; with many more cruel, envious speeches; which could not be spoken but by a reprobate devil, appointed to be damned, to one that scarce ever saw the man, and never asked me a question, neither spiritual nor temporal; yet this evil hath proceeded from you. And do you think in your conscience, if I were not a messenger of the Lord, but only an innocent man; I say, do you think that you can do these things, and yet escape the damnation of hell? Let any sober man judge between you and me.

Therefore Mr. Fletcher the solicitor, as I am the

messenger of the most high God, for these your blasphemies against God, and your cruel murdering desires, and your wicked speeches against me, without a cause as aforesaid, I do pronounce this Mr. Fletcher cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God; elect men and angels, to eternity.

This is the sentence of the Lord God upon thee, and because it shall surely come upon thee, neither shall you escape what I have said, for thy wickedness is great, and thy sin is gone up to heaven, and crieth for vengeance; therefore I say unto thee, God be judge between me and thee in this matter, and let God do so unto me, and more also than I have said to thee, if I shall do this without a commission from God; or if this thing doth not come to pass, which I have said unto and upon thy person, body and soul, then let it be upon me, that you and others may know that God hath honoured a man so far as to give sentence of eternal damnation upon the souls and bodies of reprobate devils, who speak evil things they know not.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

I know you would gladly have something to accuse me of by the law of the land; but I would have you to know, that I cannot break any of the laws temporal; so that I suppose the judges of the land will not meddle with things that do not belong to the law, that is, with things spiritual; for that belongeth to God, and to those whom he will chuse; for spiritual commissions are quite different from temporal commissions; and as judges of the land have commissions from the king, so God's messengers are judges, and have their commission from heaven; and the judges

of the land, they judge according to the tenor of their commissions; so God's messengers, who are judges, they judge according to theirs, and they both have a rule to judge by; and you see, that when men have committed such things as the law saith, whosoever doth them shall die: you see likewise the judge giveth sentence for the man to die. Is it the judge that puts that man to death? Surely no; it is the man's breach of the law that puts him to death; so that the judge is not to be blamed, but to be honoured, for giving sentence according to law: so likewise it is with God's messengers, for they are judges of spiritual things. Now, if a man shall sin against the Holy Ghost; or shew himself to be of the reprobate seed; if God's messengers shall give sentence of eternal damnation upon such a man, shall the man so condemned by God's messenger, fly in the man's face, and say it was the messenger of God that condemned him to eternal death? No, it was the man's sin that condemns him to eternity; the messenger doth but give sentence according to the demerit of the sin, just as the temporal judge doth in the case before said.

So I say, as certain as you Fletcher and Pittman have seen many a one put to death, or hanged after the judge hath given sentence upon them, so certain do I and others see that you must to the damnation of hell. Now the sentence is passed upon you, deliver yourself if you can.

But because it is not executed upon you immediately, you may think there is nothing in it, but you will find it soon enough; for if such as you had lived in Moses time, you would have been cut off presently; for Moses did not stay long when the ground opened its mouth, and swallowed up those rebellious devils, such as you are; so those Elijah destroyed with fire

from heaven, were such as you are ; so Elisha, Isaiah, and other messengers of the Lord, and the apostles, as Peter, the sentence of these messengers of God, they were immediately executed ; and had you lived in that time, you would surely have gone to the pot immediately with them ; but your damnation doth neither slumber nor sleep.

Also, I understand you do intend to have the Lord Chief Justice's warrant for me, and that you have a great many of the damned crew to witness against me. Indeed they may truly witness they are a company of damned devils, that have sinned against the Holy Ghost ; and for my part, I shall witness before the justice, the thing is true, they are damned indeed ; only I would desire you, when you go to the Lord Chief Justice for a warrant, that you will present this letter of your damnation to his honour, and see if his honour will give you any encouragement to prosecute me upon this account. I believe his honour will do, as other judges have done, he will say it doth not belong to the law.

How will such devils as you do then, for such matters as these do not belong to the law. It will be your best course to take Mr. Dagget along with you, for he and you have been brethren together in iniquity in this business of Mrs. Butler's and Pittman's, notwithstanding I did advise him to the contrary ; but I perceive he hath ventured his eternal damnation upon Pittman ; so according to what he hath done in relation to that letter, let it be unto him : but this I must say of Mr. Dagget, he is a far more moderate devil than thou art, for he acts more serpent like, but thou acts like a fiery dragon devil ; but God will, by his mighty power of faith in me, see his vengeance brought upon the dragon, and upon

the serpent; so I shall stand still, and wait upon my God, and in a little time I shall see the downfall of most, or some of these my confederate enemies; so I shall see what you can do according to the laws of the land.

I have been more large than I did intend; but because these lines may be seen by more than the party himself, it was necessary people should understand the ground of things, so they may the better judge of these things.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*The true Messenger of Jesus Christ.*

June 25, 1666.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Harrison, called Minister of Blithfeild, in Staffordshire, dated from London, October 6, 1666.*

*Sir,*

I UNDERSTAND you took a book from Joseph Whithworth, entitled, *The Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelation*; but I suppose it was by the justice's order that you had it to peruse, the justice conceiving that you were better able to judge of it than himself, you being a clergyman, or a pretended minister of the gospel; for pretended ministers of Christ, or false priests, having no commission from

God for such a great work, they always become enemies to true prophets, apostles, and to Christ himself; none so great enemies and persecutors of truth as false priests, and false ministers. This the Scripture doth witness for truth.

Also I do understand that you did call the doctrine and interpretation of that book blasphemy and deceit, and a lie, with divers other wicked speeches against the doctrine contained therein; and not only so, but you did rail against me, the author of it, calling me a blasphemer, and a deceiver, and that you did believe that I was a Jesuit; and that you did believe I had received orders from the pope to divulge these things to deceive people withal, in regard my name was unknown unto most people, it being not a common name. These, and such like words, have proceeded out of your mouth, which doth discover unto me what your heart is: also I do see further into your heart, in that you did breathe forth threatnings of persecutions against me, in that you said I deserved fire and faggot, with other cruel punishments, as if you did not know what punishment was great enough for me. These, and such like words of yours, they shall be a witness against you in your own conscience, and God, angels, and men shall witness against you, that you have sinned against the Holy Ghost, as those Scribes and Pharisees did, which called the spirit and power by which Christ wrought those wonderful miracles, they called it a devil, so they sinned against the Holy Ghost. In the same manner have you sinned that unpardonable sin, which will never be forgiven you in this life, nor in the life to come, for you are the absolute seed of the serpent, a son of the devil. This I do certainly know, for none but that reprobate seed, whom God hath blinded their eyes, lest they should



see the truth, when true light shineth before them, would have said as you have done; for this I must tell you, whosoever despiseth an ambassador of Christ, despiseth him that sent him, and sinneth against the Holy Spirit that sent him, as you have done, in that you have blasphemed against as pure a truth as ever was spoken by prophet or apostle; for the same God that gave them authority to write the Old and New Testament, the same God gave me authority to write those things you have so much despised, and you shall find your blasphemy against those things punished with the same punishment as those that sinned against the Holy Ghost, when the prophets, apostles, and Christ were in being upon the earth.

This is not all, for you have shewed what a murdering devil you would be, if it did lie in your power; no less than burning at the stake, or some greater punishment, would satisfy your devilish spirit, could you accomplish it; just as the old serpent devil Cain, your grandfather; and bloody Bonner, your father; you know my meaning. But this I say, though you cannot accomplish your will, yet I know your desire is set on the fire of hell; therefore, according to your desire to me, it shall be done unto you; and look what measure you would have meted unto me, it must and shall be meted unto you again; for you have committed high blasphemy against the Holy Spirit that sent me, and in calling the doctrine contained in that book blasphemy, deceit, delusion, and a lie, with other wicked speeches against things you know not, which books such devils as you were not worthy to look into; and also for your serpentine nature, that would, if it were possible, persecute me to the death as aforesaid, a man that never did you any wrong, nor never saw you in my life to my knowledge; but

by your own words you shall be justified, and by your own words you shall be condemned; therefore in obedience to my commission received from God, I do, for the aforesaid blasphemies against the Holy Spirit that sent me, and what measure you would have meted unto me if you could, the same shall be meted to you again, as burning and the like, I do pronounce Mr. Harrison, minister of Blithfeild, in Staffordshire, cursed and damned both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity. Your body, which is now your heaven, shall be your hell, and your proud and envious spirit shall be your devil; the one shall be as fire, and the other as brimstone, burning together to all eternity.

This is the sentence of the Lord's messenger upon thee, and thou shalt remember that thou wert told so by a true prophet. Deliver yourself from it if you can.

### LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

To satisfy your evil mind that I have no orders from the pope, you may know that I was never above twenty miles by water in all my life, and that I am no Latin scholar at all, only I can read English, but not so perfect as many others can, yet God hath given me more knowledge in the Scriptures of the true sense of them in the English sense than any man in the world, so that I need not travel to the pope to learn knowledge from him. It was never the practice of prophets and apostles to seek after learned men for heavenly knowledge, for prophets and apostles were taught heavenly knowledge of God; so it is with me, my knowledge

is of God, and not by education and learning from man. Also I am a freeborn Englishman, and a free-man of London by birth, and born there, and never was out of England in all my life: also I am known by person to thousands, and by name to hundreds, and to many that never saw me; so that you need not so much wonder at the strangeness of my name. Also I have been in three several prisons upon this account, and have had many persecuting enemies, and in every persecution against me there was a priest, or that you call a minister, with others that persecuted against me; but they got but little by it, but procured their further damnation; for what hath the law to do with mens damnation? The law cannot justify that which God condemns, for a sentence of damnation cometh not within the compass of the law. And so it was said by one of the judges of the land when I was tried; the judge said, the matter did not belong to the law, so I was quit: besides, I have had to do with a many of your priests, both episcopal and presbytery, and all other speakers; so that I have not been so obscure, but have been known to all sorts of people, though not to every particular man; so that you need not to question what I have said concerning you, for I shall justify that sentence upon you, and others of your coat, before any authority whatsoever, as I have done in former times.

I thought good to write these few lines, to satisfy your malicious spirit in that matter, concerning my going to the pope, (as you did suppose) and what I am, so that you may doubt no more of that matter; so that you may turn your persecuting spirit some other way, if you can tell how to state the malice of

your heart according to law ; you may do it, and see if that will ease you of your eternal damnation.

## LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

October 6, 1666.

---

*The prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Blessing to Mrs. Anne Lowe, now the wife of Alexander Delamaine, senior. Given to her July 5, 1667.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Mrs. Anne Lowe,*

ACCORDING to your request I shall write these lines as followeth: first, I looked upon you to be one of the blessed of the Lord, and seed of faith, before your aunt died; but I knew the seed was smothered and stifled in you through some temporal occasions, which could not be avoided, so that the seed of faith in you could not grow to perfection; no, not so much hardly to be seen; yet I saw, in that time of darkness, that there was a love in you unto the truth, though your knowledge and experience was very weak, yet I had a good opinion of you, that in time the seed of faith in you would spring forth, and appear in its own likeness; and, according to my thoughts of you, it is come to pass, which I know your own experience can judge of it; for now you can tell, in some measure, what difference there is between light and darkness, and between ignorance and knowledge.

Secondly, I do perceive, within a short time, even since your aunt died, that your faith hath grown very much, to receive a prophet in the name of a prophet, else would you not have requested such a thing at my hands; and because you would be sure you would not be satisfied with a word from my mouth, but would have it under my hand-writing, though the word of a true prophet is as powerful to the party concerned, either in blessing or cursing, as writing is, only the party concerned cannot look upon words when they please; neither can they shew them to others, as they can writings, when I am dead and gone.

Therefore, to satisfy your request in this thing, I shall say this unto you, that I have so much discerning of what seed you are of, even of the seed of the woman, which is the seed of faith, that blessed seed, and not of the seed of the serpent, which is the seed of reason, that cursed seed; so that I am fully assured in myself, and do steadfastly believe, and my faith hath no doubt in it, neither in the blessed, nor in the cursed. Therefore, that you may be assured of your eternal happiness and salvation, without any doubt, I do, by virtue of my commission from God, and the faith I have in your eternal happiness, I do pronounce thee, Anne Lowe, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to all eternity; so that you need not fear, as Jacob did, when he received the blessing of his father Isaac, he feared a curse instead of a blessing, because he stole the blessing; yet, being blessed by the father that had power to bless, he was blessed, and it could not be taken off him again: so I say by you, being blessed by the last true prophet of the most high God, who hath power

given him from heaven so to do, thou art blessed to eternity, and none can take it from you again.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

*July 5, 1667.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, November 4, 1667.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

MY love remembered to you and your husband ; I received your letter, and am glad to hear that you are both well ; but as for those slanders and evil reproaches that are cast upon me by the damned crew, it is a small thing counted by me, for they did so by Christ, the only God, when he was upon earth, and would do so to him now if he did appear in mortality as I do, though now the seed of reason doth honour the words of the true prophets and apostles, who said by Christ, *never any man spake like this man* ; but the seed of reason the devil did think then, never any man spake like him for error, pride, and blasphemy. What ! make himself equal with God ?

The same case is with me, though I know never any prophet or apostle did or could speak, or declare those things as I have spoken or declared, and the seed of faith doth and will know it to be true what I have said and written; neither do I speak this out of any pride, but out of perfect knowledge, for true knowledge hath no pride in it: also I know the blessed of the Lord will witness unto it; and the more the devil layeth slanders and reproaches upon the truth, the seed of faith will be the more strengthened in their faith; for I am as a mark for every wicked man to shoot at, yet the archers cannot hit me so as to wound me, though many arrows have been shot at me, but my knowledge, revelation, and power remaineth in as full strength and power as ever. I know William Watson's brag of George Fox's book, and so are many more of the Quakers people; but that will yield them but little peace. Also I am desired very much by some that have been Quakers, but are come to own this, but are very weak, not able to give a reason of their faith in this, desireth me to write an answer to George Fox's book, which thing I have begun, and as soon as I can I shall perfect it.

I received the fifteen shillings, and I thank you for your kindness, and your kinswoman or friend for hers, and so doth Mrs. Bladwell, she is alive still, but very weak of body, but as confident of her eternal happiness as ever; also I have sent your kinswoman or friend a book all bound together, the price is ten shillings, they were always so. Our friends here are all pretty well, but in Cambridgeshire Charles Cleeve hath buried his wife, which is a great trouble to him for the present.

This is all at present, but my wife's love remembered unto you.

I rest your loving friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Elizabeth Hooton, Quaker, January 26, 1668.*

*Elizabeth Hooton,*

I SAW a letter of yours sent to James Brocke; it is supposed that you are the mother, or some relation to that Samuel Hooton of Nottingham, who was damned to eternity by me in the year 1662. It is no great marvel unto me that he proved such a desperate devil, seeing his mother was such an old she-serpent that brought him forth into this world. Also it is thought, that Dorothy Carter did give sentence of damnation upon you; as one of the seed of the serpent; but seeing it is not certainly known unto me, and in that you have written cursed, and many blasphemous speeches concerning me, for in that you have blasphemed and cursed me, whom the true God, the man Christ Jesus, hath sent; you have blasphemed against God that sent me, and have sinned against the Holy Ghost; and look what judgment is given upon your soul and body by me here in this life; God himself doth approve of it, and wi-



not reverse it. If your letter had been only concerning James Brocke, I should have left it to him to struggle with you, though I know those curses you have pronounced against him, they will fall upon your own head, and not upon his ; and what he said concerning George Fox, it was nothing but truth, and George Fox shall find it so in the end. But seeing the greatest part of your letter to him is against me, I shall give some answer unto it.

*First.* You charge me to be a sorcerer, and have opened (as you say) my mouth in blasphemy against the God of heaven and earth, and against the saints of the most high, meaning you Quakers.

*Secondly.* You charge me with a cursing spirit ; and say, that woe and misery will be the portion of us both, meaning James Brocke and myself, and that it had been good we had never been born.

*Thirdly.* Be it known (say you unto us both) and to all our wicked crew, as you call them.

*Fourthly.* You say, woe unto thee, Muggleton, thou child of the devil, thou enemy of all righteousness.

*Fifthly.* You say, cursed shalt thou be in thy going out, and in thy coming in ; and say, thou art a damned devil, as thou hast said unto others ; so shall it be unto thee ; and say, thou shalt roar in hell, and all such as be of thy spirit.

*Sixthly.* And say, for a sad day is coming upon thine head ; and say, the same head that cut off thy brother Reeve, and shortened his days ; and say, the same hand will cut off thee.

*Answer.* *First,* You do by me as those wicked Jews did by Christ, when he cast out Devils, and cured diseases by the power and spirit of God in him. They said he did it by Belzebub, the prince of Devils ;

so likewise do you Quakers say by me, because I do by the commission of the true God, and have cast out many devils out of many of you Quakers and others by a word speaking, and have subdued those witchcraft-fits within many of you Quakers, so that the strength of your witchcraft is much abated in you all, and you Quakers become many of you in your right minds, to your peace and comfort, and others of you Quakers are cloathed in your right minds, being not able to procure a witchcraft-fit as formerly, for it turns to a sensible rage, and malice and blasphemy against the true personal God, saying, I do these things by sorcery, as the Jews did by Christ, as aforesaid.

*Secondly.* You charge me with a cursing spirit, and say, that woe and misery will be the portion of us both.

To this I say, if I have cursed any of you Quakers without a just cause, or without a commission from the true God, let woe and misery come upon me indeed, according to your desire, and I shall bear it patiently, as I have testified in all my writings, that if those curses I have pronounced upon all you Quakers, and others, if it be not from authority from God, then let them be upon my head, as the desire of Quakers is; but I knowing God hath owned me these seventeen years, and hath made his power visibly appear in me upon the bodies and souls of many of you Quakers, and more especially in these six years time, and that God doth own that curse I have pronounced upon the Quakers people more than any other: Why? because the Quakers people are more Anti-christian than any other, though I confess the malice and temporal persecution hath been to me more from others than the Quakers; but the

Quakers people being of a more Anti-Christian spirit, and fighters against God, a personal God, than any others whatsoever, therefore the curse I have pronounced upon the Quakers people, it hath taken more visible effect upon them than any others ; for the Quakers God and Christ is all within them, and from this God within them do they fight with my God which is without me, even the man Christ Jesus in that body that was nailed to a tree, as the Scripture saith, which is without me. For at what time did any man ever hear any that professeth the Scriptures, or the Christian religion, to say they would trample Christ Jesus, my God and me, under their feet as dung, and despise a God of five foot high, as you Quakers have done ; for you Quakers know that I own no other God but the man Christ Jesus in glory, and he to be both God and man in one single person ; yet you defy this God of mine, and say you would trample him and me under your feet as dirt, for which things hath the wrath of this God fallen upon you Quakers, and the curse pronounced by me, his messenger, hath taken place in some of the eminent Quakers ; for the curse pronounced by me, God's messenger, is to part your Christ within you one from another ; for you Quakers do not die, as you say, you do but go out of the body ; but sure, when you do go out of the body, your Christ within you, sure your soul and he doth part one from another, and never shall see one the other more to eternity ; and this hath been the effect of the curse upon some of you Quakers, only to separate Christ's spirit from yours, that you may never see one the other more to eternity. And seeing these things have fallen out in these my days, and that God hath chosen me to stand as a wall of brass against all Anti-

christian spirits, for every hypocritical spirit to shoot their arrows at me ; but none can hurt me, nor make any entrance into me, because the whole armour of God is put upon me ; my feet are shod with peace, my breast with the breast-plate of righteousness, and upon my head is set the helmet of salvation, and in my left hand is put a shield of faith, and in my right hand is put a two-edged sword ; so that no fiery dart of the devil, man or woman, can enter me, or hurt me ; and with this two-edged sword, in my right hand have I fought with many men devils, and have overcome them, and yet received no wound myself. And now, last of all, there is a woman devil, namely, Elizabeth Hooton ; she hath shot forth her poisonous arrows at me in blasphemy, curses, and words, thinking herself stronger than her brethren, that if happily her poisonous arrows might pierce into me ; seeing that so many of her Quakering brethren to fall before me, she was moved with great wrath against me, and zeal for her God and Christ within her, and madness, that some of her brethren, the Quakers, after the curse pronounced upon them for their blasphemy, they went out of the body, or laid down their bodies, as Thomas Leigh did. This moved her to pour out the poison that was in her heart, with her tongue set on the fire of hell against me, in curses and blasphemy, thinking her poisonous arrows and venomous tongue should have took hold or place in me, more than her brethrens curses did before ; but as the men devils your brethren the Quakers, were made partakers of God's vengeance by the curse of his messenger, in that they blasphemed and despised the true God as aforesaid, in that they are damned to eternity, besides their going out of the body here as you think, so will

the same curse follow you for your wicked, proud, presumptuous speeches, in that you, being a woman, will undertake to pronounce woe and curses to one that hath a commission from God; yet you, from a light within you, and a Christ within you, a sandy foundation one, a puff of wind from a true prophet will lay it level to the earth: and would it not have been great pity, that such a she devil as you are should have escaped the sentence of eternal damnation? Surely it would; and because you shall know for what you are damned, I shall rehearse some of your wicked speeches, curses, and blasphemy, which have proceeded out of your mouth.

*First.* You say, woe unto thee, Muggleton, thou child of the devil.

*Secondly.* You say, I have opened my mouth in blasphemy and cursing.

*Thirdly.* You say, I am cursed in my going out, and in my coming in.

*Fourthly.* You say, I shall roar in hell, and all such as be of my spirit.

*Fifthly.* You say, the same hand as cut off my brother Reeve, and shortened his days, the same will cut off me.

*Sixthly.* You have called me sorcerer, because I have cast the devil and witchcraft spirit out of some of you Quakers, and bound some quaking devils, unclean spirits, in chains of darkness and fetters of death, that shall never be let loose to eternity.

These things have been wrought and much more, by the commission of God in me, for which you call me sorcerer, as those devils did say by Christ when on earth. He cast out many devils and unclean spirits out of men and women, and they said he did it by Belzebub, the prince of devils. So say you Quakers

by me ; and you, Elizabeth Hooton, Quaker, have, in a high manner, like them, also sinned against the Holy Ghost that sent me, with great pride and high presumption, as may be read before.

Therefore, in obedience to my commission from the true God, the man Christ Jesus in glory, in heaven above the stars, I do pronounce Elizabeth Hooton, Quaker, for these horrid blasphemies and hard speeches against the truth, cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

Your own body shall be your hell, and your proud raging spirit shall be your devil ; the one shall be as fire, and the other as brimstone, burning together to all eternity. Your Christ within you cannot, nor God without you will not, deliver you from the sentence I have passed upon you.

*Written by*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit unto the High and Mighty God the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

*January 26, 1668.*

*The Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton, to Mrs. Parker, May 25, 1668.*

*Loving Friend, Mrs. Parker,*

I HEAR by Mrs. Sudbury that you have been very ill, else you would have written to me yourself; I should have been glad to have received a few lines from yourself, if you can write, though it may be you may think you cannot express yourself as you would, yet let not that be any hinderance to you, for it is not the wisdom of placing words that I mind, but the sincerity of the heart; *for out of the abundance of the heart the mouth speaketh*, or writeth, whether it be in things that are good, or in things that are evil. I confess I do not know you by the sight of the eye, nor by writing; but I have heard a good report of you by others, as one that doth truly believe the truth, especially by Mrs. Sudbury. She giveth a good character of you, as one grounded in the true faith; as if your knowledge did arise very high, in believing all things declared by me, and that you have a good understanding in the rise of the two seeds, and how God became flesh, with other things; and that you have received much peace and satisfaction in your mind, since you believed in this commission of the Spirit. I do not in the least question the report that is given you by others, but am altogether inclined to believe it, especially from such persons as have experience in themselves, they can judge of the experience in others also; there are few persons that have a love for me,

as a prophet of the Lord, but their hearts are right in the sight of God also. And as the foundation of your faith is built upon this commission of the Spirit, it will be as a sure rock that shall never fail you, though many storms of reason, the devil's temptations, may come violently upon you, yet it will not touch that inward peace of conscience in the assurance of everlasting life; for faith in the true God is that white stone in the heart, wherein is written a new name, which none can read but those that have it. This many can experience at this day. Also I doubt not but your faith will grow in you more and more, from strength to strength, so that the peace and satisfaction you have begun in you already may encrease to a greater measure of peace and satisfaction of soul to the things of eternity, to the full assurance of everlasting life, so that no doubt may arise in your heart.

I thought good to write these few lines unto yourself, to strengthen your faith, perceiving by Ellen Sudbury's letter it was your desire.

So at present I shall say no more, only my love to yourself.

I rest your Friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
May 25, 1668.*

My wife, though unknown, remembers her love unto you.



*The Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, May 25, 1668.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter with the inclosed, and gave your husband's letter to Mr. Delamaine ; also I am glad to hear that you and your husband are both well as to this present life, for I know your happiness in the life to come will be sure, in that my faith is in you, and your faith in me ; and so by faith God is in us, and we in him.

This is that union men and women have with God, being partakers of the divine nature of God. Faith comes by hearing the word of God preached ; and how shall he preach, except he be sent ; that is, who can make known the true God, and declare the true righteousness of faith unto man, but he that is sent of God ; and this righteousness of faith was in you, Ellen Sudbury, before you saw me, and my faith was in you before you saw my face, and before I saw your face, or heard your voice ; but in your letters I saw that salvation was come to your house, in that you received a prophet in the name of a prophet, you could not miss of the blessing of eternal life ; and you being the instrumental occasion of your husband's receiving the faith, whereby he hath peace and rest in his soul, as to his eternal happiness, as I find by his writings : so that it may be truly said, that salvation is come to your house, in that you received a prophet in the name of a prophet, you have received a prophet's reward, for every true prophet hath salvation attending on him. And as for our friend Mrs. Parker, I perceive she hath been very ill, and that she would beg a few

lines from me. Now, what I write to her must be grounded upon your report, for I do not know that ever I saw the woman, or received any lines from her, yet I judge your discerning to be good, and the things true you report of her; therefore, upon your report, I shall write a few lines to her in particular; and as for my coming into the country this year, I think I shall not, neither to Cambridgeshire, nor no where else. I am desired much by Charles Cleve, and other friends there, to come this summer, and by friends in Kent also, but I have no intent to go from London; but for the devils malice I matter not what they can do unto me, for the devils must not go beyond the law, lest they bring themselves into a premunire; for had I known so much as I do know now, when I was taken at Chesterfield, I would have made the mayor, aldermen and constable weary of what they did. The devils malice could have done me but little hurt if I had been wise; but as the proverb is, *Wisdom is good when it is dear bought.*

Now I can certify you, that I have finished the answer to George Fox's book; it is ready for the press, therefore what you are pleased to give towards it send as soon as you can with convenience, not wronging yourselves. I thought by our friend Tomkinson's letter to have seen him at London about Whitsuntide, but he did not come.

This is all, but my love to yourself, and to your husband, with my wife's love to you both.

I rest and remain your Friend in the true Faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, May 25, 1668.

Direct your letter thus for me: for Lodowicke Muggleton, at the widow Brunt's house in the Postern, next door to the sign of the White Horse.

*The Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Thomas Tompkinson, May 26, 1668.*

*Loving Friend in the eternal Truth, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED in Mrs. Sudbury's letter, dated May 3, 1668, a letter of yours inclosed, dated April 20, 1668; in which letter of yours I am glad to hear you are well, and that your faith is so strong as I perceive it is; neither are you blamed by me for any slothfulness in you, for I am glad you are so well satisfied in yourself that you had no need to write to me. I could wish all saints were so satisfied in their minds in all things, to have no need to write unto me, neither for temporal nor spiritual satisfaction. I could be glad if every saint had it in themselves. Also I perceive in your letter that you had an intent to come to London about the tenth of May, but it seems some occasions did prevent you of that journey at present; and as for that book of George Fox's, I have written an answer unto it; I have now finished it; it will contain, as I suppose, a matter of twelve or fourteen sheets of print. There was great glorying in the Quakers people at the first in George Fox's book; but this answer will be as great a shame to them; therefore what you, or any others, are free to give towards the printing, let it be as soon as you can, for I do think to put it to the press about two or three weeks hence. You may, if you please, send it to Mrs. Carter's, or Mrs. Sudbury's, which you please, and they will convey it unto me. And as for that

book Fox set forth against me, it maketh all wise men to see the weakness of the Quakers people more than they did before, for there is none rejoiceth in that book but those that are damned by me, or some ignorant shatter-brained people, that know not their right hand from their left in matters of religion ; but such people as are serious, that do mind interpretation of Scriptures, they like it not, for he hath brought many places of Scriptures to prove me a false prophet and liar, but he giveth no interpretation ; he leaveth the dead letter to speak for itself, and to condemn me ; so that I am forced to interpret those Scriptures Fox hath left silent, which will appear in the reading of this answer to his book.

This is all at present, only to let you know that I am well ; so with my love remembered unto yourself, and your wife,

I rest your Friend in the true Faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London,*

*May 26, 1668.*

My wife, though unknown unto you, desireth her love remembered unto you and your wife.

You may direct your letter to me thus : for Lodowicke Muggleton, at the widow Brunt's in the Postern, London, next door to the sign of the White Horse, near Moor-lane.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter ; being a relation of some Passages in a Discourse with George Whitehead, and Josias Cole, two Speakers of the Quakers, in the Year 1668 ; as also some relation of that cursed Devil Thomas Loe, Speaker of the Quakers, and how the Effects of God's Vengeance did seize upon him, immediately after the Return of an Answer to his cursed blasphemous Letter sent to me, and in less than three Weeks after was dead and buried.*

1. THE first question or words Cole spake to me, as near as I can remember, were these : saith he, thou sayest God is in the form of a man, and thou sayest his hand is not much bigger than mine or thy hand ; and thou seest what a little this hand will hold ; yet, saith he, God is said to have measured the waters in the hollow of his hand, and behold the nations are as the drop of a bucket.

Why, said I, do you believe God to be so big to hold the waters in the hollow of his hand ? That is spoken in relation to his great wisdom, power and dominion, and not relating to the bigness of his hand ; for a king may conquer many kingdoms by the power of his sword, which his people have put into their hands by his command ; and the king may say he hath won these kingdoms, and reduced them to obedience to his laws by the strength of his own hand ; yet the king's hand is no bigger in bulk and bigness than another man's hand is : also I said, that

I that am but a mortal man, have power over such a great God, whose hand is so big ; for, said I, that God, whose hand is much bigger than thy hand or mine, I have power over to condemn. This was passed by, and no reply from them.

2. Whitehead said, he did hear one say that I had damned, that I should say I was as glad I had given judgement and sentence of damnation upon him, as if one had given me forty shillings.

This I did acknowledge to be true, for I have said so by several desperate devils, and I am justified in the sight of God, and in my own conscience, for so doing.

3. Whitehead said, that he did hear that I had cursed a man, and he changing his apparel, came afterwards, and did procure a blessing ; and that this man, or some other, did smite or knock a pewter-pot upon or over my head.

This I said was a lie, and false, for never did any man strike me over the head with a pot in all my life ; and as for that report which Pope, that damned devil, in saying he was blest after he was curst, it is a false report, and a lie, that he hath reported several times amongst ranters and Quakers ; for this Pope was a ranter when he was curst, which is about fifteen years ago, and is a worse ranter now than he was then, and that you Quakers know very well what a wicked piece he is, and the wicked lustful life he liveth now in ; yet you Quakers will rather believe this damned devil, and wicked lustful person, than believe me, who have been kept innocent from the breach of any law, from my childhood to this day ; but I know you Quakers, being of the same nature and seed of the serpent, as those Jews were in Christ's time, who desired of Pilate, that a thief and

a murderer should be delivered from death, rather than Jesus, the Lamb of God that taketh away the sins of the world: so it is with you Quakers, you had rather believe this wicked lustful devil Pope, who hath from his youth, till now, had sin and wickedness reigning as lord and king in his mortal body: I say, you had rather believe him, even this notable sinner, than to believe me, who am the Prophet of the most high God, the man Christ Jesus in glory, and have power given of God, as Moses had, to set life and death before you; but I know you will say in the thoughts of your hearts, though not in words as those Jews did by Christ, away with Muggleton, let us have Pope, that wicked lustful man, that we might hear and inquire of him.

4. Whitehead espied a knot of ribbon upon the sleeve of my coat, and said, Why doest thou wear this vanity? Also I said to Whitehead, why doest thou wear silk buttons upon both thy coats? He said they were necessary; and I said no, he might wear hooks and eyes, or ilet-holes; so that was past by.

Again, I did say I did wear ribbons on purpose that I might not be taken or thought to be a Quaker, for I do hate the Quakers' principles; with that Whitehead said, that thou hatest all righteousness, and spake as if himself and Cole were writing against me, in answer to mine against George Fox, and some other things or words they had catched from me in discourse to make me manifest: also one ugly fighting word did Whitehead speak against the personal God, which I do own, that he would trample him and me under his feet as dirt, with some other words of fighting and undervaluing my power; whereupon I did pronounce George Whitehead cursed

and damned, in soul and body, to eternity : also I said his God within him is cursed, and that God he believed or trusted in without him was damned with him, and so ceased discourse with him.

5. When Cole had heard me speak thus unto Whitehead he was still, till I had ended with Whitehead, but I saw his eyes dazzle, and his spirit working within him, so immediately after he uttered these words, or such like: saith he, I have heard of several thou hast cursed, but, said he, I did not believe, had I not heard and seen, that a man could have spoken so presumptuously.

Then said I unto him, dare you say that I have spoken presumptuously? He said, he did believe it was presumption; then said I, on the contrary, I do believe thou art the seed of the serpent, and wilt be damned; and now see whose faith will be strongest, yours or mine; for my faith shall keep you down or under for ever. Under what? Said he. I said, under eternal damnation. Then said he, doest thou ground thy sentence upon my belief? I said yea I do, for you believe that I spake presumptuously, and I do believe you to be the seed of the serpent, and will be damned to eternity. Then said he, doest thou judge this to be a sentence upon me? Yea, said I, what should it be else? Then Cole rose up with a zeal for his God within him, and said, I told thee before that I would try thee and thy God, saying, they were setting forth a writing against me; and withal, Cole pronounced many curses upon me, with his eyes full of dazzled babies in them; and Whitehead, he came with great threatening of judgements upon me, they being both so full of curses together, that I can hardly tell what they said, their curses were so many and so



various, so that I could not tell which curse of them both did most concern me to take notice of, only one passage I do remember Cole said, that I should sink in the pit of darkness, and such like words ; he used the word darkness many times, but their words were both together, so that their words took no place in me, no not so much as to remember what they said ; but I perceive Cole's curses were much like unto Thomas Loe's curses in his letter to me.

Many words more there was between us at that time, but these are the words and passages of most concernment at that time, and of a final judgement and sentence of eternal damnation, that I gave that day upon Josias Cole and George Whitehead, speakers of the Quakers.

This I do discern and observe in these two men, first, that Josias Cole is of the Spirit of the Sadducees, and more fit to tempt, being more moderate in his words than the other was ; for that devil that tempted Christ, spoken of Matthew, Chapter iv. was a Sadducee, yea a wise and prudent man, whose wisdom of reason is more qualified with moderation in discourse than the Pharisee is, so more fit to tempt than the Pharisee is ; so I know that devil that tempted Christ was a man that was a Sadducee in his spirit, whatever he pretended to the rulers of the Jews, therefore more fit to propound questions to Christ than the Pharisees were ; likewise I do know that Josias Cole sprang from that Sadducee that tempted Christ, and so was the more fit to tempt me, and I did like his spirit of moderation well, and was not offended at his temptations nor his questions until he called that presumption I said unto Whitehead. Also this I know, that George Whitehead,

Quaker, is one of those Pharisees' spirits that came to catch and entrap in his words, for it is the nature of the spirit of the Pharisee to watch and catch at words, whereby they may accuse or entrap them they talk with. This did the Pharisees to Christ, which made him call them serpents devils, yea, and that the devil was their father, because the Pharisee spirit is more secretly proud and mysterious than the Sadducee, which is the fittest devil to tempt ; and Christ pronounced woes more earnestly upon the Pharisees than he did upon the Sadducees, or upon that devil that tempted him in the fourth of Matthew abovesaid ; so it was with me, I was more offended at George Whitehead's pharisaical spirit, whose property was only to quibble and to catch at words, to turn the plain truth to another sense ; for when a principle of truth is laid down infallibly, and plain Scripture words, that will not admit of innovation, then this Pharisee would neither affirm against it, nor deny it ; but let it fall, and to another thing : Whitehead is of a worse spirit than his forefathers the Pharisees in Christ's time, for they confessed they could not tell ; but this Pharisee Whitehead, he would not say that he could not tell, but thought in his heart that he knew more than I did, therefore would neither affirm against those things I asserted or denied ; but I know his eyes are blinded, his ears deaf, and his heart hardened, so that no true light of life might enter into him, lest he should have believed the declarations of the true God and the right devil, by the last true messenger of God, and have been converted and saved. Also this I say, that had Whitehead asked me, as Cole did several times, whether I did discern him to be the seed of the serpent, but I would not tell while I saw further,

but I would have told him I did, for I always hated the proud pharisaical spirit, who was as full of conceited knowledge of a Christ within him as his skin could hold, it was even ready to crack with that conceited light of a bodiless Christ within him ; but a little time, and his Christ within him will be emptied out of him, as it is with Thomas Loe, and several others of the Quakers that are under the judgement and sentence of this commission of the Spirit ; and where or whensoevèr this writing is read, it is recorded, that Josias Cole and George Whitehead, two speakers of the Quakers, were at this time, and in the discourse aforesaid, judged and condemned, both soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

*By me,*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*One of the two last Witnesses and Prophets unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus, in Glory.*

Thomas Loe, speaker of the Quakers, sent a blasphemous and cursed, envious, cursed letter unto me, dated the 16th of September, (which he calls the seventh month) 1668 ; and I sent him the sentence of eternal damnation by the bearer the same day in writing. Also the bearer is a Quaker that brought Loe's letter, and is damned also.

But people may see how soon this devil Loe was cut off this earth after that railing blasphemous letter, and gives no reason for what, but heaps up many curses, threatenings of judgements, and hellish expressions and high blasphemy against the Holy

Ghost, or true God that sent me, so that I could do no less but give judgement and sentence of eternal damnation upon him ; also the Quaker aforesaid was not willing to go without Loe's sentence, but Loe was cut off suddenly after. He was buried the 6th of October, 1668.

But I know the Quakers do not think the judgement of God, nor my sentence, was upon him, or over him, for his blasphemy, but they say he had been in a consumption fifteen years, and came lately out of Ireland. Very likely it may be so ; but sure if he had been sick when he wrote those lines to me, it shewed not weakness of nature in him, nor weakness of body ; but it may be his spirit was so enflamed with the fire of hell in zeal for his God, or Christ within him, that he felt no weakness of body at that time ; for his wrath was great and hot against me, as his letter doth shew ; but you Quakers do believe that Loe's soul is not dead, but slipped out of his body, and gone you know not where, and into a power and spirit you know not what ; but I say his soul is where you laid his body ; they both came into this world together ; they both despised the truth together ; they both received judgment and condemnation together, and both died together, and were both soul and body buried together ; and shall both rise again, every seed its own body ; that seed of reason, which was his life, which he thought was the divine nature of God, but it was the nature of the devil or serpent, and that law written in his heart, he and you Quakers call the light of Christ, or Christ in you, which is nothing in you else but the law written in your hearts, your thoughts accusing and excusing ; and when God shall raise him again, that seed of reason shall rise and bring a

spiritual dark body with it, and that law, which was written in his and your hearts here in this life, shall quicken anew in that new, dark, spiritual body; and then shall he, and you despisers of a personal God, know, that your own souls, which you thought was the life of God, but it was the life of the devil, ye devils yourselves, and that law written in your hearts, which you called here in this life the light of Christ; but when this law doth quicken again, as I said before, it will prove the only and alone devil to torment you to eternity.

These things may seem strange sayings, and as a riddle unto you, and a thing impossible; but with God all things are possible which his own will moved him unto. And this I say, as it was possible for God to write the law in the angels natures, and by his secret determinations suffer one of those angels to become very man; and so the angels seed having the law written in it before God made Adam, and so by generation the law comes to be written in every man's heart, man finds it there accusing, but knows not how it came written there.

So it is as strange for you Quakers to believe that God will raise your souls, that were dead, again; and not only so, but the law shall quicken in you again; for as the law is strictly written in your hearts, but ignorantly written in the reprobate angel, so by God's secret decree and power he will revive that law again in the reprobate seed of reason, as in Loe, and many of you speakers of the Quakers, and others of your brethren who are under the judgment and sentence of this commission of the Spirit, shall find my words to be true upon you and over you to eternity; neither shall you be delivered from it.

*By*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. William Hall, in the Year 1668, concerning his Marriage.*

*Dear Brother,*

I RECEIVED your letter, and I am troubled to hear of your trouble, and am perplexed in my mind to hear how you are perplexed, and that without a cause, about one that will love you whether you will or no ; but, dear brother, I would not have you, through your weakness in judgment, and ignorance in experience, I would not have a good nature and an innocent mind enthralled and entangled, and bind itself with such cords that cannot be untied again, nor broken, but are as chains of iron ; and seeing your mind is free, and you have no guilt upon your spirits in this matter, do not bring guilt upon your mind, through your weaknesses of judgment and want of experience, for I perceive you have broke no law to bring guilt upon your mind not in this matter ; for if you keep yourself whole in these three things, the law of God, the law of conscience, and the law of the land, you need not be troubled in this business in the least of love ; let it happen how it will, keep your conscience innocent in these three laws, and no guilt can be upon you in this matter ; and for your better satisfaction, I shall open these three laws. The law of God is this : that if you shall covenant and promise, as in the presence of God, to take this maid to wife, none seeing or hearing but yourselves, then perform your

vow as unto God. The law of the conscience is like unto it; if ye have in secret, between she and you, made any profession of love to her in that kind, to draw her affections unto you, or asked her whether she could love you in that kind, to draw her affections unto you, or asked her whether she could love you in that kind, or made her any promise or engagement to her in secret, which none heard or knew but yourselves; if not, your conscience is free from guilt or trouble in this business. And as for the law of the land; if you have promised before witnesses to have her to wife, yet if the maid be not there present to hear that promise, it signifies nothing, let witnesses witness what they will; except the maid be in the hearing of it, it signifies nothing. Now I am persuaded that you are innocent in all these laws; therefore why should you bring yourself into bondage to that you cannot love or fancy; if her love be so great to you, that she must do herself a mischief if she cannot have you to her husband, let the evil be upon her own head, she hath brought it upon herself, and would you cast yourself into hell, to marry one you cannot love, to raise her up into heaven? And whereas you pity her for the trouble and earnest affection to you for a husband; dear brother, be not more pitiful to relieve her troubled spirit, than to pity your own troubled spirit; such tragedies as these hath been acted upon the stage of this world before now; for if wives will force men to love them whether they will or no, it is not true love, neither are you bound to gratify that flame of desire; for it seemeth this act of hers, to savour more of boldness and impudence than of true love, to force love out of a man whether he will or no, or else she must die, or make away ourselves, this is

but to put your tender nature into a fright, thinking to fright you to be her husband, lest she should do herself some hurt; but so as she can but obtain her desires, she cares not which way. Do not you believe that she doth this of herself, but as she is instructed by her mother, or some other friend, even as the damsel was that danced before Herod the King; the damsel knew not what to ask of the King, but went to her mother, and was instructed by her mother to ask the head of John Baptist; it was a woeful demand to John, and to Herod the King too, but for his oath-sake he must do it to his own ruin. Your case is something like it, for doubtless the maid is instructed to ask the body of you for her husband, and then the estate they know will follow; so the maid get you, they care not what trouble of mind you suffer afterwards, wherefore do not wound your spirit where you gave no cause; if any will take offence, because you will not satisfy their desire, let the woe be to them that take the offence; for, first, they have made your passive nature the cause of offence, and except you will yield to their desires, they will take offence at you, and make you the cause of their trouble; but my advice is, that you will be steadfast in your own mind, and resolve to keep the integrity of your mind, and the preservation of your own peace; let what will be the effect, your condition will be safe; and seeing you are in this streight at present about a wife, having so many proffers, I would resolve to have none at all, nor engage myself at all to any at present. What if you stay a year or two longer, you are young enough, it will do as well, and your peace of mind will be preserved better; and who knoweth how Providence may order things in a little time, for a patient



contented mind is more worth than riches, it maketh every condition a man is in to be comfortable.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Edward Delamain, a Baptist Preacher, living in Marlborough, bearing date the 16th of June, 1668.*

*Edward Delamain,*

I SAW a letter of yours, very large, sent to your brother Alexander Delamain, wherein I have found in it many passages so blasphemous against the Holy Spirit, which sheweth plainly unto me that you are of the seed of the serpent, and appointed to be damned to eternity.

And this I must tell you, when I spake with you I knew you were of the seed of the serpent, and appointed to be damned; yet I seeing you did not despise any thing I said, I let you alone, though I knew you well enough: your eyes were blinded, and your ears deaf, and your heart hardened; so that no light of heaven might shine into your heart: but if you would have spoken but one word to my face, as you did in your letter to your brother, you should have been damned then as your brother Noble was, who was the Baptist preacher; it would have saved you a great deal of pains in writing those large letters to your brother, and your brother to you; for I said to him in his first letter he wrote to you, after

you went away, that it would be good for him to send you the sentence of damnation then ; but your brother having more mercy towards you (you being of so near relation to him) than God, or any of his messengers had ; so did write to you again, though it was but to cast stones against the wind ; for there is no more possibility to convert you to the truth, than for him to reach up to the stars with his hand ; for you are blinded and hardened as all reprobates are, who are conceited they know more by reading the letters of the Scriptures than any man's revelation, though it be the revelation of God himself.

I shall name some of those wicked passages in your letter.

As *first*, you look upon the letter of the Scriptures to be the lively oracles of God, to speak unto you in these days, and that you ought to give as great and real credit to them as if God had visibly spoken to you.

*Answer*. The seed of the serpent is as well contented with the dead letter of the Scriptures, and better than they are with the spirit and life of the Scriptures ; for they that spake the Scriptures, their words were spirit and life to those that believed them, and spirit and death to the reprobate seed ; but the dead letter of the Scriptures is a lively oracle to the seed of the serpent, because they can give what sense they please, saying ; I conceive this is the meaning, and the letter answereth not a word again ; this pleases the seed of the serpent, because the letter lets them conceive what they will of it, and so it becomes a lively oracle to the reprobate's mind, because it cannot speak, nor the men are dead that spake it.

*Secondly*. You say the Scriptures were written in

past times, and in present time, for the teaching and learning of those that should come in after time.

*Answer.* The Scriptures were written in past times for the teaching and learning of the seed of faith; but they were not written at all for the teaching and learning of the seed of the serpent, such as you are; neither doth the letter of the Scriptures teach or learn any man the way to heaven, by any spiritual knowledge, without a true interpreter, which I know there is none at this day, but us the witnesses of the Spirit only: but who so zealous for the dead letter of the Scriptures, as the seed of the serpent is?

*Thirdly.* You note the words of Peter, shewing, that he and others saw the glory of God's Majesty, and were eye witnesses of it, as in the second epistle of Peter, chap. 1. Peter, say you, was eye witness, and heard the voice of God himself, as much, if not more, than John Reeve, or any man can pretend to: yet, say you, he would not have the Christians pin their faith upon his revelation, or single voice of God.

*Answer.* How can you, being the reprobate seed, tell that God spake to Peter more than to John Reeve? And how can you tell that Peter and others saw the glory of God, and were witnesses more than John Reeve? John Reeve did see the glory of God, and God spake to John Reeve more than he did to Peter and Paul either. This John Reeve hath declared, and there is more ground to believe John Reeve than Peter; because John Reeve did justify the things a few years ago, and many now are living that heard him, and have the witness in themselves, that his voice was a true voice; but as for that of Peter, there is none now living that heard him speak as they did John Reeve; yet the seed of the serpent honoureth the words of Peter, now he is dead many

hundred years, and all that saw Peter and believed him are dead many generations past since; but the reprobate's faith is very strong in dead mens words; but when they were alive they were counted by the seed of the serpent deceivers and liars, as we are counted. And this I say, whoever did believe Peter's voice of God, and his commission to bind and loose mens sins, they did pin their faith upon his sleeve, that is, upon his commission and doctrine.

*Fourthly.* You say the Scriptures are more sure, and safer to be heeded and minded, than any revelation or vision of any man whatsoever.

*Answer.* Do you not shew your blindness and darkness in this thing? Did the apostles, when they came with their revelations and visions, count the writings of Moses and the prophets to be more heeded and safer than theirs? Why did they then upbraid the Jews for putting their trust in Moses, and the worship of the law? For the Jews despised the Revelation of Christ and his apostles, calling it new doctrine, saying, they were drunken with new wine, because their revelation was new to the Jews, because they declared a new doctrine and new worship, contrary to the old doctrine and old worship of Moses, and the prophets; even as the rulers said to the man that Christ opened his eyes that was born blind, when he asked them, saying; will ye be Christ's disciples? They said, no; they were Moses's disciples. Here the serpent gave more heed to the Scriptures of Moses, and the prophets, they being all dead, than they did to any revelation or vision of Christ and his apostles, when they were living. And those devils thought it more safe to put their trust in dead mens' revelations, than in any man's revelation living whatsoever. So it is with you, being the

seed of the serpent, you look upon it to be more sure, and safer for you to depend upon the dead letter of the Scriptures for life and salvation, than upon any revelation, or vision, or voice, this commission of the Spirit hath declared: but you shall find it more unsafe for your soul, in that you did put your trust in the letter of the Scriptures, and reject the revelation of the Spirit; for the letter of the Scriptures shall do you no good, neither shall you find any comfort by them; but they shall rather be your torment, because you did not hearken to man's revelation and interpretation of Scriptures, that is now living.

*Fifthly.* You say, you would have your brother to speak as Timothy did, boldly, from God's word, and not (say you) from supposed commissions, as you imagine.

*Answer.* Your brother doth speak boldly from God's word, as Timothy did, because he spake in the faith of a commission, and knows that this commission is the word of God, as much or more, than that word of God as Timothy spoke; because Timothy was chosen a bishop by men, and sent forth to preach the word of God by men, at the second hand: but John Reeve and myself were chosen by God himself, to be his two last prophets and witnesses, to preach the word of God; and as many as truly believe us shall certainly be saved, as those were that believed in Christ himself, when upon earth: also, we have power to ordain such as Timothy was, to speak the word of God boldly as he did, being ordained by the apostles, who were greater in power than Timothy was; so that your believing in Timothy's words now will do you no good; but those that did truly believe Timothy's words

when that commission was in being, should have been saved by it, but now it will profit you nothing ; for it is but a dead letter unto you now : and do you not paint the sepulchre of Timothy now, as the Jews did the sepulchres of the prophets ? They spake well of the prophets, when they were dead, and honoured them ; so the Baptists speak well of Timothy, and honour his words now he is dead : but if you had heard him speak as you did me, you would have counted it more safe to have believed Moses than Timothy ; for the seed of the serpent always counts it a more safe thing to put their trust in dead mens words, than in those men that are alive. And those words your brother sent you ought to have been believed by you as much as the words of Timothy, they would have done you far more good than the words of Timothy will.

*Sixthly.* You alledge Paul's words, *Galat. i. ver. 8.* where he saith, *Though we, or an angel from heaven, preach any other doctrine, or gospel unto thee, than that which we have preached unto you, let them be accursed.*

*Answer.* I can as truly say so as St. Paul doth, that if any angel from heaven should come and preach any other doctrine than that which we, John Reeve and myself, have preached, I will not say as Paul saith, *Let him be accursed* ; but I say, we have power ourselves to curse angels or men to eternity, that shall dare to say we are liars, deceivers, or that the doctrine we preach is false : so that the power of this commission of the Spirit is greater in spiritual matters than that which Paul speaketh of ; so that the Gospel of Paul, and others, preached at that time, will do you no good. It was life and salvation to those that believed Paul at that time ; but what is that to you Baptist-preachers ? Now, that which

Paul preached will signify no benefit to you now, but rather do you more hurt; because you take upon you to preach as those vagabond Jews, the same Jesus that Paul preached, having no commission to preach from God so to do; for you should have harkened unto me, who make all unclean spirits subject unto me, as they were unto Paul: but the evil spirit in others, and the unclean spirit of reason in yourself, shall leap upon you, and rent, tear, and wound your soul to eternity, for preaching the words of Paul and of Christ, you being not sent of him.

*Seventhly.* You quote the words of John, 2 *Epist.* ver. 10. He saith, *If there come any unto you, and bring not this doctrine, receive him not, nor bid him God-speed.*

*Answer.* Do you, the preacher of the Baptists, bring that doctrine as John the apostle brought? If you do, it is either under your arm, or in your pocket, in a Bible bound together that you bring; for you never knew that doctrine that John brought at that time, when he was alive; there is none knoweth that doctrine that John brought and taught the people at that time, but us the witnesses of the Spirit, and them to whom we have revealed it; neither need the believers of this commission of the Spirit bid any of you, the seed of the serpent, God-speed; for none of you know the doctrine of the true God, nor the right devil: but I know the Baptist-preachers will carry John's doctrine, the Bible, in your pockets, as aforesaid, and receive in it the notion of your brains, but I know you never did, nor ever will receive it in your hearts.

*Eighthly.* You say, verily brother, the great cause of errors, and delusions, and strong impostures, ariseth from slighting the Scriptures.

*Answer.* How can you, being the seed of the serpent, come to error and delusion, and never was in truth? Do you think reading the Scriptures will give you to know what error and delusion is, whereas you were always in the darkness and blindness of your mind; and truth was appointed to shut your eyes, and harden your heart, and make your ears deaf, lest you should see, hear, and understand truth, and be converted and healed? This power hath God given unto me, to shut your eyes, make your ears heavy, and your heart fat, that your conceited knowledge of the letter of the Scriptures; so that you might not be converted and healed by this commission of the Spirit; so that your owning of the letter, and not adhering to the interpretation given by us, the Witnesses of the Spirit; for none knoweth the Scriptures truly but us, and this is the grand cause that you and others have fallen into such great errors, and strong delusions, because you slight the interpretation of the Scriptures, which I have given, and so have sinned against the Holy Ghost. This is the effect of your faith you have in the letter of the Scriptures; this will prove a great error and delusion indeed to you, and high imposture hath risen in you, in that you slighted your brother's advertisement in his letters to you, requiring you to lay down your preaching from the letter of the Scriptures, you having no commission from God so to do.

*Ninthly.* You say, your brother doth abuse the Scriptures, to call it a dead letter: take heed, say you, brother, you are not cheated of that reason God hath given you.

*Answer.* Why! Is it not a dead letter? Doth it speak any thing at all to you? If the Scriptures were not a dead letter, such serpents as you would



not love it, but would hate it as those did when the Scriptures were alive; for when commissioned men spake the Scriptures, and declared their revelation, they were inspired with the Spirit, they were then alive, and their words were spirit and life to those that believed; but you that are the pretended preachers of Scriptures now, are ministers of the dead letter; for there is no saving knowledge, nor spirit, nor life, in any of yours: nay, there is not one of you preachers that will be saved, for you do abuse the letter of the Scriptures, in that you make a trade of other mens words: and you will conceive what prophets, and apostles, and the words of Christ mean, and have no infallible spirit, nor gift of interpretation of Scriptures; for none can interpret Scripture but such as have the same spirit as spake them, which, I am sure, you have not, therefore the Scriptures will prove a dead letter to you indeed: and it is a great abuse unto God for you to take the Scriptures in any other sense, but as a dead letter; for it will prove a killing letter unto you, even unto death eternal. And as for your brother being cheated of his reason, it is happy for him that ever he was born, that he was cheated of his reason in spiritual things; but you shall never be cheated of your reason, neither in things spiritual, nor in things temporal; for the reason you so highly esteem shall be the only devil that shall torment you, both here and hereafter.

*Tenthly.* Your brother saith, there is no other spiritual God or Father, but only within the blessed body of the Man Christ Jesus glorified.

This you deny, and say it is utterly false, and contrary to the whole Scripture. Also, you say, your brother's distinction of Christ's being Father, Son, and Spirit, is full of contradiction, and in plain terms

say, it is a piece of nonsense, as you say you can make it appear by Holy Writ.

*Answer.* That there is no other spiritual God, Creator, or Father, but only in the blessed body of the Man Christ Jesus glorified. That is as true as truth itself, and I have abundantly proved that by Scriptures, in my other writings, as in the Interpretation of the 11th Chapter of the Revelations, and the whole Revelations; but what should I say to blind men of interpretations of Scriptures? For there is light and life in the true interpretations of the Scripture to the seed of faith: but give the seed of reason, or the serpent, the dead letter without the interpretation, that he may conceive what meaning he pleases, and not be contradicted; for the letter of the Scriptures is the prophets and the apostles' dead bodies, as I have clearly opened in the Eleventh of the Revelations: for your preachers do like unto the doctors of physic, they get the bodies of men and women opened when they are dead; but when they are alive, they dare not do it, to learn experience by their dead bodies, to cure diseases, as they think the better: so likewise it is with you that preach without a commission from God; you open the dead bodies of the prophets and apostles, that is, their letter of the Scriptures, to see if you could find the cause of life and salvation there; by their dead bodies you learn experience and knowledge, to prattle and talk of life and salvation, by the doctrines of Christ; but know nothing but what you pick out of the letter of the Scriptures, even as the doctors of physic do out of the dead bodies they open; for when those men were alive that spake the Scriptures, you durst not take upon you to say, this is the meaning of Paul, and I conceive this is the sense of Peter's

words ; for when John said, speaking of Christ Jesus, that he was the first, and the last ; that he was dead, and is alive ; and behold he is alive for evermore, as you find in the Revelations. And likewise John saying, This is the true God, and eternal Life ; durst you have denied these words of John if he had been now alive ? And dare you say his words are utterly false, and contrary to the other apostles words ? But you know there is neither one apostle, nor other, that can reply unto you again, that makes you so confident as you are ; but I would have you to know that God hath chosen me in their steads, to give judgment upon you, and the letter of the Scriptures you put your trust in shall not deliver you from it ; and that distinction your brother giveth of Father, Son, and Spirit, is true, and as good sense as men can speak : and what you deny in plain terms and words will be a seal of eternal damnation to your own soul.

*Eleventhly.* You call all the talk of the commission of the Spirit to be a mere whimsey of the brain, and you say, no less than mere delusion ; and you say will prove so in the end, as true as God is in heaven.

*Answer.* Here you have shewed yourself of the reprobate seed ; and that you have sinned against the Holy Ghost, as most of you Baptists do ; a sin that God will not forgive in this world, nor in the world to come : and as sure as God is in heaven, you are appointed to be damned to eternity. This I know as sure as God is in heaven.

*Twelfthly.* You say your brother pleaseth himself with the face of a God, being in a form, and gives credit to no man that is rotten in his grave, and will not believe (say you) the living oracle, that says, he

is a spirit. And (say you) let your brother take God's form, but give you his power.

*Answer.* As for your brother's pleasing himself with the face of a God being in a form, to this I say, a man can have no true satisfaction in his mind, except he really believes God hath a face and form of his own, distinct from man and all other creatures. And for your brother's giving credit to a man that is rotten in his grave, your brother could not have had the assurance of eternal life in himself, but by giving credit to that man's words : but what think you? Are not the prophets and apostles rotten in their graves, many hundred years ago, and none living that ever saw them, or heard their voices. How comes it to pass you gave credit to their words, that were rotten so many hundred years ago? And you blame your brother for giving credit to a prophet of the Lord, who is yet in the sight and memory of many; for while I live, John Reeve liveth, and we are true as ever prophet and apostle were, and ought to be credited as they were.

And as for the believing the living oracles, that say God is a Spirit, the Scriptures you mean to be the living oracles. To this I say, the Scriptures do prove three places to one, that God has a form, and hath a face, to one place where he is called a spirit. And the writings of us, the Witnesses of the Spirit, are more living oracles than the letter of the Scriptures, and will give more peace and satisfaction to the souls of those that believe them, than the belief of the Scriptures will, now the prophets and apostles have been dead so many hundred years.

This many can experience, and witness in themselves, at this day; neither can any have the power of God but such as know the form and nature of

God, which you, nor no man else can know, but such as believe the living oracles declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit.

*Thirteenthly.* You say, that Peter, nor Paul, or any other mortal whatsoever, hath power to save, or damn to eternity: this is a work (say you) peculiar only to God, the Judge of all. Also, you marvel how many men dare to read otherwise than God speaks, or to put interpretation of their own brains.

*Answer:* That mortal men have power to pronounce the sentence of eternal damnation and salvation upon men and women, that is clear by the Scriptures: And it doth belong unto men, and not unto God himself; for God hath chosen men to be judges, to condemn men, or acquit men, according as they are found guilty or innocent by the law; but the king leaves it to the judges, and doth not meddle with it himself: so it is with the King of Heaven, he gives power and commission to his prophets and apostles, and the witnesses of the Spirit, to judge and determine of people's eternal weal, or woe: and those keys of heaven and hell, that Christ gave unto Peter, was power to bless and curse to eternity; for whose sins he did remit, they were forgiven to eternity, and whose sins he did remit, eternal salvation did come upon that man: so on the contrary, whose sins Peter did retain, that man's sins were never forgiven of God, being retained by Peter; so that eternal damnation is passed upon that man whose sins are retained, and God will not revoke what his judge hath done; and this power God hath given unto us, the witnesses of the Spirit: but if you had read the book called the Quaker's Neck Broken, you would have seen this point more largely proved; but I perceive you are ignorant of all things pertaining to

salvation and damnation, but what the letter of the Scriptures dictates to your understanding and imagination : but we that are chosen judges of God are to read the Scriptures thus, and to give interpretation, according to the tenor of our commission ; for the Scripture is given into mine hand, and no man knows the Scriptures truly but myself ; because God hath given me understanding of his mind in the Scriptures above all men in the world, and he hath made me judge of the Scriptures. Therefore what interpretation or sense soever you gather from the word of the Scriptures, I say it is but the imagination of your own brains.

*Fourteenthly.* You say nothing hinders mens salvation but their own wills : also, you say, there is no such thing as a doctrine of reprobation, whereby men are destined to destruction.

*Answer.* How comes it to pass then, that your free-will did not preserve yourself from being damned to eternity ? It seems you had not power in your will to keep you from the sin against the Holy Ghost ; if you had had power in your will, you would have believed your brother and me, when you saw your brother Noble damned by me : how comes it to pass your will did not submit, and be silent ? You saw the trouble that Noble was in at the present ; yet your will had not power to keep yourself from the same condemnation ; but have you not read, that God hath blinded the eyes, and made the ears heavy, and the heart of man hard, lest they should see, hear, understand, and be converted ? Why did not the will of those men convert themselves ? The cause why, they were hardened of God : and why were they hardened of God ? Because they were of the reprobate seed, even the seed of the serpent ; so it is

with you, God hath blinded your eyes, because you are of the reprobate seed, the seed of the serpent, hated of God, as Esau was, and your brother Alexander beloved of God, as Jacob was. Here is the doctrine of election and reprobation manifest in you two; the one is taken, and the other left, by this commission of the Spirit. And do you not find in the Scriptures no such doctrine of election and reprobation? You may find and read it in the Romans very frequently spoken of; and had not you been of the reprobate seed, appointed to suffer those eternal torments, you would not have been so blind and hardened, but have believed, and have submitted to God's prerogative power; but the reprobate seed thinks to be saved by his own will, whether God will or no; but you being destined to destruction, hath caused you to write against it.

*Fifteenthly.* You say, one would think no man in his right wits should be so far deprived of his reason, as to admit of this for a ground to embrace the single, bare testimony of two men, whereof one hath been dead some years, and have but their bare words, that God spake to them, and heard his voice; and such a commision strikes at the foundation and knowledge of the Scriptures, and the root of all religion and worship, at the very bottom of holiness and godliness, and also strikes at the very majesty of God himself: so you count your brother given over to strong delusions, to believe lies, because the Scriptures say, *In the latter days men shall be given over to believe lies, and the devices of their own brains.*

*Answer.* Had you been in your right wits, you would have made the single testimony of two men the only ground of salvation: but you being out of your wits, being blinded and hardened, you have embraced

dead mens testimonies for the ground of your faith, men that have been dead many hundred years ; so that your faith in those mens words will do you no good now : and it would have been as good for you if you had been deprived of your reason, as you think your brother is ; for the reason in you is the devil, that shall torment to eternity, and good would it have been for you if you had been deprived of it : a little measure of faith to put your trust in the declaration of two single men, whereof one is now living, would have wrought the work of salvation in you, and have deprived you of reason, which reason now will torment you, because you are not deprived of it, but is wholly guided by it ; and so your trust must be altogether in the dead letter of the Scriptures, and in dead mens words, and you shall find nothing there for your soul but bare words ; for there is no spirit and life in them, except you had hearkened and believed the single testimony of two men ; those that do so, the interpretation of the Scriptures becomes life and spirit unto their souls : also, I confess the testimony of us two single men doth strike at the foundation of all hypocritical knowledge of the Scriptures, and at the root of all religion and worship, of all the formal worship of the Baptists and others, and at the very bottom of your hypocritical holiness and seeming godliness. This commission of the Spirit strikes at the very hypocritical majesty that you hypocrites seem to give unto God ; for now is the axe laid to the root of that tree ; it strikes to the root of all knowledge, wisdom, religion, worship, hypocritical holiness and godliness, that is practised in all the seven churches, as shewing, that the ministry of them all is false, none having a commission from God to preach ? so that God hath by our hands given the axe, and we



have laid it to the root of the tree, and have cut down many of your preachers, and spoiled all your holiness and godliness, as dung and dross; neither shall your holiness, nor godliness, nor righteousness, avail you any thing, in that you are given over to a strong delusion, to put your trust in dead mens words, and hath despised the true interpretation of the Scriptures, which are alive; so that you followed the desires of your own brains to your endless misery.

*Sixteenthly.* You say to your brother, that God is everlasting and eternal God, and hath no beginning, nor will have no ending: but (say you) this their commission of the Spirit tells us of a God that no man knows in all the world but two men, and that no other can know the true God but those that believe in those two men; but, say you, what this new-broached light will come to, you will at present forbear judging, but leave it to the hands of the God of prophets and apostles.

*Answer.* As to that we own, that God is everlasting and eternal, and had no beginning, nor hath no ending: and this is the same God this third and last commission tells you of, only there is no man in the world, at this day, that doth truly know this everlasting God, but us two, who are the chosen witnesses of this everlasting God, that knows him, and those to whom we reveal it; neither can any other man know the true God but those that believe in us two men.

Nay, farther, I say, as Christ did in another case, concerning himself: *Except, saith Christ, you believe that I am he, you shall die in your sins*: so likewise I say, except you or any other do believe in our doctrine of the true God, and us two men, to be the last chosen witnesses and prophets of God, I say you shall all die in your sins, that is, in unbelief, and so damned to

eternity ; for this I must tell you, that whoever dies in unbelief, that hath heard the sound of a true prophet's words or writings, and believes them not, he dies in his sins of unbelief, and all sins else that he hath committed ; so that he is cleansed from no sin at all, and what will follow upon that, that conscience that dies in his sins, let every man's conscience judge. But whosoever believeth in a true prophet's report and doctrine, his heart is purified by faith in himself, and doth not die in his sins, but is cleansed from the guilt and condemnation in his conscience of all sins, both original and actual, though the reason of man being the seed, counts the very act of faith that giveth peace to man's mind, they count the greatest sin of all : but great is the power of faith, and strong ; but low is the power of reason, and weak. And as for this new-broached light, as you call it, I say it was new-broached by the God of heaven himself ; and this light declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit, will come to centre itself in God, from whence it came, as the light of prophets and apostles did, who were sent of God, as those two men were whom you so much slight ; and it would have been well for you if you had forborn judging, and left it to the hands of the God of prophets and apostles : but your reason hath undertook, by the dead letter of the Scriptures, to judge the greatest light that ever God sent upon earth, and of a more higher nature than that of the prophets and apostles ; but the light of heaven was ever slighted by the seed of the serpent, their hearts being darkened by the letter of the Scriptures, you have presumed to fight against the light of this commission of the Spirit, which God hath committed to two men, and you have judged it, and have

not left judgment to God. These things aforesaid are the most considerable passages in your large letter to your brother Alexander, and the very quintessence of your knowledge in the letter of the Scriptures, wherein you have taken up dead mens words, to fight with a man that is alive; you do as if a man should take the sheath of a sword in his hand, to fight with him that hath a glittering sword in his hand, with two edges, which cuts every way; for the letter of the Scriptures is but the sheath for the two-edged sword of the Spirit to be in: and God hath drawn forth this glittering sword with two edges, out of the letter of the Scriptures, and hath put it into two single men's mouths, and hath given us power to bless and curse to eternity: so that it doth not peculiarly belong to God but unto man; and had you believed in me, you should have believed God that sent me; but in that you have despised that two men should know more of God than all men in the world, you have despised God also, and have sinned against the Holy Ghost, and God hath made me your judge in his stead.

The blasphemies you have spoken are these:

1. That the letter of the Scriptures ought to be credited as if God did speak himself.
2. You prefer the words of Peter and Paul, being dead so many hundred years, to be of more consequence now than the voice of words God spake to John Reeve.
3. You call the commission of the Spirit a supposed commission and imagination.
4. You call the commission your brother owns

and believes, error, and strong delusion, and high impostures, and pretended revelations and commissions.

5. You utterly deny the body, or person of Christ Jesus, to be Father, Son, and Holy Spirit: this you say is utterly false.

6. You say, the distinction your brother giveth of Christ being Father, Son, and Spirit, in plain terms; is a piece of nonsense.

7. You call the talk of this commission of the Spirit a whimsey of the brain, and no less than delusion.

8. You call the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit a new-broached light.

These things being considered, I thought it something necessary to answer the things of most note in your letter to your brother Alexander; for in that you despise his advice and counsel, and doctrine and commission he owns, you have despised me and my doctrine. So I have collected the most wickedest speeches of yours out of your letter, wherein you may plainly see the cause of your condemnation is just upon you; in that you think you have free-will to save yourself from eternal damnation; yet your free-will could not preserve you from the sin against the Holy Ghost, notwithstanding you saw Noble, the Baptist-preacher, damned before your face, for the same sins; yet he spake but few words to what you have done in your letter.

These things considered, in obedience to my commission from God, I do, for these your wicked speeches afore-written, pronounce Edward Delamain, Baptist-preacher, cursed and damned, both in soul

and body, from the presence of God, elect men, and angels, to all eternity.

And it will be a marvelous thing if you do escape a very mean, low, even almost a vagabond condition in this life, besides your damnation hereafter; for this I must tell you, that sins of this nature seldom escape a double curse. But now you may go see if you can preach and pray this curse off you again; and if your will had any power in it, now you had best bestir yourself

*Written by*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*One of the Lord's two last Witnesses and Prophets unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Mary Parker, August 13, 1668.*

*Loving and kind friend, Mary Parker,*

I RECEIVED your letter inclosed in Mrs. Sudbury's letter, and I find in your letter many excellent expressions, and words of faith and confidence in those truths declared by this commission of the Spirit: as in that great mystery, that God became flesh, and God did die to redeem the elect seed, the seed

of faith, from eternal death: and in that you have believed the report of us the witnesses of the Spirit, and have cast yourself wholly upon this commission of the Spirit, the arm of the Lord's saving health is revealed unto you in a measure already, in that you have found light and life in believing; and the salvation of the Lord shall be revealed unto you more and more, even from strength to strength, until a perfection of faith in you, so that no doubt shall arise in your heart as to your eternal happiness; but the light of faith in you, built upon this rock you have cast yourself upon, it will shew you how all the world doth lie in wickedness, ignorance, and darkness; nay, all religious, righteous, and good-natured people are in darkness, and ignorant altogether of this great thing, that God should become a child, and grow to a man, and eat and drink with man, and so suffer death by his own creatures, in that he poured out his soul unto death, in that he poured out the Godhead life, that was in the blood; therefore, the blood of Christ was no less than the blood of God; and whoever doth believe this, doth really and truly, by faith, drink the blood of God, and hath eternal life abiding in them; that is, the full assurance of eternal life abides here in them in this life, and so enters into eternal glory, when this natural life shall die; for there is no time to the dead.

I confess, I do not know that ever I did see you in my life; but your letter doth shew to me what your heart is, as I shall add this to your further confidence of faith and comfort of heart, that I do declare you are of the blessed of the Lord both in soul and body to eternity; in that I perceive you have received in your heart a prophet in the name of a prophet, you

shall have a prophet's reward, which reward is no less than the blessing of eternal life.

So resteth your friend, though unknown by sight,  
but known by truth in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, August 13, 1668.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date from London, September 21, 1665.*

*Loving and kind Friend, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I UNDERSTAND by Elizabeth Bootham, that you have not received those books that came out of the press last, in answer to George Foxe; also I heard Mr. Delamaine's letter you sent to him, and you made no mention of the receipt of the books, which I did much marvel at; but I perceive by your letter to Elizabeth Bootham, that you have not received them yet; therefore I thought good to let you understand, that I did send five books to you; it is now almost six weeks since: also I sent a letter with them, and another enclosed from your maid, but it seems you have received none, which is a very base thing of the carrier, that could not have conveyed the letter to you before now; but I perceive it was partly your maid's fault, for she and my wife went together,

and your maid delivered the books and the letter to the carrier that brought her up to London, which is Utoxeter carrier, and not by Ashbourne carrier, and this I suppose is the cause of the miscarriage; therefore I would desire you to call for the letter and five books of Laurence Foxe, Utoxeter carrier, which he received about five or six weeks ago. You will know by the date of the letter if you receive it. This Laurence Foxe inns at the Bell, in Smithfield, near the White Bear, London. Also I would desire you, if you have sold any of those books, to send the money for as many as you have sold as soon as conveniently you can.

This is all at present, only that we are all well, and do remember our loves to you and your wife, with all friends else there with you.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, September 21, 1668.*

Direct your letters to me thus: For Mr. Muggleton, at the widow Brunt's house, next door to the sign of the White Horse, in the Postern, near Moor-lane, London.

Elizabeth Bootham remembers her love and service to you and your wife; and she saith, she would not have you trouble yourself about sending any cheese, for she doth think she shall not stay here in London until All-holland-tide, therefore desireth to hear from you as soon as may be.

So resteth your servant,

ELIZABETH BOOTHAM.



*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Slade-house, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, December 14, 1668.*

*Loving Friend, Thomas Tompkinson,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated December 7, 1668; also I received of William Osbourne the ten shillings you sent, and Elizabeth Bootham received her things also. There is little or no news here at London at present, for every sort of people here hath freedom of conscience to meet without any disturbance, only the Quakers people are much offended at me for setting forth this last book, called a Looking-Glass for Quakers; insomuch, that several of the chief speakers of the Quakers have come to talk to me about it, and have come under the sentence of damnation; and one Thomas Loe, a speaker of the Quakers, sent me a cursed, desperate, blasphemous letter, worse than ever I received of any from Quaker or other before; but upon the return of the sentence of damnation upon him, this said Thomas Loe fell sick the same night he received it, and never went out of his bed more till he was carried to be buried, which was in less than three weeks, which thing hath been great amazement to the Quakers, and hath moved them much against me; insomuch, that they have banded themselves against me, and have raked amongst all the damned devils they can hear of, to bear their testimony against me; and all false reports by this

damned crew are taken for truth by the Quakers, that they might set forth a book against me. The chief speakers of the Quakers have consulted together, and, as I understand by several Quakers, have written nearly thirty sheets of paper against me, and intended to put it in print before now. I did expect to have seen it before now, but there hath fallen a cross upon them, for their printer's press is broken in pieces, and the printer in prison for printing a book against the Presbyterians, and the man that wrote it hideth himself, yet a Quaker, and one of those that writeth against me; so that for the present there is a stop put to the Quaker's book against me, for no printer else must do it, it being not licenced.

I have written the chief passages in a dispute with some Quakers with me for memory sake, which hereafter may come to light.

So in haste, I rest, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself and wife, and all friends else there with you.

I remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
Dec. 14, 1668.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, containing the Blessing of Eternal Life, sent unto Lydia Brooks, of Sheasby, in Leicestershire, (this was John Saddington's sister) bearing date from London, October 24, in the year 1668.*

*Friend Lydia Brooks,*

I RECEIVED your letter of your brother John Saddington, wherein I understand how you came to hear of truth declared by this commission of the Spirit, and that the Lord hath opened your heart to believe the reports of our writings, and that I am a true prophet sent of God. It is confessed that I never saw you in my life ; yet this testimony you give of your faith in your letter in the true God, and in this commission of the Spirit, giveth me assurance in myself that your heart is right in the sight of God, and that your faith is built upon a sure rock, that cannot fail ; for whoever do only believe the doctrine declared by this commission of the Spirit, and believeth him whom God sent, they can do no less than receive God that sent him ; and whoever receiveth a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall receive a prophet's reward, which reward is no less than eternal life ; and that your faith may increase and grow, from strength to strength, as it is begun, I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord to eternity, though I never saw your person ; but by your words I saw your faith, and being justified by faith, you will have peace with God ; for by words of unbelief are many people condemned, and by words of faith are many people jus-

tified; and as for your nearest relations, as husband and mother, being against you for not going to church, to that I say, be not you overcome to break the peace of your mind by the threats, or persuasions, or temptations of husband or mother, to defile your mind by false worship through slavish fear; but worship God in Spirit and truth as you have begun, as this commission hath declared, and you will become more than a conqueror in your spirit over husband and mother, and shall no more stagger in your mind through the persuasions or temptations of any whatsoever; and the wilderness where you now live will yield you such peace of mind, that will be as sweet as honey, or the honey-comb, though you have none with you to partake with your sufferings. This is all at present, only my love to yourself, though unknown.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

Postern, October 24, 1668.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Stadelhouse, in Staffordshire, bearing Date from London, January 31, 1669.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson.*

THIS is to certify you that I have sent seven books of the Interpretation of the Witch of Endor;

I did intend the Answer to Isaac Pennington should have been printed also; but it did miscarry in the press.

I never was so crossed in all the books as I have printed, as in these two; for this of the Witch of Endor hath been for six months in the printer's hands; but with much difficulty, and trouble, and charge, I have got it safe out of the press: but because this printer was so base, and kept it so long, I put the other to another printer, thinking to have it done before this, and so it would; but through the forgetfulness of the printer, not taking the copy in his pockets as he thought to do, he went out, and left the copy and proof of one sheet upon the press, with his servants, and the searchers came immediately upstairs and took it, and would have carried it to the council; but the printer made friends, for money, else he would have been utterly undone; for it cost the printer seven pounds, and me five pounds, to pacify the matter, and not get it done neither. But I have preserved the copy, most part of it, and hereafter I do think to print it, but not at present, it will be no ways convenient. But I am glad it was not the Witch of Endor was taken; because 'tis of more value, and never written of before, by us, nor no other, and much desired, and objected by many: there is one for Thomas Turner, who gave 2*s.* 6*d.*, one for Richard Grindy, who gave 1*s.* 6*d.*, and one for John Grindy, who gave 1*s.*, and one for Lawrence Waterman, who gave 1*s.*, and there is three for yourself to dispose as you please, and pay for the carriage. These cannot be afforded under 1*s.* price, I sell none of them under, nor never will, while they last; I will not do as I did by the Mortality of the Soul, sell it for sixpence, and now I would give 2*s.* 6*d.* myself for one

single. Here is Mr. Delamaine's letter inclosed. Thus in haste, I rest, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered to yourself and wife, and all friends in the faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*Postern, London, January 31, 1669.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Goodwyn, of Chesterfield, bearing date February 4, 1669.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Mr. Goodwyn,*

**THIS** is to certify you that I have sent you six books of the Interpretation of the Witch of Endor, desiring you to give Betty Smith one, and Betty Slater one, and two for your mother, and two for yourself.

Also I did intend the other should have been printed now; but things have fallen out very cross; for the other book was taken in the press, and the printer brought into a great deal of trouble; for it cost the printer seven pounds, and me five pounds, to pacify the matter; else the printer would have been utterly undone, and not get it done neither, and I could do no less to help bear him out, though it was altogether his careless forgetfulness that was the cause, and the business of the other printer, that kept this so long in hand, about six months: I have been more vexed about these than with all I did be-

fore ; but yet I am somewhat comforted, that though I have staid long, yet, at last, I have got it out of the press, it being of more concernment than the other, and of a bigger volume, and a thing that was never written of before, by us, nor no other : and hereafter I do intend to print the other, if it be possible, when times are a little more open ; for the copy is yet preserved.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto you, and your wife, and mother, and all friends else there with you, in haste,

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*February 4, 1669.*

Also I have sent of these books to William Newcome, desiring him to send two of the Mortality of the Soul for them : he said (when he was in London) that he had two of them, and that he would change with me for these. I would intreat you to be earnest with him, to look them up, and send them to me suddenly ; because there is one or two friends in Kent, is extreme eager with me to get them for them ; because I told them, I thought I should ; and if he hath any more there, to let him send them, and he shall have what he will for them, either books or money ; and this I would desire William Newcome, to sell none of these under twelve pence a-piece ; for I will sell none under, as long as they last ; for these cost twice the price printing of what the others did.

You may give William Newcome this piece.

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to John Lad.*

*Friend John Lad in the true Faith, &c.*

I HAVE read over your letter, and I perceive your understanding is very much enlightened in the true saving light, and your faith strong in the doctrine of the commission of the Spirit. I have heard a good report of you before, as to your knowledge in truth in spiritual things, but by your expressions in your letter you have shewed a greater measure of faith in God, and knowledge in those things, those saving truths declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit, than was expected by me ; but where the seed of faith is quickened by the words of truth, it will grow like a green olive-tree, as Christ said his words were spirit and life : also to every one that believes, the arm of the Lord's saving health is revealed to that soul, which is spirit and life to it, in that they are a savour of life unto life in them that are saved in that words of truth. It quickens that seed in man that was dead, and makes it alive, and so becomes spirit and life in man ; so that the life a man doth live here is a life of faith, which is peace of mind, because this faith it shall live eternally with God, in whom he did believe. Here you have expressed a great measure of this faith, and it is that which I believe is in your heart is true faith, and will grow in you to a greater perfection, enabling you to withstand all gainsayers whatsoever even in this life, besides the eternal happiness hereafter, when men shall receive the end of their faith, even



the salvation of their souls. This is all at present, time being short.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, April 23, 1669.*

---

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, June 14, 1669.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Mrs. Parker,*

I RECEIVED a letter from you heretofore before I had seen you, which made me sensible that your faith was true, and your heart was right in the sight of God; and I being the messenger of God, and an ambassador in God's stead, could do no less than give judgment and sentence of blessedness upon you; and I see and know that the word of a true prophet is not in vain, but standeth for ever; and I have seen the fruit of faith and love abound in you since I have seen you, and that part of those melancholy thoughts you were exercised with in your mind about temporal matters, are in a measure vanished away, and comfortable thoughts do run in the blood in the room thereof, which cheereth the heart in the assurance of eternal life, and happiness after death, knowing there is no worse thing than there is in this life. Oh, how comfortable is faith, without doubting, in the soul of man and woman! It removes mount-

tains of darkness and great mists which lie before the understanding of man and woman ; it giveth an hundred-fold of comfort in this life, and life everlasting hereafter ; it makes a man or woman enjoy themselves in this life, and no bitterness of fear of damnation can come into the heart. These things I know you have seen, in a measure, and will experience them more and more. Oh, how beautiful are the feet of those that bring glad tidings of peace to the soul of man or woman ! I have read of these things in Scripture in my ignorant zeal, but knew not what that peace was, neither did I know what that glad tidings was, until I was a chosen messenger of glad tidings myself ; yea, I have been a messenger of glad tidings to you and many others, and I have been a messenger of sad tidings to many. These things I certainly know, yet am I no-ways lifted up with pride in this thing, nor cast down with any opposition of slanders and lies cast upon me by reprobate men and women ; but I speak these things the more to strengthen your faith, being but of a short time standing, and having but little society with saints, and little of experience. I thought it necessary to speak kindly unto you, that your joy might be full ; that you might have the penny of assurance of everlasting life, as those that have wrought in the vineyard of faith many years.

Thus, with my true love, and my wife's love remembered unto yourself,

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,  
the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London, June 14, 1669.*

We are all here at London in pretty good health.

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to  
Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, June 14, 1669.*

*Dear and well-beloved Friend in the eternal Truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

I HAVE always remembered your faith and love to this commission of the Spirit from the beginning, wherein I received your first letter, wherein I found your faith and love was built upon a sure rock, even before you had seen me, or any of my writings, but Claxton's writings only; and I see how blest a thing it is to cast the soul upon a commission from God, not reasoning with flesh and blood, that is, to think to try the prophet's doctrine and declaration by the letter of the Scriptures, which cannot speak (as most people do) but you believing and did not see, in that you were more blessed than these that have both heard me speak, and seen me, and have believed as Thomas did also. You were one of the first, nay, I think the first in those parts, that did set to your seal, that the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit to be a real truth, and received a prophet in the name of a prophet, whereby you received a prophet's reward, the blessing of everlasting life, whereby you have grown in grace from strength of faith to strength, even to the full assurance of eternal life abiding in yourself; so that no doubt can arise in you to trouble you, as it doth in all others who build not upon this rock. Also you were for several years as one alone; for every Quaker, Bemonist, and others to be tried, that if it were possible by their cavilling spirits to have caused you to doubt or question your faith; but I have seen your faith hath grown stronger and

stronger, and hath established your soul more firm, even like Mount Sion, which cannot be shaken, even while you stood alone; but in some space of time after to add unto your comfort in this life and the life to come; also God hath given your husband to be partaker of the like precious faith with you, and so will partake of the same glory with you hereafter, when time shall be no more; also there is given unto you for your further comfort in this life, another true believer fit for your society, one of your own sex, even your true neighbour, M. P.

*Dear Friend,*

This is to certify you that I came well home to London on Friday in the Whitsun-week, and all friends in London are pretty well, and were glad at my coming; but Mr. Whitehead went from Cambridge a matter of twelve days before. There is little news at London since I went, only the Quaker's testimony against me, upon whom I gave sentence of damnation, three hours before his death was written his testimony against me from his own mouth, which I received when I came home. It is of very little consequence, else I would have sent it you; but instead of that, I have sent you a book written by one that was a Quaker fourteen years, which will inform you more concerning the Quakers; and I would intreat you to convey the other book to Mrs. Carter, with the letter, as soon as possible may be.

Thus, with my dear love to yourself and husband, with my wife's love to you both, I take leave, and remain

Your Friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London, June 14, 1669.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Sladehouse, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, June 19, 1669.*

*Loving Friend in the eternal Truth, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I SAW a letter of yours to our friend Mr. Delamaine, and I received 9s. of him by your order; and I perceive by your letter it is exceeding great trouble to your spirit, that it was not your happiness to see me and those friends with me, being so near you. Mr. Whitehead, of Braintree, and Walter Bohenan, the Scotchman, were with me in all my journey, and we had good success and prosperous in all places and things we did intend, in that we saw all friends of the faith in Cambridgeshire, Leicestershire, Nottingham, and Chesterfield, and there was an intention and resolution to have seen you in us all, and all our care was when we were at Nottingham how to give you notice, that you might have met me either at Nottingham or Chesterfield; for Mr. Whitehead was to go, and did go, to Birmingham and Dudley in Staffordshire, joining to Worcestershire, to Mr. Finch, one that was formerly a Quaker, but now doth own this. Mr. Whitehead had some business with him in the way of his trade, being an ironmonger; so Walter Bohenan went with Mr. Whitehead to the place before-mentioned; it was above forty miles from Nottingham, but I stayed at Nottingham, being very weary with riding. We came to Nottingham to Mr. Sudbury's on Saturday; but Mr. Whitehead and Walter Bohenan went from thence the Monday

morning very early; but I staid there till the Thursday following before I went to Chesterfield, and they were to meet me at Chesterfield, at Mrs. Carter's, on Thursday, as was intended, but they did not come there till Saturday; so I made a full account, and was almost confident they had found you out, which had caused them to stay so long; for they did intend, and it was concluded upon by us all, and by Mrs. Sudbury, that they should find you out. Being well horsed, as they were, if it were twelve or fourteen miles out of their way, they would have seen you, because Mr. Sudbury would have conveyed a letter unto you, to give you notice that I was there, but he could not; so I depended, and so did Mrs. Sudbury, that Mr. Whitehead and Mr. Walter Bohenan would have seen you, and the more, because they staid two days longer than was intended; but it fell out contrary to all our expectations, which made us all sensible of much trouble, that all things else in our journey had prospered well, and if we had seen you also, our joy would have been full; but missing this opportunity, our joy was somewhat diminished, to what it would have been had we seen you, even as much satisfaction as can be had in weary journies; but after a little rest there is joy in the morning. Mr. Whitehead would willingly have gone ten miles out of his way if he could have heard where Slade-house was; but none could tell them where; for they asked the country people for, or where Slade-house was, but none could tell them where, nor they did not know or remember any town near it, for they had forgot that I had told them it was about four or five miles from Ashbourne, by which means did this mishap fall out.

So, dear friend, I would not have you to think,

or have any such thoughts, that it was for want of good will or love in any of us, or any slender thoughts in any of us more to you than to others; for we had and have the same affections of love and tenderness, and desire, to have seen you and your good wife, as to others; but none of us knowing the way, and by report a very bad way to your house from those parts, disheartened us to go any further.

Also I understand that Mr. Delamaine did give you to know that I was in those parts, else you would not have known so soon; but it was too late before he did know it himself; for he did as much marvel that I was in those parts of the country as you did, for there was no friends in the faith, nor sons nor daughters here at London, that did know that I would go any further than Cambridge, but my wife and one more, whose mother I was to go and see in Leicestershire, nor of Mr. Whitehead and Walter Bohenan's going with me, I kept all secret from friends here in London; but friends in Cambridge-shire knew of it; but I gave them notice to keep it secret from friends in London, till we came back again, which they did; so that none could give intelligence to friends in Leicestershire, Nottingham, or Chesterfield, so we came upon them before they were aware, unexpected, and so we thought to do by you, but did not attain our desires. For I knew if it had been known here at London, it would have been blazed about to them all before we came, and to you also, had it been known; for as soon as Mr. Delamaine did hear of it by a letter I sent to my wife, and one that Mr. Saddington's sister in Leicestershire sent to him, it was known that I was in those parts, then Mr. Delamaine, out of his exceeding great love to you, did send you word; but going by Ashbourne

carrier, I perceive it came to your hand a day or two too late ; for he could not have sent with safety to your house by the post ; yet I perceive you had our friend Delamaine's letter before we went from Nottingham ; for William Newcombe parted with us at Mrs. Carter's on Monday morning early, and he was to go that day to Bakwell, and we went to Nottingham, and staid there till Wednesday ten o'clock, and so departed thence the way we came, till we came to Cambridge again ; so Mr. Whitehead, as soon as he could, staid three days there, and went to his own home ; but I staid a week longer ; for I had promised them to stay with them at my return back.

Thus accidentally, I was the occasion that you did not see us ; because it was secret and not known ; but our desire and intent was to you as to others.

Thus I have given you a true account of the most considerable passages, and of our intents and desires, in this our journey.

So I shall say no more at present as to that ; only to let you know that I am well, and so is my wife, and so are most of our friends in the faith here in London, pretty well.

Thus, with my love, with my wife's love to yourself, and your wife, and all friends else there with you,

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
June 19, 1669.*

I would desire when you send to me or Mr. Delamaine, if it be not too much trouble, whether that



maid that fasted a whole year, as was reported, be alive yet, or no; because I heard at Chesterfield for certain that she was yet alive, and that it was a mere cheat to get money.

---

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to  
Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, August 30, 1669.*

*Dearly beloved Friend in the true Faith, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, and was glad to hear of your welfare, and of the strength of faith in you: you are as one of the daughters of Sion, which rejoiceth the heart of him that begot you to the true faith; for in the day wherein you first believed, before you had seen me, you were blessed of the Lord's messenger for your faith; for you have been like a green olive tree, that hath had the oil of joy, and gladness of heart, in the assurance of everlasting life, these many years, and I see the cruise of oil doth not staunch yet, but runneth more powerful than at the first, and so it will to the end; for the act of faith in you hath digged a deep well in the seed of faith in you, which will spring up in you, to satisfy your thirst here; so that no doubt or want of peace can come unto you, as concerning your eternal happiness, and it will spring up into eternal life. Also you may and do see, what an excellent language the heavenly language is; it differs from all the languages in the world; and you having learned the heavenly language of Canaan, you know the voice of it, wherever you

hear it: in some it is more plain and easily understood than in others; yet, whoever doth speak it, though but in a stammering manner, yet the voice of faith understands the language of heavenly Canaan easily, which I know you can experience very easily; for you have understood and spoke that language this many years. Mr. Whitehead is well; he was at London the last week, and about Michaelmas he will be at London again. There is a great increase in the faith here at London, and in some countries. There have been with me of late, two or three German men, that were banished out of Germany, for not submitting to the worship set up by that power: there hath been strange things acted there about religion, as here in England; so these men came to see me, to see what difference there is between the revelation and declaration, declared by John Reeve and myself, and that revelation their countrymen have had; but the difference is as great as heaven and earth; for their revelation is like many that have been in England these forty years, as prophets and prophetesses, yet know not the true God, neither in form nor nature, nor the right devil, nor any true principle of doctrine nor commission, yet go forth as if the Lord sent them, yet know not the Lord: the one of these is a doctor of physick, and the other was a minister in Germany; the minister could not speak English so well as the doctor; but the doctor bought all the books, and hath written the commission-book into the German language, and hath sent it among the Germans; so what the issue will be, time will bring forth; for there is many would believe, did they but understand it in their own language.

You speak as if I should hear from Mrs. Goodwin,

but I have heard nothing from them, since I was there with them, not as yet.

Thus, in haste, I shall only remember my dear love unto yourself and your husband, with my wife's love unto you both.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*From the Postern, London,  
August 30, 1669.*

There is two little books, the one concerning witches, and the other an answer to Pennington the Quaker's book, are ready for the press; therefore, what Mr. Sudbury is free to give towards the printing, is left to his own liberty. About five weeks hence it will be, I suppose, printed.

---

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to  
Mrs. Mary Parker, August 30, 1669.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the true faith, Mary Parker,*

**THIS** is to certify you that I received your letter, dated August the 8th day, 1669. It is a great while since, and I have returned you no answer, because I have been very much employed with writing and speaking with people, since I was with you; but I am not insensible of rejoicing in the growth of your

faith and confidence in this commission of the Spirit, in that you have received a prophet in the name of a prophet, in the love of truth, and that the word of a true prophet shall stand for ever.

Now I know it will be unto you that believe, as the voice of God himself, as the law of the Medes and Persians, that cannot be altered; and now the light of heaven being set in your understanding, by your believing in the commission of the Spirit, in casting yourself upon the word of a man; I know you can tell the difference in yourself, whether your condition was better when you did not believe, or whether it is better and more satisfactory to your spirit now you do believe, than before: therefore, let no motions of reason in yourself, nor arguments of reason in others, make you to doubt; for this I say, there is such a thing as eternal glory hereafter, by believing, which will not be a minute of an hour, after death, before every believer shall enter into that personal glory, where they shall see their God, their King, and Redeemer, who hath redeemed us with his own blood, face to face. Also, there is such a thing as eternal damnation, which will not be a minute of an hour after death to the unbeliever, where they shall be capable of eternal torment, in utter darkness with the devil reason, for ever and ever.

I write not these things unto you, as if I did question or doubt the strength of your faith; but because I know your faith is built upon a rock, that cannot be shaken, and it might grow more strong, and peace might more abound in you, even while you live in this world, that you might rejoice, by believing an hundred-fold of satisfaction of spirit in this life; for in the life to come you shall have life everlasting. Thus being in haste, I shall take leave, only my dear

love to yourself, with my wife's love remembered unto you.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London,  
August 30, 1669.*

I have finished that writing concerning the Witch of Endor, and other witches, ready for the press: I have been desired by many to put it forth, with the Answer to Esquire Pennington, the Quaker. They are two little volumes, distinct of themselves; therefore what you are free to give, towards the printing of them, is left to your own liberty. It will, I suppose, be in print, about a month or five weeks hence.

*A Letter from the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to  
Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, Sept: 6, 1669.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

THIS is to let you understand that I have written a book concerning the Witch of Endor, spoken of in the book of Samuel, and of other witches and wizards, who deal with familiar spirits, shewing how a familiar spirit is begotten, and how they may be said to speak out of the ground, and how Samuel may be said to speak unto king Saul, and how spirits may be said to speak without bodies; and how a

man may be said to preach unto the spirits in prison, and how a man may be said to be in Paradise, yet not without a body, and how men may understand what that Satan is, whom the Scripture speaketh of, and what that Satan was, that tempted Job, and all other places of Scripture that seem as if spirits might speak, and appear unto people, without bodies: they are clearly proved and opened, and will much enlighten the understanding, to answer unto those things so commonly objected by most people. Also there is another book which I have written in answer to Esquire Pennington, a Quaker, his book, which he wrote against me, and many of our friends have a desire that I would put them two in print; they are but little volumes; the Witches, I suppose, will make five sheets, and I suppose the other will be less.

Therefore I thought good to acquaint you with it, and what you are free to give toward the printing, or any other friend there with you, it is left to your own liberty what; but I suppose there is hardly any there with you, but yourself, that can, or is free, to give any thing towards the printing. I suppose they will be printed about a month hence. This is all at present, being in haste, only to let you know that I am very well, and so is my wife, and so are all friends else here in London, pretty well.

So with my love, with my wife's love remembered unto yourself, and your wife, and all friends else in the faith there with you,

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London,  
September 6, 1669.*

When you send to me, direct your letter to me thus : " For Mr. Muggleton, at the widow Brunt's house, next door to the sign of the White Horse, in the postern, near Moor-lane, London.

---

*A Letter of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Christopher Hill, September 9, 1669.*

*Loving Friend, Christopher Hill,*

MY love remembered unto you and your wife. This is to certify you, that my wife hath been sick of the small-pox; they did appear the next morning you went away from us: she hath been very full, so that there was little hopes of life; but now we do conceive the worst is past for this bout; yet she is very troublesome still, being something light-headed, so that her nurse can have no rest, which is a marvellous thing, that she should hold out as she doth; for she hath not got an hour's sleep at once, not these twelve nights and days. My wife doth remember her love to yourself and wife, and to all the rest of her friends with you. And I would desire you to send me those two Commission-Books, and if you have any more of them, send them, and as many of the Mortality as you have, send; and if you have any of the Dialogue, and Devil-Books, and the Lost Sheep, send them up with the other, if you can, the next return of Haines the carrier.

I question not but this proclamation, which came out last, will both fright and incite you all to church

now, to save twelve-pence a-week ; for it will fare as well with those as never goes at all, as it will with those as go every now and then, except they can give a lawful excuse why they stay away: they must hear divine service, and receive the sacrament also like good national Christians. But those who are not stone-blind, may see what it is to make shipwreck of faith, and a good conscience ; neither will that wisdom of reason, in bowing down to a false worship, gain that felicity of mind, nor wealth of this world, as was expected, but rather the contrary ; for he that is willing to lose his life shall save it, and he that is willing to save his life, shall lose it: and those words of Christ, I find to be a standing truth, both in the spiritual, and in the natural, and happy and blessed are they which hold out to the end, that they may receive an hundred-fold of peace and quietness in this life, and in the life to come life everlasting. No more at present, but rest

Your friend in the true faith in the true God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, September 9, 1669.*



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Slade-house, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, October 4, 1669.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated September 6, 1669, and I suppose I shall receive the money on Monday morning; for I was forced to write these lines unto you, before I could receive the money, because you might not miss of an answer this return; and I understand you have some thoughts to come to see us shortly, and that you might see friends in the way; therefore I shall give the names and places: I suppose you will come by Nottingham, and those friends you know there, only Mr. Sudbury and his wife, and Mr. Parker; and in Leicestershire, a matter of seven miles on this side Leicester, towards London, at a town called Arnesby, liveth one John Hall, and his mother, and two or three miles on one side, liveth Thomas Hall, the brother of John Hall, and have two brothers more in London that own the truth; and within half a mile of John Hall, liveth one who is sister to John Saddington, here of London, which owneth the truth; I saw her when I was there in my last journey: John Hall, or his mother, will send for her; so that they will inform you one of another: and as for those at Cambridge, it will be your best course to enquire for one William Dickinson, a butcher, in the Petty Cury, at Cambridge, and there is Thomas Parke, that will inform you of Charles Cleve, Mr. Hampson, and seve-

ral others, there in Cambridge, and at Burton, two miles from Cambridge, Goodman Warboyes and his wife, and at Orwell, William Cakebread and his wife.

There is several others in those parts, which those friends aforesaid will inform you of. And if you should come into Essex, at Braintree there is one James Whitehead, an ironmonger, he that was with me when I was at Chesterfield.

This is all at present, being in haste, only my love, and my wife's love remembered to yourself and your wife.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*From the Postern, London,  
October 4, 1669.*

I have received the 10s. since.  
My love presented to all friends there with you.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, dated from London, December 4, 1669.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated November 29, 1669, and according to your request, I shall write a few lines unto you, this return; to certify that I am

well, and so is my wife, and all friends elsewhere at London, and that my daughter White was well delivered of a son, which was a great comfort to her husband, and to us all, because they have none alive; but two weeks after it was born, it died, which is some grief to her and him; and as for Mr. Delamaine, he is well, and I shewed him your letter; and as for Mrs. Alsop, here in London, I do not know any such woman, neither do I know any that believes this commission in Lancaster; if there be any, it is more than I know. And as for that business concerning the Lord Mayor, he could do nothing to me, having no law on his side; for I said unto him, if there were any matter of law against me, let him bind them (the accuser) over to prosecute, and I would put in bail to defend it; but he, having no law on his side, gave no heed to what I said, nor none of them proffered to be bound to prosecute; so the Lord-Mayor railed at me, and threatened me to do what he could, and as it is reported since, that he gave the Commission-Book to the Speaker of the House of Commons, being the Lord-Mayor's kinsman, to do what they could do; but I hear nothing of it since; for now he is out of his mayoralty, he is like another man. And as for the books you think long, as you may well enough, and so they do here in London; but the printer hath dealt so basely by me, he hath had them to do these four months, and hath done but one sheet and-a-half; yet the two books will be about five or six sheets a-piece, so that I am forced to put one of them to another printer: but this man that hath dealt so basely by me, is one that I never employed before; for he that printed all the rest would not do them; so I was forced to get whom I could; but I hope I shall

get them done by Christmas, or a little after; for all printers have been full of business this Term-time, with almanacks, and other things; but now they are over, I hope I shall get them done, and as soon as I can get them out of the press, you shall hear from me; and if it be so hard to get these two little volumes printed, what should I do to get those greater books printed? Therefore my advice to you and all other believers of these writings, is, to make much of these writings, and not to embezzle them away; for when these be gone that I have, they will not be had for any money; for I think they will never be printed any more, the charge will be so great, and the difficulty to get them done, will be the cause they will never be printed again.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love to yourself, and to your wife, and all friends else there with you.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London,  
December 4, 1669.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date from London, March 20, 1670. Directed to Sladehouse, in Staffordshire.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated February 26, 1670, wherein I perceive your constant faith in this commission of the Spirit, which faith will uphold you in the day of trouble; and as for my being, I am where I was, in Wapping, and am pretty well in health, but confined from my own house still, because of that warrant which will last always, as long as the present power lasteth; yet my being in these parts hath been a means to establish many in this faith, who were Quakers and Baptists before; and, as it happened, one Mr. Atkinson, a Quaker, and Elizabeth Atkinson his wife, a zealous Quaker, who felt from the Quakers, and wrote against the Quakers, who came to me several times (perhaps you have had of her writings.) Her husband was loath she should come to me at the first, but she growing stronger and stronger in faith and argument by coming to me, she overcame her husband to see me, and hear me; which, when her husband did see and hear me, he was very much taken and affected in love towards me, and desired me to come to his house very oft, which I did by their inviting; so that the man was very much affected with my discourse, and had faith in this commission of the Spirit. But to be short; it happened, that after he had been acquainted with me but

half a year, the man died; but he gave such testimony of his faith in this commission of the Spirit, with such wonderful expressions to his wife, and others that came unto him, exhorting them to stand steadfast in this faith, and let no doubt arise in them, for he did not think there could have been such peace upon this earth as he now did find, and that they should give glory to God that had sent a prophet upon earth now in these our days, who had declared to us the true God, and the rise of the two seeds, and all other things fit to be known; therefore let there be no doubt of these things, and said it would not be half a quarter of an hour before he should rise again, and be in glory, with many other wonderful expressions concerning the doctrine and faith of this commission of the Spirit, to the great amazement of those that heard him, and strengthening of the faithful, and convincement of the Quakers; for their mouths are stopped, and made silent by his testimony at his death.

This is one that had been a Quaker many a year; I thought good only to give you a little touch of these things for the strengthening of your faith; for it is more for one Quaker to die in this faith, and express himself so, than for one hundred of those that have professed it. But I shall say no more of that matter here.

And as for my advice and judgment concerning your factoring this next summer in butter and cheese to London; as to that, my advice is, that if you could deal with honest and able men, it would do well; but I have no skill neither in that trade, nor acquainted with any men of that trade, nor familiar acquaintance, only with Mr. Shelley; and I heard that he should say, that the carriage by land of those commodities

did take up much of the cheesemonger's gain; but I had no discourse with him about it, therefore I shall not encourage you in it, nor altogether discourage you in it; neither am I at all acquainted with Mr. Ewer, or but little with Mr. Prince, especially in the matter of trade; therefore I can give but very little advice or encouragement in things I know not, neither will I dissuade you from it; but if you think your coming to London will not be too much hindrance unto you, it would be best for you to come; for speaking with men face to face, will work more upon men than letters will, because a man may give many more reasons to objections by word of mouth than can be expressed by letters; therefore if you will venture the charge and trouble in coming to London only about this matter, whether you lose or win, I shall leave it to your own mind to resolve upon.

And this is all the advice I can give you at present in this matter, being unskilled in their way of trading, and unacquainted with the men; for I would gladly that you should do well, and should be very sorry you should be a loser; therefore be well advised in your own mind of what I have said before.

This is all at present, only my love and wife's love remembered unto yourself, and unto your wife.

I rest your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, March 20, 1670.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Slade-house, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, April 25, 1670.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

**THIS** is to certify you and your loving wife, that we received your kind token, and do give you both hearty thanks for your kind love: and further, this is to let you know, that we are both well at present, and so are most of our friends here at London; and that since I came from Cambridgeshire, we received your kind token. There is one of our chief friends in Cambridgeshire dead, namely, the widow Adams, who lived at Orwell; but she was married above half a year to a friend of the faith, namely, Thomas Warboyes, a very honest-hearted man, and sufficient of the world's goods, who is in great trouble for the loss of her; but her daughter and son-in-law do live in Orwell still; but they being persecuted for not going to church, they do intend to remove from thence to Ware, about Michaelmas; so that this house at Orwell hath been a place of entertainment, like a stage-town, for many, twelve years to my knowledge; but now it will be broken up, and the saints will be scattered, but not out of England.

Also this act against meetings being so severe and cruel, it disheartens all sorts of professors of religion; but what the effect of it will be, time will bring forth; but however, it doth not reach us as yet; but yet we are sorry for the troubles of others; for it is their



conscience to meet, else they can have no peace; but blessed be the God of truth, that hath given us peace, without outward worship, God's wisdom hath been mightily seen, in that he hath preserved this commission from all those laws, and powers of the nation, that have been made hitherto: and it is the most wise God, that hath sent a commission into this world, that giveth peace of mind in believing, without outward worship, so that truth runs clearly through the hearts of many; and the powers cannot tell how to stay it, nor make no laws against it.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and your wife, and all friends else there with you.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, near Moor-Fields,  
April 25, 1670.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Slade-house, bearing date from London, December 7, 1670.*

*Loving Friend in the eternal Truth, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date November 18, 1670, wherein I perceive you have not heard by any of our friends, nor by me, of the several troubles I have been in this whole year, but especially

since Midsummer, so that I have not lodged at my own house these five months, nor dare not yet. I shall only give you a little hint of the cause, that you may understand, because I cannot enlarge upon particulars nor circumstances, but to give you a hint of the ground, and some passages of trouble that hath happened unto me this year about these books.

The first ground and cause of my troubles in this kind, I perceive now it was about this time twelvemonth, in this month December, there was a book of mine taken in the press as it was printing, and that did allude to the words in other books printed before, by which the master of the press did perceive there were other books printed without a licence; whereupon he sent twelve or fourteen men, some stationers, with the warden of the company, and some of the king's messengers, to search and seize upon unlicensed books; so there came twelve or fourteen men, and wrenched open the hatch before I was aware, and run into every room of the house; so they seized upon ten pounds worth of books, most of them unmade up; so they were intended to carry them all away, but they consulted among themselves, and said, Mr. Muggleton, we will be civil, we will take only some of these that are bound together, and leave the rest while further order; so they took what they would, and left the rest; but when they had perused them, they judging them to be blasphemy, they got a warrant from the council of state to take my person; so by chance I heard that there was a warrant out for me by my attorney at law, who saw it in the office; so I got out of my house immediately, and in a few days after came the messenger for me, but he missed of me; he came three times, but could not meet with me. A few days after came the Marshal of the Trained Bands, with a warrant from the mi-

litia, for my person to come before them; for not appearing upon the Trained Bands, they fined me five pounds; and I being not at home, but he thought I was, so he in fury threatened my wife and Mrs. Brunt, and caused my wife to open the door, which she need not; but when he got into the chamber, he seized upon the best and heaviest chest, and caused two porters to carry it away to Guildhall, for five pounds, for not appearing upon the Trained Bands. The chest had in it books and linen to the worth of fifteen or sixteen pounds; so after he had done, he knew that he could not justify this act of his, by virtue of a military warrant, before the man of the house was apprehended; and he heard that I would sue him at the law for burglary and felony, to take away a man's goods before a man is convicted by the law: he hearing of this, pretended a great deal of love to my daughter White, as if he for her sake would do her father what good he could to get the chest again for a small matter, before the chest was broke up in the open court; and because I was not willing the court should see the books, for there were twelve pounds worth of books in it; but if they had been any other goods, I would have suffered it to have been broken open, and have seen whether they durst have sold them; but because of the books, I desired my daughter to comply with them, and get the chest off as cheap as she could; so with the help of this marshal she got the chest again, unbroken-up, for a matter of thirty-three shillings.

After this it came to pass, about Michaelmas last, there came eight or ten stationers, and other officers, and some of them the king's messengers, thinking to apprehend me for the old business at the first, and as it happened my wife was not at home neither, for if she had been at home, they would have broken in,

pretending to search for me, and there were many books at that time very easy to be taken; but she being not at home, they being very angry, went and searched the bookbinder's house for unlicenced books, so they found three of mine that were binding, and they took them away, and charged the bookbinder to bind no more; so there they fleeced thirty shillings more from me; so now I have removed my books out of my house, and shall prevent them from taking away any more; but now all their drift is to catch me, that they might get more money out of me, but I shall do my best endeavour to keep out of their hands, for I have not been at home to lodge these five months, nor shall not all this winter.

Thus in brief you may perceive some part of the troubles I have met with this year; and as for any spiritual matters, there is no other but what you have heard and seen; and if there were, it would be too tedious to write the revelations of faith; and as for parliament news, there is none here in London, neither hath the parliament determined any thing yet as I hear of, only to raise money for the king; but that way you speak of, is but talk; as to talk, there is no such thing, neither can there be any such thing as the state of things stands now.

This is all at present, being in haste, only my love, and my wife's love remembered unto yourself and your wife.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, December 17, 1670.*

You may direct your letter to me as formerly, as your last, for my wife is always at home.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, of Nottingham, bearing date January 13, 1671.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, with the Quaker's letter inclosed, and I confess it hath been a long time since I sent unto you ; and I think I did receive two or three letters from you, and one or two from Mrs. Parker, and I gave you no answer, because I had no matter of concernment to write unto you ; yet nevertheless my love was as great to you both as ever, though I did not write unto you ; also I have hardly had time to write unto you since, for my time hath been much taken up all this summer with several Quakers that are fallen off from them, and are very firm in the belief of this commission of the Spirit, and are very well grounded in it, and their faith very firm, and none of the smallest persons neither ; yet, as some have been exalted in their minds, and settled in the knowledge of heavenly things by me, so on the contrary, some, that were exalted in their knowledge by being in my favour, have rebelled against me, for which rebellion they have been cast down and out of my sight, because several innocent persons were drawn aside to join in their rebellion ; but I have separated the sheep from the goats, that is, the obedient from the rebellious ; and this act of rebellion hath been in agitation this whole year, but now it is brought to a period ; and this hath taken up much time in writing and talking to other believers,

to satisfy them in this rebellion ; so that all are satisfied now, and more firmly fixed to me than before, only three or four of the grand rebels I have cast out, three cast out for ever, but one of the four repented quickly, and humbled himself, and I forgave him, but the others are hardened. And who do you think is one of the rebels ? Even Walter Bohenan the Scotchman, his rebellion is great, for he hath joined with the other two without a cause, and he hath undertaken to plead their cause, and make their cause his own, and he hath written two base letters to other believers, to persuade them to rebellion against me, and to cleave unto the Scriptures ; so that I see there is no place of repentance will be found for him ; but perhaps you may hear more of this hereafter, for it would be too large to give you an account of the particulars and ground of this rebellion, therefore I shall not trouble you no further at present, only let you know we are all well at present ; so with my love and my wife's love remembered unto yourself, and to our dear friend Mrs. Parker,

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
January 13, 1671.*

And as for the Quaker's letter to the woman you sent, there is nothing in it to ground any answer unto it, neither by the woman, nor none else ; they do as little children do, ask their parents such questions as cannot be answered by the parents, no more than the child that asks can tell ; and do not they

shew their ignorance and darkness to put queries to simple ignorant women to answer, which they cannot answer themselves, for they know not how to answer those queries they have put to the woman than a dog doth ; if the mouth of the dog were opened to speak, he would say as much to those Quakers as they can ; for if they knew how to interpret those Scriptures and queries, why did they not give the women to know them while they were of their faith ; but now they be departed from them, now they come to learn knowledge of the women, and propound queries to them, as if those that depart from the Quakers people and principle are immediately endued with such knowledge as to answer any thing they do propound ; and for the queries themselves, they have been answered over and over again in the Quakers Neck Broken, and in Fox's Looking-Glass, the women may read the answers to the Quakers there, and save themselves a labour. But there is one thing in the queries that I never heard before, that is, what complexion God is of ; as for his stature and bigness is shewed in Fox's Looking-Glass, and for his complexion I could shew that also, but what good will that do Quakers to know ; yet to satisfy you, I shall give you a little knowledge of it, what complexion he was of when he was upon earth, and what complexion he is of now ; as thus, God became flesh, and dwelt amongst men, as in the first of John ; likewise when he became flesh he was a Nazarite, as the Scripture saith. Now what complexion Nazarites were of, you may see in the Lamentions of Jeremiah, chap. iv. verse 7. The words are these : *The Nazarites were purer than snow, they were whiter than milk, they were more ruddy in their bodies than rubies, their polishing was of sapphire.* This was the complexion of

Christ the only God when on earth ; and what complexion he is now of in the kingdom of glory above the stars, may be seen Revelation, chap. i. verse 13 to 16. *And in the midst of the seven candlesticks John saw one like the son of man, cloathed with a garment down to the foot. 14. His head and hair were white as wool, as white as snow ; and his eyes were like a flame of fire. 15. And his feet like unto fine brass, as if they burned in a furnace. 16. And his countenance was as the sun shining in his strength.*

Here is the full and true complexion of the person of God in glory in the kingdom of heaven above the stars ; and this Son of Man in glory is the same Son of Man that was upon earth, even that very God, as I said before ; so that you may see what complexion God was of when on earth in mortality before he suffered death, and what complexion God is of now in the kingdom of glory ; he that can understand let him receive it. But what should the women trouble themselves to give answer to the Quakers queries ? why do not the Quakers expound their riddles themselves, that people may love them for their doctrine and principle-sake, though not for their practice-sake ? They shew themselves like ignorant foolish men, to ask wisdom of those that go out from them. And this I say unto the women, perhaps they went from them because of some evil practice among them more than for their doctrine ; but I shall not accuse them for their practice, though by the reports of them that were of them, they were wicked enough ; but as for their principle of doctrine concerning God, devil, hell, heaven, angels, and the mortality of the soul, they are altogether ignorant, and absolute antichristian, and great fighters against the truth of God ; and yet they talk



of truth more than any people whatsoever, but understand truth least of any.

I speak not this to persuade the women to believe me, neither do I do as the Quakers people do, to compel people to go to heaven whether they will or no, but leave it to the seed within them to work itself forth.

I have declared the mysteries of God, and of the right devil, and many other heavenly secrets, which have lain hid from the foundation of the world, never revealed to mankind till now ; and whoever can hear and understand, will be made partakers of those heavenly truths.

There is now life and death set before the women, whether they shall cleave unto the Quakers, or unto this commission of the Spirit. Now they must venture their souls upon me, or upon them ; if I be true then they are false, if they be true then must I be false ; for we cannot be both true, one of us must perish to eternity.

Now life and death is set before you, you must chuse or refuse which you will take ; so that they must cleave to the one, and forsake the other, else they can have no peace at all.

But I shall say no more, but rest at present,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Elizabeth Atkinson, bearing date London, February 12, 1671.*

*Dear Friend in the Faith, Elizabeth Atkinson,*

OUT of tenderness and love to the welfare and peace of your mind here in this world, that you may be the more strongly established in the assurance of eternal happiness in the life to come, I thought good to write these few lines unto you by the way of counsel and advice, not compelling you, or laying any bonds upon you, but wishing you as well as my own children, and as my own soul; neither would I give you any counsel or advice, but what I would give unto you if you were my own natural child, as you are spiritual, being begotten by the faith of this declaration, which is as followeth: I do hear that you are somewhat intangled in your affections with that young man I saw once at your house, as if he and you are like to make a match together. Now if the case be so, indeed your condition is not good at present, neither will it be good hereafter in this world; for you will lose yourself exceedingly, and make shipwreck of your present peace, and of your personal estate; and your strong confidence of faith and knowledge of the true God, and faith in this commission of the Spirit, will be weakened in you, and you will become like unto Sampson when his hair was cut; he was strong before, but when his hair was cut he became weak, like another man; and the cause of his weakness was, in that he took a Philistine woman to wife; and what sad fruit and effect it wrought and

brought forth! She was a snare unto him, and the cause that destroyed his strength: for Sampson was an Israelite, and it was unlawful for the Israelites to marry with the Philistines; therefore that evil came to pass upon Sampson. So likewise you are an Israelite of the tribe of Levi by birth, and I can say truly, since you believe as Christ did by Nathaniel, *Behold an Israelite indeed, in whom there is no guile*; and will you, that is an Israelite indeed, in whom there is no guile; and will you stain your wisdom, knowledge, and faith, and match yourself to an Egyptian, to a dark Egyptian episcopal man, who is as dark as pitch in spiritual and heavenly knowledge. Therefore I would have you to consider these three things: first, how unsuitable this match will be. First, he is no way suitable to your age. Secondly, he is no way suitable to your estate. Thirdly, his faith and religion is no way suitable unto yours. Your faith is now the faith of God's elect; and your religion is to worship God in spirit and truth, free from all idol worship, which is light and life. His faith is the faith of the Egyptians, and his religion as the darkness of Egyptians; and will you put light and darkness together. These things have been unlawful in the days of old, as it was by Sampson aforesaid; and if you match with this Egyptian, as he did with the Philistine woman, your strength will depart from you, as his did, and you will become weak like another woman; and that crown of wisdom, knowledge, and prudence, that hath been set upon your head, will be pulled off, and cast upon the ground, and you will be looked upon by the wise in heart as one of the foolish women. And because you are set free indeed by faith in this commission of the Spirit; for this faith doth make you free indeed, and will you enter into the spirit of

bondage in Egypt again, by marrying with an Egyptian, whose worship is to worship a calf for his God? Consider how you will be intangled; your companions must be Egyptians, and you must dwell amongst the Egyptians, and your discourse must be the Egyptians language, and not the language of Canaan. For no people in the world can speak that language, though of this faith; and when all your familiar friends about you are Egyptians, how shall any of the Israelites of this faith have any society with you. And if you shall think by your wisdom and discreet carriage to convert him to your faith after you are married unto him, you will be deceived there of your expectations; and it will be a dangerous thing for a woman to venture that. Again, how will the Quakers trample over you, and say, Elizabeth Atkinson is gone back into Egypt again, and boast themselves against me, and say, this is Muggleton's doings; for it is like himself. But however, I can bear greater reproaches than these, as I have done in time past: therefore consider, and lay fond phantasy aside, and consider things of more weight. Let phantasy be but in one balance, and lay those three things aforesaid in the other balance, and see which will weigh heaviest in your mind, do you choose. And farther I say, seeing you cannot fancy Henry Hall, I would advise you to stay a while longer, and not bind yourself to any, but keep yourself free from engagements and intanglements of this nature. Providence may order things so, that you may meet with one suitable in your years, suitable in estate, and suitable in religion: patience is a great virtue, and keeps the mind in peace, and doth things with deliberation and consideration; but phantasy runneth headlong to destruction; therefore I would wish you to be true to

your own soul, and do not dally with edge-tools, and intangle your own soul, and insnare the peace of your mind, and give way to no man, to intangle his mind, until you are resolved. For if you be true to your own self, you may resolve your own mind, and resolve him at two or three times speech with him; for long delays, and often companying with a man upon that account, is dangerous; and young men, that hath nothing but nature in them, hath many by-ends to raise their fortunes, whatever men may pretend to the contrary; and love above all things else. Yet if you were not a fortune, young men would not die for you, whatever they pretend; and that you may know right well to your trouble, if you make trial. For that man that pretends to let a woman give away her estate to her relations, and will take her with nothing, and yet hath no estate considerable of his own, he sheweth himself to be either a fool, or a knave, or both; neither can he mean honestly, whatever is pretended. For if this man had any considerable personal estate of his own, he need not fear having a wife with a considerable portion; but if a man's preferment dependeth upon kindred, he had need look after a wife with a considerable estate of her own; that he may pay back that relations hath laid out for him. But I hope your wisdom will preserve you from being caught as young birds are, with chaff instead of good corn; for the loss will be yours, and not mine, nor none else that hath a love for you. Thus I wishing you to mind your temporal quiet peace of mind, while you live in this world; that it may be added unto you as an hundred fold in this life, and I am sure it will not diminish the joy of the life to come, which is eternal. This I know by experience, and am sensible of the inconvenience you

will sustain, if this match go forwards; but if these lines take place in you, so as to persuade you not to have that man for your husband, let me know it, by writing, or otherwise, and I shall give the best advice I can, to deliver you; but if these lines doth not take place in you, but you are resolved to have him to your husband, let me know it, and I shall not dissuade you from it, but leave it to yourself, to possess the comfort and the discomfort of such a match; therefore let it be considered in your mind, and so do. I thought good to write these words, because you may read by yourself, and consider of them; because things cannot be spoken so fully by words of mouth, nor without interruption.

So resteth your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*February 12, 1671.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, March 23, 1671.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal truth, Dorothy Carter,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated March 16, 1671, and the enclosed I caused to be delivered as was directed; and I am very sorry for your great troubles now of late, in that you have lost your daughter, and your son; and now,

last of all, you are seemingly entering into a greater trouble than all the rest, and what advice to give you to deliver you out of it, I cannot tell; for I perceive you are so involved and entangled in your estate, and in your way of livelihood, by reason of your daughter's living with you, after she was married, that it will be hard to separate and divide, what is your own, and what is your son-in-law's own. These things are commonly the fruits that parents do reap, when children do live with them when they are married. I being sensible, and having had great experience of the inconveniencies of this, by several, it was always my advice to any friend, not to do any such thing, but would have had them to follow my example; therefore I gave my advice to your daughter, to have one that would have delivered her, and you also, out of all those temporal troubles, as it is at this day, to that party that hath him. If she had been my own child, as she is yours, I could not have wished her better; but she did not hearken unto me, but followed her own fancy, and loved a man that I did not know at that time; so that I would not give her my advice in it, though desired by her; but she is gone to her rest from all her troubles in this world, and shall enter into those eternal joys, which natural eyes have not seen, nor the natural heart of man can understand.

And as for this maid Mr. Goodwyn hath a mind to marry, I never saw her in my life, only I have heard a good report of her, for a civil maid, and of a good meek nature; but as to religion, I never heard she was of any; but since she came acquainted with Mr. Goodwyn, she seemeth to have somewhat of truth in her; for I heard a letter of hers to Mr. Delamaine, and the letter was well composed, and did savour very much of truth; so that by that letter I cannot

judge amiss of the maid, being of so short time standing, as to her spiritual estate: likewise you may remember your son Goodwyn, when he came first acquainted with your daughter, was as ignorant in the knowledge of truth, as this maid is, and I was unacquainted with him as I am with her; therefore when your daughter desired my judgment of him, I would give her none in that point; but since, you know, time hath proved that his heart is right, as to spiritual things, and as for his desiring to marry so hastily as you speak of, and forgetting your daughter so soon, you know that is a common thing with young men, and he is not the first, nor doth not marry the soonest of any.

And if you would not have him marry at all, because he hath two children alive by your daughter, that is something unreasonable to tie him up so close, neither was it wisdom in you to suffer any maid to come from London, to dwell with you as a servant, for bare wages, for I perceive it was he that hired her, and not you; and you might well think, that no maid that hath any breeding, would have gone from London, so far into the country, for a year's wages, if Mr. Goodwyn had not been a widower: these things may be read in the hearts of men and maids, whatever is pretended; therefore I cannot blame either of them in this thing, if they marry or not marry; but the trouble of my mind is, that you cannot be set free, and at liberty, because things are so entangled between you and him: yet I perceive the trade and way of teaching scholars is in your hand, and not in his, and that his maid, if she be his wife, cannot manage the business without you, neither would I wish you to give up your employment unto her, as you would have done unto your own daughter; for these



are both but children in law ; for you have done much good in your generation, in your time, and you are not so old yet but that you may live to do a great deal more good before you die ; you may live to see many younger than both them go before you : therefore I would advise you to keep your own standing, and your liberty, and privileges, while you live ; and whatsoever you know is right, do unto Mr. Goodwyn, only let him know what property he hath in your estate by reason of his wife, and what property you have yourself, keep ; and as for his claiming promise to give your daughter all that you have, signifies nothing now she is dead ; but if you had died before her, it is very like you might have left all your estate to her, and her children ; but the case is altered now she is dead, and Mr. Goodwyn hath no ground to expect any such thing ; except he were resolved to live single while you are dead, which I perceive he is not : and as for his reviving the bond of fifty pounds, that signifies little, whether he will or no, as long as he and you live ; the bond is made, I suppose, to you, and is in full force and virtue as long as you live, if you have the bond in your own possession. These differences, I suppose, may be composed between you ; but here lieth the knot hard to be untied, how you two shall live together, and manage the employment together, as your own daughter and you did, seeing they are both children-in-law. Now where two are equal in power, or two mistresses, there will be some differences ; but where one doth rule, and the other a servant, there is good government ; neither would I wish you, in your old age, to become servant to any, except it be to your better advantage. And it is with you two, much like as it was with Abraham and Lot, one land could not bear.

them ; so one house cannot hold two families, being both of one profession ; and which way to separate you two is hard to judge, except you be both willing, as Abraham and Lot was, to let Lot take to the right hand, or to the left. Now you are in Abraham's state, and Mr. Goodwyn is in Lot's state, and it is to be feared, that if he goes from you, he will go into Sodom, as Lot did ; that is, he cannot manage the way of schooling without you, and his own trade will not be sufficient for a livelihood ; and how to persuade you to do to a daughter-in-law, as you did by your own, I cannot press you to it ; for I could not do it, if I were in your condition ; for you must expect, in time, young children by her, as you did by your own, neither can I persuade you to do as Sarah did by Hagar, to cast out the bond-woman, and her son, for he shall not be heir with her son ; so the children of this woman cannot be heir of your affection and estate, as the children of your own daughter. Here I have opened the state of this matter, as far as I understand by your letter, so that you may see in part what my mind is, so far as I understand in this matter ; but if there be any other secret contracts, covenants, or promises between Mr. Goodwyn and you, since your daughter died, or before, I am ignorant of it, and ignorant how you, being two families, lived as one, and how your gettings was, and how her gettings was, and yet kept union as one, I am altogether ignorant ; but I suppose it cannot be so now ; therefore I cannot give no absolute judgment, what you shall do in this case ; but I shall leave it to yourself, to do whatsoever seemeth best for your own peace and quietness of mind, while you live in this world, as I did by your own daughter ; but you have

not that tie of nature to bind you now, as you had then.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and to Betty Marsden, and Betty Slater, and all friends else.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, March 23, 1671.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, bearing date April 7, 1671, directed to Nottingham.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith of Jesus, Ellen Sudbury,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated March 28, with the enclosed to Mr. Hatter, which, he coming to my house at that time your letter came, I gave it to him, and which he was very glad to see; and he, reading of mine, was the more refreshed in his mind to hear of your love, faith, and steadfastness in this commission of the Spirit. Also I shewed it to my daughter, and to others of the faith, which do much rejoice at your faith and satisfaction you have in the understanding of the truth, in that you are made partakers with us in the like precious faith, which doth consist in the right understanding of the true God, and the right devil, the rise of the two seeds;

and the distinction of the three commissions, which no man in the world doth know at this day, but the believers of this commission of the Spirit only, because they have true spiritual foundation as a rock ; but their foundation is upon the sand, even all the teachers of the world, and the Quakers' principle or foundation is the worst of all ; though it seemeth to be the best of all in righteousness of life, yet the worst of all in point of doctrine, and that they will find in the end, that they may flourish for a time ; for no Quaker, nor any other that hath heard of this commission of the Spirit, and of the doctrine declared by it, and doth not understand it, and believe it, that can be saved, let their holiness of life be ever so much ; for God hath no regard unto the righteousness of life, except it doth proceed from faith in the true God, which no Quaker, nor any other man hath, but those that have faith in this commission of the Spirit ; therefore it is that they do all fight against the true God, and against this commission of the Spirit : but I am refreshed at your experience and growth in grace and knowledge of the true God, in that you have eyes, and can see : as Christ said to his disciples, *Blessed are your eyes, for they see ; for many have eyes, but they see not.* Also I am glad to see that your understanding is enlightened to see the true interpretation of the Scriptures, which is given by this commission of the Spirit ; and this book of the 11th of the Revelations is very little else but interpretations of many places of Scripture, besides the chapter itself, which will enlighten the understanding in the knowledge of the Scriptures, more than all that hath been written before ; therefore I have sent you three of them, because if there should be any other besides yourself that should have any affection to

them, that they may have one; but I shall leave that to your discretion, do what you will with them. I received a letter from Edward Frewterell, and your aunt Carter, with the money, bearing date March 19, 1671, but I have not sent them an answer as yet, nor no books; but I do intend to send this week, if the carrier be in town; but as for my coming down into the country, I do much rejoice at your's and your aunt Carter's affections in desiring me to come, which I do intend to do, but I think it will be about James-tide; for I must go into Cambridgeshire about Midsummer, and after I have been there I do intend to see you: so being in haste,

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

Mr. Hatter and my daughter remember their love to you, with several others of the faith.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Charles Cleve, Mr. Thomas Parke, Mr. Francis Hampson, all of Cambridge, bearing date April 24, 1671.*

*Loving Friends in the true Faith, Charles Cleve, Thomas Parke, and Mr. Hampson,*

I UNDERSTOOD, by Mr. Hampson, that you three are in some trouble, and like to be in more

for not going to church. Also I perceive, you are disputing and reasoning among yourselves, whether you may not go to hear common prayer once or twice, to save yourselves from sufferings, seeing you do not deny your faith, neither do you suffer for your faith, only you would have my judgment in it.

*First.* As to this, my judgment is, that I cannot consent to any such thing; for you may as well go twenty times, or always, as once: for, if the image of Baal be set up, and you bow your knee before him, once, you may as well do it always. Also you must mind this, that there must be some witness that you bowed your knee to Baal, else your suffering will be nevertheless. For to hear common prayer at your own church is part of worship to God, and it is the image set up in England for all people to bow to and worship; therefore consider what privilege this faith hath given you, and what sufferings it hath freed you from, in that it gave you peace of mind as to your eternal happiness; it hath freed you from formal bondage of worship; it hath delivered you from being tied up to meetings, as all others are: it hath preserved you from those sufferings, which have cost many one their lives: it hath given you liberty to pay tithes, and to defend yourselves by law, to keep yourselves from imprisonment and sufferings. You have only been tied up to do justly between man and man, to the utmost of your power, and to worship God in spirit and truth.

Only now you must consider, it is one thing to worship Baal by compulsion, for fear of sufferings; what do you else but to take the mark of the beast in your right-hand? And always, when you look upon the palm of your right-hand, there you will see the mark of the beast; for it will be printed in your

minds, and the remembrance of it will remain to your lives end. And who would defile a pure conscience for fear of such a slight suffering as this? For it reacheth not to inflict any punishment upon the body; neither is there any resistance unto death, as hath been in other times for smaller matters than this. Also consider those three believers in Kent, who had the blessing of John Reeve; yet they, for fear of suffering and presumption together, because they had the blessing, they said, they could not be damned to eternity. So they bowed down themselves three times (that is, at church to Baal) and then gave over. But what hath been the effects of it? Since nothing but crosses, sickness, weakness, poverty and beggary hath, and is still, the fruits that action hath brought forth; besides, the author of hope is eaten over with rust in them. Also consider that loving and good man Dovey at his death; did any thing trouble him but his going to church? Poor man, he lost his peace by it, though I am persuaded the man will be happy, because he was true to the commission; but it would have been better for him to have had eternal life abiding in himself, and I should have been more joyful also. And if you shall reason in yourselves, that some that own this commission, and look to be saved by it, and yet can, and do go to church to save themselves, as Philip Williams and Goodman Singleton.

To this I answer and say, it is to be considered, that these men were never off from the church, because of one office or other in the parish where they lived, and therefore were under the more snares; and therefore, as Christ said, the more hard for a *rich man to enter into the kingdom of heaven*; indeed they have been men that have been rather for truth than against it, and so I have had a love for all such men, as the

Lord himself had also. I know it is possible with God, though not with man, to make a rich man venture all his riches to worship God in spirit and truth, and to forsake all idolatrous worship, in hopes of everlasting life; but it is impossible with me, that am but a man, to do it. For let not men deceive themselves, it is not half the heart for God, and the other half for the world; for God will have the whole heart, or none. And he that seeketh to save his life by a false worship, or wrong means, shall lose it; and would you be contented with such a faith as theirs is, to give one half of the heart to God, and the other half to the world? I tell you, God will have all the heart, or none. And a man shall know in himself whether he hath given God his whole heart, by casting up what it will cost him. And if he is willing to give all that he hath for truth's sake, if it be required: for the whole heart carries all along with it; then shall he have his heart given him again, and all that he hath lost for his sake, shall be given him again in this life, and in the life to come, life everlasting. And except this be, a man cannot have the perfect assurance of eternal life abiding in him, but shall have sometimes hopes and sometimes fears. Also this you are to consider; that you have been kept innocent and pure, and have not committed spiritual fornication these many years, and would you now defile your conscience with idols? Oh! let your faith be steadfast, and have its perfect work in your souls, and hold out to the end, that you may receive the crown of life, which God will give you at that day, which will not be as an hour unto you after death before you are in possession of it.

I would advise you not to appear, for you will be condemned; and then your cause will be the worse; but keep out of the way at sessions-time, and if you



be arrested afterwards, go to prison, and never put in bail for your appearance; if you do, your cause will be far worse. And as for Thomas Parke being a single man, he may keep out of the way all this summer; perhaps by next October things may alter. And as for Charles Cleve, if he find, when he is in prison, that there is no getting off without his utter undoing of his family, and destroying the peace of his own mind; let him cause all his goods and estates to be sold, and do what he will with it, and let his wife and children be all turned upon the parish, and let him live in prison himself: for, if he go to prison uncondemned, he shall have full power to sell his goods, and do what he will with them; but if he be condemned by a court, then he cannot, but they will seize upon his goods for such a parcel of money as they have judged him to pay, and take twice as much goods. And as for Mr. Hampson, he being better able in the world than you, let him keep out of the way in sessions-time, though he do lose trade for a little season, except he can employ one that he can entrust the while; and if he be arrested afterwards, let him put in no bail to the serjeant. If a bribe will not serve them, let him go to prison, and he will come off for a great deal less charges, being not condemned by a court, and save his conscience from any engagements; but if you are not able to endure a prison at all, then I cannot tell what to say to you, but must leave you to your own heart's disposing.

This is the best advice I can give you to save yourselves here, and keep the peace of your minds: for I cannot promise to free you from all troubles.

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

April 24, 1671.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Alexander Delamaïne, senior, bearing date from Southampton, June 8, 1671.*

*Leaving and kind friend in the eternal truth, Mr. Delamaïne,*

MY love remembered unto you, and to your wife. This is to certify you, that I delivered your letter unto our friends in the faith, and they were glad to hear it, and do much rejoyce in reading your letters:

Mr. Fisher the elder hath been very ill, and is something crazy still; he is now at Southampton, but his son, the young man, and William Pedley, and myself, are in the country at the old man's house, very private, and they are very well, and do kindly remember their loves unto you, and to your wife. There is nothing here of any concernment to write of, but all is still and quiet.

Therefore, I shall say no more at present, only desire you, that if my wife hath any occasion of business, or necessity to write to me, before the 21st of June; that you would be pleased to write it for her; but if there be no great necessity, do not put yourself to that trouble; for I do intend to be in London the 21st of this month. Pray give this letter to my wife, cut it asunder, and give it her.

So resteth your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*Southampton, June 8, 1671.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. George Gamble, a Merchant in Cork, in Ireland: the first to him after he came to set his seal to the true faith. Bearing date from London, March 6, 1672.*

*Loving Friend, George Gamble,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date February 14, 1672, and am glad to hear of your health, and the more, because I did hear, by a Quaker, that you were very sick, like to die: this was a little after Christmas. William Penn sent one of his books against me, and a letter with it, by one of the Quakers, to deliver it into my own hands: and when the man had delivered them into my hand, he asked me, when thou heardest from George Gamble, in Ireland? I said, I had not heard from you a great while, but once since you were here in London. He asked me by whom? I told him by Benjamin Capp; he said he knew him. Why, said I, do you ask? Said he, we did hear he is sick, like to die. I said, I heard nothing of it; so the man parted. And, as soon as the man was gone, it came into my mind, why he asked about you; it was, because the Quakers would have been glad in their hearts if you had been dead indeed; because they might have had occasion to ground a belief, that God's judgments did follow you so suddenly after you forsook the Quakers principles, and did cleave to Muggleton's doctrine, because several of the Quakers have died in a little time after they were

damped by me: so they would willingly have some to die that fall from them; looking upon it as a curse upon them for falling away from their principles. But I see their hopes is prevented, and that you are in health, and not only so, but that the seed of faith in you is risen, even as the sun riseth, and hath shined in your heart, and hath given you to see that light of life eternal, in that you have faith to believe in the true God, and to love God; for no man can love God, but he that knows God; and no man can know God but by faith. And it is life eternal to know the true God and Jesus Christ, which is sent; that is, it is life eternal to know this Jesus Christ that is sent to be the true God, as we have unfolded in our writings, and that you do now believe in this commission, and that I am a true prophet, it is well for you that you was ever born; that your eyes of your understanding are opened, to let the light of life shine into your heart, in that you can be made capable to receive a prophet's reward; which reward is no less than the blessing of everlasting life. For prophets that are chosen, and sent of God, have eternal life always with them; that whosoever believeth their report, are made partakers of it. And it hath been a saying in old times, when prophets were more in request than now, how beautiful are the feet of them that bring glad tidings of peace, and salvation. But now there is but one prophet in these last times, and shall never be no more true to the end of the world.

All professors of religion do say almost in their hearts, let this prophet depart from us, we desire not the knowledge of his ways, nor doctrine, because he is alive, to reprove us when we blaspheme against God, and against him; but give us those dead

prophets and their doctrine, that cannot make answer for themselves; let us say what we will, they will let us alone, and say nothing to us. This is the nature of reason in most people, to love and honour prophets when they are dead, but to hate and despise prophets that are alive.

Likewise you say, that one Christopher Bacon should say and affirm, that when I had given him the sentence, that he should never see, after the sentence, with his natural eye. This is as false a lie as ever was spoken; I never cursed the natural eye-sight of any person in all my life. But this I might say to him, as I have said to several, that I have given sentence upon, that after the sentence is given he should never see the face of God, nor the faces of elect men and angels, nor his own face, in the life to come, to eternity: so that he should see, in the life to come, no other God or judge, but that sentence I had given him, that should remain upon him to eternity; and he shall, in the resurrection, never stir from the place he is raised in utter darkness, where there is no light to answer the light of the eye. For there must be two lights, that in light we see light, else nothing can be seen; for one light can never see any thing of itself. As for example, though a man have light in the eye, yet, except there be day-light, fire, or candle-light, or some other light, to answer the light of the eye, the eye-light can see nothing, but is in darkness. Likewise, suppose a man be blind, and hath no light in his eyes, let the sun-light be ever so clear and bright, it makes not the blind eyes to see, and darkness is as good to him as light. This is that sentence I did pass upon him, and the blindness he should suffer in utter darkness to eternity, for his blasphemy against

the Holy Ghost. And this he shall be sure to suffer according to my word, and it will not be a quarter of an hour after this life before he sees the truth of that sentence upon him, let him flatter himself what he can. It hath been no new thing for hundreds of the seed of the serpent to belie, slander, and reproach me without a cause: for I never did any evil as to the breach of any law written in my heart in all my life. I never did any man wrong; yet all men, that are professors, speak evil of me, revile and persecute me, either in words or deeds, and for no other cause in the world, but because God hath chosen me, and hath given me wisdom and understanding of his mind in the Scriptures above all men, and authority to give sentence upon blasphemers. This is the cause I am so hated of the world, but wisdom is justified of her children.

As for William Penn's Book, the Quakers are very brag of it; yet there is no true wisdom in it at all, but some of the subtil serpent's wisdom there is in it, to make people more blind than they are by nature; and it will appear so to those who have the true light in them, when I have answered it; which perhaps may be towards the latter end of this summer. I would before, but I have promised to see some friends in Leicestershire, Nottingham, and other parts that way, which will take up the former part of this summer. I shall go in the middle of April, and, according to your desire, I have sent you a copy of Penn's letter to me, and a copy of Thomas Lee's letter to me, and a copy of a letter sent to me by a friend from Nottingham, that you may see and judge the better of it (in regard it was written by one that liveth there) than by my writing

it by report, therefore I will give it you verbatim as it is sent to me.

I shall not enlarge further at this time, but take leave; only desiring you to remember my kind love to Colonel Phaire, and his wife and family, and to all those there with you, that do love and believe the Lord Jesus, that was put to death without the gates of Jerusalem; who died, and rose again, and ascended up to heaven, to be the very true God and everlasting Father, Creator, and Redeemer of those that are saved by his own blood. Also my love, and my wife's love, presented unto yourself, and to Joseph Moss, I rest,

Your Friend in the eternal Truth of a personal  
God, God Man, the Lord Jesus Christ,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*George Gamble,*

This is to certify you, that I received the ten pounds you ordered for books, and I have sent you 17; at 18s. a-piece, which comes to 8l. 10s. 0d. and I gave to Mr. Godfrey, for 17 of the Mortality of the Soul, 26s. 6d. and the postage of letters, and the box, and other trifling things, comes to 4s. 6d. This is the account of the 10l. I received upon your bill.

And seeing it is not convenient to direct your letters in my name, you may direct them to Mr. Alexander Delamain, at the Sign of the Three Tobacco Pipes, on Bread Street-hill, near Queen-Hithe, and it will come safe to me.

*The Postern, London, March 9, 1672.*

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Jeremiah Moss, Physician, living in Cork, in Ireland, being the first after his believing the Commission of Truth, bearing date from London, March 6, 1672.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Jeremiah Moss,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated February 14, 1672, wherein I perceive that this record of the Spirit doth take place in the hearts of several in those parts; and doth give satisfaction to the minds of those that believe, and doth dissatisfy the reprobates. Indeed, words of truth are like a two-edged sword, that cut both ways; and he, that hath a commission from God, hath power as the Apostles had, as may be seen in the Acts: some were pricked or cut to the heart for their conversion and salvation, as in Acts iii. and 37th verse. Others again, by the words of truth, were cut to the heart for the convincing of them of the sin of unbelief; witnessing to their consciences, that they were reprobates, and would be damned to eternity, as in Acts vii. and 54th verse. So that true prophets, and true ministers of Christ, their words are spirit and life, to convert some, to open the eyes of their minds that were blind, and to let the light of life eternal shine into their hearts, in giving them the knowledge of the glory of God, in the face of Jesus Christ; that is, that Jesus Christ is the brightness of God's glory, because his face is the very true God's face; and this light of faith doth shine into the hearts of many,



by the declaration or preaching of them whom God sends. And, on the contrary, this declaration is a savour of death unto death unto the seed of the serpent, in that words of truth do blind the eyes of them that think they see, and hardeneth their hearts, lest the word of truth should take place in them; and it maketh their ears heavy, or deaf, even as an adder; so that in hearing, they cannot hear nor understand; and in seeing, they may not perceive any truth in a prophet's words; and having hearts, but not understanding any heavenly or spiritual things, they despise and blaspheme against them, even the doctrine of the true God, lest they should be converted, and be healed with the assurance of everlasting life in themselves. Likewise you say, we think not the liberty convenient with you, which the believers with us take in passing sentence on those that blaspheme against the Holy Ghost. As to this, I never laid any bonds upon any believer, to give sentence upon any for blasphemy, except their faith be strong enough in themselves to believe, without doubting, that such a one is damned. For, if a man give sentence, and afterwards doubts, that sentence returns on a man's own head, and the party; so sentenced, is freed from the power of his curse. Neither shall I lay any bonds upon you, there to force you to give sentence upon despising, blaspheming spirits; if your own faith doth not move you to it, or is not strong enough in you to give sentence, then you may let it alone. But this I say, whoever doth hear men and women speak evil against this blessed truth, in despising and blaspheming against the Holy Ghost, and a man shall really believe that such a one hath sinned the unpardonable sin that shall never be forgiven in this world, nor in the world

to come, and hold his peace, it sheweth a great weakness of faith in that person. For, if a man be saved by believing such a truth, and being glad in his heart, that he did not stir against the Holy Ghost himself, and doth hear others blaspheme against that truth he is saved by, and yet holdeth his peace, it sheweth much weakness of faith in that person. Besides, if all believers of this commission should be so weak in faith, then the devils might blaspheme against God without controul, and think they did well in it; so that none could receive the sentence for blasphemy but such as come to me: but where I give sentence upon one, there is ten that have the sentence given them for blaspheming by the believers of this commission of the Spirit, both here in London, and several parts in other countries, and their faith is made the stronger, by giving sentence every where upon despising spirits of truth; and when they neglect to give sentence, for some by-ends, for blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, their minds are troubled for neglect, and doth eclipse and weaken their own confidence; so that by this means the devils are met withal every where, because most of the believers here in England do give sentence upon the seed of the serpent, as they have occasion in discourse. And they are more justified in themselves than those that do not; and they are justified by me in so doing, rather than those that shall hear the devils rage, rail, and blaspheme, and say nothing to them.

Seeing it is not convenient to direct your letters in my name, you may direct your letters to me thus: for Mr. Alexander Delamain, at the sign of the Three Tobacco Pipes, on Bread Street-hill, near Queen-hithe; and it will come safe to me.

Thus, with my love, and my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, with my love to Colonel Phaire, his wife and family, and to all friends else there with you, I take leave, and rest,

Your friend in the true faith of Jesus,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
March 6, 1672.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Preston, of Little Tower-hill, Mrs. Henn's Mother, and to her Father likewise, dated in London, May 14, 1673.*

*Mr. Preston, and Mrs. Preston your Wife,*

I THOUGHT good to write these lines unto you both, but more especially unto your wife, because I have seen her once, and never but once, and she hath seen me once, and talked with me, but as for the man I did not know that ever I did see him, or he me, but I make no question but Mrs. Preston hath heard of me by the writings, and by the reports of several other people, who are for the generality my enemies: but I have learned to go through evil report as well as good report: but the occasion of my writing unto you at this time is

concerning your daughter Elizabeth Atkinson, and my speech is chiefly unto your wife, that if it were possible that the mother and the daughter might be reconciled together again, for I understand there hath been and is a great deal of trouble upon both your spirits about the match. Now I would have you to know, that this match was altogether contrary to my mind, as my letter to your daughter doth shew, if she hath shewed it you; it may come to pass that you may see it either of her or of me hereafter, and that will declare the truth of this matter more fully. First, I have been true-hearted unto your daughter ever since I came acquainted with her, and have wished her as well as my own children, and as my own soul: and if she had been my own child, as she is yours, I could not have given her better counsel than I have done: and what did I respect her so for, but because I saw she had a very good natural wisdom in her, and that she had the good seed of faith in her, but it was not then risen in her: but after awhile the seed of faith sprang up in her in heavenly wisdom, knowledge, and understanding, which was a crown of glory unto her head; but the crown is fallen off now by reason of this match, and the crown of reproach set upon her head in the room thereof by many of her enemies, and a great dislike to several of her own faith, and I perceive an extraordinary grief to you her parents, insomuch as I hear you, her mother, hath renounced her, so as not to own her for your child: and further, that you have made a covenant and promise in your passion and anger, that you might never enter into the kingdom of heaven if you received her in favour, or own her to be your child. Again, to this purpose or words, I perceive

you speak, and promised in your anger and passion. Now let me speak a few words between the mother and the daughter, and consider the trouble and torment of rash words and promises that are made out of anger and passion, they bring nothing but hell unto the mind, because they are groundless. Consider the rash oath and promise that Herod the King made, Mark iv and xxvi: but when he saw the woeful effects of that oath, he was exceedingly sorrowful; and for the sakes of them that were with him, he gave her John Baptist head. Now did not this wicked oath take away the life of the greatest prophet that was born of woman? And it brought hell-fire upon the conscience of Herod, and an extraordinary plague and punishment in this life, besides his eternal damnation; therefore, beware and take heed how you perform the rash vows and promises made in passion and anger; yet I confess vows and promises made unto the Lord, or to man, ought to be performed, else punishment will follow, but vows and promises made out of passion or anger ought to be broke. I confess it is an evil to make any vow at all out of passion and anger, but it is better to break that vow and covenant than to keep it, for it is better to err on the right hand than on the left; that is, if you break it you may find mercy and forgiveness, but if you perform it there is no hope of mercy nor forgiveness, no more than there was to Herod aforesaid. Also I would have you to consider, that your daughter's crime is not so heinous against you, her mother, as you take it to be, for she hath broken no law of God, nor law of the land, nor law of her parents; but what she hath done hath been against her own soul, it hath wounded her own spirit, and hath broken her own peace; she hath spoiled

the treasures of rest and satisfaction in her own soul, and she must bear her own sorrow, and none to help bear her burthen, but rather add unto it, by excluding her unworthy of pity and compassion, even of her own parents, through anger and passion, without a cause; for she hath committed no evil to her parents in this thing, because she was a free woman, and hath had two husbands before, and hath not been under her parents tutoring, but hath been free of herself, to give her person to whom she will, and her estate; nor no others can hinder her, it is all in her own power: likewise she hath done nothing against God nor his laws in this matter, because there was no command laid upon her, neither by God, nor by his prophet, to the contrary; and for the law of the land, that doth justify her in it altogether; so that all the evil she hath done in this matter it is to herself, and to nobody else, as I said before; only this is her evil and trouble, that she did not hearken to the voice of Heaven, or to his prophet's advice on earth; and here lieth her trouble; but now the thing is done, and advice rejected, and cannot be undone again. What then is to be done unto her? I say, even to forgive her, and to make her burthen as light as may be; so that I have considered and weighed the whole matter, and considered her condition, and have forgiven her neglect to answer my letter, and all things else that have impaired the peace of her mind as to life eternal; and she shall be settled as in peace of mind as to life eternal as ever, and that will make her life the more comfortable in the temporal; for I had compassion on her when I saw her troubled mind, because her faith was in me, and mine in her, so that she is forgiven of God, and forgiven of his true prophet also. I would you, her

father and mother, to forgive your only daughter, and to receive her into your favour again, and let her be as precious in your eyes as ever. Do as that good father did, as Christ speaks of in the parable, that had two sons; the one lost for a time, and when he was in want, he said in his heart, *I will return, and say unto my father I have sinned against heaven, and against thee, and am no more worthy to be called thy Son.* His father doth not dispute with his son, and ask him what hath thou done, in that thou wentest from me, or did any evil while he was gone; but he fell upon his neck and kissed him, and killed the fatted calf for him. This was always my practice to my own children, and I have had more experience in this kind than ever you had with your daughter; therefore let this thing be done by you her mother, and let not your rash unadvised promise or vow, you made out of passion and anger, hinder you; for I understand she hath sent messengers as advocates to plead with you for forgiveness, and that your daughter hath humbled herself by them, to crave your favour and forgiveness, but you would not hearken to them, nor have no compassion upon the affliction of the soul of your daughter; likewise, that she hath sent to you a letter of her own hand writing, to crave your pardon and forgiveness, and to accept her into your favour; yet all will not prevail with you, but seemeth as if you could not for your oath sake. You are here just in Herod's condition; and if you should put it in practice as he did, you will be something like him hereafter, though not altogether so bad as his, because your oath will not produce so bad effects as his did; but you will have hell enough in your mind here, besides what will follow hereafter; therefore I

would desire, and provoke you to hearken to my advice, and you shall do well, and be cleared of your oath. And though I be but a mortal man like yourselves, yet, being a chosen prophet of the Lord, it shall be as well with you, if you believe God, obey my voice, as if God himself had spoken to you; therefore I say unto you, break that oath and covenant that you made with hell and death, in the anger and passion of your mind, concerning this matter, and receive your daughter into favour again; and let her be taken into your affections again, even as one that was dead, and is alive again; and I will assure you your sin, in making such an oath as this shall be forgiven you of God, and forgiven by his prophet, and be forgiven in your own conscience, and you shall be clear from this oath, as if you had never spoken it; but if you will not hearken to my advice in this thing, but harden your heart against it, and say within yourself, that it is but mortal man's advice, and that you are loth to believe, except God himself, or some angel from heaven, did advise you; I tell you this, that neither God himself, nor angel from heaven, will never speak unto you, nor unto no man else upon the earth at this day, therefore do not expect any such thing; for if you will not believe me, you would not believe if one should come from heaven and speak unto you; therefore consider of it, and so do, if you do not hearken unto my words; however, your daughter shall have peace of mind, and you shall bear the trouble upon your own mind; but if you do hearken unto my words and advice, then both you and yours may be full; but in case you do not hearken unto my words, your daughter shall have peace of mind, and be cleared of her guilt, and cause of your rash



oath and promise, and you shall bear all the trouble upon your own mind ; for what hath parents to do with children that are free as themselves, but to forgive them their offences ; the law of God and the law of nature doth bind parents to have a care of their children, and to forgive them their offences, and not to cast them off and disown them in a passion ; but children are not bound to have a care of parents ; but if you do hearken unto my words and advice in this thing, and receive your daughter with the same love and affection as you did before this offence was given, you then shall be freed, and clear from any guilt of conscience, concerning your vow and promise in this matter, as if you had never made any at all ; and then may your daughter and you both joy both be full.

So resteth your friend in what I may,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*May 14, 1672.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Elizabeth Marsden, of Chesterfield, May 20, 1672.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Elizabeth Marsden,*

**I UNDERSTAND**, by Mrs. Carter, you are very sickly and weakly, and that you have had very bad health ever since you were married, and much dis-

content of mind ; and that you have a desire that I would pray for you, and that you might see my face once more before you go hence. I am very sorry to hear of your illness of body, and more especially that you should have discontent of mind ; for it is a common thing to young women, that are breeding, to be sickly and weakly, neither can it be avoided ; and discontent of mind doth add further to the weakness of nature ; and peace and quietness of mind doth strengthen nature. For thoughts of peace and patience send forth strength into the blood, and strengthens nature, and makes it strong to encounter with sickness and weakness of nature, that discontent and grief hath produced in the body. So that discontent and content of mind doth produce both their several effects ; so that the case is thus, as Christ said in another case, *To him that hath shall be given, and to him that hath not, shall be taken away, even that which he hath ; viz.* To him that hath peace and content of mind, to him shall be given more peace and content of mind ; because content and peace grows in him. And to him that hath not that, that hath no peace nor content of mind, but a little hope in him to attain to peace, even that little hope shall be taken from him, in that this discontent in the mind shall grow so strong, to swallow up all peace and content of mind into it, until it brings in death ; and in this sense he hath not peace ; even that little, or nothing, which he hath, shall be taken from him ; that is, discontent shall take peace from him. I speak this that you may beware of discontent, and let not that enter into you concerning worldly things ; for wordly sorrow causeth death ; and I suppose it is wordly things that caused this discontent in you, and there is no removing it out of you, but by putting

heavenly peace and content in the place. Let patience possess your soul : patience is a great virtue, and keeps the mind in peace ; and remember the days of old, wherein I blessed you unto everlasting life. Likewise I have considered your faith and love to the commission of the Spirit, in the day wherein you were but as a child for age ; and my faith and love hath continued in you ever since, and shall uphold you. Also I blessed you to eternity when you were young, and that blessing shall remain with you to eternity.

Therefore let not your faith fail you in it, but look upon it as the blessing of Almighty God himself ; for God hath given power to men to bless and curse to eternity. Therefore, let no doubt arise in your heart of your eternal happiness, and that will be a means to strengthen your nature, and to root out your discontent of mind, and settle your mind in patience and submission to the troubles of this world ; and then your illness and weakness of nature will be either better borne, or your nature will be more strengthened to bear the troubles of this life. And this will be as a prayer unto God for you ; for my commission is not to pray for temporal blessings : I never did pray for temporal blessings for myself ; but the spiritual blessing of peace with God, and assurance of eternal life, hath always helped and strengthened me in the natural ; and so it hath several others of this faith, and so it shall you ; therefore let faith and patience have its perfect work in you, and you will do well. And as for your desire to see my face once more before you go hence : to this I say, I could have been very glad to have seen your face this summer, and did intend to have seen the faces of all our friends in those parts this summer ; but here are new

troubles fallen out here in London since Christmas, of wars and rumours of wars at sea, and pressing of men, that it is like to be a very bad summer with most people for want of trade, both by sea and land ; so that I think not to go out of London this summer. Besides, my wife is to go into Kent, to see her relations, this summer ; and I am loth to leave the house with nobody in it. But, however, be you of good comfort ; it shall be well with you in the end, though you never see me more. Yet you may not be without hope of that ; for providence may order things so, that I may see your face, and the faces of others, to my joy hereafter, and yours ; for I am well at present, and I trust you may be preserved in health. So, with the blessing of the true God, the Lord Jesus Christ, the blessing of the true prophet rest upon you, and preserve you, both in this life, and in the life to come. I rest

Your friend in the true Faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*Postern, London, May 20, 1672.*

P.S. My wife remembers her love unto you.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, dated August 30, 1672, as followeth.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Dorothy Carter,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date August 19th, 1672. And these are to certify you, that I am very well in health at present, and so is my wife, and most friends also here in London. I was indeed at Cambridge at Whitsuntide, about a month, and after I came from thence, my wife went into Kent to see her relations; and she returned again two weeks since, so that now we have done with the country for this year. And as for your dream you spoke of, I perceive you give too much heed unto it, and do let your mind be too much exercised in the belief of it; I do confess in times past, that some dreams have been of great concernment, when it hath concerned the glory of God, as Joseph, in his dream, saw the sun, moon, and eleven stars bow down themselves unto him, that was his father and mother, and eleven brethren, should bow themselves unto him. Also that dream of Pharaoh King of Egypt, was of gret concernment for the glory of God; likewise the dream of Nebuchadnezzar King of Babylon was of great concernment for the glory of God, when interpreted by Daniel; likewise Joseph, when he was espoused to the Virgin Mary, he was forewarned by an angel in a dream, not to put away his wife. Other places might be named, so that in the days of old,

and in times past, some dreams have been of great concernment, and have been much minded; so that the interpreter of dreams hath been highly honoured of God, and honoured of kings, and of all men; not he that dreamed a dream, but he that could interpret dreams. Also let this be considered, that dreams have been always minded in such a time when there was no prophet upon the earth; as Joseph, when he dreamed a dream, it was before the law of Moses was given; and that dream of Pharaoh king of Egypt, interpreted by Joseph, it was before Moses, the first prophet that God chose: and that dream of the king of Babylon, which Daniel did interpret, it was when there was no prophet in Israel; for Daniel lived among the heathen, for it was the heathen that did generally mind, take notice, and follow dreams. Therefore, when they were frightful of dreams, they sought to their magicians and astrologers to interpret their dreams, and those were all the prophets the heathens had; and as for Joseph being forewarned in a dream by the angel, it was when there was no prophet nor apostle upon the earth. Therefore this is to be minded, that dreams ought not to take place in any man's heart, that is a believer in a commission, or in a true prophet: for those that followed the law of Moses, and hearkened to the prophets, never heeded dreams, nor minded them at all. So after Christ came, and the apostles commission was believed, they never minded dreams so as to trouble their thoughts about them: so likewise we that are under the commission of the Spirit, are not to mind them at all; for, if a dream does arise in a man's sleep, let him tell it as a dream, but let him give no credit nor heed unto it, for dreams will arise through the occasion of troubles and griefs,

and if they are not minded, they will pass away as if they had never been ; for this I can say, I have had many such like dreams as yours is, but gave no heed unto them, for I know your mind hath been exercised of late with many troubles and grief of heart, in the death of your daughter and son, and other troubles which hath overwhelmed your spirit ; and grief hath raised this dream out of your troubled soul. Therefore I say unto you, take no heed to your dream, but be of good comfort, that your days may be continued in this world, to do yet some more good before you go hence ; knowing that you shall receive a portion in that everlasting kingdom above the stars, which is not made with hands, but eternal in the heavens, because you have believed his prophet's report.

As for my advice about Sarah Hatter, it is, that you would keep her till her time is out, and if you will not keep her longer, you must turn her home to her father, and her father must provide some other place for her, for he is not able to give her diet for a year, not for a week, as I can perceive ; poor man, he cannot give himself diet, (not half enough) but goeth with many an hungry meal in a month, nay in a week, for ought I can perceive. Therefore, I would advise you to take no thought for her, what she shall do when you are gone ; leave that to providence, your conscience bears you witness, and so doth his conscience bear witness, that you have been more like a mother than a mistress while you lived ; and while you do live, let that satisfy as to that matter. I am glad to hear that Betty Marsden is pretty well, let her be of good comfort, and all will be well with her, both in this world, and in the world to come.

I do intend, if providence permit, to come to Not-

tingham, and perhaps to Chesterfield, the next spring ; and then I intend to see you I hope all well, to my joy and comfort. Before I close this letter, I will give you a little hint of that which hath happened here in London, amongst the believers of this commission of the spirit, (it is above a year since it first begun, it may be you have heard nothing of it. There hath been a great rebellion against me, for some hard words that I have spoken in discourse, some have gathered them up together, and laid them as a charge against me, whereby they drew a party from me to cleave unto them, so that some were for me, and for those assertions that they drew up against me, and some were against me, and against those assertions ; so that there was great strife amongst the believers, insomuch that I was forced to see who would be on my side ; who, and that whoever did, those, with those rebels, let them be rich or poor, I would cast them off. There were four conspirators in this rebellion, the rebellion was hatched when I was absent from home, when the King's messengers sought after me, when they took away the books : the names of the rebels were these, William Medgate, scrivener ; Mr. Whitehill, Thomas Burton the younger, and Walter Bohenau the Scotsman ; these four were the grand rebels, for which rebellion I damned two of them, and the other two I did excommunicate ; three of these were believers, and the other seemed to believe also ; but one of those that was excommunicated, namely Thomas Burton, repented of his rebellion, and asked forgiveness, so I received him into favour again ; so that all those that were drawn away in the rebellion are returned to me again, only those three, William Medgate, he stands excommunicated still, and is hardened in his rebel-



lion, so that I have little hope of his return. And for Mr. Whitehill the brewer, and Walter Bohenan, they two are cut off for ever: for Walter Bohenan hath acted the highest rebellion that ever was acted, since Korah, Dathan, and Abiram against Moses; for which cause I have given orders to all the believers in London and Cambridgeshire, and elsewhere, not to eat and drink with him, nor trade with him at all, as is more largely exprest the causes why, in the letter I wrote to him. Also I have answered those nine assertions which William Megdate hath drawn up against me, and the cause of his excommunication something large, which hath given great satisfaction to all the believers that have heard them, which hath established their minds more firm upon the commission of the Spirit than before.

I thought good to give you an account, and a hint, of what hath happened this year's time; this rebellion hath caused me much writing since, because many of the believers would have one of the writings to themselves, to peruse at their own pleasures:

This is all I have to say at present, only my dear love to yourself and Betty Marsden, with my wife's love presented to you both, and to all friends else there with you.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth;

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London, August 30, 1672.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to one William King a Quaker, who came from New England, dated from London, October 3, 1672.*

*William King,*

I AM informed, that you have been a Quaker in New England, and that you have been moved, (as you say,) of the Lord, and sent with a message from him into Old England; to reprove and forewarn those people called Quakers, and others, of some miscarriages and bad accounts you know against them, and pretend to declare against them. But I understand the Quakers people will not hearken unto your message, nor own that the Lord hath sent you, but look upon you as a deceived person; and that your message is forged, and out of your own imagination, and madness of your own brains; making a disturbance in the Quakers meetings: what, is Satan divided against Satan, how then can his kingdom stand? Were not you of that faith as they are, how is it then that you find fault with them? Is not your God and their God the same? Is not your Devil and their Devil the same? Is not the light of Christ within them their only God and Saviour, and is not yours the same? There is no difference between them and you in point of doctrine, why then should you fall out, and find fault one with another? Cannot you let them alone in point of practice? If your practice be better than theirs, the comfort will be yours: so that you need not to have taken the pains to have come so far from New England, to

Old England, to deliver such an ignorant foolish message, from the Lord and light within you.

Also I am informed, that you have raged, railed, and reviled against me and the doctrine declared by me : I have heard of your wicked and blasphemous speeches against me, and the doctrine declared by me, several times ; and I did patiently bear with you, but being informed lately of your exceeding great wrath and railing, and high blasphemy against that true doctrine declared by me. You said it was blasphemy to say that God died ; doth not the Scripture say that Christ died, and poured out his soul unto death, and dare you say, that Christ was not God and man ? The Church of England doth own that Christ was God and man, and that he died and rose again, and ascended up to heaven ; this is that Alpha and Omega, who was dead, and is alive, and behold he liveth for evermore, as in the Revelation : this is he that poured out his soul unto death, as he was God and Man, and by this blood of Christ is my conscience sprinkled and cleansed from all sin, and by faith in this blood, am I justified, sanctified, and shall be glorified. Also you rage and rail at me, for saying that God hath elected some men to salvation, and reprobated some to damnation, before they were born : this you say is horrid blasphemy, and call me fool and ideot, and simple, silly ignorant man.

To this I say, is not the Scripture full to prove, that God hath elected some from the foundation of the world to life and salvation, and some he hath reprobated and ordained of old, for eternal condemnation, even the seed of the serpent, of whom I know you are one, that was reprobated in your seed before you were born : for now the seed of the serpent doth

reply against God, and say, why hast thou made me thus; as you have done, charging God with unrighteousness; for this I say, God hath a prerogative power, and is above all law, and may do with his creatures as the potter doth with dead clay; make one vessel to honour, and another to dishonour, for his own glory. And what if God willingly make you a vessel of wrath fitted for destruction, (that is, eternal torments) as I know you are, how will you help it? And if God willingly hath made me a vessel of mercy, fitted for eternal happiness, as I know I am, being of the seed of Adam, how should I prevent it? For God doth every thing for his own glory, and God will be as much honoured in your eternal damnation, as in my eternal happiness and salvation; for if I had not known such serpents as you are damned, I should never have known my own salvation, nor the salvation of others. For this I know, that God's glory would be eclipsed, if the seed of the serpent, (such as you are) should not be damned; for if all should be saved, then the glory of salvation would be lost, because he that is saved is delivered from torment; and if all men were damned, then none could give glory unto God, nor praise him for his mercy. So that there is a necessity that the seed of the serpent (such as you are) should be damned, and that the seed of Adam should be saved, else God would have no glory by his redeemed ones, if not redeemed from hell and eternal torments.

These and many other things written by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, you have spoken against, which would be too tedious to rehearse; but you have shewed yourself plainly what seed you are of; and I having perfect knowledge what you are, and what you shall be hereafter, I shall proceed against you ac-

cording to your wickedness : for you have raged, railed, and reviled at me without a cause, in that you have called me fool, simple, ignorant man, thinking yourself wise ; you should have done as the apostle saith, suffer fools gladly, yet that foolishness of mine hath brought down the wisdom of many, and it shall bring down your wisdom, even to the lowest hell. Likewise you have railed against the true God declared by me, and have blasphemed against the true God that is in the form and person of a man : you have slighted such a God, you have denied that Christ was God become flesh, you have blasphemously said, that Christ's soul did not die, and the same that died did rise again, and ascend up into glory. Likewise, you have reproached the living God, denying his prerogative power to elect men to salvation that are the seed of Adam, and to reprobate some men, who are the seed of the serpent, to eternal damnation before they were born : you call the prerogative power of God unrighteousness, you say every man may be saved if he will. These, and several other wicked reproaches, and railing, and blasphemous speeches, have you uttered out of your mouth against me, and against God : for God hath chosen me to declare his mind, and not you ; and in as much as you have reviled, reproached, and blasphemed against me, and the true doctrine declared by me, you have reviled, reproached, and blasphemed against God. You have done by me even as Rabshakah did to Hezekiah king of Judah, as in Isaiah xxxviii. 4. He sent to reproach the living God, so Hezekiah spread his blasphemous letter before the Lord, and prayed unto him to hear all the words of Sennacherib, which he sent to reproach the living God ; as in the 17th verse, so 23d verse, *Whom hast thou re-*

*proached and blasphemed, and against whom hast thou exalted thy voice? even against the holy one of Israel.* 24th verse, *By thy servant hast thou reproached the Lord.* 29th verse, *I know thy rage against me.* So likewise hath your imaginary God without a body; sent you, William King, out of New England into Old England, to reproach the living God, the Lord Jesus Christ. And I have spread your blasphemous words before the Lord, and do believe he will hear all the words wherewith you have reproached the living God; for whom have you reproached and blasphemed, and against whom have you exalted your voice? even against the very true God Christ Jesus; who is in the form of a man: this is that God whom I serve, and by whose power I do act; by him the worlds were made, and without him was nothing made that was made. And this is the Lord you have reproached and blasphemed, for I know your rage is against him; if he were in my place, you would say to him as you do to me: and seeing God hath chosen me his last true prophet and witness of the Spirit, and hath set me in his place here on earth, to give judgment upon all proud blasphemous despising spirits, who blaspheme against the living God, as you have done in a high nature; therefore, in obedience to my commission from God, for the aforesaid raging and railing against me, and reproaches and blasphemies against God, I do pronounce William King cursed and damned, soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity. Deliver yourself from this curse if you can: that God which sent you hither cannot; nor the true God will not deliver you from that judgment and sentence I have passed upon you, and you shall know to your endless pain and shame, that God hath chosen mortal man,

like yourself, whom you have reviled ; and hath given him power to curse you to eternity, and none shall deliver you from it : for your soul shall die two deaths, the first death is natural, the second death is eternal ; and when God shall raise you again in the resurrection, which will not be a quarter of an hour to the dead, so that you shall pass through the first death into the second death, where the worm of conscience shall never die nor the fire of hell shall never go out, in utter darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of teeth for evermore. And you shall remember you were told so by the last true prophet, and witness of the Spirit.

*Written by me,*

•            **LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*October 3, 1672.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date from London, October 16, 1672.*

*Living and kind Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your kind token of love, the cheese ; and we give you many thanks for it. Also I have now sent you the answer of the assertions, and the true copy of these nine assertions that William Medgate wrote to me, with his own hand ; also I have sent you the letter

that I sent to Walter Bohenan, the Scotsman, in answer to his rebellious letters. I have placed Megdate's nine assertions in the beginning, and Walter Bohenan's letter at the latter end, desiring you, that if Walter should happen to come to see you, that you would not let him see the answer to the assertions, for the rebels are mad, because they cannot see them. I could not send them to you sooner, because several believers have desired them before I could write them. So having no more at present, being in haste, I shall take leave, only my love, and my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and to your wife, and all friends else in the faith there with you.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
Oct. 16th, 1672.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Sladehouse, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, January 19, 1673.*

*Loving Friend, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I SAW your letter to Mr. Delamaine, wherein you desire some of my advice; I do not know well the ground of this matter to give advice in, but so far as I understand by your letter, I shall give what ad-



vice I can. I perceive there is three particulars that causeth your landlord to take an occasion against you : *First*, Because you did not pay the tax he was to pay, and bear the loss yourself. As to this you did wisely, in that you did not keep to the letter of the law, that is, to the act of parliament, and have paid no tax for your landlord at all, but have strained his cattle for it ; likewise I perceive you have stopt some of your landlord's rent in lieu of the tax you have laid out for him, which cannot be justified by law ; but what tax you paid for your land that was for your landlord to pay, the law will bear you out ; but to stop rent for other disbursements you laid out for your landlord, will not stand good in law, therefore it is dangerous for collectors to pay taxes for other men, except it be as far as his own tax for his landlord ; but perhaps the court will take it into consideration, seeing the tax was for the king, and they will perceive the dishonesty of your landlord, for it will be a great disparagement to a person of honour to have such a wicked deceit discovered and made appear in open court, and perhaps the court may relieve you, seeing the tax was for the king.

*Secondly*. You speak as if your cattle had committed some trespass upon your lord's grounds ; as to that, I suppose may be referred to men that know what damage your landlord hath sustained, and what they judge you shall give to satisfy him for the trespass done, do you pay it, and let no money be spent in law in that business. I suppose these two things may be blown over with a little charge, and that the landlord and the priest knows well enough ; but that which they think to do most mischief in is about spiritual matters, for not going to church, and baptizing your child, and such like, and that will advan-

tage them nothing at all but to do you a mischief, neither can that disinherit you of your right in the temporal, nor prevent him from paying you that which he oweth you, therefore I shall inform you in some measure the strength of the spiritual court. First, they have power to proceed so far as to excommunication, and when they have done so, you may go to the proctor of the court, and take it off for money as Mrs. Carter did ; she stood excommunicate several years, and took it off at last for twenty shillings ; and Mr. Sudbury was the like when he was alive, and his was sued to a *Capienda* writ, yet he got it off for fifty shillings ; but the spiritual court itself doth commonly proceed no further than a bare excommunication, except some envious person will be at the charge to sue out a *Capienda* writ, and that they sue out here at London ; all *Capienda* writs are fetched out of the High Court of Chancery, the writ doth cost thirty shillings itself, besides other charges ; and when they have got it, they must have the hands of several bishops of two or three courts, and he that layeth out this money never hath one penny of it again if it be executed, so that except a man were made up of nothing but malice, he would never put himself to that trouble, charge, and vexation of spirit, to have nothing else for his pains and charge ; and when a *Capienda* writ is executed upon the person of a man, it cannot take away of his cattle nor goods, nor hinder a man of his right in any suit of law, except it be for paying of tithes and other church duties ; but for the things aforesaid, for not going to church, nor baptizing children, that writ doth not touch the estate of a man, nor take away his right in law, only this, if a man have this writ sued out upon him, if he overthrow the adversary, the judge and jury will give

him the debt and charges, for the court cannot give away a man's just cause and right because he is excommunicated, but this a *Capienda* writ will hinder the man, that he cannot have an execution upon his adversary's person nor goods until the excommunication be taken off. There was an example of this awhile ago, there was a widow-woman, a friend of ours in Kent, and there was a neighbour of her's that was at law with her about a field that joined to her's, and she was an excommunicated person a great while; the suit was brought to trial, her adversary put himself to the charge of a *Capienda* writ against her, thinking that she should not have had the benefit of the law by reason of that writ, but the judge and jury gave her the verdict against him both debt and charges, only she could not have an execution granted her upon his person nor goods until she had taken the excommunication off, which she did, and it cost her four pounds to take it off, and then her adversary paid what the court ordered, for a *Capienda* writ is only for the person of a man; and if it be served upon a man by officers, there is no bail to be taken, he must pay the debt, and the charges, promise to conform, or else go to prison; but no goods can be touched except a man be sued to an outlawry, which must be some extraordinary occasion.

Thus I have given you a hint of the effects of a *Capienda* writ. Now I shall write a few words to satisfy you, that my answer to William Penn's book is got safe out of the press, but with great charge and difficulty; the volume is pretty large, nineteen sheets and an half, and there is variety of matter in it that is new, never written before, very pleasant to read; the books are half a crown a-piece, I will not let one go under to friend nor stranger, therefore if

you please to make those frieiends acquainted with it that will go to the price of ft, let them send money, and I will send as many of them as the money doth amount to at half a crown a-piece. You wrote to me a great while ago for a book bound altogether for our friend Thomas Hall, I sent you an answer of that letter concerning that book, but I have heard no answer of it~ never since.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself and wife, and all friends else in the faith there with you.

I rest your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
January 9, 1673.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to William Penn, Quaker, bearing date from London, January 23, 1673.*

*William Penn, Quaker, that blaspheming reprobate Devil,*

I THOUGHT good to send thee an answer of thy wicked anti-christian pamphlet, where thee mayest be convinced, though not converted, but the more hardened in thy blasphemy against the true God in the form of a man; and that sentence and judgment that I passed upon you, in the discourse between us, may be more surely established upon

your heart, even so strongly, that your God, that is an infinite formless spirit without a body, cannot revoke it, nor take it off you to eternity; and you shall find these heavenly secrets, which you call foolish dreams and impostures, to be too strong for your anti-christian spirit of reason the devil in you, which you call God; neither can I wish for your soul's sake, that you may think in time, and have a deep repentance, and come to find forgiveness with the true God, because I know he did reprobate you in the seed of the serpent; and that you are predestinated in the seed to blaspheme against the true God, as made man in his own image and likeness, that you might justly be damned to eternity; so that, if it were possible that you should be convinced now, I have given sentence upon you for your blasphemy, I then must of necessity be damned if you believe; but I know in whom I have believed, in that God that hath given me power to give sentence upon such anti-christian devils, that deny the body and person of God; and I am justified of God, and justified in my own conscience; neither will it stand with God's glory to save us both; and if those revelations of Reeve and Muggleton's hath declared be filthy, devilish, and sottish imaginations, as you call them, then certainly our end will be endless pain indeed; but if we be true, as I know we are, then you have given just sentence upon yourself, that your end will be endless pain from the never-dying worm in your conscience in the resurrection, when eternity doth begin to rise, and time doth end.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, Jan. 23, 1673.*

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. George Gamble, in Ireland, Feb. 14, 1673.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, George Gamble,*

I SAW your letter bearing date the 30th of January, 1673, wherein I perceive the seed of faith is much risen in you, since the time I saw you; in that you do believe in a personal God, and in his messengers whom he hath sent, to declare the true God in this last age, what he is in his form and nature: and that you do believe this God will raise the dead at the last day, the true believer to everlasting glory, and the unbeliever to endless misery. For without this faith, it is impossible for any man or woman upon earth to have true peace in the soul, as to life eternal; because this is that peace which the world cannot give, because it riseth from the seed of faith in man, which is the seed of God in man; but the peace of this world, it ariseth from the seed of reason in man, which is the seed of the serpent, the lost angel in man. Therefore the peace which this world gives is full of doubtings, and accompanied with fears that a worse thing will follow after death; but the act of faith hath no doubt in it, but doth say to this mountain of fears, that presents itself to the mind, *Be removed, and cast into the bottom of the sea.* The seed of faith in man, that is less than a grain of mustard seed, doth this and more: Out of this doth the day-star arise, that enlighteneth every man that believeth, so that he cannot walk in darkness as the

seed of reason doth ; but seeth the strait and narrow way, that leadeth to life eternal : but the seed of reason walking in darkness, his way is large and broad, that leadeth to destruction. This seed of faith in man, is that single eye in man, *Therefore, if a man's eye be single, his whole body is full of light.* Neither doth this single eye of faith offend a man, but most men in the world, having the eye of faith and the eye of reason in them, (that is, the seed of reason and the seed of faith disputing in man's soul,) which doth offend man's mind, which Christ calls the right and left eyes, or two eyes. And because the seed of reason is the elder brother, (being the serpent's seed) it is called the right eye ; therefore, Christ saith, *Matth. 5, 29. And if thy right eye offend thee, pluck it out, and cast it from thee ; for it is profitable for thee, that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell.* The meaning is, that if the right eye of reason in man do offend him, by reasonings and disputings in a man's soul, against God and his prerogative power, offend a man, as I have had great experience of, when I was a Puritan ; so that my right eye of reason did offend me so much, that I was forced to pull it out and cast it from me ; and submit to the prerogative power of God to do what he would with me ; else I saw that both my eye of reason and my eye of faith, also body and soul, must have perished in the resurrection, in hell-fire, to eternity. For Christ did not mean that a man should pull out his bodily eye, that doth offend him with a cold rheum and other distempers, and cast from him ; neither would the pulling out of both his bodily eyes save him from being cast into hell in the resurrection, if such a thing should be done by any man ; neither can a man pull out his own eye that

offends him, it must be another man must do it. But this right eye Christ spake of, that offends a man's mind, he must pull it out himself, and cast it from him, and he shall see the way to heaven better with one eye, than he did before with two eyes. So that it is better for a man to go to heaven, with one single eye of faith in the true God, than to go to hell, with two eyes of reason and unbelief, and faith with doubting. Therefore the right eye of reason in the things of heaven, must be pulled out in man, and cast from him, as Christ said to those Jews, *Why reason you in yourselves, saying, We have Abraham for our father; for God is able, of these stony-hearted Gentiles, to raise children unto Abraham.* Because they should believe the truth declared by his apostles, they should pull out the right eye of reason, and should see by the single eye of faith; in that they should believe the apostles doctrine, the strait and narrow way to heaven, better with one eye than they could with two eyes. Therefore the right eye of reason in the things of God, that doth offend a man's mind, ought to be pulled out, and cast from him; else he will be in danger of being cast into hell-fire, in the resurrection, which will not appear to the dead soul a quarter of an hour, from its death to its rising again.

I only give you a hint of this, because I see you have faith in the resurrection, that you might be more strongly confirmed in it, and established in the spiritual meaning of the Scriptures, which were spoken by holy men of God, the prophets and apostles, and by Christ himself; and interpreted in this last age, by us, the witnesses of the Spirit.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered to yourself, and your good wife, being of the seed of faith as you say, which I am very



apt to believe, and not without some ground though I never saw her. My love to Doctor Moss, and Colonel Phayer, George Rodgers, and the rest in the true faith of God's elect, in that one personal God, Christ Jesus, that was manifest in the flesh, that is, God become flesh, and dwelt amongst men here on earth.

So I rest your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
Feb. 14, 1673.*

Friend George Gamble, I received the four pounds of Mr. Delamaine, and have sent you twenty-nine of those books in answer to William Penn; they come to 3*l.* 12*s.* 6*d.* And I have sent you five of John Saddington's books, which come to 5*s.* And as for the box and line, and carriage to Bristol, Mr. Delamaine will give you an account, for I have left that to him; likewise, I am sorry that the Divine Looking-Glass and Mortality of the Soul was taken away, for I could have helped you to some of the other single, but cannot help you to one of them single; and especially the Divine Looking-Glass, because that is of great consequence, and will never be printed more while I live. But for the Mortality of the Soul, this answer to William Penn doth treat upon that point, sufficient to satisfy any man that hath faith, that his soul doth die. Only that book is desired the more, because it was of John Reeve's writing; but seeing it cannot be had, people must be content with what they have. Therefore I would wish you and all others to make much of them you have; for when

those few I have be gone, you will not get one of the whole volumes for love nor money. I have had experience of that already, by that book which I sold for sixpence ; I could have had five shillings of several, and some friends had it, and could have spared it, yet would not part with it. I have gotten now a book-binder, that doth bind the whole volume together, so that all the Divine Looking-Glasses are bound to the set, so that if any will have that, they must have all or none.

So resteth your friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
February 14, 1673.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date from London, February 16, 1673.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter you sent to our friend Delamaine, dated from Waydley, January 3, 1673, wherein I perceive your great enemy hath brought himself under the law, which is the same measure that he would have meted unto you if he could, but his unrighteous intents unto you is come upon his own head ; likewise you desire that I would send you three books to the answer of William Penn ;

also I went to Mr. Shelley, and shewed him your letter; and he looked in his book, and said it was not so much as three shillings and eleven pence; but rather than I should send but three books to you, he gave me half a crown, that I might send four books; and so I have sent you four of those books by Ashbourne carrier; so there remains seven shillings and six-pence due to me.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and to your wife, and all friends in the true faith there with you.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
Feb. 16, 1673.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Alexander Delamaine, senior, May 16, 1673.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Mr. Delamaine,*

I HAVE thought it convenient, seeing that I am in trouble about these books, lest they should be taken away by the enemy, who would destroy them and me also if they should catch me; therefore I do intend to write to all the believers of this commission, that are able and willing, to buy one of these books

bound altogether ; the price is eleven shillings, and some friends will have two of them to help me away with them, for I do intend to sell no more of the three great volumes not single ; that is to say, The Divine Looking-Glass, The Eleventh of the Revelation, and The Whole Revelation, but what are bound altogether ; so that the believers may do me a great pleasure to take some of them off my hand, and do themselves no great harm ; for the time may come, ere long, that they may have more for them than they give me ; but, however, as the old proverb is, they will eat no bread, it will be only so much money lie dead : so that if you be free to take one, and send eleven shillings by my wife, and she shall bring one to you.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, May 16, 1673.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to John Harriot, bearing date from London, July 16, 1673.*

*John Harriot,*

YOU may remember that I did send to my cousin Elizabeth White, two books, the one was concerning The Mortality of the Soul, and the other

was The Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelations; it was many years ago, I suppose nine or ten years ago, since I sent them to my cousin White, but I could never hear that they were received by her, or no other; but now of late I am informed, that you her son-in-law, that married her daughter, did receive them, and not only so, but you have burned them. I do remember that you, and Samuel Butler the tanner, had some discourse with me and Mr. Hudson at that time; you did then a little shew yourself what seed you were of at that time, even the seed of the serpent; yet for cruelty's sake, because you married my cousin's daughter, I did take little notice of your words at that time; likewise you were desirous that I should send your mother-in-law those books, because she could not read, that you might read them to her; but it seems that you were so offended at them, that you burned them: you should have burned that which was your own, you never paid a penny for them, neither were they sent to you, but to my cousin, and if you had not liked them, you should have given them to others, or have sent them to me again, then should you have escaped that unpardonable sin against the Holy Ghost, which God will not forgive in this world, nor in the world to come: for you have done despite unto the Spirit of Grace, in that you burned those writings that were penned by the Revelation of the Holy Spirit of God in us. I know you would have burned me as you did them, if you could with as much ease as you did them; also I know you would have done as much by Christ himself, if he were upon the earth, as you do by me; and in burning those books, you have committed high blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, a sin that will never be forgiven, neither in this world, nor

in the world to come ; and it would have been good for you if you had never been born : but you have shewed yourself of the reprobate seed of the serpent, appointed for eternal damnation ; therefore, in obedience to my commission received from God, for this your wicked, envious, malicious burning those books without any cause, I do pronounce you cursed and damned, in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to all eternity. And you shall remember in your death, and in the Resurrection, that you were told so by one of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit ; neither will God deliver you from this curse which I have pronounced upon you, but it shall be as sure upon you, as if God himself had spoken it ; for God always gave his Prophets and Apostles power to bless and curse to eternity, that is, to forgive sins, and retain sins ; and this sin and blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, in burning those books, that you have committed, is that unpardonable sin, which Christ saith will never be forgiven in this world, nor in the world to come : besides, sins of this nature doth seldom escape a double curse, even crosses and poverty in this life, besides your damnation hereafter. Your sin hath lain hid a long time, but now is brought to sight. Furthermore, I understand, that Samuel Butler, and Mr. Smith the minister, were confederates with you in advising and counselling you to burn them ; for I perceive you three are all of the Presbytery religion, and you three are in union, and do rule the whole town in matters of religion, if not in temporal affairs, because you three can prattle upon the letter of the Scriptures than any others in the town, yet more blind and ignorant in the knowledge of the true God, and all heavenly and spiritual knowledge, than the

ignorant men of the town that is in his right senses ; but because you think, and say within yourselves, you see, therefore your sin of blasphemy and blindness of mind doth and shall remain upon you ; and as to Samuel Butler, I shall say this, that if he were confederates with you to burn them, or any other way, or had any hand in it whatsoever, I do pronounce Samuel Butler cursed and damned, soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity ; but if he be innocent, and not guilty in no kind whatsoever, then this curse shall take no place in him, nor be of no effect ; but if guilty, then it shall remain upon him to eternity, as aforesaid. Likewise if Mr. Smith, your minister, hath been confederates with you in burning those books, in giving his advice or counsel, or persuading you, or had any hand whatsoever in your burning those books, then I do pronounce Mr. Smith, your minister, cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity ; but if he be innocent and guiltless of this crime, then this curse shall be of no effect upon him ; but if he be guilty of the burning of those books in any kind whatsoever, then shall this curse remain upon him to eternity. Furthermore, if any other persons, either men or women, that had any hand, or gave their consent willingly to the burning of those books, whoever they be, they are cursed and damned, both in soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*July 16, 1673.*

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Cork, in Ireland, being the sentence of damnation upon twenty-six Quakers there.*

*Cork, in Ireland, the 11th of July, 1673.*

AT the quarterly meetings of Quakers, they have drawn up a declaration, or testimony, in the behalf of all the Quakers, against John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton; whereunto six and twenty Quakers have set their hands, as a testimony against Reeve and Muggleton.

*The true Copy of this Testimony, as it came to my hands, is as followeth, viz.*

The God of eternal glory, who, by the arm of his living power, hath in these latter days of the world, gathered a remnant to himself, and brought them into fellowship and acquaintance with him; in whom he hath poured out of his Holy Spirit, according to his promise, as the prophets and the holy men of God in ages and generations past, whereby they are enabled, with an infallible discerning, (as in his holy covenant and council they abide) to try the spirits that come into the world, whether they be of God or not.

And whereas there is a spirit, that hath come forth into the world, and lain lurking in secret places for a season, and now begins to enlarge itself, by the erroneous doctrines of John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, setting forth themselves to be the two



last witnesses of the Commission of the Spirit; the former of which is dead, and the latter, named Lodowicke Muggleton, surviving, hath presumptuously arrogated to himself the power of blessing and cursing, and that, irrevocable to all eternity. Also that he, the said Lodowicke Muggleton, is the only interpreter of Scripture in the world, and the only and alone judge what shall become of men and women after death; neither shall they whom he damns, see any other God or judge but himself. And that he knows more of spiritual things, than ever prophet or apostle did since the beginning of the world; and some of whose principles, exactly taken out of some of their own books, hereafter follow: viz.

John Reeve sets forth in his book, called Transcendent Spiritual Treatise, that, Feb. 3, 4, 5, 1651, God, whom he saith is above the stars, spake to him by voice of words, saying, I have given thee understanding of my mind in the Scriptures above all the men in the world; and also said, I have given thee Lodowicke Muggleton to be thy mouth. And page the 5th, the said Reeve, page 32. Elias was exalted upon the throne of glory for a moment, to represent the person of God the Father, and he was made the protector of my God, when God became a child. And it was Elias that filled the Lord Jesus with those great revelations of his former glory, that he possessed in the heavens, when he was the eternal Father. And it was Elias that spake those words from heaven, saying, *This is my beloved Son*. And the said Reeve affirms, that if a man had no sin in their bodies, they might live and die, and naturally rise again by their own power, and in their own time, as the Lord of life did.

Page 33, John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, in their book called, *A Divine Looking-Glass*, on that Scripture, saying, *The Lord said unto my Lord, sit thou on my right hand*; and that is to say, then the everlasting Father spake to himself. Page 46, Lodowicke Muggleton, in his book called, *The Neck of the Quakers broken*, saith, you can never know Christ, nor the Father, nor the Holy Ghost, by the words of Scripture, nor the light of Christ within you, without an interpreter, there being none in the world at this day but myself, as in page 25. Page 45, saith, I am sure I do know more in spiritual things than ever prophet or apostle did since the beginning of the world. And, page 47, he saith, I am the only and alone judge what shall become of men and women after death; neither shall those that are damned by me see any other God or judge but me. Page 15, he saith, and what person soever we determine judgment upon, it is so, and there is no revoking of it. Page 53, he saith, though Christ be the truth and the life, yet I am the only declarer what this truth and life is: and though Christ be the door, yet I have the key given me to open the door to life eternal.

And forasmuch as a false rumour hath been spread abroad, that we, or some of us, whose names are hereunto subscribed, have received the doctrines and principles of the aforesaid Reeve and Muggleton; whereby some honest-hearted may seem to stumble and startle: we therefore, the people of the Lord, called Quakers, at a general meeting in Cork, for the province of Munster, have very seriously, in the council of God, weighed and considered the principles and doctrines of the aforesaid Reeve and Muggleton, and the Spirit from whence they flow, and do, in the name and authority of the Holy

Spirit of Truth, deny that spirit, as the spirit of error, and give our testimony against the same, warning and admonishing all people in the fear and dread of the Lord God of Heaven and Earth, to turn from it, and avoid it. The 19th day of the fourth month, 1673.

Let this be read in the publick meeting in the City of Cork, and the same to be recorded in a book to stand as a testimony against this blaspheming spirit, for ages and generations to come.

*The Names of those that subscribed to this Paper, are as followeth, viz.*

WILLIAM MORRIS,	WILLIAM EUD,
WILLIAM EDMONDSON,	PHILLIP DYMOND,
ROBERT SANDHAM,	CHR. PENNRICKE,
WILLIAM EDWARDS,	DAN. SAVERY,
JOHN FENNELL,	WAR. PHILLIPS,
THOMAS WIGHT,	THOMAS WHEDDEN,
JOHN FOSSAGE,	JASPER TREYOS,
FRANCIS ROGERS,	WILLIAM HAWKINS,
JOHN BURNEGATE,	JOHN HAMMOND,
GEORGE PATTESON,	GEORGE NEGNOE,
JOHN GETTAS,	TIMOTHY THOHOYMOUTH,
JAMES DOWLYN,	RICHARD BERRY,
THOMAS ALLEY,	ARTHUR JOHNSON.

*The Answer of Lodowicke Muggleton, to this Paper as followeth.*

I SHALL separate the Quakers words in their paper from those words of Reeve and Muggleton, which they have picked out of our books, being all in print already, it will be needless to repeat them over again.

Therefore I shall only give answer to those words of the Quakers, which these twenty-six persons above-written, have subscribed their names in the behalf of all the rest at their general meeting at Cork.

The words of concernment in their paper I have divided into six heads, which are all their own words; but as for the rest of their paper, being Reeve's and Muggleton's words, as they have picked out of their books already, and will remain upon record to the world's end, and to eternity, both upon the souls and bodies of them which truly believe in this commission of the Spirit, who are blessed, and upon the souls and bodies of all those that have actually despised and blasphemed against the doctrine and commission of the Spirit, declared by Reeve and Muggleton, who are cursed by them.

Therefore I shall direct my words only to the twenty-six persons above written, that have subscribed their names to this paper, and not to the whole assembly that professeth to be Quakers, though you say you subscribe your names in the behalf of all the Quakers. But I shall deal more justly in my judgment than you Quakers do in your judgment; for Penn, and other Quakers have not only given judgment against me, but upon all those that believe me. But I shall do by you as I have always done, set my face against none but those that are found in actual transgression of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost; for whoever despiseth us, the Witnesses of the Spirit, despiseth God that sent us. And if you had lived in the days when Christ was upon earth, you would have said as much to him as you do to me.

1. *First.* The Quakers say, the God of eternal glory, who, by the arm of his living power, hath, in

this latter age of the world, gathered a remnant to himself, and brought them into fellowship and acquaintance with him; in whom he hath poured out of his Holy Spirit, according to his promise, as the prophets and the holy men of God in ages and generations past, whereby they are enabled, with an infallible discerning, (as in his holy covenant and counsel they abide) to try the spirits that come forth into the World, whether they are of God or not.

Muggleton's reply. That the God of eternal glory is not the Quaker's God? Why? Because he hath a spiritual body, form and shape, like man, therefore said to make man in his own image and likeness; therefore it is that angels, and all other creatures in heaven, do give glory, praise, and honour to the person of God their creator. For this I say, there is no honour, praise, and glory can be received by the creator, except he hath a body distinct of his own; neither can any creature, that hath life in the body, ascribe honour and glory, but to a personal God, that hath a body of his own. But the bewitched Quakers, through their ignorance and blindness of mind; do praise and magnify an infinite spirit without a body, that cannot be seen, nor comprehended by angels, nor man, nor no other creature. So that the Quakers are the absolute one alone people, that are led and guided by the spirit of Anti-Christ in this last age, who deny both Father and Son to have a body; for they have imagined the Spirit of God and the Spirit of Christ to be all one Spirit, as is most true; they are but one Spirit: but they have imagined likewise, that this one spirit hath never a body of its own; therefore the Quakers people are absolutely of the Anti-Christian spirit, that denieth the Godhead Spirit to have a body of its own. For this

I say, a spirit hath no existence no where without a body, but is a meer nothing at all. And this imaginary God, a Spirit without a body, is the Quakers God of eternal glory, which they worship, even a nothing at all, but a God of their own imagination: so that their fellowship and acquaintance is only with such a God as they have imagined; a spirit without a body is the Quakers God of eternal glory; and this God, an infinite nothing, hath poured out of his unholy spirit of imagination of reason upon the people called Quakers, such a spirit, which hath enabled them to defy the living God, that hath a body of his own in heaven, above the stars. And this imaginary God, a spirit without a body, hath given the Quakers discerning and counsel to fight against the true God, that hath a body, and to blaspheme against him and those he sends: so that the spirit of reason, the devil, in the Quakers, think they can try the spirits, whether they be of God, or not, yet stone-blind, and know not the true God.

2. The Quakers say, and there is a spirit that hath come forth into, and lain lurking in secret places for a season, and now begins to enlarge itself, by the erroneous doctrines of John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, as they call them.

*Answer.* That this spirit, that hath come forth, which you say hath lain lurking in secret places for a season, it was the Spirit of Christ, the only wise God, that hath a body now in heaven, which you Quakers so despise, that did authorise John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, to declare against that Anti-Christian spirit that reigneth in the world in all professions of religion; in that every man, by nature, is ignorant of the form and nature of the true God, and that God made man in his own image, in respect of

his bodily shape and likeness, as well as his soul. But all men, by nature, being blind in spiritual things, as we ourselves were, have imagined and framed to themselves a God that is not, only a spirit without a body. And this dark apprehension of God hath taken such deep root in all mens hearts by nature, it being an established doctrine in the world above these thousand years, even from one generation to another. And the cause why this utter darkness hath remained upon all men, as well upon the elect as upon the reprobate, is, because God hath not sent one man, by commission, to declare the true God this many hundred years, until now, in this last age of the world, he hath sent Reeve and Muggleton. And that hath been the cause the whole world hath been over-spread with this conceit, that God is an infinite, formless Spirit, that hath no body, form, or likeness of his own. But Reeve and Muggleton were sent forth by the authority of this God, that hath a body of his own, to try the spirits of all professors of the Scriptures in the world; which we have tried, and we do perfectly know the height and depth of every man's faith in the world in spiritual things concerning his God. And by this spiritual knowledge of God, his form and nature, we know the forms and natures of all things else, in heaven above, and in the earth beneath; and in the trial of all mens religion, we have tried by what spirit the Quakers are come forth in, and we find, by the knowledge of the Scriptures, and by the faith of the prophets and apostles, that the Quakers people are carried forth, by the spirit of Anti-Christ, with an imaginary God, a spirit without a body. And that there are no professors of religion in the world so absolute Anti-Christ as the Quakers people are. To

be plain, the Spirit, which they call God, or Christ, or the light of Christ within them, is nothing else but the imaginations of reason, the devil in them, they finding the law written in their hearts, their thoughts accusing and excusing, they do imagine this law to be God; and this law hath never a body distinct from man. Therefore the dark imagination in the Quakers hearts doth think, that this law, written in every man's heart, must needs be God. This is the Quakers God, that hath never a body of his own, but man's body to dwell in: but this God of yours within you will prove your only devil to torment you to eternity.

And whereas you say, this spirit, meaning Reeve and Muggleton, hath been lurking in secret places for a season.

To this I say, it hath been almost as openly declared as the Quakers spirit hath, and almost as long it hath appeared in this last age of the world, for matter of time, as the Quakers Anti-Christian spirit hath appeared. It is almost twenty-two years since this commission of the Spirit hath appeared; and the spirit of Anti-Christ in the Quakers hath appeared but few years more. And when Reeve and Muggleton did appear at the first, this declaration and doctrine was far more publick than the appearance of the Quakers; why? Because we wrote our faith, doctrine, and commission, and printed it to the world, whereby the people took more publick notice of us than of the Quakers; for at that time, there were but few Quakers of note; neither did they print any thing of their faith and doctrine, what they would have the people to believe; and I suppose, that, if the first book the Quakers wrote to vindicate the principles of the Quakers doctrine could be produced;



it would not bear so long a time as Reeve's and Muggleton's Commission-Book doth. But however, the Quakers at that time had witchcraft-fits, which did rather fright the beholders of them than inform their judgments. But since that, Muggleton hath cast out that devil out of many of them, by the sentence of damnation upon the chief of them: so that it hath eased the whole body of the Quakers of those witchcraft-fits, that were formerly very rise in the Quakers people; so that now there is hardly a witchcraft-fit can be procured amongst them. So that this spirit, that Reeve and Muggleton were guided by, hath not lain lurking in secret places. For I do believe, that we have written and printed, if it were possible to gather them all together, in publick, more than most of the Quakers in England have written; however, our books trouble the world more than any Quakers books do whatsoever. Likewise we were publick enough twenty years ago with you Quakers, when we gave sentence of damnation upon four of your chief leaders, if not the first broachers of the Quakers Anti-Christian doctrine; viz. George Fox, the elder and younger, both, Francis Howgell, and Edward Burroughes; these four, as I remember, were the first Quakers that were damned for denying that God hath a body of his own, distinct from man, and all other creatures. So that you Quakers have the least cause of any people whatsoever to say, that this spirit hath lain lurking in secret places; for this spirit hath had more power over those people called Quakers, than any other people whatsoever. So that you Quakers, of all people in the world, have the least cause to say, this spirit hath lain lurking in secret places. Indeed, we have not followed the practice of you Quakers, to compass sea and land to

gain proselites, as many of you have, and you have made them twofold the children of the devil than they were before, in that they are more hardened, and more incapable to understand the mystery of the true God becoming flesh, and the devil becoming flesh.

And whereas you say, now it begins to enlarge itself by the erroneous doctrines of John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, as you call them.

To this I say, the Anti-Christian spirit in the Quakers hath enlarged itself very much within these fifteen years, which hath been the cause that the Spirit of the true Christ in us hath enlarged itself, in opposition to the Spirit of Anti-Christ in the Quaker, and more especially since John Reeve's death; for in his time, there were but few Quakers in comparison to what are now, and little notice taken of them in his time; but since they have increased and multiplied exceedingly: but since Muggleton began to oppose them, by writing against their bodiless God within them, it hath put a great stop to them; and not only so, but this doctrine of Reeve and Muggleton hath delivered many innocent souls out of the snares of the Quakers, which leadeth men to eternal perdition, which denieth the body of the Lord of life to be without them. Besides, the spirit did not lurk in any secret place, when I wrote to Edward Bourne, Samuel Hooton, William Smith, Thomas Taylor, and several others, which is near twelve years ago, wherein they were damned to eternity for despising that doctrine you call erroneous; and ever since that letter to Samuel Hooton and William Smith, I have not been suffered to lurk in secret places. For you Quakers have caused me to be the publickest man in the world; witness that

Richard Farnsworth, Thomas Taylor, George Fox, Isaac Pennington, as may be seen in *The Neck of the Quakers Broken*, and in *Fox's Looking-Glass*, and the *Answer to Pennington*; besides letters to other Quakers, more than I can remember; besides the Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelations, and the whole Revelations, and *The Interpretation of the Witch of Endor*.

These things do manifest, that I have not lain still in secret, but do manifest me to be the most publick man in the world in spiritual things; because I am not only hated of you Quakers, but am hated of all the speakers and ministers of all the seven Churches of Europe, besides thousands of their hearers; so that it is an impossible thing, that I should have lain in any secret place. And this hatred have we procured of all people in the world, for no other cause at all, but for declaring this doctrine, which you call erroneous, and the authority of our commission, given by voice of words from the Lord Jesus Christ, the only wise God, who hath a glorious body, in the form like a man of his own; as we have written in *The Transcendent Spiritual Treatise*, when God gave this commission, in the year 1651.

3. These Quakers say, forasmuch as a false rumour hath been spread, that we, or some of us, whose names are here under subscribed, have received the doctrine and principles of the aforesaid Reeve and Muggleton, whereby some honest hearted may seem to stumble and startle.

*Answer.* If such a rumour hath been spread, and it was false, the more will be your misery. And you that have subscribed your names as a testimony that you have not received the doctrines of Reeve and Muggleton, but have utterly denied it, in sub-

scribing your names as a testimony against it : I say, it would have been good, if none of you had been born ; for in denying those doctrines, you have denied us ; and in denying us, you have denied the true God that sent us ; which hath given me just occasion to give sentence of judgment upon all you that have subscribed your names.

And whereas, you think by this means that you have removed the stumbling stone out of your way, that the honest-hearted might not stumble and startle, and that you might establish your Anti-Christian principle the more sure ; but you will be prevented ; for God hath laid this doctrine and commission, which you deny, as a stumbling stone in Sion. So that many of you Quakers, and others, shall stumble at this stone, and fall, and never rise again ; but there are some of those people that shall be preserved from stumbling at this doctrine of the Witnesses of the Spirit. For whoever is left to fall upon this stone, as you have done, shall be broken into pieces as to the peace of their minds here in this life ; and on whomsoever this stone, or sentence of damnation, shall fall upon, it shall grind to powder in those eternal torments, which the wicked despisers and fighters against a personal God and his messengers, whom he hath sent, in utter darkness ; so that there shall not one motion of peace arise in them to eternity. And farther, I say, I never did, nor never shall persuade any man or woman to believe this doctrine, or commission ; for I have done my duty to God, in that I have declared the whole council of God beyond all that have gone before me, or that shall come after me, and whoever doth understand and believe, it will be for their eternal good ; and if there should none believe this

doctrine, yet should not I question the truth of it ; for I have peace in myself, in that I have declared the mind of the Lord freely, as it hath been revealed unto me ; neither did I ever encourage or persuade any person to believe. I set life and death before them, as Moses did, to chuse or refuse ; if they did truly believe the doctrine of the true God, and the commission of the Spirit, they should live, and have eternal life abiding in them ; this many can witness : but if they did refuse, deny, despise and blaspheme, as you have done, against the commission of the Spirit, then they chose eternal death rather than eternal life ; this many hundreds can witness in their consciences if they would. For it was never my custom or practice this twenty years, to persuade any man against his conscience, nor to believe me, after they have had several discourses with me. I gave them liberty to go to any opinion whatsoever, and if they could find any man speak like this man, or give them better satisfaction to their questions than I have, let them go, and come no more at me. It was never my custom nor practice to compel people to enter into the kingdom of heaven, whether they would or no, as you Quakers do. I was always inclined to let the kingdom of heaven to suffer violence, that the violent desires of men and women, after salvation, might take the kingdom of heaven by force, and not be compelled to enter in. For you Quakers keep a great bustle to keep your disciples to you, for fear of losing them ; I never did endeavour to get your disciples from you, yet there are many of them that are come to the life of this doctrine of Reeve and Muggleton, which you call erroneous. And if they could not have found rest in this doctrine and commission, they had liberty to

return to you again. And can you Quakers tell the reason why so many of your disciples, that were absolute of you, should come to me, and never return to you again; and it is a more admirable thing, that there should not be one of Muggleton's disciples, or true believers of him, to fall from him to the Quakers, not this fifteen years; I know not one; neither do they stumble or startle any more, if they truly believe Reeve and Muggleton's doctrine.

4. Say they, we therefore, the people of the Lord, called Quakers, at a general meeting at Cork, for the province of Munster, have very seriously, and in the council of God, weighed and considered the principles and doctrines of the aforesaid Reeve and Muggleton, and the spirit from whence they flow.

*Answer.* That these people, called Quakers, at a general meeting at Cork, were not the people of the true God, but the children of that serpent devil that beguiled Eve. And your serious council in God, as you say, it was in the council of your imaginations of reason, the devil within you, which is the Quakers God they take council in, and in your imaginations of your hearts, which is your God, you have weighed and considered the principles and doctrine of Reeve and Muggleton, as you say, and the spirit from whence they flow.

5. They say, and do, in the name and authority of the holy spirit of truth, deny that Spirit as the spirit of error, and give our testimony against the same; warning and admonishing all people, in the fear and dread of the Lord God of heaven and earth, both to turn from it, and avoid it.

*Answer.* Here the Quakers do prate of the name and authority of the holy spirit of truth, yet know not the body of that God, from whence the holy

Spirit of truth proceeded; for this I say, that a spirit without a body can give no council at all; neither can any council proceed but from a spirit that hath a body of his own. If men's spirits had not bodies, how could they give council to one another? Neither can that God, that hath never a body, be the true God, or give any council at all. Yet the Quakers people doth take council of a spirit that hath no body, which they call God; which God is nothing else but the law written in their hearts. So that this conclusion must needs follow, that you Quakers take council, in your own hearts, with a spirit without a body; the light of Christ within you: this you call God's Holy Spirit of truth, in which you take council. Now the light of Christ within you is not the true God; it is nothing else but God's law written in the heart, which doth accuse the conscience when you do any thing contrary to it. And when you do commune with this righteous law, written in your hearts, you do imagine that you take council in God, a spirit without a body. Here lieth your great mistake, in that you take God's righteous law, written in your hearts, for God himself. A man may as well take the law of a king for the king himself: only here is the difference; a king's law is visible, and himself is visible to the natural eyes; but God's law is invisible, written in the hearts of men, and God himself is that invisible God, yet a person distinct from this invisible law, written in man's heart. Now shall I say, that this law, written in my heart, is God; because I cannot see it with my natural sight, nor know how it came to be written there, it being invisible. So that the Quakers do worship the law, written in their hearts, for God; and the light of

this law, is that light of Christ they so much talk of within them: and this law is their God and Saviour, and they have no other God to save them, but the light of this law within them. This I know is the Quakers holy spirit of truth they so much talk of, which is no other spirit, but the law, written in their hearts, in the life and soul of them; and when their souls doth die, this law, written in their hearts, doth die also; and so, by consequence, their imaginary God, a spirit without a body, is dead also; and so they lie all three in the earth together, viz. the soul, the law, the imagination that God was a spirit without a body, all dead in the earth, until the day that my God, that hath a body of his own, shall raise them again in the resurrection, then shall the soul and the law, written in their hearts, which was their God, a spirit without a body, and their imagination, that created in itself such a God, a spirit without a body, they shall all rise again together. And this law, written in their hearts, they called God, a spirit without a body while they were in this life, shall be the only devil that shall torment them to eternity in the resurrection. And this law, aforesaid, the light of it, is the Quakers holy spirit of truth, which doth deny that spirit that doth declare God to be in form and shape like man, as the spirit of error, and they do give testimony against the same; and not only so, but they do admonish all other people, as well as their own, in the fear and dread of their imaginary Lord God of heaven and earth, both to turn from it, and avoid it. But this I say, whosoever doth adhere to the Quakers admonishment, or to their God, he doth adhere to a God of his own imagination, which hath



neither body, form, shape, nor substance; which cannot deliver you in the day of trouble.

6. And, *lastly*, the 19th day of the fourth month, 1673, let this be read at the publick meeting in the city of Cork, and the same to be recorded in a book; to stand as a testimony against this blasphemous spirit for ages and generations to come.

*Answer.* Here the reader may see what care and pains the Quakers doth take to uphold their kingdom of Anti-Christ; and to bind themselves together, at their general meetings, to fight against the Spirit of the true Christ, and his doctrine, declared by Reeve and Muggleton, but more especially against me. These ten years, and better, have I only engaged against the whole host of Quakers, they being many, and I but one man; yet being chosen of God to oppose that Anti-Christian spirit that would have spread itself over the face of the earth: but God hath letted them, by sending two men to make war against them; and I, even I, have fought many battles with them; and have, by faith in the true God, that hath a body of his own, broken the jaw-bone of the Quakers strength to pieces, and have shattered them in confusion.

There hath come forth against me many of their mighty men of valour; they have shot their poisonous arrows at me, but could not hurt me. Oh! how many of your Anti-Christian companions, captains, and mighty men of war of Anti-Christ's army, have come out against me, more than I can well name: they came with their weapons of war as Goliab, as it were like giants with their weavers beams; yet I being but one in the world, by the help of my God, that hath a body in heaven, above the stars, being cloathed with the whole armour of God, the breast-

plate of righteousness, the shield of faith, the helmet of salvation, and the two-edged sword of the Spirit, I have fought with many men of valour, and have overcome them, as David did Goliath, and have scattered their followers, even as the host of the Philistines were scattered. These things are written more at large in another place, which will be upon record, and in publick, after my death : so that you Quakers, if you were sensible, might say, Oh ! what is become of our valiant leaders, our captains, and mighty men of war, that listed, as under the spirit of Anti-Christ ? Oh ! how are they fallen by the sword of the Spirit put into Muggleton's mouth ? Alas ! alas ! our mighty men are fallen into eternal damnation, when, as we thought, that their spirits did but go out of their bodies ; but, alas ! it is otherwise : they are gone to eternal darkness, where they shall never see bright day more. But, here of late, since William Penn hath survived the place of a teacher, a leader, and captain of the Quakers host, he hath been more zealous for the spirit of Anti-Christ, than the former that went before him ; and he hath defied the living God, that hath a body of his own, more glorious than any that went before him. And for this he is damned, body and soul, to eternity ; and it will not be long before he shall possess the reward of his blasphemy, which is this : his soul, which he saith cannot die, it shall die two deaths ; it shall pass through this first death, which is natural and appointed unto all men once to die, and enter into the second death, which is eternal, in utter darkness, where he shall never die, nor never live in comfort, even a living death, and dying life : this is the second death, which God hath prepared for the seed of the serpent, such as Penn,

and others, that despise such a God as hath a body; form, and shape like man; and he shall remember, that he was told so by me.

Furthermore, I suppose William Penn's book against me hath been some cause that hath stirred you, in Ireland, up to band yourselves thus, at your general meeting, to declare against the doctrine of Reeve and Muggleton. So that the Quakers come now of late in troops; they do not come two or three at a time, as formerly; but, as it were, in bands: for it is not long since I had a testimony against this doctrine and commission of the Spirit, at a quarterly meeting of women Quakers, no less than twenty-eight, their names subscribed; and at a quarterly meeting of men Quakers, about thirty, that subscribed their names, as a testimony against the doctrine of Reeve and Muggleton. William Smith wrote the testimony of them both, and a little while after he died. And now here cometh a band of men out of Ireland, twenty-six, who have given testimony against Reeve and Muggleton's doctrine, calling them erroneous, and do deny them as the spirit of error and blasphemy.

These words are the sin against the Holy Ghost; and inasmuch as God hath chosen me, on earth, to be the judge of blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, so that I have considered your testimony, and the names of all you that have subscribed to that paper; your names are written at the beginning of this paper. And you having all jointly set your names, as one man, to this testimony above written.

Therefore, in obedience to my commission from the true God, I do pronounce all those twenty-six persons, whose names are aforewritten, cursed and

damned, in their souls and bodies, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity.

*Written by me,*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

I wish you to read this answer at your general meeting, that the whole congregation may hear it; and, if you please, to record it for ages and generations to come.

Let these two sheets of paper be delivered to the hands of some of the Quakers, at their general meeting, in Cork, in Ireland, to be read, if possible, to the congregation.

*The Postern, near London-Wall,  
in London, Aug. 11, 1673.*

*A Copy of a Letter sent by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Joseph Moss, a Physician, in Cork, in Ireland, August 11, 1673.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Joseph Moss,*

THIS is to certify you that I received your letter, with the Quaker's testimony. I am glad to hear you are well in health, and of George Gamble's health; but as for satisfaction of that life eternal I suppose you do not want, for true faith, without doubting, doth remove mountains of objections in the mind to be cast into the sea, where they shall sink, and never rise again to stand before the understanding. And inasmuch as God hath been pleased, in this last age of the world, to chuse two men to be a light unto the world, and to declare the Lord's saving health unto as many as shall receive it, that hath enlightened many that sate in darkness and in the shadow of death, that have been instruments or candlesticks to hold the light of life before people, whereby those that have oil in their lamps may enter into the gate of heaven, (that is, faith in their hearts) may enter into heaven while the door is open, and may sup with the God of Heaven.

This commission of the Spirit is the door of heaven in this last age, and he that believeth in the doctrine of the true God and his commission, doth enter in at the door of heaven: and though these times may be the worst of times as to temporal affairs, yet it is the best time to the seed of faith to exercise itself, that hath been above this thousand years; for who

knew the form and nature of God till now, and the form and nature of the right devil ; the knowledge of the one causeth the soul to mount up to heaven, and the knowledge of the other maketh the soul descend into the lowest hell, and ascend out of it again. These things are wonderful hard to understand by them that have no faith, but to those that have faith in the true God, and in the commission of the Spirit, it is very easy ; which I do not question you nor George Gamble, though I thus speak.

*Friend Moss,*

I hope the books that were sent to George Gamble did not receive much damage, though they passed through great casualties. Likewise I heard that George Gamble was in some trouble about quartering of soldiers, but I hope it is not so bad as it was reported. I am a writing an answer to William Penn's book, and as soon as I can I shall get them printed ; but I know not how any can be conveyed safe to you in that country.

This is all at present, only my love and my wife's love remembered unto yourself and George Gamble, and my love to Colonel Phaire and his wife, and all friends else in the faith there with you.

I rest, your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, August 11, 1673.*

*Friend,*

I would desire you to deliver this paper enclosed to what Quakers you think will faithfully read it in the Meeting; I have sent it unsealed for you to read, and, if you think it worth your pains, to take a copy of it before you deliver it to them; because if they should deal deceitfully with that, and hide it from others, you have a copy of the same may the better convince gainsayers.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Sladehouse, bearing date from London, August 11, 1673.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I RECEIVED your letter, bearing date June 27, 1673, but I could not well give you an answer of it since, because I have been much employed in writing, both in the answer to Penn's book, and otherwise; so that I cannot perfect the answer not as yet, because of several occasions doth happen which doth hinder me; and as for that business concerning the oaths, and receiving the Sacrament, it doth not belong to you, and if it should come to be forced upon you, it is not lawful for you to take it; for whoever doth take it now, will as soon take an oath to the contrary, when occasion is, for this business will not

hold long at the lock it is now : but I suppose our friend Mr. Delamain hath given you some satisfaction in this business before now ; and as for our friend Hall, that doth desire me to send a book bound altogether, I thought it convenient to let you know before I send it that I had none bound, until about two weeks since I have met with a book-binder that hath bound me some, and there is all the books bound together, except *The Mortality of the Soul*, and there is none of them to be had, nor hath not been a long time ; neither is there any clasps to them that are bound now, it being dangerous to put clasps on, but they are well covered with good strong covers ; besides, there is never a *Divine Looking-Glass* single to be had but what is bound in the whole set, if you would give twice the price, therefore I would wish you to make much of them you have, for they will be very hard to come by ere long ; so that if our friend Hall will have one of them as they are, without *The Mortality* or clasps, I will send him one ; the price of it is eleven shillings, as it always was ; so if he do like of it, let me know by what carrier I shall send it, and I will send it to you.

So being in haste I shall take leave at present, only my love and my wife's love remembered unto yourself, and to your wife, and Thomas Hall, and all friends in the faith there with you.

I rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*The Postern, London,  
August 11, 1673.*



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Ladawicke  
Maggister to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, bearing date  
January 16, 1674.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith, Dorothy Carter,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter dated January 8, 1674, and am glad to hear that yourself, and all the rest of friends you make mention of are in health: and as for Mr. Goodwyn taking no notice; nor speaking any thing concerning his faith in this commission, do not you be troubled at it, neither do you speak to him about it at all, except he speak to you first; for if his heart be falling from that affection and love he had once to it, in the days of your daughter's life, let him go, for every one must stand by his own faith; but his faith, which will not hold out to the end, will miss of the end of his faith, which is the salvation of his soul; and if he did procure a blessing from me, through your daughter's prompting him on to ask it of me, yet if he stick not to it with all his heart, and with all his soul, to his life's end, he will lose the benefit of it as others have done: but seeing he doth not rebel against it, nor speak for it, let him alone; if he be contented, I am contented; if he make no mention of it, I advise you to do the same, and there is no question but he will find trouble enough in the world, even as the sparks fly upwards, which is the portion of every man and woman in the world, more or less; but happy are those that have peace in the faith of this commission of the Spirit.

Also you say William Newcombe is intended to go to Virginia, and take two of his children along with him. I wonder what is in mens minds to run amongst the heathens, that are without God in the world; besides, the climate doth not agree with the English nature to live there contentedly; but some men, when the world frowns upon them, having not patience to submit, they run into a present destruction: just as if a man should seek the living among the dead, so doth all that goeth out of England for want of livelihood, thinking to find it there. I have known several hath done so thinking to find life, but they have found death instead of life. My nature is so contrary to go out of the land of Canaan, of England, amongst the heathen, that I had rather live in prison here all days of my life. But where men cannot bear the Cross patiently, they seek deliverance by running into a present destruction; which frees men from all troubles, but not with peace of mind. As for those books he saith he hath of mine, which he thinks come to fifty shillings, I cannot think he hath so many; I know not what counsel to give you concerning them, neither would I hinder you from doing the man good; for I know money is scarce with most people now-a-days; but I shall lay no bonds upon you in this thing, but leave it to the freedom of your own hearts; but if you do buy those books of William Newcombe, I would not have you send them to Virginia amongst the heathen, it will signify nothing at all: I have lost several books that way, so that I will never send book more by sea; I would wish you to keep them yourselves, and if you cannot tell how to bestow them, if you please send them to me, and I will put them off as I can. This is all I can say as to this, but leave it to your own liberty; and as

for Capt. Wildey, Mr. Cawley, Mr. Delamain, Mr. Saddington, they are all well, but Mrs. Whalley is dead and buried; she got an extreme cold in her head and teeth about Michaelmas last past, and she would needs be let blood; so the doctor let her blood, till her life was almost gone, but with much ado she was preserved alive in a great deal of misery a quarter of a year; she was buried upon New-Year's day, when I was at Braintree, in Essex, at Mr. Whitehead's house; but I saw her before I went, and she was very well satisfied in her mind as to her eternal happiness; she had not the least doubt in her; if she had not been let blood she might have lived many years; and as for Mrs. Griffith she is out of town, and will not be in London this two weeks; as I hear by my daughter White, neither have I seen Mrs. Griffith since she brought me your letter, which desired me to lay out six shillings for Sarah Hatter, which I let Mrs. Griffith have; and as for Sarah I have not seen her since I came to town, but I hear she goeth out to work a-days, and comes home to my daughter's at night; I heard nothing, but that she is pretty well, and that she cannot write to you as she would, she being so bad a scribe; and when she is at leisure then her father is not, and when he is at leisure then she is not. When Mrs. Griffith cometh to town she shall have your letter, hoping she will satisfy you further.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's, remembered unto you, and Betty Marsden, Betty Webster, Anne Mallate, and all friends else.

Your Friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, Jan. 16, 1674.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Frances Man, containing her blessing, dated January 23, 1674.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Frances Man,*

I UNDERSTAND that you are not in health, so that you cannot conveniently go abroad, neither is there freedom for me nor my wife to come and see you: therefore I thought good to write these few lines unto you, to comfort and bear up your spirit in your trouble, as followeth:

I have had experience of late days of your faith in the true God; and in this commision of the spirit, though I know it was long before your heart did close with it; but when you received me in the name of a prophet, you did set to your seal, in your own soul, that I was true, and sent of God; so that when you received me, you received him that sent me, even the true God; so that after you believed, you were sealed with the holy spirit of promise, which is the blessing and assurance of everlasting life, then did the day-star arise in your heart; that is, the act of faith is the star that did arise in your heart, to enlighten your understanding in the things of eternity, in those deep hidden mysteries of God becoming flesh, and the devil becoming flesh. Upon these two foundations standeth eternal life, and eternal death, and the act of faith in man is that which giveth the assurance of everlasting life, which assurance of it doth abide in yourself, which hath appeared in you, in that you have not been ashamed of your faith before men, but have justified your faith

in this commission of the spirit against all gain-sayers ; so that you, being justified by faith in your own soul, I know you have peace with God, and so the assurance of your eternal happiness on the other side of death : so that I can truly say by you, as Christ did, when on earth, to his disciples that believed on him, *Blessed are your eyes, for they see, and your ears that hear, and your heart that understands the things that belong unto your peace ;* which is the peace of God that passeth all understanding, which none upon earth have but those that truly believe in this commission of the Spirit ; and because you have stretched forth the hand of faith, and have taken and eat of the tree of life, you shall live for ever ; for by faith you have eaten of the flesh of God, in that you have believed that God became flesh ; and you have drank of his blood, in that you have believed that God died, and shed his most precious blood to redeem the seed of Adam ; so that faith in his blood it hath purified your heart from that thick darkness of unbelief, which lieth upon all people in the world ; but those of this faith. That is that water of life that doth quench the thirsty soul, so that you shall never hunger and thirst more after the forgiveness of sin, nor after the assurance of everlasting life ; and these words of mine shall be as the leaves that fall from the tree of life, which is for the healing of the nations, so shall they be for the healing of your troubled soul with the seed of the serpent in this life. This faith is the faith of God's elect, that removeth that mountain of darkness and ignorance that lieth before the understandings of all mankind by nature ; this faith is that which doth ascend up to heaven, and pierceth through the sky, and beholdeth our God, our King, and our redeemer, upon the throne of his glory :

which faith is an evidence to the soul, that we shall see him face to face, who was dead, but is alive ; and behold he is alive for evermore.

These things considered, let faith and patience bear up your soul in this troublesome world, and after a little season you shall enter into the possession of those eternal joys, and endless pleasures.

This with my love presented unto you, I rest and remain your friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON:

*January 23, 1674.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Elizabeth Dickinson, Jun. being her Blessing, bearing date March 6, 1674.*

*Elizabeth Dickinson the Younger,*

I UNDERSTAND, by Goodwife Love, that you are not well, but rather drawing near the grave, and that you would gladly have seen me before you die ; yet being comforted in yourself that you shall see me hereafter in heaven, I was desired to write a few lines unto you, to add to your comfort before you go hence, and shall be seen no more. I have considered your tender age, and weak distempered body, ever since you were born ; yet with tender looking to, your weak distempered nature hath been preserved and upheld to this day, yet the root of your

disease doth still remain, and cannot be cast out but by death, it being born with you ; but in the resurrection this vile distempered body of yours, which is now mortal, shall rise an immortal, spiritual body, capable of eternal joy and glory, where no diseases, pain or sorrow can come, where body and soul shall live in joy and pleasure for evermore. And though I know there can be no fears of death to arise in your heart, because of the tenderness of your age, you being incapable of actual sin, the sting of death is taken away from you, for the sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law ; but that being not capable of the breach of any law, so no sting of death can lay hold of you ; I knowing this, would add a word of comfort to strengthen your spirit here, and to your happiness hereafter in the kindom of eternal glory, where is joy and pleasure at the right-hand of our God and King, and our Redeemer, for evermore. And that you may be the more satisfied and comforted in the assurance of everlasting happiness in the life to come, I do declare you, Elizabeth the younger, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to all eternity. And if you do live till Whitsuntide, I do intend to see you if possible.

So resteth your friend,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*The Postern,  
March 6, 1674.*

*Postscript of a Letter to Mrs. Futerell.*

**SOVEREIGN** means to give you peace in this life, and in the life to come; and you seem to be very well satisfied in it ever since; but now about the death of this child, I perceive your faith faileth you, in that you have let such a conceit (that your child was bewitched) to enter into your heart, to cause this melancholy humour in you, that maketh shipwreck of your natural peace here, and will eclipse your spiritual peace hereafter, if it be not reasoned out in your own soul, for my faith is stedfast in what I said unto you, therefore let your faith be stedfast in me without doubting, and you shall never perish in the peace of your mind, neither in this life, nor in the life to come, but shall have everlasting life; and let not melancholy thoughts of your child's being bewitched, or evil surmise, enter into your mind, but let your faith on God, and in this commission of the Spirit, and patience in temporal troubles, possess your soul, then will you receive an hundred fold of peace and satisfaction in the life to come, and life everlasting.

This is the true way to have peace in this life, and in the life to come; and what can I do more for you than I have done to settle your mind in peace? Yet if you have conceived any prejudice in your heart against any believers, though it be causeless, yet I shall part you asunder, so that you and your husband shall have no society with them, nor they with you, no more than any stranger; so that you may be satisfied, and your peace may be perserved, all shall be well.



This is as much as can be said in this matter, and all I can say at present, hoping you will take my advice in what I have said in this paper, that my words may take place in you to your peace of mind here, and eternal happiness hereafter, as it hath done in several others.

This with my true love remembered to yourself, I rest your friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London,  
June 11, 1674.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Hampson of Cambridge.*

*Dear Friend Mrs. Hampson,*

I UNDERSTAND you have some trouble upon your mind about the death of your child, as if it was bewitched ; I thought your faith, in what I had declared concerning witches, had been stronger than so to think that witches should have power over infants, which are not capable of fear, for fear and belief is the inlet to all witchcraft, fear entered first into the mind, and belief enters into the blood, and so men, women, and children comes to be bewitched ; but I suppose your child was not capable of any of these two ; likewise frights to children may cause fits, like to witchcraft fits, yet not bewitched in the least ; besides, children in the conception, when they are conceived in the womb, may partake of that me-

lancholy blood in the nature of the parents, or of any other distemper or disease in the parents, as I by experience do know by my own children, two sons by my second wife, as sweet children as eye could look on, yet partakers of their mother's nature, who was a comely woman to see to, yet of a melancholy dropsical nature and humour, if things did not go well in this world, as no man can assure his wife all things shall prosper always, because troubles are as sparks of fire that fly upwards, and fall down to its centre again, especially where children are. The first-born son was stricken with a convulsive fit, when it was a year old, as it sat upon my knee, when it was merry, and it lived till it was three years old; afterwards the second son I had by her did grow up and prosper till he was three years old, after that the evil did break out, and it increased to the running evil from place to place, and he lived thus till he was nine years old, though I used means to help him, but all in vain; and when the child died I was glad, knowing all the children I had by her did partake of her melancholy and dropsical nature, and not any witchcraft powers in the least; and I know your nature is given much to melancholy and discontent of mind, produced out of your own surmisings, which are as false as God is true, so that you have created to yourself fears where no fear is, and sorrow where you might have had joy, and grief where you might have had comfort; and though you are not sensible of the hurt it doth your person, it being grown strong, yet your mind being troubled, it corrupts your nature, in that it enters into your blood; and the grief your husband hath to see you in this condition, that nothing will comfort you, it hurteth his nature also, which never was very healthful since I knew him; so that what evil is produced in your body by fears and melan-

hololy, you must expect your children must partake at one time or another, and you have no remedy but patience ; therefore I shall say this unto you, I remember when you were first married your melancholy mind wanted rest, not only in this life, but you wanted peace and assurance of happiness in the life to come, and for that purpose you desired a blessing of me, which upon your request I gave you, and you seemed to be satisfied in it ever since ; and my faith is stedfast in what I said unto, therefore let yours be stedfast in me, without doubting, and you shall never perish, but have everlasting life ; and let not these melancholy thoughts of witchcraft, or evil surmises, enter into your mind, but let your faith in God, and in the commission of the Spirit, and patience in temporal troubles, refresh your soul, then will you receive an hundred fold of peace and satisfaction in this life, and in the life to come life everlasting. This is the true way to have peace in this life, and in the life to come ; and what can I do more for you than I have done, to set your mind in peace ? Yet if you have conceived any prejudice in your heart against any of the believers, though it be causeless, yet I shall part you asunder, so that you nor your husband shall have no society with them, nor they with you ; so your peace can be preserved, all shall be well. This is as much as can be said in this matter, and all I shall say at present, hoping you will take my advice in what I have said in this paper, that my words may take place in you to your peace of mind here, and eternal happiness hereafter, as it hath done in several others.

This with my true love remembered to yourself and husband, I rest your friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, June 11, 1674.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Isabella Malum, Quaker, dated from London, October 1, 1674, and directed to her at Nottingham.*

*Isabella Malum,*

I RECEIVED a letter, dated Nottingham, the 12th of the fifth month, 1674. I know it is not of your hand-writing, but it is the testimony of your own heart, as you have declared; wherein you have shewed what seed and nature you are of, even the seed of the serpent, in that you have been left to the reasonings of your own heart, as King Saul was, to reject the prophet of the Lord, in sinning against the commandment of the prophet Samuel, and go to a witch; so that the good Spirit of the Lord departed from him, and an evil spirit of the Lord was sent unto him; so it is with you: you have rejected and despised me, the prophet of the Lord, and have given your testimony against the good Spirit of the Lord, and did strive with your evil spirit of reason, the devil in you; which good spirit would have led you through that narrow gate which leads to life eternal, which few do find, or enter therein. But I perceive the evil spirit of reason in you hath prevailed, and hath the victory over you, and hath led you captive, insomuch that it hath caused you to despise and reject the good Spirit of the Lord, in his messenger, which brings glad tidings of salvation to all that truly believe in him.

1. This Spirit of truth you call a seducing spirit of Lodowicke Muggleton, which you say leads to

death and destruction ; so that the good Spirit of the Lord that did strive with you, and had almost persuaded you to join with it, as you have expressed in your testimony, is now departed from you ; and the evil spirit of reason in you is now to be your guide ; and the good Spirit shall strive no more with you ; for you shall be given up to a reprobate mind, as Saul was ; and the hope of such hypocrites as you shall perish.

2. You say, it is now upon your heart to declare something how you came to lose your condition, and to backslide from the Quakers, and from that light within, which you call the light of Christ, which did reprove you of sin, and convince your conscience of the vanities, and customs, and fashions of this world.

As to this, I say, if you had been at rest, and peace of mind, in the Quakers principles and practice, you would never have backslidden from them. For the cause why people run from one thing to another is, because they are not at rest where they are. For this I say, if religious people could find peace, and rest of mind, in the doctrine and practice of the seven churches, there would never a man or woman believe me ; for there is none believes me, but those that are lost ; for I am in the same condition as Christ was when upon earth ; he came but *unto the lost sheep of the house of Israel*, not to those that were settled in a form of religion, as the Scribes and Pharisees were, and as all the seven churches are now : so that if you had found rest in the Quakers way, why did you not keep there ? Why did you backslide from them ? Certainly, if the Quakers way had been the truth, (as you say now,) it would have given you rest then. And are you so bewitched, to

think that you shall find more peace in that truth you backslided from now, than you did when you were in your innocency? Will the Quakers love backsliders better than they did before? I am sure, the true God, nor his messengers, doth not love backsliders, nor hypocrites, nor rebels, as they do integrity and uprightness of heart. But the Quakers people being ignorant of the true God, perhaps their God, an infinite Spirit without a body, or that God in them, will be more merciful than the true God: perhaps their God, an infinite Spirit, will love you better for your backsliding from them; and the more because you had like to have been caught in Muggleton's snare, as you say. But I can do as Peter did by his, pick out of his snare or net the good fish, and cast the bad away. I can spare such as you are very well. And whereas you say you backslided from that light within you, which you call Christ, which did reprove you, and convince your conscience of sin, and of the vanity of this world; this light of Christ was nothing else but the law written in your heart, which did accuse you when your mind was vain; and when your mind did not run after vanity, the law written in your heart did excuse your conscience.

Indeed this law was written in every man's heart by Christ, the only God; therefore may be called the light of Christ, *that enlighteneth every man that cometh into the world*: but Christ's person is distinct from this law written in man's heart; and this light of the law is distinct from Christ; and whoever maketh the law written in his heart, that accuseth and excuseth, to be the very Christ, as the Quakers do, that Christ within them shall prove the greatest devil to all eternity.

3. You say, you desired to see Lodowicke Mug-

gleton's books : you say you heard some places here and there read, and you were asked the question, whether ever you heard friends declare such things ? And you said, nay. Likewise you do confess, you were bid to take heed of judging or speaking against him. Here was the desire of reason, the devil in you, to see those books : and you say you heard them read. Did those that shewed you those books, force them upon you, without your desire, and contrary to your mind ? They were lent unto you ; for I am sure you bought none. What provoked you to desire to see them for your own hurt ? Likewise you had a charge given you, not to speak against them ; but you contrarily have spoken evil of them in a high nature, insomuch that you have spoken against your own soul ; for had you not been of that reprobate seed, you would have had a care of speaking evil of those books that were so lovingly lent you : they cost you nothing : had you been of the elect seed, though you could not have believed them, or not liked them, you would have been kept from speaking evil of them.

4. You say you had got some of his books, and reading of them, your heart became dark, having lost your guide, which caused you not to believe in him, as the only prophet and messenger of the most High God. Here the spirit of reason was struck dark in you, by reading those books, because the doctrine contained in those books did so far surmount the doctrine or principles of the Quakers, as the sun in its brightness doth the twinkling star ; so that the light of the law in you, which was but as the light of a star in you, which is nothing else but the light of nature, which guideth men to do things honest and just between man and man. And this light of nature

is that light of Christ in you, and that truth you so much talk of; for this I know, that there is never a Quaker in the world that hath any other light of Christ in him, but the light of nature, not as he is in the state of a Quaker; and this was the cause you were stark dark in the reading those books, because the light in you was put out, and caused you to walk in darkness; having lost the light of nature, you lost your guide; which, if you could have stood still awhile in patience, you should have seen the salvation of the true God, and have been brought out of that darkness into his marvellous light, which is heavenly, far exceeding the light of the law in you; which would have caused you indeed to believe him to be the true prophet and messenger of the most high God; but you being the seed of the serpent, heaven was not appointed for you, but hell only.

5. You say, I sent a letter to a follower of mine at Nottingham, that if the two women that were fallen from the Quakers, would turn to them again, let them return; but if they do, they will perish for ever. Likewise I said in that letter, if I be in the truth, all that believe in my commission shall be saved; but if I be not in the truth, all shall be damned that believe in me. These, or to this effect, you say, was part of my letter. Further you say, the hearing of this letter struck you to the heart, and much trouble seized upon you, that you should venture your salvation upon the words of a mortal man.

Also you say, Oh! how you cried to the Lord, that you might once more be worthy to be a door-keeper amongst the congregation of the faithful, before you *go hence, and shall be seen no more.*

As to this, I did send a letter to a follower of mine at Nottingham, that if the two women that were



fallen from the Quakers would return again to them, let them return; for I did understand, that the Quakers did solicit them much, with exhortations, and persuasions, and by-letters to them, to return to them again. The letters I have yet to shew; and I find in those letters, that those two women were in a great streight in their minds, to give the Quakers an absolute answer, whether they would return to them, or keep to Muggleton. I heard those two women were in a great quandary, whether to keep to me, or return to them; and especially Isabella Malum was inclinable to fall back to the Quakers. Whereupon I wrote that letter to my friend, that if they would return back to the Quakers again, let them go; but if they did, they would perish for ever; and so you will; for whoever setteth the hand to the plough of faith, in this commission, and looketh back, will perish to eternity.

And further I say, that if I be a true prophet, as I know I am, all those that truly believe me, and hold out to the end, shall surely be saved; but if I be a false prophet, as you say I am, then all those that believe me shall be damned, and I myself shall be damned, for being deceived myself, and deceiving others.

This must be ventured by all men and women, else no salvation can be attained unto in this life.

Therefore it concerns all you ministers and speakers, to be sure you are not false ministers of Christ yourselves, to deceive others; for I can assure you, if you are, you will be damned to eternity yourselves; and all those that are deceived by you will perish also.

Likewise you say, the hearing of this struck you to the heart, and much trouble scized upon you, in

that you should venture your salvation upon the words of a mortal man.

As to this I say, it had been well for you, had you ventured your salvation upon the words of a mortal man. Was not all the Scripture given forth by mortal men? Was not Moses a mortal man, who set life and death before the people; and those that put their trust in his words did live; but those that did not venture their lives upon his words were put to death, as may be read abundantly in the Scriptures. Were not Peter, and the rest of the apostles, mortal men? yet the keys of heaven, and of hell, were given unto them; and whose sins were forgiven by them on earth, were forgiven by God in heaven; and whose sins were not forgiven by them here on earth, were not forgiven by God in heaven.

Now ought not those that heard them, and believed them, to venture their salvation upon the words of these mortal men, that preached life and salvation by Jesus Christ unto them; yea, all that were saved by faith in their doctrine, ventured their salvations upon the words of those mortal men; and whoever did not venture their salvation upon those mortal mens words that heard them, were damned to eternity: so likewise, if you had ventured your salvation upon the words of me, the Lord's true prophet, which am but a mortal man, you should assuredly have been saved, as many others can witness: but in regard you could not venture your salvation upon the words of a mortal man, you will assuredly be damned to eternity; for this was God's way ever since he chose Moses, to give authority to mortal men to bless and curse to eternity; and that men

and women should believe them, and venture their salvation upon their bare words.

Also you say, Oh! how you cried unto the Lord, that you might be once more worthy to be a door-keeper.

Here you speak like an ignorant, silly, foolish woman, that desires to be a door-keeper amongst the congregation of the faithful.

To discover your ignorance, let me tell you, that there is no door-keepers of the congregation of the faithful but men, and they must be such as prophets and apostles, who have the keys of heaven and hell. Such men as these do open the doors of mens hearts here on earth, and letteth the spirit or soul of man out of that prison of darkness, which every man and woman's souls are in by nature. Such mortal men as these have the keys of the door of heaven, to open the door of man's heart, that he may see the light of heaven, and the glory of God in heaven, with the glory of saints and angels, in form like men, by the preaching of Christ, as Peter did: he opened the door of Lydia's heart, and shewed her the glory and benefit she should receive, even life and salvation to eternity, by the death, resurrection, and ascension of that man Christ Jesus, which the apostles preached.

Such men as these are door-keepers of the house of God here on earth; which house is the congregation of faithful believers. Therefore it is that David, who was a king and a prophet, desired to be but a door-keeper in the house of the Lord, and God granted his desire, and gave him the key of heaven, that is, to prophecy of the coming of God in the flesh, who was Christ, who was the door, the

way, the truth, and the life ; and no man could enter into life eternal, but by this door, and none could open this door but those that have the key ; and none hath the key but commissioned men, as Moses, the prophets, the apostles, John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton.

These mortal men were made door-keepers in the house of God here on earth ; but they shall sit upon thrones of glory in heaven.

But I never read of any woman that God made door-keeper of his house here on earth ; so that your choice shall not be granted you, but the contrary ; for you shall have the door of hell opened unto you, where you shall go among the congregation of the faithless and unbelieving reprobates, where is utter darkness for evermore.

6. You say you had a book written by Lodowicke Muggleton in your house, called, A Looking-Glass for George Fox. You say a most wicked book ; and you often wished it out of your house ; it being an aggravation of your trouble, when you thought of it.

It seems this book became a wicked book to you, and an aggravation and trouble when you thought of it. The cause why it was an aggravation to your mind was, because you were the seed of the serpent, as aforesaid ; for those books are an aggravation to the mind of none but reprobates ; for the book cost you nothing. If you had bought it, you would have esteemed better of it, and it would have been no trouble to your mind ; and if you could not have believed, you would have been kept from speaking evil of it. But I perceive for the most part, those that have these books lent them for nothing, are the greatest despisers, and do stumble

most at them, as you have done. But I know the cause why they have been such an aggravation and trouble to your mind is, because you thought if you should believe Muggleton's writings, there will not be so many loaves and fishes in believing this, as there will be among the Quakers people; for he promises no loaves nor fishes at all; and there is so few that believe him in those parts; so that you cannot expect but very few loaves and fishes here. But the Quakers people are many, and there is more loaves of bread and fishes to eat; therefore said you in your heart, I will return to the Quakers again; for you are of the same mind as those hypocrites were that followed Christ for the loaves; for I am confident that if I had promised more loaves and fishes than you found among the Quakers, you would never have returned to them again. But, much good may you do the Quakers, now they have got you back again; they have laboured hard for you. For this I say, it never was my practice to hire people to believe my doctrine; for if I could but promise all those that believe me loaves and fishes, then should I have more disciples than the Quakers have; therefore it is that so few poor Quakers believe me, hardly any; (but a many rich Quakers believe me), because I cannot feed so many of your hypocrites with five loaves and two fishes as Christ did when on earth; for there was very few of those five thousand, but poor; and that they were hypocrites is clear by Christ's words, *John vi. 26. Jesus said, verily, verily, I say unto you, ye seek me not because ye saw the miracles, but because ye did eat of the loaves, and were filled.* So likewise you would have followed me, not for my doctrine-sake, but for the loaves-sake; if I could

have fed you with loaves to the fill; for I know your desire of heart is only to *labour for the meat which perisheth*, and not for the meat *which endureth unto everlasting life*; which all those that do truly believe my commission and doctrine do eat of, and are satisfied, in the assurance of everlasting life, which God shall give them in the resurrection at the last day, which will not be a quarter of an hour after their death; for there is no time to the dead; time belongeth only to life.

7. You say, now it is in your heart further to declare, that you do for ever judge and condemn that spirit of darkness that did lead you from the light (as you say) to join with Lodowicke Muggleton. You say you do also believe that Lodowicke Muggleton is a false prophet, and seducer, and a blasphemer of the living and true God, who is an infinite and unchangeable Spirit, and lives and walks in his people, meaning the Quakers.

Here you have brought death and destruction upon your own head. You have sought after eternal death as for hid treasure, in that you, being an ignorant sottish woman, should undertake to judge a prophet, whose revelation and knowledge of God's mind in the Scriptures is beyond the knowledge and revelation of all the men in the world at this day, as my writings do declare. You, who have not the common knowledge and learning of women, and that without a cause, did never persuade you to believe me, or my doctrine. I never gave you any enticing words to encourage you to believe me. Were not the books lent you freely? they cost you nothing: was there not the wine, milk, and honey of heaven given you, without price, without money; yst your full stomach loathed the honey-comb of

heaven. Were not you left to your liberty to eat or not to eat, to chuse or to refuse; but you must take down into your stomach that which could not be digested, which caused you to vomit up such blasphemy against that holy Spirit that sent me, and against me that God sent.

*First.* You have called the holy Spirit that sent me, a seducing spirit, which leads to death and destruction.

*Secondly.* You call that book that was lent you, a wicked book.

*Thirdly.* You do judge and condemn that spirit that wrote that book, which had almost persuaded you to be a true Christian, to be the spirit of darkness.

*Fourthly.* You say you do believe that Lodowicke Muggleton is a false prophet, and that he is a seducer and a blasphemer.

In these words you have blasphemed against the holy Spirit that sent me. And seeing such sins as these are unpardonable, both in this world and in the world to come; therefore what measure you have met, shall be met to you again, in that you give judgment first; therefore what judgment you have judged you shall be judged with.

Therefore, in obedience to my commission from God, for this your blasphemy against the Holy Ghost aforesaid, I do pronounce Isabella Malum aforesaid, cursed and damned, both soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men, and angels, to eternity.

Your body shall be your hell, and that spirit of reason in you, which you call the light of Christ, shall be your devil; shall be as fire to torment you to eternity. And while you are in this world, you

will hardly escape the exemplary judgment of God in this life, besides your damnation hereafter; neither can that infinite spirit without a body (which you call God, which lives and walks in you, as you imagine) deliver you from the curse a mortal man hath passed upon you.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, October 1, 1674.*

I did not write this so large only for your sake, but for the sake of others that shall come to see it, or hear it read, because it shall be recorded for the age to come.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to John Gratton, of Derbyshire, bearing date October 8, 1669.*

*John Gratton,*

I UNDERSTAND you sent a letter to Thomas Page; I perceive you are the man that lives in Derbyshire, and was acquainted with some of my friends there; which thereby you came to see some of my writings, for I think you never bought any but what you borrowed: also I remember you writ a letter to me then, to answer some questions you propounded;



and you pretended to our friend at that time, as if you did believe many things in the book; to which I sent you an answer, that you deserved the curse rather than an answer to those questions: this is many years since; I have not heard any thing of you since till now; and not only so, but you are turned Quaker, and a speaker of the Quakers, so that now you are a two-fold child of the devil more than you were; before you were a child of the devil, when you writ to me, and you turning Quaker made you a two-fold child more than what you seemed to own my writings; for being a speaker of the Quakers, it is impossible for you to repent, or to be saved; for God hath given you up to a reprobate mind, in that you did not like to retain your true God, who hath both form and nature; I say you did not like to retain him in your knowledge, therefore he hath given you up to a reprobate mind, to be a Quaker, to believe that there is no God, but what is in you; and that the light that is within you, that convinceth you of sin, is the very God, and very Christ; so that your God hath never a body, nor your Christ hath never a body neither; this is the absolute spirit of Antichrist in this last age; so that I perceive by your letter, that you have not only slunk away from that doctrine which you did once seem to like, but have spoken evil of that, and me also, and your letter is a sufficient witness against you to me, that you are the seed of the serpent, a reprobate, who is given over to a strong delusion to believe a lie, that there is no God but what is within you; who denies God to become flesh, and that all the fulness of the Godhead dwelt in him bodily, as saith the Scriptures: this is denied by you anti-christian Quakers; for which thing sake hath the wrath of the true God fallen upon many of your

leading Quakers. And now you have taken upon you to be a teacher, or leader of the anti-christian army of Quakers, so that you may expect the same wrath that your brethren have undergone before you ; for this your wickedness beforesaid, I do pronounce John Gratton cursed and damned, both soul and body, from the presence of God, elect men and angels, to eternity. Your light of Christ within you, nor that God within you, shall not deliver you from that curse a mortal man hath passed upon you ; and you shall know, to your endless pain and shame, that Muggleton's words will reach your life, which you say is in God ; so that your God and your life shall perish together ; and my God, which you say will be found no God, shall keep you and your imaginary God, a spirit without a body, in utter darkness to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*From the Postern-gate,  
October 8, 1674.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, of Slade-house, in Staffordshire, dated from London, July 1, 1675.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

**THIS** is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated June 17, 1675 ; as also to let you know,

that I received the cheese that our friend Anthony Hall, and his wife, sent me; and I give them many thanks for their kindness.

Also this is to let you know, that Mr. Delamaine saith to me, that he hath received the coat, and those things you speak of in your letter. I suppose he hath given you notice of it by writing, before this will come to your hands.

And for the difference with the parliament, it is true there was a great difference between the House of Commons and the House of Lords, about privileges, insomuch that the House of Commons did send several great lawyers to the Tower; insomuch that the king was constrained to prorogue the parliament to the third of October next. The contention between the House of Lords and Commons was so great, that it is thought by many, that they will hardly ever agree again; but the next morning, these lawyers the Commons had committed to the Tower, were delivered by a *Habeas Corpus* out of the prison, contrary to the vote of the House of Commons: so that there is no act of parliament this sitting at all; neither is there any thing done touching persecution of conscience at all, but things stand as they were: so that many justices that were hot upon persecution, are cooled. And as for London, and all about London, the meeters are quiet, and not one justice doth stir. And as for your being churchwarden this year, I would advise you by all means to put it off this year. Who knows what the next year will produce?

Thus in short I have given you a hint of things, as they are at present; and being in haste, I must take leave, only my love presented unto yourself and wife,

and to all the rest of our friends in the true faith there with you. I rest

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, July 1, 1673.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Henry Henn, bearing date from London, August 20, 1675.*

*Mr. Henn,*

I RECEIVED a letter from you by the hand of a boy ; the substance of your letter was, a complaint against yourself of your wicked actions, and great sin against God, and against your wife ; and of your great sorrow, and unfeigned repentance for it ; I do confess I have not been altogether ignorant of your wicked proceedings against your wife, yet because you have writ to me in your necessity, of your own accord, and hath confessed your sins, and laid open yourself in your confession, and it is to be minded by me, and I remember that saying in Scripture, that *whosoever confesseth his sins, and forsakes it, shall find mercy.* You have made a good confession of your sin and wickedness towards your wife, and her friends, and if you do but forsake them, as you have promised in your letter to me, there is no question but you will find mercy in the thing you require of

me; and as to your liberty only; this I must tell you, how you came to have so grievous a fall: it was because you were ignorant of the words in Scripture, which saith, *Man shall forsake his father and mother and cleave to his wife*; but you have done quite contrary; you have forsaken your wife, and cleaved to your relations, which were not so dear unto you as father and mother; and what fruit have you found or reaped by it? Have you not destroyed your wife's estate, in what you could, and your own interest in it? You have utterly destroyed it, by forsaking your wife and cleaving to your relations; this is the first entrance into sin and wickedness; and so brought destruction upon your wife and yourself in the estate; you being not content here, but added sin to sin, far worse than the first; in that you made yourself the member of harlots that was unclean, which act of yours did not only defile your soul, as a breach of God's commandment, but defiled your body; and the effects of this sin is the very cause of that separation between your wife and you; she would with ease pass by all that wrong you did in wronging her in her estate; but this nature itself doth abhor, that is not given over to a reprobate mind. After this, you proceeded on to a sin of cruelty, to abuse your wife, by laying violent hands upon her; putting her in such frights, as if death had possessed her, which caused her friends to fear you do intend to murder her; which is the cause they do intend to put you in prison, to prevent her from being murdered, and you from being hanged; for it is to be feared, by your rugged carriages to her, that you have made a covenant with death and hell, and that you can be but hanged if you kill her, or do her some other mischief; then hell must follow after death; this is the very

cause that her friends do seek to prevent you from doing this wicked deed; and not merely for your wickedness done unto her estate, in forfeiting your bond; she and her friends could and would have passed that by; and not have troubled your person for it, but have sat down in silence in the loss of it; considering that your person being in prison, would do her nor them no good; but this violent practice of yours towards your wife, both in words and actions, doth give all her friends and acquaintance suspicion that you do intend to murder your wife, or do her some other mischief, if you meet with opportunities; therefore it is that they will endeavour to secure your person, to prevent you; but seeing you have made your request to me, and have desired me to use my utmost endeavour to your wife, her father and mother, and brother Atkinson, to let you have your liberty, to try you this once more, and that you will never disturb nor abuse your wife more, either in words or actions, unbecoming an honest man, let you endure all the punishment that is possible to be inflicted upon you: you have spoken with your pen as good words as can be spoken, and if your heart be right to perform what you have said, it is pity but that you should find mercy in the thing; for this I say, it is a dangerous thing to dissemble with God and man; for whoever dissembles with his own heart, dissembles with God; for God hath placed his law in man's heart, as his watchman, to tell God of all his doings, either good or evil; but I am apt to believe that you do not dissemble with me; but I will perform what I have promised concerning your wife, that you will never abuse her more, in words nor actions, and I will do my best endeavour that you shall have your liberty. The case is this; I know your wife and fa-

ther; out of tenderness to you, though you have done them this great wrong, is willing to pass it by and let you alone, but the power of the law lieth in Mr. Atkinson's hands, and he can prosecute the law, whether your wife or father will or no; and if you had not writ these lines unto me, you would assuredly have been prosecuted; so that my business is only to persuade Mr. Atkinson to let you have your liberty, and I think you need not doubt but I shall prevail with him, that you shall have your liberty; do you keep your promise, and he shall keep his; this shall be sufficient to satisfy you that you shall not be arrested by him for any of your former faults. Written by me, your friend in this matter,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*August 20, 1675.*

Since I wrote this letter I spake with Mr. Atkinson, and I have prevailed with him to call back that warrant from that serjeant that was to arrest you, so that now you are relieved from him, and those that are related to him, for the present. Witness my hand,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Susanna Moss, of Dublin, in Ireland, bearing date September 5, 1675.*

*Friend in the true Faith, Susanna Moss,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated August 23, 1675. I confess you are a stranger unto me, but not unto the doctrine of the true God declared by me: for I have heard of you several times, of your faith in the commission of the Spirit, and that your husband died in the faith of it also.

Likewise I perceive by your letter, that you have procured by your faith the hatred of your relations, and others; but this I know, that the peace of your mind is more worth, than the whole world; especially that peace, which the world cannot give, even the *Peace of God which passeth all understanding.*

And this peace of God, it doth arise from the seed of God, which is God's own nature, in that it doth believe in his prophet's report; so that the arm of the Lord is revealed to that soul, according to that saying in Isaiah; *who hath believed our report, and to whom the arm of the Lord is revealed.*

And what is the arm of the Lord, but his saving health; that is, the assurance of everlasting life, abiding in the soul of man, which cannot be attained unto any other way, but by believing the prophet's report.

God hath honoured all his chosen prophets with heavenly wisdom, knowledge and power, above all other men; therefore it is said in Scripture, *How beautiful are the feet of them that bring glad tidings of*



*salvation* ; and of that saying, *Whoever received a prophet in the name of a prophet, shall have a prophet's reward.* And what is a prophet's reward, but a blessing of everlasting life : for he that receiveth him that is sent of God, receiveth God that sent him.

Now consider, that all religious men in these our days, do confess and say, they do believe the prophets of old that are dead, and the apostles that are dead, and that they wrote and spake as they were inspired by the Spirit of God ; but doth utterly deny, that God shall send any prophet in these our days ; saying, that prophesy and revelation is now ceased, yet they will undertake to preach the word of God, as it is written, without any revelation from God.

So that you may observe that the seed of the serpent, the seed of reason in man, doth always believe dead prophets, but would never have believed them when they were alive. So on the contrary, the seed of faith, the seed of God, doth always believe live prophets, rather than those that are dead ; because the living prophet gives them to understand the meaning of those dead prophets' writings, and would have believed them dead prophets had they been alive : according to that saying of Christ to the Jews, *Had you believed Moses, you would have believed me.*

So can I truly say, that if people did truly believe the prophets and apostles, as they say they do, they would believe me ; for God hath chosen me one of the two last prophets and witnesses of the Spirit, as truly as he chose Moses, Aaron, and the prophets and apostles in their time : and there is as much ground for professors of the Scripture to believe me, and more, than to believe those that are dead.

Why ? Because God hath give me understanding of his mind in the Scriptures, above all the men in the

world; nay, if I did not know more of God's mind than those that wrote the Scriptures, I would not speak or dispute with men about spiritual matters; neither do I speak this out of a conceited pride of heart (as most wise men in reason do), but out of true knowledge; for true knowledge is never proud.

But the Lord of Heaven, who hath redeemed my soul with his most precious blood, and hath given me my part in the first resurrection, in that the seed of faith in the true God, which is the day-star, is risen in me, and hath freed me from the fear of the second death. And he hath set me as it were upon a hill, for the seed of reason to shoot their poisonous arrows at me; but the shield of faith, and the breast-plate of righteousness hath preserved me.

Also he hath set me as a light upon a hill, to give light upon the earth in these last days; so that in light men may see light; so that you, the seed of faith, who hath the day-star risen in your hearts, hath light, and in light you shall see light.

This light hath shined into darkness in this last age; but the darkness doth not comprehend it, but doth hate the light, and me also; because some people do believe in the light of heaven; that is, in the hidden mysteries in the Scriptures declared by me.

As, *First*, What God was in his form and nature from eternity; and how he became flesh, and dwelt amongst men here upon earth.

*Secondly*, What the right devil was in form and nature before his fall; and how he became flesh, and dwells among men here on earth.

*Thirdly*, The place and nature of hell, and the devil's torment.

*Fourthly*, The place and nature of heaven, with the joys the saints shall have.

*Fifthly*, The persons and natures of the holy angels.

*Sixthly*, The mortality of the soul.

These, and many other heavenly mysteries, have been declared by us, the two witnesses of the Spirit; so that the light hath shined through darkness in this last age, and hath made the rough ways plain, and the crooked paths strait to some.

And I can truly say, I know I am of God, and the whole world lieth in wickedness, and darkness, and blindness, not knowing any one of these heavenly mysteries aforesaid.

So that I can truly say to you, as Christ did to his disciples, *Blessed are your eyes that see the things that belong to your peace*, and your ears that hear, and hearts that understand the secret mysteries of God, revealed by his two last prophets now in this last age.

This is that hath made the world to hate me; for when I was a zealous professor, a puritan, yet ignorant and blind, the world did love me, and religious men did love; but now they hate me, because I do not walk in darkness with them; for when I was blind and ignorant of the true God, and the right devil, as they were, we did agree well enough; but this commission and knowledge of God in the Scriptures, above all men in the world, causeth all men to hate me; so that they hate you that believe, for my sake; so that they do not only hate you, but they hate me, and they hate God that sent me; for if they could avenge themselves of me, they would love you; but because they cannot, therefore they hate you. But consider, every true prophet cometh to bring a sword upon the earth, to set the nearest relations one against another: but blessed are those that are not offended with such a prophet.

It was Christ's own words and practice when on

earth ; for when the world expected he should have brought peace upon the earth, he brought a sword, and instead of making peace between relations, he caused a greater difference between the most nearest relations than ever ; even against husband and wife, father and son, mother and daughter ; the husband and wife being in bed together, the one was taken by his doctrine, and the other was left in ignorance and darkness. The father and son being in bed together, the one is taken, and his eyes opened to see the glory of God, even life and salyation to his soul ; and the other is left in ignorance and blindness of mind, and hardness of heart, to perish in his ignorance and unbelief to eternity. The mother and daughter being in bed together, one was taken as aforesaid, and the other was left.

These things I have had great experience of these twenty-three years and more, since I received my commission : and I have seen those words of Christ fulfilled in these my days.

Also I have seen two grinding in the mill of the affairs of this world together ; and by this doctrine, declared by John Reeve and myself, the one hath been taken out of ignorance, and the other hath been left.

These things I have had perfect knowledge of, I being the last prophet that God will ever send to stand in the place of God here on earth, to act the same things as he did when he was upon earth : and as he was hated of all men, for his doctrine-sake, and saying he was the Son of God, so I am hated of all men for my doctrine-sake, that hath laid the axe to the root of the tree of all opinions and religions in the world.

And that I am the last true prophet that God will

ever send to the end of the world, which hath caused the world to hate me ; for I have no dealing with the world ; I neither buy, nor sell, nor trade with them ; I owe the world nothing ; I never wronged any in the world the value of sixpence in my life, to my knowledge ; yet all the world hates me, both righteous and unrighteous, only because I am of God, and they are not of God. If I could love the ways of the world, and speak well of them, and their religion; they would love me ; and then I should be a liar like unto them. For if I should say, that I do not know more of God's mind, in the Scriptures, than all the men in the world at this day, I should be a liar like them.

This is that strait and narrow gate that leads unto life eternal, but few do go therein.

Consider the parable Christ spake, *There was a man had an hundred sheep, and one of them went astray*; and there was an hundred righteous persons, and one of them went out from his righteousness, and was lost in himself, as the sheep that went astray.

Now the shepherd went out, and found that one sheep that went astray, and brought it home, and rejoiced over this more than the ninety-nine that went not astray. So there was joy in heaven of the holy angels, more over that one sinner that repented, than over the ninety-nine just persons that needed no repentance.

The interpretation and meaning is this, that the ninety and nine just persons were all damned ; and that one person that repented, was saved ; and so of the sheep.

For if the ninety-nine just persons, that needed no repentance, were saved ; and that one repented, saved also ; then the whole hundred were saved ; so

that none were damned. This is the judgment and opinion of all professors of the scriptures.

But the seed of faith knoweth to the contrary; that the meaning of Christ was, that all the ninety and nine just persons were damned. Why? because they needed no repentance: therefore the angels did not rejoice over them at all.

[From this place it is torn out.]

---

*This is the Copy of the Answer (of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's) unto a Letter which our brother Lad had sent him.*

*John Lad,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated August 1, 1676, wherein you have expressed your faith and confidence in the doctrine declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit; and persons of us, who were sent of God, to bring glad tidings of peace and salvation to as many as shall receive our report, and to whom the arm of the Lord's saving health is revealed, to lead those that were in captivity, in ignorance and darkness, captives into that glorious light of life eternal, and to open the prison-doors of mens hearts, and to let their souls that were prisoners go free. This many can experience in these our days; and what can be said more than what Christ said to his disciples, and those that believed in him, *Blessed are your eyes that see, and your ears that hear, and your hearts*

*that understand the things that belongs to your peace.* Thus it is with every true prophet that is sent of God ; and what things can a man understand that belongs to his peace, more than to know the true God in his form and nature, and the right devil in his form and nature, and angels their persons and nature, and to have the prison-doors of mens hearts opened, and to let the King of glory enter in ? These are things that belong to a man's eternal peace, which none can have or receive, but those that do receive a prophet in the name of a prophet, receiveth God that sent him ; for whoever believeth in a prophet for his doctrine sake, shall see the treasures of heaven, both new and old. That is what the prophets of old did lay up in heaven, believing that God would become a little child, and grow up to a man, and suffer death, and rise again, that he might give them in the resurrection life eternal, and a crown of glory to wear for evermore. This is that treasure the prophets of old did lay up in heaven, therefore called old treasures, and the treasures the apostles laid up in heaven were counted new by Christ in that time, in that he compared the kingdom of heaven to a good scribe, that brought forth of the good treasures of his heart things new and old ; likewise we the ministers of the Spirit have brought forth out of the good treasures of our heart things new and old, we have declared unto you the deep things of old, the very foundation of God's council of old, which he revealed to Moses, the righteous fathers and prophets of old, and so of the apostles. And now is the new wisdom of God and treasure of heaven brought forth to the view of the world, by us two prophets and witnesses of the Spirit, in a more abundant measure than all that went before us, as may be seen by our writings :

and there will never be no more new treasures of heaven brought forth into the world, any more than what is declared by us while time is no more. And seeing God hath chosen me to be one of his two last prophets and messengers unto this bloody and unbelieving world, and that caused and preserved me to be the longest liver, and hath lengthened out my days and years; and he hath made me a scorn to fools, that nothing understand; yea, he hath set me as a mark for every wicked man to shoot at me, yet faith in my God hath preserved me from being wounded by the cunning archers. He hath made me as a wall of brass against all men, both righteous and unrighteous. They have all strove to bear me down, both with spiritual weapons and carnal weapons, but he hath delivered me from them all: I did not think, when I was chosen a messenger of God, that I should have been so hated of all men for declaring of truth, but rather thought all men should love me; but when I went into the sanctuary of the Lord, I found it quite contrary; for when I had considered the trouble Moses and the prophets went through, both with the wicked and the righteous, even with those that served in the tabernacle of God, how did they rebel, which caused Moses to wish himself blotted out of the book of life, rather than to undergo the burthen of the Lord; but more especially the prophet Jeremiah, the burthen of the Lord was so heavy upon him, that he cursed the day of his birth, and desired God to send whom he would send, so he would let him alone; but God would have him and none else to deliver his message, else he would consume him before the people: so it was with John Reeve and myself, God would send none else but us two, which was sore against both our desires; but



being forced by a curse from the Lord, and I being the last liver, the burthen of the Lord hath lain heavy upon me this many years: but what am I! And what was Moses! Or what was Jeremiah, and the rest! that we should resist the voice of God, to stand in the gap in God's stead for every legal righteous man to shoot at us, and every wild beast to rend and tear, blaspheme, reproach, revile, despise, even bloody-minded men, whose soul do thirst after my life as for sweet wine! my blood would be more sweeter to them than honey, or the honey-comb! But knowing it was so with God himself when on earth, and that they would do so by him as they do by me, where he in my place, the consideration of these things doth bear up my spirit, and causeth me to strengthen myself, my God, my King, and my Redeemer. I have had great experience of David's condition, how he prayed to be delivered from his enemies, as Psalm lix; and so have I in like manner, *Deliver me from mine enemies, O my God; defend me from them that rise against me; deliver me from the workers of iniquity, and save me from bloody men, for lo! they lie in wait for my soul, not for any sin I have committed, or any wrong I have done to any man, but merely because I have declared the true God unto them, and because I say God sent me, therefore have they waited for my soul to kill it; and were it not for the outward law of the land, they could not be prevented; for they have altogether stifled that righteous law God hath written in their hearts, and hath made it useless unto them, so that my life could not be preserved, were it not for the outward law of the land; so that I have just cause to say, Lord, be not merciful to any wicked transgressors that hateth me for truth's sake, let not the Lord be merciful to*

such wicked men ; but God hath and will let me see my desire upon mine enemies, and bring them down to destruction, O Lord my God, for they have hated me without a cause, and hateth thee that sent me. Also I have had experience of the prophet Jeremiah's condition, Jer. ii. ver. 19. I know not that they had devised against me, saying, *Let us destroy the tree, with the fruit thereof* ; that is, let us destroy this Muggleton and his doctrine, which is the fruit of the tree, and let us cut him off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered. I have had great experience that wicked men have had several devises against me, saying in their hearts, let us destroy the tree, with the fruit thereof ; and let us cut this Muggleton off from the land of the living, that his name may be no more remembered. Every true prophet is the tree, and his doctrine is the fruit thereof. The reprobate, the seed of the serpent, cannot endure that any man should eat of the tree of life, and live for ever ; the serpent would have all to eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil as himself doth, therefore he devises how to destroy the tree, that is, the prophet, and the fruit thereof, that none of the seed of faith might receive his doctrine, that is eat of the tree of life, and live for ever ; therefore it is that the seed of the serpent hath devised against me, to destroy me and my writings, which is the fruit, that I might be cut off from the land of the living, that my name may be no more remembered ; that is, if wicked men could but destroy me, and burn my writings, then my name would be cut off from the land of the living, and be no more remembered, as they think, because then none could believe me. Thus I have been compassed about with wicked ungodly men, and sometimes with subtil serpents, who

who hath had many devises against me, to destroy me and my writings ; but the God of my salvation hath delivered me out of their hands hitherto, that my life is yet preserved ; and the Lord God of truth, that judgeth righteously, that triest the reins and the heart, let me see thy vengeance on them that are thy enemies as well as mine ; for unto thee have I revealed my cause, and shall wait on thee for the execution of thy wrath upon those wicked, ignorant, blind-dark devils, that hath not so much as the light of thy law written in their hearts. Thus I have given you but a little account of my long experience of the burthen of the Lord upon me ; I have complained as little of it as ever any prophet did, but of these late years I have been compassed about with wicked men more than heretofore, yet I have given less cause of late than before ; but as the saints hath increased, so hath mine enemies increased more and more. I have writ these lines unto you because you did beg them of me, because it is seven years since you received a letter from me, so that I could not well deny your request ; so I have presented these lines unto you for your further consolation, with my love to you also.

I take leave, and rest your friend in the true faith  
of the true God,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, near Moor-lane, London.*  
*August 26, 1676.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. James Whitehead, of Braintree, bearing date from London, December 31, 1679.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, James Whitehead,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated December 26, 1679, by the hand of your neighbour. And I had an hour or two's discourse; but the man said little, and objected less against what I said; only that he was troubled that he had lived to this age, and should be so ignorant of the Scriptures, and of matters of salvation; yet he stuck at continual prayer unto God, I gave him advice to let prayer alone, and to act righteousness between man and man, and let God do what he would with him after death.

This did I do when I was in your condition; for, said I, there is no question but you have prayed unto God this many years; to give you peace of mind, and assurance of salvation. For that is the desire of all men, that the soul might enter into rest in this life; then doth a man cease from his labour of prayer and worship, which he worketh in the fiery furnace of his mind, to make up his full tale of prayers and holy duties, thinking God will reward him with peace of mind, and life, and salvation, seeing he hath wrought eleven hours in the day in God's vineyard of the righteousness of the law; yet we see that man that wrought but one hour in God's vineyard of faith, he received his penny of everlasting life presently, which was the assurance of life everlasting in himself, even in this life; so that his work is done, and is entered

into his rest, as God entered into his rest from the work of creation.

Likewise the penny those had that wrought eleven hours of the day, it was credit, reputation, and honour, amongst men of the world, being thought righteous godly men, by the people of the world. This is that penny that most religious people do receive for their prayers and holy duties. This I know to be true ; and it is a good penny to have honour and credit with men in this world ; but this penny doth not satisfy the mind of those that work eleven hours in the day, as that penny doth that worketh but one hour in the righteousness of faith ; which was the cause those men did grumble ; and it is the cause now that righteous men do grumble, that a few men that believe Muggleton should be sure of their salvation in this life ; and we that have wrought all our lives long in the righteousness of God's law, cannot have that penny of satisfaction of mind.

Indeed this would cause any righteous man to grumble, as I myself did when I was in their condition ; so that the penny of this world is that penny God doth give to all legal righteous men : and the penny of assurance and satisfaction of mind, is that penny God doth give to those that truly believe in his messengers, though it be in the last hour of their lives.

Many things were spoken, and the man said little, only complained of his ignorance. The man is moderate enough, and able to hear and bear what was spoken ; nor doth not deny, nor receive any thing for absolute truth, to receive it for his own satisfaction, as I can perceive.

It is something a hard thing, when a man is old, to enter into his mother's womb to be born again, as

Nicodemus said; but as Christ said, *It is possible with God*, and it is possible with faith, though it be impossible with reason to understand; for I have known elder than he have been born again by this commission of the Spirit.

I would not have you let him hear this letter; but if he come to you perhaps he may speak something to you, whereby you may perceive whether he did like or dislike any thing he heard or saw.

Thus, with my love, and my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and to your wife, and Mr. Nicholls, and the rest.

Also Mrs. Man doth remember her kind respects unto yourself. I take leave, and rest,

Your friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, December 31, 1679.*

I am willing that John Lad, and you, and all of you, if it be convenient, to have a meeting with this Finch, as he requireth, to see what he can say for himself; and if he give occasion of a sentence, you may pass it upon him: if he denieth and forsaketh the blessing, and sold the books in contempt and dislike, or doth any ways say he was deceived by believing them or me, then you may justly give sentence upon him, never to have any discourse more with him in matters of religion; and if you think it convenient, you may read this letter of mine which follows, unto him, or as many as he will allow to hear it; but let your discourse be first with him, then will

you have the better ground to give sentence, and read my letter. And as for that Finch you spake of, I do remember you and he were once at my house, and the man was much troubled in mind, and did buy some books ; but that did not satisfy him without the blessing ; for, said he, I would have all things that might give me satisfaction and peace of mind. I told him I could give him no sentence of blessedness, except he did believe in me that I had such power ; which after a while discourse he said he did believe : upon which I gave him the blessing, in which he did continue (as I did hear) several years, and he himself did rejoice in it, and did boast of it.

As that woman that came in the coach with me, when I came to your house, as you may remember it, none being in the coach but she and I, she asked, if I went any further than Braintree ; I said, no. She asked, to whom there ? I said, to your house, naming your name. Then she asked, if I did not know one Finch ? I said, I did. Then she mistrusted that I was the man that had given this Finch the blessing ; for the woman had great troubles of this world upon her at that time, besides the fear of a worse trouble after death ; for, said she, would I could meet with that man that blessed Finch, to bless me ; for Finch, said she, was in a sad condition in his mind, and low in the world heretofore ; but, said she, he is now cheerful, and saith, he is sure he shall be happy hereafter, and did thrive in this world. He was asked, how he came by this peace ? He said, by the blessing of that prophet Mr. Whitehead believed in.

This and much more did the woman speak concerning Finch, as we rode in the coach ; but I took no notice that I was the man ; but was glad to hear that Finch had found such peace of mind.

But it seems by your letter, that now he is turned back again to the Quakers, and hath sold his books to John Lad, and doth request a meeting with him, thinking himself so strong now he is at the brink of the pit of destruction eternal, as the push of a little finger will shove him into the pit of eternal destruction ; for he doth practice the same thing as those did in the apostle Paul's time, as in Hebrews vi. who did fall back from that faith they had in his doctrine. Observe what judgment the apostle gives upon those, *For it is impossible for those who were once enlightened, and have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made partakers of the Holy Ghost, and have tasted the good word of God, and the power of the world to come ; if such fall away, it is impossible for them to be renewed by repentance.* That is, it is impossible that they should have true repentance again, that would restore them to the same peace again that they had before ; but in the room thereof they will assuredly be damned to eternity.

This is the case of this man ; for he was enlightened by believing in me, and received the Holy Ghost, in that he received the blessing ; and he tasted of the good word of God in reading those books, and of the powers of the life to come, in that he rejoiced in the peace he received in that faith for a season, as afore-related ; but now it seems he is fallen from that faith he had in this commission of the Spirit, and sold the books, not for want, but for contempt, as not worthy to be looked into by him : he hath despised the blessing which he once rejoiced in, as Esau did his birth-right, and hath sold all his interest to heaven, for to trust to the motions of reason, the light within him, the Quakers mess of pottage, for salvation ; for there is no salvation in their principles ; if there had,



Why did he not keep to them before? Doth he think to find rest there now? Surely no.

Therefore, if this man be guilty of this great fall, as I suppose he is, it *had been good for him that he had never been born*; but he cannot help it; for it is a dangerous thing to be an hypocrite to God, and to his own soul; for a true prophet represents the peace of God here on earth.

This man is like one of those branches Christ speaketh of, John xv. 6. *If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered, and men gather them, and cast them into the fire.* This Christ spake unto his disciples, he being the true vine, and the believers of him were the branches; he knowing that some that pretended to believe in him that had no true faith, therefore brought forth no fruit, nor did not continue in that faith to the end: so it is with every true commissioned prophet; he is the vine that God hath placed in his vineyard in this earth, and the believers of this prophet are the branches, and by faith they are ingrafted into this vine; and those branches that bring forth fruit of faith, and love to God, and abide in the vine, it bringeth forth new fruit of peace and joy to the end. But those withered and dried branches, which do not abide in the vine, are to be cut off, and cast into the fire of hell: or, as the fig-tree that had leaves upon it, seeming to be a good tree, but when Christ came to eat of the fruit, he found none; therefore he cursed it to wither and die, never to bring forth fruit more to eternity. I have had great experience of such like branches as these since the time of my commission.

*Written by me,*

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, December 31, 1679.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. George Gamble, in Cork in Ireland, bearing date the 12th of January, 1678.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, George Gamble,*

I HEARD a letter of yours read, dated the 19th of December 1678, to our friend Mr. Delamain, of the great troubles you are in, concerning the affairs and dealings of this world. I was sorry, and grieved in heart to hear it; but, considering in myself, that it is a common thing, especially in these troublesome days of late years, for men that are incumbered with great affairs and business in this world, to fail, and bring trouble upon themselves. It is grown a common thing, in these late years, as if it were a thing in course in this world. All men have trouble to get a little food and cloathing, let it be ever so small; it cannot be had without care and trouble. But where incumbrance is, and great profit, it creates great losses, and so great trouble. Those things doth befall both to saint and devil sometimes; so that the peace which this world gives is taken away almost from all men, both saint and devil.

As to the troubles of this world, both of the losses and crosses, you must wade through it as patiently as you can: do that moral righteousness between man and man, in these matters of the world, as you would have others do unto you; and you shall have that peace of mind as moral righteousness will afford: but as for that peace which the world cannot

give, which is that *peace of God which passeth all understanding*, which I perceive you have tasted of, in that you have believed this third and last record of the Spirit. I have had several testimonies, in your letters, of your faith in the true God, and in me his true messenger; and this faith of yours will bear your up into everlasting life; for this doctrine of the true God, and the right devil, the knowledge of these two, their forms and their natures, the one giveth the soul the assurance of eternal life, and the other frees the soul from the fear of any devil, or eternal death, which many can witness at this day. It is life eternal to know God as he is, which no man in this world at this day doth, but those who have believed our report. God hath hid these things from the world, and hath revealed them only to his chosen messengers; for the world is so blind that it counts it a needless thing to know God in his form and nature: but, blessed be the God of heaven, that hath blinded their eyes, and hath opened our eyes, to see by faith, that God hath both form and nature, in that he created man in his own image and likeness; for all the comfort of prophets, apostles, and saints, lieth in the knowledge of God's form and nature: his form is brighter than the sun, swifter than thought, yet a glorious spiritual body, in form of a man from eternity; and that this glorious, spiritual, heavenly body, in fulness of time, transmitted itself in the virgin's womb, and became a pure natural body, the Child Jesus, *God manifest in that flesh*; or more fully, *God became flesh, and dwelt among men*: so that eternity became time, and time became eternity again; and immortality became pure mortality in that body of Christ Jesus. And as immortality became pure mortality, so pure

mortality became immortality again. Therefore it is said in John's Revelation concerning Christ, that his face shone as the sun in its strength, and his head, and his hair was white as wool. And in another place he is called, *The Ancient of Days* : and he calls himself, *The first and the last, the beginning and the end; he that was dead, and is alive, and behold he is alive forevermore.*

This is that spiritual body that was from eternity; that became time; that immortality that became pure mortality, is now become eternity and immortality; that was brighter than the sun, swifter than thought. That eternity that became time, that immortality that became pure mortality is now become eternity and immortality again; therefore called *The Ancient of Days*, because he was that eternal God that created the two worlds. This is that great mystery of God *became flesh, and dwelt among men*; which mystery the holy angels desired to pry into; which the tongue of man is not able to express, but in a small measure; this is that mystery of God that was to be finished in the days of the voice of the seventh angel, when it doth sound; which is fulfilled in these our days, and will sound till time be no more: this is that foundation which God hath laid for his elect to believe; to change his own glorious immortal body, first into pure mortality, that we his servants, the prophets and apostles, and you the true believers, may understand the better the power of God, how he will *change our vile bodies, and make them like unto his glorious body*; and that *this mortality shall put on immortality*: and that you that believe may understand, that the Godhead life, when he became flesh, did but change his garment, laid down his spiritual body in the womb of the virgin, and clothed his

Godhead life with flesh and bone, as a new garment, or new body, which he will wear to all eternity.

These things are hard to be understood by the reason of men, but by faith only: this is that God I have declared unto you the seed of faith, and unto this wicked generation for which I have suffered persecution and imprisonment in several gaols; but the God of my salvation hath preserved my life to this day. This faith and knowledge, I perceive, is the comfort of your soul in this your great afflictions and troubles you are in at present. And what can I say more, but to strengthen your faith more and more in the true God, that he counted you worthy to believe his prophets report in these last days. Oh! it is a blessed thing, to know by faith in this commission of the Spirit, that you shall see God face to face, because you have believed God hath a face. This is the faith of God's elect, and by this faith we know God hath elected us from the beginning of this world. This faith gives us to know the certain knowledge of our eternal happiness. This faith gives us to know God as he is in himself, both his form and nature; and that these vile bodies of ours shall be raised spiritual bodies, and be made like unto his spiritual and glorious body, and shall sing praises unto our God, our King, and our Redeemer, in that kingdom of eternal glory. By faith I know these things will be as if I saw it with my natural eyes; for true faith is as certain an evidence to the soul of man, of things not seen with the natural eye, as the clearest sight of the natural eye can witness to any natural truth whatsoever here upon earth. This will come to pass at the end of the world, which the soul of man will not be sensible that he hath been dead a quarter of an

hour, when he is raised again; for there is no time to the dead; so that the righteous doth but pass through this natural death into eternal life and glory; and the seed of the serpent doth but pass through this natural death, into eternal death and misery.

I have been more large than I thought, but I know it will not be burthensome for you to read, because things of this nature cannot be expressed in a few words; so I shall take leave at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself and good wife, though unknown to me; and all the rest of friends whom you know in those parts. I rest your friend in the true faith of the one personal God, the man Christ Jesus in glory,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, January 12, 1678.*

In particular, pray remember my love to Mr. Rogers, whom I once saw, and had discourse with him at our Friend Delamain's house.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Major John Dennison, of Dublin, in Ireland, bearing date February 24, 1678.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Mr. John Dennison,*

I HAVE received several letters from you, wherein you have expressed yourself to have faith

and confidence in this commission of the Spirit ; but I have quite forgot that ever I sent you any answer in particular ; but having this opportunity to send by your son, I shall write these few lines unto you, as followeth :

I perceive that you have found out that strait and narrow way that leads to life eternal, which very few do find, which is in believing this last record upon earth ; which narrow and strait way to life eternal hath not been shewn to any man this thirteen hundred years and more, till within these twenty-seven years God chose John Reeve and myself, who have declared Jesus Christ to be the very God and very man, who is the way, the truth, and the life. This is that strait and narrow way that leads to life eternal, which so few do find in these our days ; yet more do find this narrow way, at this time, than have a thousand years before.

I doubt not but you have put on the armour of God as I have done, for whoever goeth this narrow way to heaven shall meet with enemies great store, both spiritual and natural. And if a man be not well armed with the armour of God, the spiritual enemies in his own heart will overcome him ; for if a man conquer his own heart, he may conquer the whole world. The armour of God is the shield of faith ; a breast-plate of righteousness, instead of a breast-plate of iron ; a helmet of salvation upon a man's head, instead of a silver head-piece ; the sword of the spirit in a man's mouth, instead of a sword of steel with a silver belt tied to his side. This helmet of salvation, it casteth out the fear of eternal damnation. This breast-plate of righteousness, it keepeth off the fiery darts of the devil's accusations in the conscience. The shield of faith, it keeps off all

doubts and questions that would arise in man's heart, concerning his eternal happiness. The sword of the Spirit is the words of faith, which cuts unbelief in sunder, both in himself and others. This is that armour that doth overcome death, hell, and the devil in man, even as Christ did without man. Oh! blessed and happy are all those that do fight the good fight of faith, there is laid up for them a crown of life, which God the righteous Judge shall give at that day, even that crown of life which he purchased with his own blood. Oh! how few do understand those things that belong to their peace. I perceive you have read our writings, and some of those letters I wrote of late, concerning my sufferings for God's cause. It was the cause of Moses, the prophets, Christ's, and the apostles' sufferings. And, last of all, it hath been the cause of my sufferings. We read the prophets and apostles of old, how they complained of the *burthen of the Lord was heavy upon them*; insomuch that Moses desired to be blotted out of the book of life, rather than be troubled any further with a rebellious people. Jeremiah the prophet was so weary of his messages of the Lord to a gainsaying people, that he cursed the day of his birth, and wished he had never been born. Paul also wished himself *accursed from Christ for his kindred and relations in the flesh*, he being sensible of the miserable condition they were in to be *damned to eternity through unbelief*. People think it is a brave thing to be a prophet, but we find it by experience to the contrary. Our honour and glory is put upon us after we are dead by the world; but while we are alive, hated and despised beyond all other men, only for speaking the truth, which the Lord hath forced us to speak; for if the world be told any judgment



shall befall them, or that God will execute any vengeance upon them, either spiritual or temporal; they will hate us, and despitefully use us: for we cannot speak peace to the people of the world, but to some few that are chosen out of the world. But to give you to understand why such great prophets and messengers of God should curse the day of their birth, and be blotted out of the book of life, and accursed from Christ, after God hath given them so full assurance of eternal salvation.

*Answer.* That Moses did not desire to be blotted out of the book of life, as to eternal salvation, and so to suffer eternal damnation, for that he knew could not be; but his desire was, that God would errase his name out of his book as a commissioner, or that God would take away his commission from him, and give it to another man, so that he might be freed from that trouble. And as for the prophet Jeremiah cursing the day of his birth with such a heavy curse, it was because he knew that if he had never been born, or died in his childhood, he should never have known trouble or sorrow; for he was so sensible of the multitude of his enemies that sought his life, and his sufferings for being a true prophet of the Lord, that he was unsensible of any glory, salvation, or happiness in the life to come; so that the persecutions and troubles of this present world, weighed in the balance of his mind more heavy than an eternal kingdom of glory hereafter: so that he wished he had never been born, then should have lain still, and have been quiet; and not have been sensible neither of joy nor sorrow. I myself have had experience of this a little; before I was chosen of God, or knew what revelation was. It came to pass that my thoughts were troubled about salvation and damnation; and the dis-

pute within me grew very great ; and the motions of faith, though I knew it not, were so strong in me, against the motions of reason in me, which then I knew not neither ; but the motions of faith being so well grounded upon the Scriptures, did prove to my reason, that there was a necessity, that some men and women should be saved, and the greatest part should be damned ; so that I saw there was a certain damnation and salvation, and both eternal ; but which way to gain the one, and escape the other, I could not tell, or what course to take ; loth I was to be damned to eternity ; and how to gain the assurance of eternal salvation, I knew not, because it lay in God's prerogative power to make me a vessel of wrath, or a vessel of mercy, which he pleased. I saw my righteousness, nor prayer, nor any good deeds I could do, would not save me, if he had made me a vessel of wrath ; so that my hope was cut off, and almost utter despair in the room ; so that I wished in my heart that I had never been born ; or that I had died in my mother's womb ; for I did not desire so much to be saved, so that I could but escape being damned : I knew no evil I had done why I should be damned ; but God's prerogative will not be limited by any law whatsoever but his own will ; if he will have mercy, or if he will not have mercy, how should I, his poor creature, gainsay it. This lay heavy upon my soul, so that I was forced to summon it to God's prerogative power, and immediately after I found rest to my soul ; and not many hours after, the Heavens were opened, and the windows thereof, and it poured down showers of revelations ; and knowledge in the Scriptures above all the men in this world, at this day ; and it hath and doth remain with me to this

day ; which is now almost twenty-eight years. This is but a hint of those things I have had experience of, after I had revelation to interpret Scripture, and satisfaction in my own soul, and assurance of my salvation. I was well contented, for no man can certainly know he shall not be damned, unless he first be sure he shall be saved.

This I know to be true, and when I had all this laid up in my heart, as a treasure in heaven, where no doubt could arise, nor in the least think that God would choose me to be a prophet. I always loved the prophets of old, but was very unwilling to be one myself ; so that I have wished since (as Jeremiah did) that God would have chosen some other man, and have let me alone ; but God chose whom he will, and who shall gainsay it : and blessed be the God of Heaven that hath redeemed my soul with his own blood, and hath freed me, and many others, from the fear of eternal death, which is the second death ; who hath preserved my life from the mouth of the lion, and from the paw of the bear ; from the great men of this earth, and from the poor of this wicked generation, these many years ; and hath carried me through many dangers, persecutions, and imprisonments, for his name's sake, and for the good of others that do truly believe in this third and last record of the Spirit. I know I shall be missed, when I am gone, by the saints, but the devils will rejoice, because there will never arise another true prophet after me, like unto me, while this world endureth. I have been longer than I thought, but I hope it will be no great burthen for you to read. But shall take leave at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, not forgetting Colonel Phaire ;

Mr. Gamble, Mr. Rogers, and Captain Gale, with  
the rest of that little flock in those parts, I rest

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, Feb. 25, in the Year 1678.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton to Michael Pett, in Kent, bearing date  
the 25th of February, 1678.*

*Loving friend, Michael Pett,*

I RECEIVED a letter of yours by the hand of  
Mr. Shelley, wherein your desire is, that I would  
satisfy a question or two of your wife's, she being, as  
it seems to me, unsatisfied in her mind concerning  
her salvation; and she would willingly attain the  
assurance of her eternal happiness by prayer. For,  
say you, your wife questions if we are not to pray  
with motions in the mind for assistance, for want of  
satisfaction.

In this question you are sore afflicted with fears  
and doubts.

The second question is, if the revelation which  
Mr. Claxton writes of, proceeded from God, or if it  
proceeded from faith.

Likewise you say, if God do not give his in-shining

light with all. For instance, you say, see Matthew, the 7th chapter and the 7th verse.

This is the whole substance of the matter. Now, I know not whether this affliction of fears and doubts doth arise from yourself, or from your wife, her soul being afflicted not only for want of her eternal salvation; but the present fear of her eternal damnation, or endless misery. This is that which maketh the hearts of all men and women, to fear, doubt, and fail. I understand your wife was to see me, with your father Harris, when I was in prison; but I have quite forgot the favour of the woman; neither do I remember her at all; neither do I know whether she did ever believe any thing of the doctrine or power of this commission of the Spirit or no; yet if she hath not been a despiser, blasphemmer, or opposer of the doctrine or declaration of this commission of the Spirit, in calling it blasphemy, delusion, and lies, or any thing of that nature, which cometh under the sin against the Holy Ghost; I shall give her any satisfaction, and it shall be effectual to comfort her troubled soul, if she can but believe.

And as for your first question, whether you are not bound to pray with motions in the mind for assistance; seeing you want satisfaction of mind. And for example, you think you have Christ's words for it, in the 7th chapter of Matthew, and the 7th verse, where he saith to his disciples, *Ask, and it shall be given you; seek, and you shall find; knock, and it shall be opened unto you.*

This you are to mind, that they were Christ's disciples, that did believe in him; therefore he gave them this exhortation, to pray in faith, knock in faith, and so in faith they should find in their own souls the assurance of everlasting life; so that heaven-gate should be

opened unto them, and they shall enter into their eternal rest, even while in this world; as you may see the like words of Christ, Matthew the 21st, and 22d verse, speaking to his own disciples, who did believe in him, saith, *All things whatsoever ye shall ask in prayer, believing, ye shall receive*; so that there is nothing to be had of heavenly peace, joy, or glory, or the assurance of everlasting life, by prayer, except it be the prayer of faith; that is, to believe in the true God, and to believe that messenger he doth send. Likewise in Mark, the 11th chapter, and 24th verse, *Therefore I say unto you, what things soever ye desire when ye pray, believe that ye receive them, and ye shall have them*; so that there is no heavenly gift whatsoever to be had, but by the prayer of faith, which is to believe, as I said before. So James the first, and 5th and 6th verses, saith, *If any of you, meaning believers of his commission, lack wisdom, let him ask it of God*; that is, heavenly wisdom, which maketh men and women wise unto salvation; but let him ask it in faith, nothing wavering, nor doubting; for if the soul doubt, he shall receive nothing of the Lord. This is that prayer of faith which did heal the sick in the apostles time; and this is that prayer of faith that healeth the wounded soul of every man and woman in these our days, who have set to their seals, in believing the doctrine and declaration declared by us the witnesses of the Spirit, and that we two are the two last witnesses and prophets that God will ever send, to the end of this world: this is that faith that many men and women have, by it, removed mountains, and high hills, of ignorance and darkness, which lay before their understandings, by the power of faith in this commission of the Spirit, into the bottom of the sea, that is, into utter oblivion; so that

peace of mind enters into the soul, and bringeth the assurance of eternal life into the soul ; so that eternal life doth abide in them, and are entered into their rest, having no need to pray any more ; for where the assurance of eternal life is granted, what need that soul pray for the same thing again, which he hath in possession. This prayer may be called the prayer of faith, which is the motions of the mind in secret ; and so we pray in secret, and our faith, peace, and joy, and heavenly knowledge, being increased in secret, in the mind or soul, it comes to be rewarded openly in the kingdom of glory : but as for publick prayer to be heard of men, that is the practice of all hypocrites ; they do imitate the words of Christ, which he said to his own disciples and believers ; therefore it is they pray, but are never heard ; they ask for peace, and assurance of God's mercy, but never receive any : they knock at heaven-gate a thousand times, but the gate is never opened unto them, because they are like the foolish virgins, *that have no oil in their lamps* ; so they have many prayers to heaven, but no faith in their hearts ; so that in the day of death the door of heaven is shut against them ; then are they forced to go the broad way into utter darkness : but the prayer of faith, if it be but once in his life-time, it is of that power with God, that he will open the gate of heaven, and let him in, even as the door of his heart was opened to receive his prophet's report, and let the King of glory, that is, the knowledge of the true God, his form, and nature, enter into his soul here in this life.

This prayer need not be said day after day. Let any man or woman pray this prayer of faith but once in their life-time, and the gates of heaven shall

be opened unto them, and they shall enter into the Paradise of peace here on earth, and into the assurance of eternal glory hereafter.

This experience hath shewed me, and many others, both men and women can witness the truth of it; so that you may well perceive, that if you have no faith in your prayer, and do not believe God will answer you in peace, you had better let it alone, and submit to God's prerogative power, let him do what he will with you after death. This was my way, and many more that have followed me have found rest to their souls; for so long as you practise that which was others duty to do, you will never find peace of mind here in this life, no more than all professors of religion do, notwithstanding the multitude of prayers they make; yet not a man of them hath true peace and assurance of their salvation in themselves. Why? Because they act over the apostle's commission again, which was given to those people that believed them. Therefore I shall say this unto the woman, that if she can but believe me, and follow my advice, and let prayers alone, though I know she cannot hinder the motions, if she could she would, her soul would be quiet; but if she can but let God alone, and submit to his prerogative power, in matters of salvation and damnation; for there is no striving with the Creator, neither will he be intreated to alter his will or purpose. If she can but take this yoke upon her, it is but easy and light, but seems very heavy to reason. My soul for hers she shall be saved; and in a small time the day-star of light in her understanding will arise, and bring peace and rest to her soul.

And as for Claxton's revelation, it proceeded from the seed of faith in himself, from that faith he had in John Reeve and myself, and not from God without



him; neither did God choose him as he did John Reeve and myself, by voice of words. But however, the things he wrote concerning God and devil were true; but you need not concern yourself any ways with him as long as I am alive.

I have written the more large, on purpose to satisfy your troubled soul, if possible. So take leave, and rest,

Your friend in what I may,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, Feb. 26, 1678.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Nosworthy, in Antigua, bearing date the 3d of March, 1678.*

*Loving friend in the true faith, Thomas Nosworthy,*

THIS is to certify you, I received your letter, dated Antigua, July 12, 1678, by the hands of our friend John Saddington. I am glad to hear of your health; also to let you know, that we received your kind token you sent to my wife, the barrel of pickled limes, and a box of sugar; for which my wife and myself do return you many thanks; but as for those commodities which you sent, and whether any friends will venture any thing in way of traffick for those commodities that country or island doth afford, I

leave it to Mr. Saddington to give you an account of it; for I have not commerce with any men of the world. Also I am glad to hear, that your faith is so strong in the true God, and in this commission of the Spirit: and as for the thing you request of me, to satisfy your conscience as to matter of fighting, in case you are forced to it, I confess the power of liberty in this case lieth only in me. But I have considered, that we have no express command from the Lord to lay that bond upon every believer, let his case be ever so desperate or dangerous, in a strange land, where no hiding-place is, nor none to suffer with himself to utter ruin, the enemies being not of the same profession, neither in the temporal affairs; nor of the same profession in religion; neither is it in those strange islands, amongst the heathen, as it is here in England, Ireland, and Scotland, who profess all one faith, though very few have true faith. Besides, here is many hiding-places here, and safer to be in prison than to go to war, so it be for that cause only: but in those islands people must do as they do, else utter ruin will befall. Therefore, as the old proverb saith, "If you will live at Rome, you must do as Rome doth."

Upon this consideration I do give you leave to submit to the laws and customs of that island, which are for the defence and preservation of the temporal life, and the estates of the people, against the heathen, and any other enemies that seek to invade that island, and you shall be justified in your conscience, as if you had never borne arms at all. Let these lines satisfy you in this matter.

I was intended to send an answer to you long before now, but could never hear that any ship went to Antigua before now.

Mr. Saddington saw Captain Broad, and he said, that he setteth out for Antigua the 10th day of March next.

This is all at present, hoping these lines will come safe to your hands, and find you in good health, as I and my wife are at present, only my love, with my wife's love remembered to yourself, with my love to her that was Mrs. Heathcocke, and tell her that Mrs. Griffith is yet alive.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, March 3, 1678.*

---

*The Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Blessing to Alexander Delamaine, junior, bearing date November 18, 1678.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Alexander Delamaine, the younger,*

I HAVE considered the tenderness of your age, and the innocency of your nature, and more especially the love and growth of your faith in this commission of the Spirit, in so short a time, even in the sixth hour of the day; and seeing you have desired a line or two of my own hand-writing, I do know what your request is for; and I, having this opportunity, cannot but grant your desire. Therefore, in obedience to my commission, I do pronounce you blessed in soul and body to eternity. Only I shall say unto

you, as Christ did when on earth, to some that he had done some notable miracle upon; he bade them go their way, *and tell no man*, what good they had received from his words; *but they blazed it abroad so much the more*. So likewise I say unto you, let no man see this writing but your father and mother, if you can possible, lest you provoke others to do the same, as several of our friends have done the same heretofore, for want of my giving them a caution to the contrary.

*Written by me,*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

---

*A Copy of Mrs. Elizabeth Roe's Blessing, written by the Prophet Mr. Lodowicke Muggleton, bearing date December 5, 1678.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Elizabeth Roe,*

YOU have made choice of two persons, whom I love well, to intercede for you, namely, Ann Delamaine, formerly Ann Hall, and my wife, to prevail with me to give you a blessing in writing; which thing I have refused to do unto several, and to yourself, because I gave it to you by word of mouth.

But your desires are so extreme, as the woman's was to the unjust judge, though he neither feared God nor honoured man, yet, because of her extreme suit unto him, for his own greatness-sake, he would

do her justice upon her enemies ; or as Jacob, that would not let God go till he blessed him. Here God seemed to put Jacob off without it ; but through his great strength of faith he prevailed with God to bless him. Besides, we see by the Scriptures, that God, for to try a man or woman's faith, doth condescend to be counted by the reason of man, to be an unjust judge : and the woman's faith, that was so strong to be troublesome and wearisome to him, as justices are with a brawling woman's tongue ; for that parable was spoken, and related to heavenly things.

I write not these lines to you, as thinking you unworthy of a blessing ; only I do not usually give it in writing, and by word of mouth both ; but considering your desires are so important and urgent, and your advocates aforesaid so well beloved of the Lord, and of me, I do declare you, Elizabeth Roe, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity. And this blessing shall bear you up in the resurrection into eternal life, where you shall see our God, our King, and our Redeemer, face to face, to eternity.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*December 5, 1678.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to his Kinsman, Mr. Roger Muggleton, of Wilbarston, in Northamptonshire, bearing date December 14, 1678.*

*Dear and loving Cousin, Roger Muggleton,*

**I RECEIVED** your letter, dated November 26, 1678, and am glad to hear of your recovery of the mishap that befel you, to put your ankle out of joint. Indeed I had great hopes to have seen you at Cambridge. I went about the fair at Sturbridge to find you out, and so did several others of our friends, persons of quality, from London, and out of the country, knowing that I would be there, not only for my sake, but hoping to see you, because you are a Muggleton, and my near kinsman; they love you, not only for my sake, but for your own sake, because the name of Muggleton is precious in the eyes of all the saints, but despised and hated of the world, and of reprobated men and women. God hath honoured the name of Muggleton above all the men in the world at this day, in that he hath preserved my life these many years, to be his last chosen prophet and witness of the Spirit, that God will ever send to the end of the world; and the next age and generation, after I am dead, shall call me blessed, though their fathers said, when I was alive, Muggleton was a blasphemer, a false prophet, a liar, and deceiver, a man not fit to live; but their children shall call me blessed, and say, had we lived in our fathers days, we would not have reviled nor persecuted this Muggleton, as our fathers did that hath declared such heavenly

mysteries beyond the prophet and apostles that went before him, or any that shall come after him, to the end of the world.

*Dear Cousin,*

I am glad the God of Heaven hath preserved you, of our father's house, to keep up the name and house from whence I sprang. Our fore-fathers were all plain men, yet downright honest men; men of no great repute in the world, nor of base report, as ever I could hear. And it was always God's practice, in all ages, to chuse men of low degree, and raise them up to the greatest honour and dignity. As for example, what was the first king in Israel, Saul, but a keeper of his father's asses? And David a keeper of sheep, yet made a king? What were the prophets of old, many of them, but herdsmen? and the apostles, but fishermen? Very mean employments; yet God hath honoured them with great honour, that hath made poor men kings, prophets, and apostles. And why should it seem strange to the world, that God should chuse two taylors, namely, John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, to be his two last true prophets, and witnesses of the Spirit, in this last age of the world? A taylor is more honourable with kings, and princes, and noblemen of this world, than herdsmen and fishermen: but no prophet or apostle hath honour in this world, while he is alive; for the honour the world puts upon a prophet is after he is dead; and so it will be by John Reeve and myself.

I write these lines to strengthen and comfort you, in that the God of Heaven hath chosen one of your father's house, and hath revealed unto him life and salvation, as you will find in those writings you have;

and I wish you may peruse them as much as you can; they will enlighten your understanding in things of eternity.

I have great encouragement to believe you are one of the blessed seed of faith, and my cousin Anne, though you have been kept in darkness, and unacquainted with me, till within these few years; so that I perceive you do not love me only because I am your kinsman, but because the light of faith which is the day-star, is risen in your heart, though but dimly, yet in truth, which will bear you up into everlasting life, which none of my relations ever did receive before, but my two daughters, this twenty seven years almost, since I was chosen of God.

I shall not trouble you further at this time, only to let you know that my daughter Whitfield is well, and my son White is well, and myself is very well in health at present; only I am so racked and taxed, upon that small visible estate in houses, and tenants so bad to pay rent in these troublesome times, the oppression is so great that I am forced to leave my house, and let it stand empty.

Therefore, dear cousin, if you do come to London at the spring, which I hope you will, for I would be glad to see you, or send any letter in the mean time to me, direct your letter, or your person, to Mr. Alexander Delamain, upon Bread-street-hill, a tobacconist, at the sign of the Three Tobacco-pipes, and it will come safe to my hands.

This, with my love, and my wife's love, presented unto you and your wife, and to my cousin Anne; I take leave, and rest.

Your loving Cousin,  
 LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

December 14, 1678.



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lolloweicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date July 29, 1679, directed to Slade-house, in Staffordshire.*

*Living Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*  
 I RECEIVED your letter, dated July 15, 1679, wherein I am glad to hear of your health, and more glad to hear of the joy and comfort you do receive in your soul, by your faith in this commission of the Spirit: for indeed there is no true peace of mind to be found in any man or woman's soul here upon earth, but in the doctrine, declaration, and commission of the Spirit, which God gave unto John Reeve and myself. And as it hath pleased God to preserve me to be the longest liver, I have not been idle in the work of the Lord, since the burthen of the Lord was laid upon me, which is above twenty years since John Reeve died. I have wondered in myself of late, how I have been enabled to go through those many troubles and persecutions from devils, and to write so much as I have, both in books and letters. It is almost unspeakable, were they calculated all that I have written, besides the many and various disputes, in answering the questions, both in saints and devils, both in prison and out of prison. But the God of my salvation never let that well that was digged in my soul, before I had a commission from him, to stand dry; but the well of living water did continually

spring up in my soul, with new revelations, in opening the scriptures; and to answer to every person's question and objection that could arise out of the heart of man. All questions in spiritual matters were easy to me; the revelation of faith in me never studied what answer to give; for as Christ saith, *He that believeth in me, out of his belly shall flow rivers of living water.* Now, true faith in the soul doth dig a well in a man's belly. Why? Because the heart of man doth lie in the upper part of a man's belly; so that out of the heart of man, which lieth in the belly, doth flow rivers of living water, or rivers of water of death; for there is a well of water in every man, and this well is always springing up: if the well that faith hath digged, then springs up revelations, heavenly wisdom, peace of conscience, joy in the Holy Ghost, the assurance of everlasting life, and never to study for to live a good life, or to gain more faith and knowledge! For out of this well doth spring living water, that satisfies the soul: it taketh away the desire of more knowledge, or more faith, than it hath; for the well spring of life is always rising in the heart, with motions of peace, the growth of faith, with new and fresh knowledge and experience in those things it hath believed, so that it is a man's own faith that makes him whole. Only God gave faith in the original, in the seed; but God's messengers digged this well in every true believer, in that faith cometh by hearing the word of God preached, and *how can he preach except he be sent?* So that he that preacheth the truth diggeth a well in his heart that believeth his report. For believing is faith; and this faith cometh by hearing the word of God preached. And this faith which came by hearing the word of God preached, is

that seed that was sown in good ground, or that faith which digged a well in man's heart, which is it is that water of life Christ speaketh of, which whoever hath this well of water in him shall never thirst more after heavenly peace, or assurance of eternal life.

These things many can experience at this day besides myself.

Also the seed of reason, that the reprobate angel gave in the original, hath a well of water in them also; and this well is digged in the souls of men and women, by false preachers, that went before they were sent to, and out of this well doth arise water of death, instead of water of life. From this well of water in men and women's souls, or hearts, doth arise unbelief, a troubled mind, a wounded conscience, the fear of eternal damnation, despair of hope, of God's mercy. This is that river, or well of water, that floweth out of the belly of the seed of reason in reprobate men and women. From these two wells of water in men doth spring water of life eternal, and water of death eternal; and from no other wells whatsoever. But blessed and happy are you, and all those that have and do drink of that living water that floweth out of his own belly, by believing, or having faith of this commission of the Spirit in this last age. And miserable and cursed will those be that hath and doth drink the water of death, that floweth out of his own belly, by unbelief, and persecuting of the commission of the Spirit in this last age.

These lines may give you some light into things that have not been treated upon heretofore. And that I can truly say, as the apostle Paul to those that believed in him, that I have declared unto you the

whole council of God, as it hath been revealed unto me. I have kept nothing secret, but have revealed it upon the house-top of men's understanding.

I shall not trouble you further; but take leave, and rest.

Your Friend in the true Faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*July 29, 1679.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date from London; July 24, 1680.*

*Loving Friend, Thomas Tompkinson,*

**I PERGEIVE**, your brother and sister is in some trouble, and desire my advice in it. I cannot tell how to give advice in that which I do not know: the ground and cause. You say there is coming out a distress upon them, or rather a sequestration of the third-part of their estate of land, being proceeded against as persons offending, and taken in with some papists, and thereupon an order came from the sheriff to repair to him such a day, and to pay him eight pounds, as a debt due to the king for his lands, upon default of which two of the sheriff's men came and distrained; but he loosed his goods, and paid the money.

This is the whole substance of the matter. Now,

whether your brother Barton hath been sued as a papist, or been confederate with papists, and sued as an offender, I know not; or whether he hath been sued as a nonconformist, or for not going to church. If they take away the third-part of his land, for not going to church, and that is the only fault he hath committed, he being a Protestant, he may have relief by the law hereafter, but not at present; for it is the grand-jury that giveth away all the privileges of the people, especially if they be Dissenters: the jury doth so in other counties, as well as your's; and they do strive what they can to do so to all those called fanatics, if they could; only this city of London is a curb which causeth several counties to forbear; but if he be a Papist, or not paying of tythes, it will be a vain thing for any person to stand against it, because of Queen Elizabeth's laws; and several proclamations have been put out lately against them; therefore to no purpose for papists to stand it out. And if your fault be nothing else but for not going to church, it is dangerous for any sheriff to take away the third-part of a man's land; but how shall any man help it in these times, being given by a jury? My advice should be to you, as it was to a friend of mine in Kent lately, who was sued at several quarter-sessions, for not going to church; and the man was freed, and declared by the judge of the court not to be guilty of any penalty; yet, after the judge was gone from his seat, the grand-jury brought him in guilty, and ordered that his land should be measured, and the third-part for the king.

Now, I advised him to let them measure his land, and see who dares buy it. Nobody dares buy land, or give any money for it upon such an account; he must be exceeding wicked that would do such a thing.

But how this matter is ended I cannot tell: My advice to you is the same, if your land be your own, and not farmed; if farmed, they cannot meddle with it; and if it be your own, let them sequester, and sell the third-part of it, if they can; for they must not meddle with none of the crop nor stock upon the land; they are to have nothing but the bare land: and who will buy it of the king, or for the king? Perhaps some will beg it of the king, and sell it for a small matter to the person himself.

But I perceive by your letter, that the sheriff's men have distrained his goods instead of his land; and that your brother hath paid eight pounds in money; so that the sheriff's men, and the sheriff himself, is satisfied. In that you have paid to the sheriff the eight pounds, you have satisfied the king's debt, and satisfied for your fault, whatsoever it was: so that your goods and your land are both redeemed, and your fault forgiven for the present, till the next fault is committed; then perhaps half your land may become indebted to the king, and so on, till the king hath it all. If it proves so, let him have it; for you cannot help yourself; so that you need not to have sent to me for any advice in this matter, seeing you have paid the sheriff the eight pounds already: the eight pounds is the sheriff's; he receiveth all the king's debts that is due, of that nature; so that the sheriff hath got the third-part of your land; so he hath left you worth twenty-four more in land. He might, if he would have any mercy for you, have taken half the money; but the other second-part of your land will serve the next sheriff. This sheriff hath got his share. You must bear it patiently; and being for conscience-sake you suffer the loss of your land, your peace will be greater, if you keep your

confidence to the end. Your mind will be made free to part with all your land for conscience sake. You will receive an hundred-fold of peace and content in this life; and you will heap coals of fire upon the heads of your enemies; for the sentence upon you was only out of envy and malice.

This is all at present, but rest

Your friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, June 24, 1680.*

*POSTSCRIPT.*

After the writing of this, I understand, that your brother Burton and sister did suffer upon the account of being Papists, because they durst not confess they owned Muggleton; because the name of Muggleton at that time was very odious in this nation, and the Papists at that time was very much favoured by the nation in general, and by the powers of the nation were assisted; but Muggleton was altogether despised, and trod under foot; so that you chose rather in the time of persecution, to shelter yourself under the Papists, to save your estate, than to own the name of Muggleton.

Was it the faith you had in Muggleton's doctrine, that caused you to refrain from going to the church of England to worship? Or was it the Papist principle that caused you to refrain, or their liberty? You seemed to own me before the believers of this commission; but before your enemies you durst not

confess me before them; so that you disabled yourselves to give a reason of the faith and hope that was in you, to any enemy that should ask you. You have fulfilled the words of Christ, that saith, *He that denieth me before men*, that is, before enemies; for no man denies Christ before the believers of Christ; therefore, whoever denies Christ before his enemies must be denied of him before God. The case is the same now; whoever denieth the commission of the Spirit before men, even their enemies, denieth God's messengers, therefore ought to be denied by him; but whoever confesseth Christ, or his messengers, before men, they will confess him before the God of Heaven: and whoever doth lose house or land for truth's sake, shall receive as much peace and content of mind in this life, as will weigh in the balance equal with house and land, besides life everlasting in the world to come. But I perceive you have lost the third part of your land for a lie, for being a Papist, which I do think you never did own in your heart; but your silence in not denying it, nor confessing your faith to the contrary, you have received judgment and sentence in not going to church, as an absolute Papist, and not as a Muggletonian. Now many of the judges of the land, and many of the clergy, and bishops of the land, and all the courts of England, both of London and elsewhere, and gaol-keepers, and all sorts of people, do know that Muggleton himself is no Papist; witness those many hundred books they took from me, and the universities are furnished with: and my standing upon the pillory hath witnessed to the whole nation that Muggleton is no Papist; and most of the believers of England and Ireland are known by the name of Muggleton, to be no Papists; neither was ever any person that hath



suffered for not going to church; as I have known several that were Muggletonians; and the judges did know that they were Muggleton's people; but none suffered as a Papist: but now you have given an example.

## LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*Lodowicke Muggleton's Letter to Robert Peirce, concerning the Holy Ghost.*

*Loving Friend, Robert Peirce,*

I RECEIVED a letter from you, dated July 9, 1680, wherein I perceived you received a letter from me, and that you being not at home, but your brother was, and through the ignorance or the covetousness of your brother, the letter was carried back again, for want of one penny more than usually the post hath; it was very weakly done, for posts will not abate any thing of what the letter is marked, so that the letter is absolutely lost, except you go to the post-house in Taunton, and ask for a letter so long ago, directed to Robert Peirce, at St. James's, in Taunton; it was a large letter, but it was not from me, it was from a friend of mine, his name is Alexander Delamaine, from the Three Tobacco-pipes, on Bread-street Hill, tobacconist; he wrote that letter to you.

The other thing of concernment in your letter is, you desire me to shew you the meaning of two places in Scripture, which I perceive you would desire to

know, in what sense you may believe and satisfy your mind, whether the Holy Ghost did descend upon Christ, when he was baptized of John, in a bodily shape really? or whether it is to be understood in some other sense? To which I answer and say,

That the Holy Ghost that descended in a bodily shape on Christ like a dove, it was really so; for when all the people were baptized of John, Christ being the last that was baptized of John at that time; and after Jesus was baptized he prayed, and the *Heavens were opened, and the Holy Ghost descended in a bodily shape, like a dove, and it lighted upon him.*

Now to give you to understand that none saw this Holy Ghost descend upon Christ in a bodily shape like a dove, but Christ himself and John the Baptist; neither did any person see the Heavens open, nor heard the voice from Heaven, which said, *Thou art my beloved son, in thee I am well pleased.* I say no person did see the Heavens open, nor hear the voice, but Christ, and John the Baptist.

Now it may be rejected, whether that voice was from that bodily shape like a dove, that was upon Christ, or from some other person in Heaven.

To which I answer, the voice from Heaven was not from that which appeared in a bodily shape like a dove, the voice was from Elias, that was in Heaven, and it was he which said, *Thou art my well-beloved son, in thee I am well pleased,* Luke iii. ver. 22. This was the same Elias that spake here, that spake the same words in Matthew xvii. ver. 3. *And behold there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with Christ.* And in the 5th verse, *While he was yet speaking, a bright cloud overshadowed them, (that is) Peter, James, and John; and behold a voice out of the cloud, which said,*

*This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased, hear ye him.* Here it is clear, that Elias acted his part in Heaven as God the Father of Christ, while Christ that was God became flesh, or God manifest in the flesh: while he went that long and sore journey here upon earth, it was of great necessity that he should put a faithful governor in Heaven to represent the person of the Father, and he invested him with all power in Heaven above while he passed through death, and quickened into life again, and ascended up into the same glory which he had before the world was.

Here you that have faith may see the bright cloud that brought Moses and Elias from Heaven, and that the presence of them talking with Christ caused his face to shine as the sun, and his raiment was as white as the light; and this bright cloud carried Moses and Elias to Heaven again, which cloud, as it ascended up to Heaven, it overshadowed Peter, James and John, and Christ himself; and out of this cloud as it did ascend Elias spake through the cloud; so that James, Peter and John, and Christ himself, heard the voice out of the cloud, which said, *This is my beloved son, in whom I am well pleased, hear ye him.* This voice confirmed Peter, James and John in their faith, that Christ was indeed the Son of God; but Christ charged them to tell no man the vision until he was risen from the dead; neither did they tell it to any man, until afterwards they told it to Matthew, Mark, Luke, and others, for none of the Evangelists nor Epistles were written until after Christ was risen and ascended: so that none saw this bright cloud, nor heard Moses and Elias' voice but these three, Peter, James and John, and Christ himself; and no man saw the Holy Ghost descend in a bodily shape like a

dove unto Christ, but John the Baptist, and Christ himself; yet Matthew and Luke, that never saw any such thing, they must write and publish it by revelation, which is as it were at the second hand, yet ought to be believed, as if God himself had spoken to every man in particular.

And why the Holy Ghost did appear in a bodily shape like a dove? It was only to signify the innocency of his person, and innocency of his practice, and innocent actions, that there should be *no guile found in his mouth*; and to confirm John in his message, *whose shoe-latchets he was not worthy to unloose*. And this is to be minded, that Elias being immortalized of God, before God became flesh several hundred years; but when time appointed was come for God to fulfil the promise made to Adam, and was expected by Enoch, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and the prophets, that *the seed of the woman should break the serpent's head*; which should be done no other way, but in that God became flesh; so that Christ is very God became flesh, as the Scripture saith.

Now upon this wonderful mystery, before God did become flesh, he did ordain, appoint and invest Elias with power and glory, and majesty, to sit in the throne of God as God, on the same throne of glory as he himself was in before he became flesh; so that Elias did govern the Heavens above, and watch over Christ's person as God the Father, all that time that God was become flesh, until he ascended into the same glory which he had before the world was.

And when the Holy Ghost doth descend upon a person or persons, as it did upon Christ in a bodily shape like a dove, it was to endue him with an extraordinary power above all other men, that have the gift of the Holy Ghost in a bodily shape like a dove.

It did impower, or give power to Christ after he was baptized of John, to increase in wisdom, knowledge, patience and meekness, above all, and did impower him to work miracles, to open the eyes of the blind, the lame to walk, and dumb to speak, and the dead to be raised, which no man else could do: this power was given to Christ when he was baptized of the Holy Ghost, that descended upon him in a bodily shape like a dove; and Elias being in the glory of the Father, sent his appearance like a dove upon Christ, he being then in the condition of a creature, though without sin: for this is to be minded, that Christ never did any miracle till after the descending of the Holy Ghost upon him, then it was he received his commission from Heaven, to teach and preach, and work miracles, signs and wonders; so that where the Holy Ghost doth appear in any visible form, one or more, it is because some great and mighty work is to be done by that person or persons to whom this visible appearance of the Holy Ghost is presented, as you may see, *Acts ii. ver. 3.* When the apostles were met together, and were to receive their commission to preach from Heaven, as Christ had told them before he was ascended, that he would endue them with power from on high; and now he is ascended into the glory of the Father again, he sendeth the Holy Ghost in the visible shape of *cloven tongues, like unto fire;* and this Holy Ghost sat upon each of the twelve apostles, as in the third verse, *And there appeared unto them, cloven, tongues like unto fire, and it sat upon each of them;* and the fourth verse, *And they were filled with the Holy Ghost, and began to speak with other tongues, as the spirit gave them utterance.*

Here you may see, that when Christ was ascended into the glory of the Father again, the same glory

which he had left with Elias while he became flesh and in the condition of a creature. I say, when he ascended into that glory again, he sent the Holy Ghost to sit upon each of them *like cloven tongues of fire*.

Now mind, no person saw the visible shape of these *cloven tongues like of fire*, but the twelve apostles, who were commissioned, but they declared it to others.

Here we see these cloven tongues of fire was the Holy Ghost, which Christ sent from Heaven to empower them to preach the gospel to all nations, and to speak with other tongues, which they never were taught nor learned in, and to work miracles; and so, many signs and wonders were wrought by them: to be plain, these cloven tongues, as of fire, was the Holy Ghost, which gave the twelve apostles their commission to do these things aforesaid.

Now observe, when Elias was in the glory of the Father, he sent the Holy Ghost in the visible shape of a dove, and it descended upon Christ really in that form before said, but the Holy Ghost that Christ sent down from Heaven, when he was in the glory of the Father, it descended and sat upon the apostles, in the visible shape and form, was *cloven tongues like unto fire*; yet both these shapes are called the Holy Ghost, which did empower both Christ to act those miracles, and the work of redemption for the elect seed, and did enable him to suffer the pains of death, and to quicken out of death, and to rise again, and to ascend into Heaven: and the apostles were enabled by the Holy Ghost, which sat upon them like *cloven tongues as it were of fire*, to preach life and salvation to the world by this Jesus, who suffered death, and rose again, and ascended up into Heaven, whereof

they were witnesses; and these *cloven tongues as of fire* was a visible shape to the apostles.

Now to satisfy you further, this Holy Ghost that descended upon Christ, in the shape of a dove, nor that Holy Ghost that descended upon the apostles in the shape of *cloven tongues like fire*. I say, this Holy Ghost was not God, but proceeded from God; and Elias being in the throne and place of God, he had power to send the Holy Ghost in the shape of a dove.

And when Christ was in his throne again, he had power to send the Holy Ghost on the twelve apostles, like cloven tongues as of fire; for the person of God never was in the form of a dove, nor in the form of cloven tongues like fire, but his person was in the form of a man from all eternity; therefore it is that *he made man in his own likeness*. Therefore I say, let not any man imagine that this Holy Ghost was God, and so ground three persons in the Trinity, as the blind reason in man doth; for God's person was always in the form and shape aforesaid.

Some may say, what then is that which is called the Holy Ghost?

To which I answer, that this Holy Ghost spoken of in the Scripture, is the Spirit of God, and doth proceed from God; so that every true believer may be said to receive the Holy Ghost, or to have the Spirit of God in him, because he believeth the report of those that have either the spirit of prophesy or revelation, or that hath the Holy Ghost by way of vision, as Christ had, and the apostles had in a more extraordinary manner; for he that hath the spirit of prophesy, revelation, or inspiration, hath a great measure of the Holy Ghost in him, but not so large a measure as those that receive the Holy Ghost by

visible appearances. Now all this doth come by receiving the Holy Ghost, which is called the Spirit of God.

And when this wisdom and knowledge ariseth in man's heart secretly, as beforesaid, it is not for such outward visible public work as it did to Christ and the apostles.

Likewise Stephen was a man full of the Holy Ghost, but he was filled with the Holy Ghost by secret inspiration and revelation; and so it is said that David by the Holy Ghost did prophesy concerning Christ, but this was secret likewise, Acts viii. ver. 15. *Peter and John prayed, and the people received the Holy Ghost*, for as yet the Holy Ghost was not fallen upon none of them; and the 17th Verse, *Then laid they their hands on them, and they received the Holy Ghost*; and in the 19th Verse, one Simon proffered Peter and John money, saying, *Give me also this power, that on whomsoever I lay my hands, they may receive the Holy Ghost*. Here you may see, that Peter and John, that were in the state of mortality, had power to give the Holy Ghost on whom they laid their hands.

If mortal men, that received their commission and power from Christ, the only God, when he had passed through death, and ascended into the same glory, could give the Holy Ghost to whom they laid their hands on, why should it seem strange to any man, that Elias, who was immortalized and glorified, who sat in the throne of the Father, even of God, while Christ the God went that far journey in the flesh; it may well be called far, for it was from heaven to this vile earth; was he not able to give the Holy Ghost in a bodily shape upon Christ like a dove, being then in the state of mortality,



and he in the state of immortality and glory? And by the power of this Holy Ghost, did Christ do all his miracles when on earth.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*August 2, 1680.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Edward Burton, in Derbyshire, bearing date the 12th of January, 1681.*

*Loving Friend Edward Burton,*

I RECEIVED your letter dated the 3rd of January, by our account here at London, 1681, but by your account 1682; and as for your other letter from your brother-in-law Tompkinson, I received, and the cheese: the token of your love I received also, and do know that your brother-in-law, and your son, have spent a great deal of money to get your release by the laws of the land, but to no purpose.

I cannot see but that all your labour, charge and expence is all lost; neither do I know any thing of the proceedings in those cases; but do understand that he that was employed to manage your cause, hath deceived you of your money, and the courts also. Therefore if you can get any of your money again of him that hath deceived you, it will do well; but to the thing you desired of me, is whether you

may or not go to the church once or twice, seeing they require no more ; but as for the receiving of the sacrament, you say you will not do ; but you hearing I gave Mr. Powell leave to go to the church, you made bold to send to me, whether you may go to the church or no, to free you from the malice of your enemies, whereof you say you have suffered the loss of 100*l.* all ready.

*Answer.*— That since I have seen the bad effects of giving leave to Mr. Powell to go to church but once, I am resolved never to give leave any more to any person whatsoever ; for after he went once to church, that the priest had got fast hold of his right-hand, he would not let him go, till he had fast hold of his other hand also : that is, till he had made him go to church often, and to receive the sacrament and to baptize his child, which hath been a great dishonor to me and all the believers of this communion of the Spirit, and an everlasting shame to himself amongst all that know him, both to saints and devils ; neither is he yet delivered out of his troubles, notwithstanding he has wounded his own soul, and lost his credit in this world, (which I fear will never be repaired again,) and wasted his estate to keep himself out of prison ; so that I see he had better have gone to prison at the first, and never have put in bail, but stood the trial of the court ; then would he have seen an end of all his troubles in a short time, and would have had the love and pity of all saints, and of many devils ; but by submitting unto them, hath lost them all ; for this I must tell you, that the ecclesiastical authority doth now ride upon the temporal power, even the laws of the land. So that if a man be sued in the spiritual court, or upon a spiritual account, even that knack of not going to

church, the temporal law, which is the birth-right of every Englishman, cannot free and deliver any man from punishment. This I have had experience of in my sufferings; and had I known as much at the first as I did afterwards, I would have saved a great deal of charge and expence in putting in of bail, and court charges, so often as I did, but would have lain in jail at first, and have spent that money in prison; then would my sufferings have been ended quickly.

Therefore he that would keep his conscience clear as to God, must be sure to suffer persecution for his conscience sake, or lose the peace of his conscience, which is of more value than all the riches of this world.

Now what I have suffered upon a spiritual account, it was merely for the commission of God, put upon me, and the cause of Mr. Powell's sufferings was for extravagant words, which he ought not to have spoken; and I understand that the cause of your sufferings, is not because you were a believer of Muggleton, but rather a sider of papists; which has been the grounds of all your sufferings, and how to deliver you out of this I cannot tell. But seeing you cannot sell nor let your land, nor put your son into it without paying such a sum of money in goods and chattels and conformity to the church of England, against the peace of your own conscience, my advice is, that you should rather go to prison as others do; as Quakers, Baptists, and others do, and spend your estate in the jail, and leave your estate to the management of them you can confide in; for the law of England cannot imprison a man's body, and take away his goods and land too; for suffer you must, I see, either make shipwreck of the peace of

your conscience, or shipwreck of your estate : but I would rather advise you to keep your faith and a good conscience towards God ; and in a little time you may see a deliverance ; for I have seen several persons that have been in the jail upon the like account ; yet in six months time of imprisonment have been delivered.

This is but cold comfort that I can give you ; it is like a cup of cold water in the name of the disciple. But it will be the reward of a disciple's peace of conscience, as cold water to cool the tongue of conscience from reasoning, to and fro in the mind. But I perceive by your letter, that they will not accept now of your person going to prison ; neither will they put you in prison, but had rather have your goods or land ; and because you did not appear at the first process or first summons in your own person, and make your defence what religion you were of, then would the court have fined you so much money as 20*l.* for the first fault, or have sent you to prison for six months, without bail or mainprize. But in regard you made no personal appearance from Sessions to Sessions, they knowing you to be a man of estate, they had rather have your estate than have your person in prison ; and your employing a false-hearted man to manage your defence according to law, hath cost you more money than would have satisfied your adversaries, and hath done you no good, but a great deal of hurt, in that it hath enraged your enemies, so that nothing will satisfy their rage but your utter ruin, either of your peace of conscience, or else of your whole estate ; first of your goods, and afterwards of your land ; so that your condition is desperate, and I am afraid you must be forced to make a desperate cure, which will be thus : before any other process can come forth, to drive all your cattle off

your own land, and sell them by degrees ; and as for your household goods, corn, hay, and whatsoever is moveable, take it off the land, and carry it away ; and take your wife and children, and live in some place, and hire ground in some other place, and leave the bare land for the king to take away ; for the king cannot sell it, neither dare any man buy it ; and in a little time your land may be restored to you again, or to your son, upon reasonable terms. I know an example much like this in Kent : there was a landed man, and his land, some of it was let to other tenants of his, but the man himself had no goods nor chattels but what he could remove ; so that they could not get any goods considerable ; so they went to seize his land, the third part for the king ; but no man would buy any such land of the king, because his title was not good to a free-born man's land, and this was for not going to church, but they agreed with the man for 20*l.* only ; it cost him 10*l.* more charges, bailiffs, and others ; so the man enjoyed his land ever since.

For my part, I cannot see how you can possibly be delivered from utter destruction, and keep the peace of your mind, but this way, you may leave your son, and whom you will, upon the land, to look after it, and some necessaries for them that is not of considerable value, and let the officers and them do as well as they can. This is my advice in this matter, but leave it to your own consideration to do as you please.

So, with my love, with my wife's love, remembered to you, and to your wife, I take leave, and rest your friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*January the 12th, 1681.*

*The Copy of the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's Blessing, sent to Mrs. Sarah West, of a place called Uver, in Cambridgeshire, dated February 22, 1681.*

*Loving Friend, Mrs. Sarah West,*

I RECEIVED your letter, enclosed in our friend William Dickinson's letter, in which you do acknowledge me to be the only true prophet of the high, immortal, glorious God, Christ Jesus, and that you have believed this many years in this last commission, and that you had an intent to have come to London to see me, but weakness of body did hinder you, and for no other cause, as I perceive, but for a blessing of everlasting life, before you depart out of this natural life here in this world; and I understand, by our friend Dickinson's letter, that you were sorry, or-blamed yourself several times since, that you did not ask it when I was there with you. Indeed, you had then a good opportunity, which will hardly ever be again in this life; for salvation was then come to your house, not only in myself, but several other friends, who had the assurance of salvation abiding in them.

I speak not this to daunt you for your neglect, but do say unto you, as Christ said unto Martha, who was troubled with many incumbrances about victuals to entertain Christ and his disciples; for indeed, your husband and yourself did entertain us with several feasts as princes, which will not be forgotten as long as any of us do live. And this I have perceived in you ever since I came acquainted with you, that you

have not had that great experience to talk or discourse of your faith as several others have, but your love to it hath been expressed constantly to this faith ever since I first saw you ; and in this letter you have expressed your faith more than ever, in that you do believe that I am a true prophet of the Lord, and have power given me of God to give a blessing to those that truly believe in this commission of the Spirit.

These things considered, I do pronounce and declare you, Sarah West, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to all eternity ; and this blessing shall bear you up in death, and free you from the fear of that second death, which is eternal ; and in the resurrection you shall remember you were told so by the last true prophet that God will ever send to this unbelieving world, to your everlasting joy and comfort, though you never see me more in this world.

Therefore trouble not yourself with bad times, for in this world there will be troubles, let what come that will come, but let your peace be in God, and in the assurance of your eternal happiness.

I rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, bearing date August 22, 1681, to Charles Yeeles, Thomas Millerd, and John White, living in or near Cork in Ireland.*

*Charles Yeeles, Thomas Millerd, John White,*

I RECEIVED a letter as from you three, by the hand of Rebecca Stratton, dated July 22, 1681.

I perceive by your letter that you have viewed some of our writings, and that it hath pleased God, in the reading thereof, you have found great satisfaction, and by faith do believe our commission to be true, and by the same ye are come to believe in the true God, and to know the right devil, with an increase of daily satisfaction in yourselves, though much to the discontent of the children of this generation. I perceive some of you have been Quakers, and that it is but lately that you have seen any excellency in those writings of ours; and it is God's great mercy indeed, that your eyes are opened to believe the true God, and to know the right devil. The knowledge of these two, their forms and their natures, giveth great satisfaction to the mind of man, and without the knowledge of the true God and the right devil, there can be no satisfaction nor assurance of eternal life abiding in any man while upon this earth; for God hath blinded the eyes of all men by nature upon the earth for these many generations, that he might give light unto two men in this last generation, to enlighten the understanding of many in those deep hidden mysteries, how God became flesh, and dwelt



among men here on this earth, and how the devil became flesh, and doth dwell among men here on earth now, and of that great mystery of the two seeds, namely, the seed of the woman, and the seed of the serpent; and from whence these two seeds came; the original how they came to be seed, and of their production; what those two seeds did produce, even eternal salvation to many, and eternal damnation to millions of men and women; with many more sacred things that did belong unto God only, as the form and nature of angels, which were known to God only that created them, which he hath revealed to Reeve and Muggleton only; and we are as a pipe of wood in the earth, that hath conveyed that water of life into many earthen vessels, whose souls shall drink of the water of life, and doth never thirst more. It hath been in the souls of many that have believed our report, as that oil the prophet Elisha filled that woman's vessels with, even enough to keep her and her son as long as she lived in this world.

Thus I have given you a little hint of those heavenly mysteries which have been revealed unto me, which you will find more abundant in those books Mrs. Stratton doth bring, if she come safe to Ireland, as I hope she will; and I do wish you may understand what you read, for I cannot give you understanding, it must arise out of your own seed, and understand with your own hearts the things that belong to your eternal peace; and you must expect the discontent and ill-will of many; for God hath made me, as he did the prophet Jeremiah, to stand as a wall of brass against Israel and Judah, which was only to two kingdoms; but God hath made me a wall of brass not only to three kingdoms, England, Scotland, and Ireland, but unto all Europe that

professeth the Christian religion. I am hated of all nations for nothing else but for the commission of God put upon me, and the most zealous and righteous people of all hate me most of all; yet the God of my salvation hath preserved my life almost these thirty years, in several persecutions and imprisonments, and my life is still within me, without any distemper of body, only age groweth on, which must be submitted unto.

I take leave at present, only my love remembered unto you all three, and unto Jeremiah Stratton, George Gamble, and his wife, George Rogers, and Elizabeth Flaggetter, and all the rest of our friends in the true faith in those parts.

I rest your friend in the true faith in the Lord Jesus Christ, the only wise God, blessed and praised be his name,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, August 23, 1691.

The books which Rebecca Stratton paid, twenty shillings for are these, and the price:

	£.	s.	d.
1. The Divine Looking-Glass, at .....	0	5	0
2. The Interpretation of the 11th Revelation, at....	0	5	0
3. The whole Revelation, at .....	0	2	6
4. Fox's Looking-Glass, at.....	0	2	6
5. The Witch of Endor, at .....	0	2	6
6. The Answer to William Penn, at .....	0	2	6

The whole Revelations and Penn's were always at that price, because I have some of them two left still; but all the other are hard to be had single for any money, but what are bound altogether, and they be very dear.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. James Whitehead, of Braintree, in Essex, bearing date from London, August 30, 1681.*

*Loving and kind friend in the true faith, James Whitehead,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, bearing date March 23, 1680, wherein you commanded your daughter to dine with me on Saturday last, but upon some occasions it was put off until Monday, which was more convenient, and at a more convenient house, where my wife and I, and other friends, did dine with your two daughters, I suppose to the content of both your daughters, and of us also.

And as for those two things you desire of me, to give you an account concerning your eldest daughter, her lineage and faith, I shall give you my judgment, as far as I can discern, by what I have heard and seen by her myself, and by her letters to Mr. Delamaine, and discourse our friend Delamaine and his wife hath had with her, and experience they have had of her; as thus:

Your daughter Priscilla is of the lineage of Rebecca and Rachel, that is, of the race of the Assyrians; for Laban the Assyrian was Rebecca's brother, and Rachel's father.

Now to give you the reason why I judge the Assyrians is the best of natures amongst the Gentiles, for these causes:

*First.* Because they are generally honest of their odies, both men and women.

*Secondly.* They are in their natures generally just persons in their dealings, especially if they be the seed of faith, or have but the least measure of faith in them.

*Thirdly.* They are generally wise in their natures, and given to covetousness with moderation; which is indeed but to preserve for another day, that they might not be servants to Canaanites, nor subject to proud Moabites, nor stout-hearted Ammonites, nor scoffing Ishmaelites, nor prophane Esau's; so that they may be subject to none but Jews only. This is counted covetousness by all these sort of people.

These things aforesaid, I do discern are in your daughter's nature, which came by the mother's side, of Rebecca and Rachel, as aforesaid.

And as for her faith in the true God, and in this commission of the Spirit, she hath expressed before Mr. Delamaine and his wife, and me and my wife, besides what she expressed in her letters formerly as much, and more than could be expected, having so little occasion to draw it forth as she hath had; for it cannot be expected that her faith should appear visibly strong as those that had their faith tried in the fiery contests of the world, even as gold is tried, even as you know some have here in London; yet her faith is true, and grounded upon a rock; and time may cause her faith to be tried, as others have been, in the fire of opposition, and come forth to the visible view of this world, as others of her sex, as gold purified seven times in the fire.

Thus I have given you a small account of those two things you desired, and I know you will perceive by these lines more than can be expressed in writing.

Therefore I shall say no more at present in

this thing, but present my love and my wife's love unto yourself, and to your good wife, and to Mr. Nicolls,

And rest your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to William Wood, of Braintree, in Essex, dated September 26, 1681.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, William Wood,*

I RECEIVED a letter from you, dated August 15, 1681, wherein you desire to have a line or two from me; and since that, John Lad was very earnest with me on your behalf, to write a few lines unto you; saying, it would much rejoice your heart.

I was unwilling to write where there was no need; because at that time, I had a great many long letters to write; both into Ireland, and here in England; which were something burthensome unto me, yet did not intend never to write unto you; but now having a little more leisure and opportunity, I shall gratify your desire, and write these lines as followeth.

I perceive by your letter; that your faith is strong in the true God, even the Lord Jesus Christ; which faith and knowledge in the true God and man, should be but one single person, even the Lord Jesus Christ, which our writings have declared is life eternal to know.

Also, I perceive by your letter, that your faith is strong in this commission of the Spirit, and that, by your faith in us, the witnesses of the Spirit, you do in believing know those divine secrets, and heavenly revelations, which are hid from all the world besides, and revealed to none, but those few that believe our report: to them few is the arm of the Lord's saving health revealed.

Again, I do discern by your letter, that your faith is strong in those words I spake unto you when you were at London; and that they were as a seal in your forehead, sealed up unto the great day of God Almighty, unto eternal happiness in the kingdom of glory, in that world above the globe, where the person of God himself, and angels in the persons of men, do inherit; ascending and descending to one another with messages, and praises, and thanks, glory and honour, unto God the Creator eternally. And we that are his chosen prophets, and you his saints, ever since the creation of this world, shall sing the song of Moses, and the song of the lamb of Moses, and the song of the lamb unto our God, and our Redeemer, hallelujah, salvation, and glory, and honour, and power, be to the Lord our God, as he is our Redeemer. And the holy angels shall ascribe all honour, glory, and praise unto the same God, as he was their Creator, but not as their Redeemer, because God redeemed none but the seed of Adam fallen into mortality, and into death. So that by the death of God, and his quickening into life again, he hath redeemed us, not only from this natural death, but from eternal death. And as he quickened himself out of death, and made his pure natural body in the quickening, a spiritual body, to live eternally;

and by the power of this quickening Spirit will he raise our souls; and our bodies that were natural, shall rise in the quickening spiritual bodies, capable of ascending in the clouds of heaven, to meet the Lord in the air.

This is the power of our God, as he is our Redeemer.

This is a great mystery, hard to be understood but by the spirit of faith, which is the evidence of things, which the spirit of reason cannot see. For this I say, that the spirit or seed of faith in me hath been carried up into the third heaven, where God, and the holy angels were resident; where I saw things unutterable. And when the spirit of faith descended upon earth, it brought the abundance of Revelation with it, as hath been declared by word and pen in a great measure, as many can experience and witness it this day. And many that are fallen asleep in the experience and faith of these great mysteries, which have been declared by the abundance of revelation that hath proceeded from the spirit of faith, which did first arise in me in the beginning of the year 1651, which is thirty years ago.

I would not have you think, because I speak thus, that I would lay any burthen upon you, or any other believer of this commission of the Spirit, as to expect that every one should have such a measure of faith as I speak of; but that you may by these lines grow and increase in the knowledge of these heavenly mysteries, according to the measure of faith in you.

Thus I have written these lines to answer your desire, and more than I did intend, because I know you will let other friends there with you, see it or

hear it. So I shall take leave, and rest, and remain with my love, and my wife's love unto yourself,

Your friend in the true faith in Jesus Christ, the only wise God, blessed for ever,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

My love is remembered to Mr. Whitehead, and his wife, and Father Nicolls, John Lad, Goodman Thorndike, with all the rest of our friends unnamed, as those named.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Mary Scott, of Bristol, bearing date October 12, 1681.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Mary Scott,*

I RECEIVED a letter as from you, written to Mr. Jenkins, dated the 8th instant, 1681, concerning your son John being troubled in mind concerning his future state and condition; and that he cannot by no means be satisfied about it; therefore you desire me to send down my answer concerning it, to satisfy your son thereabout; wherein you desire me, and all our friends, to put up our petitions to the Lord for him.

As to this, your request is a thing something contrary to the practice of this commission of the Spirit,



for me to send an answer, or to take off the trouble of a man's mind, which I have had no experience of his practice of life, nor of his faith in the true God, nor in me, the messenger of God, neither do I know what is the cause of his trouble of mind, whether it be for some sin he hath committed, even some actual sin, for actual sin hath the sting of eternal death in it; for *the sting of death is sin, and the strength of sin is the law*, as the apostle saith; or whether this trouble of mind doth arise from his own ignorance in the knowledge of the true God, and the right devil, fearing God's prerogative power in election and reprobation; and that he may be a cast-away by God's prerogative will and pleasure; and who shall gain say it?

These two things are the cause of all men's trouble of mind in this world, both saint and devil: but actual sin is most generally the cause of despair, which doth wound the spirit of men, which is more than he can bear.

So that I cannot give any judgment upon him, neither good nor evil; not absolute good, because he hath not believed our doctrine nor commission; nor evil, because he hath not despised any thing declared by me. Yet this I will say for his comfort, that if sin be the cause of his trouble of mind, let him confess it to you his mother, as in the presence of God, and forsake it, and act it no more, and he shall find mercy and peace in his soul. And if the trouble of his mind doth arise from the other thing aforesaid, or any other cause but sin, then I would desire him to submit to God's prerogative power, to do what he will with him after death; do righteous and just things between man and man, and do not trouble himself what shall become of him after

death; and I do assure him he shall have peace of mind for the present, and may come hereafter to the knowledge of the truth, will give him the assurance of everlasting life in himself, as you his mother, and many others, have at this day.

These lines will prove a good prayer unto him, if he do but believe and do it.

This is as much as I can say, in answer to your letter, and as to your son; and I wish my words may take place in him, then will salvation encrease in his soul.

So I shall take leave and remain your assured friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, October 12, 1681.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chestersfield, in Derbyshire, bearing date from London, February 1, 1682.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I HAVE seen two letters, which our dear friend Elizabeth Marsden (whom I always loved well ever since she was a child, in comparison of age) sent to our friend Mrs. Griffith, which two letters are in your be-

half, as if they had been writ by yourself; the one is dated January 16, 1682, and the other is dated January 24, 1682; and I perceive by these two letters that you are sick of body, and have great trouble of mind upon you, and that your burthen is very great, and lieth heavy upon you, and that you are afraid you have displeased me, because I have not writ to you all this while. As to that, I shall deal truly with you, that I never was offended at you, nor with you, for what you writ concerning John White, but did what you required me to do in your letter to Mrs. Griffith; neither did that letter require any answer from me, which was the cause I did not write unto you all this while; but these two letters coming to my hand so lately, causeth me to write these lines unto you as followeth, as thus: I perceive this great trouble and grief of heart, and burthen that lieth upon you, it is but temporal, about your grand-children; if your trouble had been upon a spiritual account, I could have eased you of your burthen immediately; but people would willingly have prophets to give them peace of mind, and assurance of their eternal salvation in the life to come, and would have the prophets to free them from all troubles in temporal things also; but this I would have you to take notice of, that prophets, apostles, and Christ himself, that gave those that believed in him the assurance of everlasting life abiding in themselves, it was to strengthen them, that they might be the more able to encounter and bear the troubles of this world; I say as Christ said to those that believed in him, *In me you shall have peace, but in the world you shall have trouble*; so that if a man have true peace in God, he shall rather have the more trouble in the world, much less be delivered from all trouble in this world: this I have found by

experience, therefore do you mind your faith, which you once received in this commission of the Spirit, and the blessing I once declared upon you, and that will strengthen you, and enable you to bear those temporal troubles the better, knowing that you shall be free from them in death, and that there is no worse thing after, which is more than all the world can say beside, but those whose faith is truly grounded upon this commission of the Spirit.

And now, dear friend, I perceive there is contained in these letters the ground of your great temporal troubles, and they are about your own grand-children, and those two persons concerned with them. I would not have you offended, nor let your spirit be troubled, nor overcharged with grief, and especially where things cannot be helped, nor called back again ; but let your joy be in God. Besides, I look upon it very expedient, that you might know the utmost of your troubles, and not to hide it from you ; because you will be delivered out of all your troubles, which I am sure a wounded spirit would receive ease, if it did but know that this natural death would end those eternal torments, which it shall endure hereafter. As for those two troubles, which is, and hath been, I shall endeavour to satisfy you in the one, and advise you in the other.

*First.* You seem to be more troubled at the lesser trouble than the greater.

As for John White's neglect of binding your grandson, I did as you desired me ; I spake with his wife, and left word with her, that I would have her husband to bind John Carter at the hall, and that he should order it so at the hall, that his time should go on from the time he was bound by the scrivener, so that the boy should lose no time, to satisfy his grand-

mother : she told me her husband did intend to do so, and promised me that her husband should bind him at the hall suddenly ; and in a little time shortly after, John White, the same day he bound him at the hall, came to my house, and the boy with him, and said he had done as I had ordered him, and said that John Carter was to send his grandmother word, to satisfy her that it was done ; so I thought all was well, and that you were satisfied, and did wonder that he should be such a great trouble to you now ; nor wherein he is unjust, seeing he hath bound him at the hall according to law, and that he will make him a freeman of London from the time he was first bound, I cannot see any ground of trouble you need be at in this matter, except he hath been cruel to the boy since, which I have heard nothing of.

The second thing is, I know you have had great cause of trouble with your grand-children by Mr. Goodwyn, but you know that I would not, nor ever had any concern in Mr. Goodwyn's affairs, not from the first, when he married your daughter ; for I saw he was not of a prosperous nature, only I was loath to discourage your daughter, or you either. I never did meddle in the marriage of his wife, neither was I ever his counsellor in any of his concerns whatsoever ; neither would I concern myself now to speak of him, but only for your sake, that you might be armed with patience to undergo the trouble that do follow by reason of him.

First, in that you are forced to keep his two children which he had by your daughter ; and as for other concerns you have with him I know not, but I suppose it is certainly true that Mr. Goodwyn is dead, and that his wife would willingly cast that child there in the country upon you to keep for your own ; but

what advice to give you I cannot tell: the child is no more relation to you, than it is to any stranger; so that if you cannot send it home to the mother, nor put it upon the parish where it was born, you must keep it yourself. One of these three must be done.

So I shall leave it to yourself to consider it, and take leave, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself and Elizabeth Marsden,

Remain your Friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, February 1, 1682.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Elizabeth Flaggerter, of Cork in Ireland, bearing date from London, June 22, 1682.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Elizabeth Flaggerter,*

I RECEIVED your letter sent by your son, dated Cork, May 3, 1682, wherein I perceive you are very much comforted, and have great assurance of all your four children being happy.

As to that I shall not discomfort you, nor in any wise weaken your assurance you have in your childrens happiness, either in this life or in the life to come; but am glad you are so well persuaded in your mind of them, you having the experience of their

natures, and of their actions, by the light of faith in you, besides the light of nature, as they are your own children, and I not knowing any of them, only I have seen this son two or three times ; but I never asked him any question about heavenly things, neither did he enquire after any. It was never my practice to compel or thrust men into the kingdom of Heaven, whether they will or no ; neither do I use to open the gate of heaven, but to those that do know themselves ; for where true actual faith is in the heart risen, it will knock at the gate of Heaven, and it shall be opened unto them. As Christ said to his disciples, which had faith in themselves, *Seek, and ye shall find ; knock, and it shall be opened to you.* And of that saying, *To him that hath shall be given ; and to him that hath not shall be taken away even that which he hath.*

These sayings are quite contrary to the reason of man ; for, saith reason, must none knock at the gate of Heaven, but he that received faith from Heaven first ? What need, saith reason, that he should knock at Heaven-gate that hath received the joys of Heaven by faith in his heart already ? There is more need that Heaven-gate should be opened to him that wants faith in his heart when he knocks, because he wanteth that heavenly peace of mind which the other had before the gate of Heaven was opened unto him. And is it not fit, saith reason, that he which hath not peace of mind, should have some heavenly peace given him, rather than he that hath peace already shall have more given to him. And is it not more fit, that he which is in want should seek, that he might find ; and knock, that it might be opened unto him, than the other that hath enough, and yet must have more given. And that which is worst of all is, that he which hath nothing, yet this nothing must be taken from him

also. This seemeth, saith reason in man, to be injustice and partiality; and not equal dealings in God. These words might be opened, but it would be too large. But I perceive by your letter, that the gate of Heaven which hath been opened unto you, when you knocked, and the cause why, in that you had faith in your heart to believe in this commission of the Spirit, when you heard the sound of it in your ears, by our writings and speakings; for which you do thank God, that experimentally you can speak this; that by his last messengers you have attained to that knowledge here, and assurance of being an inheritor of incomparable joy and glory hereafter.

Herein the door of your heart was opened by these messengers declarations; as the heart of Lydia was opened at the preaching of Peter: for this I say, that every true messenger that is sent of God doth keep the gate of Heaven, because none but such persons as God sends, have the keys of Heaven given unto them: and there is but two keys, nor but two gates, the one belongeth to Heaven, and the other to hell. And God delivereth these two keys into the hands of those he sends; so that God's messengers are not only door-keepers of heaven, but door-keepers of hell also. I have known several persons in my time, that have desired but to be but a door-keeper in heaven; but I never knew any person that desired to be a door-keeper of hell. But we his messengers are forced to be door-keepers both of Heaven and of hell; because God hath given these two keys into our hands; and these two keys that do open these two gates, is the knowledge of the two seeds of faith and reason. The key of faith opens Heaven-gate; and enters into that kingdom, and seeth indeed what God is, in his form



and nature : and this key of reason openeth the gate of hell, and entereth into that kingdom, and seeth Lucifer, the prince of devils (even that reprobate angel that deceived Eve, which became the first man-devil, which begat millions of devils like himself ;) his form being the form of a man, and his nature being pure reason, fallen from its purity.

This is not a usual language. But seeing, as I said before, that you have knocked at Heaven-gate, and it hath been opened unto you, by us, God's messengers, therefore to you that have understood the mysteries of God becoming flesh, by which you have peace here in this life, and assurance of eternal life hereafter, in yourself. Therefore to you it shall be given to understand these three great mysteries of God's dealing with men, as followeth :

*First.* That God doth choose and ordain some particular man, and doth furnish him with revelation, to declare unto the people what the true God is, in the time of his commission. The first man God chose, after the fall of Adam, was Enoch ; and God did furnish him with revelation to write books, wherein he did declare to the succeeding fathers of old, that were of the seed of faith, or seed of Adam his father ; and this revelation of his walking with God, and what God was : he left this revelation to Noah, and Noah left it to Shem, and Shem left it to his sons, until it came to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. So that Enoch's revelation and declaration to the fathers of old, and all that did believe the books of Enoch, they were as a parliament, to enact it as a statute-law to their children, from generation to generation, for ever. And so it was with Moses and the prophets, and with Christ and the apostles.

The second secret is, that great difference that there is between reason's Heaven, which they do imagine, and the seed of faith's Heaven, which they are fully assured of; for the seed of reason's Heaven is without substance; there is no persons with bodies in reason's Heaven; there is none but spirits without bodies; there is neither God nor man to be seen, so no joy nor glory at all. But the seed of faith's Heaven hath a real substance to stand upon; and the person and body of God to be seen, and the persons and bodies of the holy angels, and of men, and all other creatures, to be seen in joy and glory, in that Heaven that God hath prepared for the seed of faith: so that there is a vast difference between the seed of reason's Heaven, and the seed of faith's Heaven.

The third secret; that though the prophets and apostles have declared in several of their writings, of that great and wonderful mystery of *God manifest in the flesh*; yet, in all their writings, from Enoch's to Moses's writings, nor the prophets writings, nor the apostles writings, nor Christ himself when upon earth, did ever declare or make known; not plainly, nor clearly, that great mystery of the devil become flesh, and doth dwell among men; and that there is no devil to suffer eternal torments, but men and women, to the end of the world, and to eternity. I say, no writings of prophets or apostles have made known this great mystery, which concerns all mankind, but John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, whom God chose in the year of the world 1651, as our writings do declare.

These things I have written for your sake, and the sake of others of this faith there with you. Take leave; only my love remembered, with my wife's love, unto yourself, George Gamble and his wife, and

to all the rest of this faith there with you. I rest  
and remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, June 22, 1682.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton to Mr. William Sedley, a Weaver and  
Dyer, a Believer of the Commission of the Spirit,  
living in Southampton, bearing date from London, the  
12th day of January, 1683.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, William Sedley,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated January 4,  
1683, wherein you complain of your great troubles  
you have gone through in these late years; what in  
oppression; I suppose you mean oppression for con-  
science sake. And your greatest troubles, I perceive,  
hath been in the natural concerns of this world; in  
respect of your first wife being dead, and leaving a  
charge of children behind her; and I perceive you  
have married another wife, and hath some charge by  
her also, which, you say, are in number five; thus  
poverty must needs come upon you like an armed  
man. These troubles are common to all married men  
and people, both poor and rich, but especially to the  
poor that do live by trade; for if trade doth fail,

poverty doth increase and grow exceedingly; for trade is a very uncertain thing, especially in a time of persecution; for trade and commerce hath taken the wings of the morning, and fly away in these our days; so that poverty cometh in upon the poor as a flood upon the dry land; this thousands can witness in this nation, as well as you, for want of trade. And poverty is the great common enemy in the nation at this day and time; and in regard this poverty and want of trade is so common, and so natural in this world, therefore it is that no eye pitieth the poor, let him be saint or devil, righteous, or unrighteous. Also I perceive by your letter, that all the rest of your faith in those parts are backslided, and hath forsaken their own peace, and hath conformed for fear of the loss of some of their worldly goods, or fear of imprisonment, even against their own conscience; some only upon threats, others having lost some of their goods, for fear of losing more, or all, have submitted and conformed; so that now you are left alone: these are days of trial, but few are able to stand the trial, to keep faith and a good conscience; and especially in most counties in England several hath conformed: so that in saving earthly riches, they have lost heavenly riches; for they will never recover that peace and assurance of eternal life, which they once had abiding in themselves; not while they live in this world; for you may read in the Scriptures, that he that doth fight the good fight of faith, and holdeth out to the end of this life, shall receive the crown of eternal life and glory; but he that looketh back, as Lot's wife did, to fetch something that was in her house, which she thought might do her a pleasure when she was got out of the flames of fire and brimstone; so it is with those that go back from the prin-

ciples of truth, which led them to Zoar, a refuge of safety; of peace and content of mind to free them from the fear of the fire and flames of hell in the conscience, which we see the Sodomites of this world are in; which makes them blaspheme against the God of Heaven, and persecute stedfast and faithful men; it is a dangerous thing for men that have tasted the good word of God in spirit and truth of heart for many years, according to the commission of the Spirit, which is now in these last days in being; and now, because of a little persecution, to fall from it, and worship that, which all the ignorant and unbelieving people, and those that doth not know God, doth worship. How doth such persons think to recover their peace with God again! Neither doth God regard such worshippers, neither doth God's messenger regard such worshippers, that can suffer nothing for their faith, and they will reap the fruits of their own doings, which is the loss of their peace of their own minds, while they live in this world, and the fear of eternal death hereafter; to save themselves in this world for a little time: for this commission hath laid but an easy yoke, and a burden which is very light upon the necks of the believers of it. Christ said to those in his time, *That his yoke was easy, and his burthen light*; yet those that would take his yoke upon them, must forsake father and mother, wife and children; if persecution should occasion it; nay life itself must go rather than cast off his yoke, else no crown of eternal happiness, life, and glory is to be had; this seems to the eye of reason to be a heavy yoke, yet Christ calls it easy; and the eye of faith doth count it easy. Still you say, that they have made a distress upon you already, and that you are left to wreatle with them, meaning your persecutors,

which say you, according to reason, I am worst able: as to this I say, you are best able to wrestle with them, for these reasons: 1. Because you have suffered for your faith already. 2. Because you are a poor man, and hath a great charge of children, and hath little or no estate to lose; for poverty and a great charge of children, is a fortress, or a tower of defence, against your persecutors; for what town, or city, will persecute a poor man, to cast him out of the town, or put him in prison, that hath committed no crime against the law of God, nor the laws of the land, and that hath nothing to lose, to bring upon the town a great charge? For you may, by the laws of England, throw all your children upon the town, and so shift for yourself elsewhere; and the town must, by the laws of England, provide for your children, and bestow them as they please; if they do persecute you, and throw you into the streets, then do you throw your charge upon the town, and shift for yourself. So that being poor, will make you the more able to encounter with your persecutors, and preserve the peace of your mind, and your faith, that fail not to the end of this natural life, that you may enjoy that eternal happiness hereafter: for riches of this world is a great snare; and many men, rather than lose this earthly riches, and honour among men, they let go their hold of eternal life in the world to come; because that is at a distance, and this is in present being. I hope these lines may satisfy you, and bear up your spirits in the day of trouble, and deliverance will come in its due time.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, January 12, 1683.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Capp, upon his death-bed, dated from London, the 15th of March, 1683.*

*Loving Friend, Mr. Capp,*

I PERCEIVE by my son John White's letter, and by that since of your own writing, that you are very sick and weak, even near the point of death; and that you have a desire that I would come to see you, which I cannot do at this season, because you live at such a distance so remote from me; neither can I travel at this time of year so far a-foot, as formerly I could; neither can I come by water, because there is an antipathy in my nature against it; and a coach would be too chargeable; for these reasons I cannot come to see you: I am sorry you are so near your death, as I apprehend you are, but I always looked upon you not to be a long-lived man, but that your life would be but short in this world; but should be glad that you might find the assurance of eternal life abiding in yourself, for the world to come, before your death; I have known you several years; I never knew any harm by you in my life, but that you were a very honest moral man, which I dearly love in all men that hath it; moral wisdom is commendable, both in the sight of God and good men; but spiritual and heavenly wisdom is that which speaketh peace to the mind of man in the hour of death, and giveth assurance of entering into death, and through death into eternal life: likewise you have had a taste of that truth which hath been declared by this com-

mission of the Spirit, you know what I mean ; you have in part owned it, secretly in your heart, but not publicly before men, nor before me, but I hope that secret faith of yours will bear you up in the hour of death : in the assurance of your salvation, and in regard you never did publish your faith to me in this commission of the Spirit, I cannot give that sentence of blessedness upon you, as I could had your faith been publick ; neither will I give any judgment against you in the least to discomfort you, or to weaken your hope within you ; but would rather strengthen your hope, and leave you to wrestle with death, that you might have an easy passage through death ; then will you cease from all the troubles of this life, and, I hope, from the troubles of the life to come. Thus with my love and my wife's love remembered unto you,

I rest your friend, in what I may,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*March 15, 1683.*

My son read this letter and wept, and six days after died.



*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton unto Mrs. Rebecca Hall, of Arnesby, bearing date from London, May 1, 1683.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Rebecca Hall,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received two pair of gloves from you, one pair for myself, and another for my wife, by which I understand that your husband is dead, which we are all very sorry to hear; for Mr. Delamaine and his wife, and myself and wife, had a great love for him; but we feared when he was sick before, that he was not long-lived, therefore his sister Delamaine and myself had a great desire to see him once more before he died, and were glad to hear of his recovery; so that we did not neglect that opportunity, but did come to see him as suddenly as we could, which was, and is great satisfaction to our minds, that we did see him once more before his death.

I know it cannot but be a great grief to you to lose such a loving and good-natured husband, as I suppose he was, yet your sorrows are not the worst of sorrows, but the best of sorrows, in these two things.

First, though he hath left you three children, I suppose he hath left an estate answerable to bring them up, besides your own estate you brought unto him, which will make your sorrows the easier and lighter.

The second thing is this, which is greater than the other is, by your matching into the family of the Halls, you have come to the knowledge of the truth, whereby you shall come to have the assurance of your own salvation, and the assurance of eternal life

abiding in yourself, which is of more worth than the whole world ; and this I say, if you had matched into any other family in the country, you would never have come to the knowledge of what you do know, and shall know, as to your eternal happiness in the life to come, though you might have been saved, being elected, if you had matched into another family, but you would never have had the assurance of it in this life ; why, because you would never have seen the commission of the Spirit, nor the commissioners, nor the believers of it, as now you have : it is we only that doth make our calling and election sure in ourselves, so that our faith being built upon a rock, even the knowledge of the form and nature of the true God, which shall never fail, which all the people in the world, both religious and irreligious, of only these few, that doth believe in this commission of the Spirit ; and for your own part, I did perceive by your writing, and your love to us when we were there with you, that you are one of those grains of wheat which the God of Heaven did sow in the field of this world, even the seed of faith, though but weak, yet it was sown in good ground, even in the heart, not in stony ground, which is in the head only to talk of, nor by the way-side, for the foolish phantasies of the mind, called the fowls of Heaven, to devour the good doctrine you received by those writings or books of your husband's, and those letters you received of Mr. Delamaine, and your sister-in-law, his wife ; but I judge, and my judgment is true, that you received the truth in the love of it, and do advise you to prize those books of your husband's as much as you can, and I make no question but your understanding will be more and more enlightened in the knowledge of the truth, and grow in experience, and strong in

faith, and in the assurance of your eternal happiness in the kingdom of eternal glory, where you shall be with us, your God, your King, and Redeemer, face to face. These lines I have written unto you, that your faith in the true God, and in the commission of the Spirit, might be strengthened and encreased to your further assurance and comfort while you live in this world. No more at present, but my love and my wife's love remembered unto you.

I take leave, and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, May 1, 1683.*

My wife and I do give you thanks for your kind token you sent by the hand of Mr. Delamaine.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Elizabeth Flaggerter, of Cork, in Ireland, bearing date from London, June 25, 1683.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Elizabeth Flaggerter,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter by the hand of your son, dated May 24, 1683, wherein you complain of your own heart, that though it doth will to do that which is right in the sight of God, yet you cannot do it; and in that your heart doth will that which is good, and doth not do it,

that which is acting; but to will ill in the mind is no action; therefore it is said, *Do this and live*; and it is said, *Thou shalt not commit adultery; and thou shalt not eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil*; so that the not doing of evil is an affirmative action, for he that doth refrain from evil actions, it is counted a good action in the sight of God, and of righteous men. Likewise it is said, *Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thine heart, and with all thy soul, and with all thy strength*. This is a good action, *Do this, and thou shalt live eternally*; but if a man shall blaspheme, persecute, and defy the Lord his God with all his heart, and with all his soul, and with all his strength, as many doth at this day, this is an evil action; and he that doth this shall die a death eternal; for it is not good nor evil in the mind of man that doth make a man happy or miserable, but it is the doing of good or evil actions that doth make a man happy or miserable, therefore I say to all of the faith, that it is good to will well, and better to do well. If these two go together, there will be peace with God, and peace of conscience in themselves, which I perceive you have by your faith in the true God, even in Christ Jesus our Lord, as you say he speaks peace to your soul, and carries you through all your troubles and difficulties of this world; and I am glad to hear you have that assurance in yourself, and of his peace and love, that doth bear up your Spirit in these days of trouble in this world; which I perceive you have had of late in the temporal, but our troubles here in England are altogether in the spiritual. These troubles in the spiritual are at this day all over England, and more especially in this City of London, so that no friend can help one another. This persecution for conscience-sake is against all professors of religion, and Dissenters

of all kinds whatsoever, that will not conform; but blessed are those that do stand in the day of trial, that can keep the peace of their own mind; for peace of conscience is of more value to me than the whole world; and so it is in every man that is sensible; for if a man loseth his peace by conforming against his conscience to save himself, he loseth his peace, which is his life and strength; in seeking to save a man's life, he shall surely lose his life; for peace of conscience is the life of every man and woman in this world; and if you are but sensible of the truth of these lines, as I have been about thirty years since, what it is to want peace of conscience, and afterwards receive that peace of conscience which the world cannot give, even the peace of God that passeth all understanding. This peace is that which will enlighten your understanding, and quicken your weakness of Spirit, and give you boldness in your passage, not only in the kingdom of grace here, but to the throne of glory hereafter, where you shall see the face of God in his bright burning glory to eternity. This peace will take off your complaint of your spirit, being willing, but your flesh is weak and dull; neither would you any more complain of imperfections, for if the eye be single, the whole body is full of light; so if the conscience be at perfect peace with God, the whole man is at peace, no imperfections to trouble the mind. As to things appertaining to God, salvation, life eternal, or any matter or things of that nature, are utterly expelled. These lines I have written unto you, that your spirit may be strengthened in peace, for in peace life is set before you, and in unbelief and doubting is death set before you; the God of heaven hath, by his chosen prophets and apostles, and us the witnesses of the Spirit, every one in their time,

hath set life and death before all people, by writing and speaking; but how few doth chuse life rather than death, and how few hath believed our report in this age! Thus I take leave, only my love and my wife's love remembered unto yourself, Mr. Gamble, and his wife, and the rest of our true friends in the true faith there with you.

Remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, June 25, 1683.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Alexander Delamaine, senior, dated in London, June 25, 1683.*

*Loving and kind Friend, Mr. Delamaine,*

I WAS at Mrs. Hooper's this week, and she did complain to me of the sad condition of our friend Ann Cakebread, now her husband is dead, and hath a great charge of children; I told her that the town ought to maintain her children, but I know she will be loath to expose her children to the parish. Mrs. Hooper said, she would never do that, whatever she suffered. I gave her no encouragement at that time that our friends would do any thing in that matter, because of the troubles that are now generally upon our friends in all parts of England, and in this city of London also, so that one friend can-

not help another ; but since I have considered, that she and her husband both hath suffered many things for their faith, almost continually, above these twenty years, and hath kept their consciences free from any defilement in the worship of the nation ; likewise her house hath been a house of entertainment for all friends of this faith in all parts of England and Scotland also ; and she did entertain the prophet Reeve when she was a maid, and was his handmaid, to guide him to other friends houses, before I ever saw her ; and since I have seen her, she hath not been wanting to express her kindness, in entertaining both me and my friends from time to time, as occasion hath had need, to the utmost of her power. These things I have considered, and am moved in my mind to write these lines unto you, knowing that as to yourself, you are always willing to contribute to such a good deed as this is ; but my desire is to put it upon you to speak to others of this faith, to those that are rich in this world, in her behalf, because I am not willing to be seen in this business. I suppose it not convenient to speak to any of our faith ; but those that doth dine with us on the 19th day of July, these are the most able of this faith, for it is not convenient to ask of the poorer sort of this faith ; for if they give but one shilling a-piece, they will make a great noise ; and besides that, they will look for the like to be done unto them upon the least trouble that falleth upon them ; therefore I think if we could get a matter of ten pounds amongst us this once, it would do the woman a great pleasure ; and as for my part, I will give ten shillings towards it, for the great love I bear towards her. I do think it will not be your best course to speak to any of these friends that are to meet the 19th of July about this

business, because that day will be chargeable ; but let that day be over first, and two weeks after will be time enough. My love to you and your wife,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

June 26, 1683.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Mary Scott, of Bristol, bearing date from London, July 19, 1683.*

*Loving and kind friend in the true Faith, Mary Scott;*

THESE lines are to certify you, that I have received the books again safe, and that I have received your letters from our friend Mrs. Jenkins, the last of yours, dated May 22, 1683; likewise I received from Mrs. Jenkins's hand both your tokens; the token of your love was five shillings, and this last was ten shillings. Your love and kindness hath far exceeded my expectation, for indeed I did not expect one penny: but I see that your love for truth's sake, I may say is almost boundless, in that you do those things out of your own free heart; without the least hint of any advisement from me; but I perceive the truth hath made you free indeed; that your faith hath built upon a rock, even upon the Rock of Ages, even upon the eternal God, that was in the form of man from eternity, and in time humbled himself so low as to become a man-child;



and grew up to be a perfect man, making himself capable to suffer the pains of death by his own creatures. This Jesus Christ is that child the prophet Isaiah saith to us, *A child is born, to us a child is given; this is that shall be called the mighty God, the everlasting Father, the Prince of peace;* and now is fulfilled that saying in this commission of the Spirit, for no people in the world at this day doth truly believe that that child Jesus is the mighty God now, nor the everlasting Father, but those few that do believe the doctrine of this commission only. This is that greatest mystery of God, God manifest in the flesh, or God become flesh, and dwelt among men. This is that great mystery which the angels desired to pry into, but God letted them, and revealed it to unlearned men, that we might declare it to unlearned people, as at this day, for unlearned people are the most capable to understand the mysteries of the kingdom of heaven; and so they come to have assurance of eternal life abiding in themselves. Thus the poor and unlearned people being filled with good things, but the rich and learned was sent empty away. These things are fulfilled in these our days; and as for those books you have sent again, I did believe they would be too dear, which made me loth to send them at all; but because I could not furnish you with those four or five books single, as you desired, caused me to send you the whole volume; and I am very well pleased you sent it again, because there is never another left so perfect as that is, to be had for that money; and as for those five books single, which your son Markes in his letter writeth for; that is to say, *The Divine Look-Glass. Secondly, The Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelation. Thirdly, The Interpretation of the*

Whole Revelation. *Fourthly*, The Mortality of the Soul. *Fifthly*, The Transcendent Spiritual Treatise.

These five books single, if they could have been had, would have been five shillings a-piece, both great and small, which would have cost twenty-five shillings, for there is none to be had single of the Transcendent Spiritual Treatise, nor of the Mortality of the Soul, nor the Divine Looking-Glass, nor of the Interpretation of the 11th of the Revelation. There is none of these four books to be had single for any money, but what are bound altogether, and they are very scarce to be had also; therefore I would advise you, and all others, of the faith, to make much of those books you have; for if you let them go, you will never meet with the like again for any money while you live. Notwithstanding that shame and reproach I have suffered from writing those books, there are several persons of honour that would willingly pry into those books, as the holy angels did into the mystery of God's becoming flesh; but as God would not reveal this secret mystery unto the holy angels, because, though their natures were pure reason, that they might never understand that great mystery, how their fellow-angel, after he was cast down from heaven, became flesh, and so became a man-devil. This mystery did God hide from the holy angels, and is hid from them to this day, that they might never know that there is a possibility in the holy angels, whose nature is pure reason, to fall into the same condition as their fellow the reprobate angel did; but God hath revealed those two secret mysteries unto his own seed of faith, the prophets, apostles, and us the witnesses of the Spirit only; and we have declared, and made it known unto you that believe a prophet's report, to your present peace

of mind, and to your full assurance in this life of your eternal happiness in the life to come, which no people in the world hath, or can have, but those only which do truly believe in this commission of the Spirit; therefore it is, I am willing to hide these writings of ours from the great men of this world, and learned men, that they might not pry into them while I am alive; for great and rich men, and learned men, are generally of the seed of reason, which came of the reprobate angel, which he and his seed are kept in chains of darkness in their own bodies, till the judgment of the great day, when God shall raise all the seed of faith to eternal happiness, which they did believe in this life, and he will raise the seed of reason in chains of darkness, ever since the reprobate angel became flesh, when he deceived Eve; so am I willing that the seed of reason, that the great and learned men of this world, who are the children of that reprobated angel, should be kept in chains of darkness, from reading any of our books and writings, till the judgment of the great day, when God shall raise all of them to their eternal pain and shame: for this I do know, that there is two seeds, and that these two seeds, the original of them, came from two distinct persons, who were celestial, spiritual, and heavenly persons; the one was all faith, and the other was all pure reason fallen. Now these two persons transmuting their spiritual seed into mortal seed, so that now there is but two seeds of men and women in the world, as the scripture saith; namely, the seed of the woman, the seed of faith, which is the seed of God, and the seed of the serpent, the seed of reason, the seed of the devil; and of these two seeds hath millions of men and women come, both righteous and unrighteous; and here

lieth our peace of mind, even that peace of God that passeth all understanding; and in that we know by faith without doubting, that we are of the seed of faith, and shall be raised at the last day to eternal happiness, where we shall see God face to face, in whom we have believed: likewise we do perfectly know that the seed of the serpent, that live to men and womens estate, shall certainly be damned to eternity; and when they are raised again at the last day, they shall never see the face of God, nor the faces of one another; but shall be in utter darkness to eternity. Thus I have written these lines unto you, not only to strengthen your faith, but to comfort your spirit in these evil days wherein we live: so with my love, and my wife's love presented unto yourself, and to your son John Markes, and the rest of friends there with you, take leave, and remain your friend in the true eternal God, the man Christ Jesus in glory,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, July 19, 1683.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Eleanor Sudbury, in Nottingham, bearing date from London, August 6, 1683.*

*Dear friend in the true faith, Ellen Sudbury,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, by the hand of Mr. Delamain, and I am sorry

to hear of your trouble you are like to fall into; but I considering this kind of persecution at this time, for conscience sake, it is not only upon you, but generally upon all dissenting persons every where. The decree is gone forth among all Dissenters, in all parts of England, and the golden image of common prayer (called divine service, and the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper,) is set up in every town and city in England: and whoever doth hear the sound of the cornet, (which is the citation or summons,) and doth hear the sound of the dulcimer, (which is the informer,) and doth not come to church, and hear divine service, and receive the sacrament, must be cast into prison; which is a far more easy punishment, than to be cast into the lion's den, or to suffer any other corporal punishment upon the body, as I have done. I look upon this to be as easy a punishment, as ever any power of a nation did inflict upon a people, where liberty of conscience is not granted: and truly, friend, what advice to give you in this case I know not, for I cannot advise myself, how to deliver myself out of any of these troubles; no other than to submit, and let the flood of this persecution run over us: and if we be swallowed up of it, it will be well with us, because it is for our faith and a good conscience; which is of more value than the whole world. Only this advice I would give you, in this particular; not to give or enter into bond for your good behaviour, for it is of dangerous concernment, though the things proposed unto you seem ever so fair, innocent, and just, which you may justly keep; but if one informer afterwards do put you in for the least misdemeanour in the world, the justices of the county must be judges then, whether you have forfeited your bond, and not behaved yourself according

to the tenor of your bond, let your innocence be never so great, you must pay what fine the justices will lay upon you, or lie in prison for it: Therefore, my advice is, to deliver up your body into prison at the first, rather than be bound for your good behaviour; for who knoweth what the justice will call good behaviour? Keep the peace of your mind whatever you do, suffer merely for your conscience sake; be not guilty of the breach of any law of the land, nor of the law of God in point of worship; and time may produce deliverance, either by death or otherwise. Faith towards God, and in the true God, and patience in tribulation, will make persecution for conscience sake very easy, and bear your spirit up in all your troubles: and for your further encouragement, I shall give you the same advice as the apostle Paul did to the believers of his doctrine of Christ, in his time; he adviseth them to put on the whole armour of God, for God hath armour to put upon his saints here upon earth, as earthly kings have armour to put upon their captains, and mighty men of war; only God's armour is spiritual, and the world's armour is temporal, suitable to this earthly kingdom: and God's armour is spiritual, suitable to that heavenly kingdom above the stars, where his residence is. Now this armour of God, I do know that you and many more hath put on in part, above these twenty years, and now of late more fully. The armour of God put upon you, is, *First*, There was put upon your head, after you believed in the true God, and our report, there was put upon your head the helmet of salvation, in that the memory is placed in the head; so that you shall never forget it to eternity. In the second place, there was a breast-plate of righteousness of faith put upon your breast, when

your heart set to your seal, that Jesus Christ is God and man, in one single person. *Thirdly*, You being true-hearted to that principle of truth you received, at the first sound of this declaration, there was a girdle of truth girded about your waist, to strengthen you in your principle you once received. *Fourthly*, In that your steadfast believing the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit, your feet are shod with the doctrine of heavenly peace. *Fifthly*, When you first heard of this heavenly doctrine, about twenty years since, you received then the shield of faith; which made you able to oppose strongly those Bemonists and Quakers, which would, and did, shoot their fiery darts of slander and reproaches upon me and mine; thinking to have made you revolt and decline from me, and from the truth you once received. *Sixthly*, That when you received the truth first, there was put the two-edged sword of the Spirit into your mouth, that made you able to contend for the faith, and to convince several, and to convert some, and to give judgment upon others, to eternity. So that the two-edged sword of the Spirit hath been put into your mouth, and it hath proceeded out of your mouth, some to their eternal blessedness, and some to their endless misery. This armour of God is still upon you, and upon all the believers of this commission of the Spirit: and this armour must preserve you still, and strengthen you to bear, and to suffer what trial soever befalls you in this life, until the day of your death. Then shall you and I, and all saints, put off this armour of God, and lay it down in the dust for a moment, and in the resurrection our God will make us of the host of heaven, which shall follow our God, our King, and our Redeemer, upon white horses, clothed in white linen, white and pure; this

is God's armour we shall be clothed with in heaven, in the kingdom of glory. This is better armour we shall be clothed with in the kingdom of glory, than that armour of God was, which we had upon us in the kingdom of grace; which being exposed to all manner of sufferings, even to death itself. But blessed be the God of truth, that clothed us with this armour first, else we should never have been clothed with that glorious armour of heaven, which we shall never put off again to eternity. This is all the advice I can give you in this matter: I have been more large than I thought, being not very well in health these three weeks, nor am not yet; I grow old and crazy, and writing is now somewhat burthensome to old age, which formerly was very easy unto me; as these many writings of mine in the world, and what is not yet seen, will witness when I am gone, after my death: yet I was willing to add some comfort unto you, to strengthen your spirits in these days of trouble; that you may bear your cross the more easy, and take leave; only my love and my wife's, remembered unto yourself, and to your two daughters, and to our dear friend Mary Parker.

I remain your friend in the eternal true God, the man Christ Jesus in glory.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, August 6, 1683.*



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ann Jackson, living in York, bearing date from London, August 29, 1683.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, Ann Jackson,*

THIS is to certify you, that I have received, from the hands of Mrs. Hatter, your letter, dated the 3d. of August, 1683; also I received of her, at the same time, your kind token of your love, which you sent by her, thirty shillings, and one shilling to drink, in remembrance of you; which we did, for I was glad to see her, in that I have not seen her these several years, never since her husband's death, and before. — And as for your part, I do not remember that ever I saw you in my life; I do remember I did write to you many years since, which I did promise to your maid servant; which at that time, as I remember, did deliver me a ten shilling piece of gold, as from you, as a token of your love at that time. I suppose that letter, which you have received so long since, doth give you an account of the receipt of it; so many years ago since I wrote to you, and not hearing no answer from you of the receipt of that letter these many years, I have quite forgot what was contained in it; but I am very glad you did receive it at last, and am very well pleased that it was, and is, so welcome unto your mind, as you have expressed both in word and deed, in that your love hath far exceeded my expectation, or hearing from you any more. But I say by this your letter, that the good seed of faith was sown in your heart many years ago, by those books

and letters ; and your soul was that good ground, and I was the sower which God sent forth to sow in these latter days. Reeve and Muggleton hath sowed the doctrine of truth, which is the good seed in this world ; and some hath fell by the wayside, which the fowls and phantasies of men and women hath picked up ; we have cast some of this good seed among thorns, and the cares of this world hath choaked it up, as soon as ever it began to appear, and so came to nothing. Likewise we have cast this good seed, very much of it, into stony ground, and it came up very quickly into a blade, very green and pleasant ; but when the sun of persecution did arise, it scorched the green blade, and made it wither and die. And some of this good seed we have cast into good ground ; as you and many others can witness at this day, both in England and Ireland, and other places ; insomuch, that they have brought forth good fruit, even the fruit of faith, some thirty, some sixty, some an hundred fold, of peace of mind, the assurance of everlasting life in themselves, while in this life, in that they did believe the true doctrine declared by us, the witnesses of the Spirit, they brought forth the knowledge of the true God, in his form and nature, which causeth them to see God ; for no man can love God, but he that doth know God in his form and nature ; therefore said, this is life eternal to know the true God, which no man or woman in the world, at this day, doth know the true God in his form and nature, but those men and women only, that doth believe the doctrine and declarations written in these books, set forth by the witnesses of the Spirit ; so that we can truly say, we do know the true God in his form and nature, because we have the assurance of eternal life abiding in ourselves. Likewise all true believers of this third and

last commission of the Spirit, hath the knowledge of the form and nature of the right devil; so that all fear of seeing the devil is taken away; for the right devil is man, or Mendinæas; because the right devil is incarnate, the devil became flesh; so that no man of this faith need to fear, or be frightened, at the sight of the devil; except a man-devil comes with a warrant to carry him to jail for debt, or some other misdemeanor. But the whole world lieth in ignorance and darkness in the knowledge of the right devil, as they do in the knowledge of the true God. The religious, and the expounders of the scriptures, are as dark in these too main points, of absolute necessity for every man to know, concerning the true God and right devil, even as the heathen, that never had the scriptures to read; therefore all professors of the christian religion hath created in themselves a devil which God never created, a Spirit without a body, that is invisible, to fright themselves withal. These two great mysteries, and many more heavenly secrets, are declared and plainly opened in those books you say you have of mine, and of Lawrence Claxton; and I would advise you to preserve those books you have, for it is hard to get some of them you have for any money: and if you do seriously read them, I make no question but your understanding will be opened to comprehend those deeper and secret mysteries contained in those books, which will increase your faith and knowledge in those heavenly truths, to the great satisfaction of your own soul, and to the joy of me, the minister of glad tidings of life and salvation to you and others, even as many as the Lord our God shall call to the belief of the doctrine of this commission of the Spirit, and to the glory of our God, the man Christ Jesus in glory. I perceive

that you were one of God's elect ; that you were not overcome by the temptations of the devil. For those Quakers, and other professors, which persuaded you to fling those books in the fire and burn them, for they were all nought ; I say they were all devils, the seed of the serpent, and will be damned to eternity ; but in that you preserved them out of love and care to keep them, out of love to them, you have shewed yourself to be one of God's elect vessels, of the seed of the woman, of the seed of God ; one that is appointed to life and salvation, which you shall have the witness in yourself, in the believing and understanding these heavenly mysteries contained in those writings of the prophets and apostles ; which is a clear proof to me, that if you had lived in the days of the prophets, or in the days of the apostles, you would have believed them ; and would have been saved by your own faith in them, as you will now be saved by your own faith in us, the two last prophets that God will ever send to the end of the world. For I can truly say, as Christ did to the Jews, who said they believed Moses, that God spake to him ; but as for this man, that calls himself Christ, we know not whence he is ; Christ said to them, *If you had believed Moses, you would have believed me, for Moses wrote of me* ; so I say that whosoever would have believed the prophets and apostles, in their time, will believe us now in this last age of the world ; for the prophets and apostles wrote of us, as I could prove by the scriptures, but it would be too large. And as for the Quakers reporting that I was dead, I cannot much blame them for it ; because there was a printed pamphlet cried about the streets, that I was dead, and that I died in the Marshalsea, naming the day when, about four years since : the man that cried the book, in the same yard where I dwell, the boys

knowing I was well, called the man lying rogue, and brought him to my door; and when the man saw me, he asked my pardon, and said he would stop selling of those books that day, and so he did; but many of them was spread up and down London, and sent into many countries, as truth; but the God of heaven hath preserved me to this day with my life and health. Thus I have touched upon all the material things in your letter; whereby you may know that I am yet alive. So that I shall take leave at present; only my love, and my wife's love, presented unto you, though unknown by face to us both, I remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, August 25th, 1683.*

If you send any letters to me, direct your letters thus: These for Mr. Alexander Delamain, at the sign of the three Tobacco Pipes, upon Bread Street Hill, London, and it will come safe to my hands. I would willingly hear whether you receive this letter.

---

*The Copy of Mrs. Anne Tompkinson's Blessing, given her by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, dated in London, July 10, 1684.*

*Loving Friend in the true faith, Anne Tompkinson,*

I UNDERSTAND by my wife, that your desire and request is, that I would give you the blessing in

writing before you go into the country; it is not a usual thing in me to give a blessing in writing when the person is near at hand, and may have it by word of mouth; but when persons are at a distance, and could not have it by word of mouth, I have given it in writing to many, as is upon record at this day, as I know you are sensible of since you came to London; and I know your desire is to be bound in the bundle of life with God's elect, and that your name might be recorded in the book of life with the blessed of the Lord, both here in this world, and in the world to come. And to grant your request, I shall say this unto you, I have considered the tenderness of your age, even a child, and that the seed of faith did begin to arise in you about twelve years of age, but could not shew itself, for want of more years of age to strengthen your understanding; and that you are but a child as yet, though your understanding and experience hath been much increased in the knowledge of truth since you came to London, and that you have been called to the knowledge of the true God, and to have faith in this commission of the Spirit in the sixth hour of the day of your life, before you had done either good or evil; for there is but three hours in which every man and woman is called to life and salvation, either by God's service stirring up the seed of faith in the hearts of his elect, to keep themselves from actual sins, which never heard of a true prophet or messenger, or minister of God, or else they be called by a true prophet, messenger, or minister, which God sends to believe the doctrine declared by him, and that he hath power to bless them that truly believe him, as I know you do, and to curse those that despise him, and in any of these three hours of the days of a man's life is every

one of the elect of God called to life and salvation ; this is to say, in youth is the sixth hour, as it is with you and several others, which I know ; the ninth hour of the day is the middle age, the eleventh hour of the day is old age. These things I have had great experience of ; so likewise I have considered your innocency, your tender age, your great experience, and your strong faith in this commission of the Spirit ; and to grant your request, I do pronounce you, Anne Tompkinson, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity, where, in the resurrection, you shall see the face of my God and your God in the kingdom of eternal glory.

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*July 10, 1684.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ellen Sudbury, of Nottingham, bearing date from London, July 19, 1684.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Ellen Sudbury,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter dated July 8, 1684, by the hand of Mr. Delamain, with the two cheeses, and that which was written in your note to Mr. Delamain ; I confess it was a great while since I wrote to you ; the reason was, I had nothing of consequence to ground my

letter upon to write unto you. I am glad to hear of your liberty of conscience still, but I perceive by your letter they do proceed against you still, as they do to others. This persecution for conscience, is not only to you in particular, but unto all persons whatsoever in cities and countries, that are dissenters; so that all persons that are concerned in it, are put to their shifts what course to take to deliver themselves from it. All people would willingly keep the peace of their minds, and their estates also; but it is a hard thing in these days to keep both; therefore it is that people run some way, and some another; some run beyond the sea, others follow the words of Christ, which gave liberty to his disciples, if they were persecuted in one city to fly into another; this is practised very much in these days, which is the main cause of so bad trading; others, considering that their persecution doth not reach to life, only a man must make shipwreck of his conscience, and conform, to save his estate, and to keep out of prison; and so lose the peace of his mind, which is of more value than all the world's riches; which peace of mind, if it be once lost, will be hard to get again, as long as they live in this world; so that there is but these two ways for you, and those of this faith, to preserve the peace of their mind, and their estates; that is, to remove from that place where they are persecuted, or to deliver themselves up to prison; this will preserve the peace of their minds, and their estates both, if they can submit to either of those two; but if none of this faith can submit to either of these two, they must suffer. The loss of both these things I have had experience of in these late years, in several persons of this faith, because they could not bear the cross, but hath spoiled the peace of their



minds here, and lost their assurance of eternal life hereafter ; so that nothing but a bare hope is left in them, only to save the riches of this world ; and others, for a morsel of bread, to preserve this natural life. And as for Thomas Wyld you speak of, he was twice with me about six weeks ago, with one of his daughters, and he hath placed her with a friend of ours, one John Thomson, a taylor, in Bedlam, his wife keeps shop, and sells hoods and scarfs, and many other things in Old Bedlam. If I had known at that time that he did owe you so much money, I would have perswaded him what I could to pay you ; but I have not seen him since I received your letter. I sent my wife to his daughter, to know if he were in London, or not, that I would speak to him ; she said that he was gone into the country, a matter of forty miles from London, but when he came to London again she would send him to me ; but I will enquire of her mistress, when he comes to town to give me notice of it ; and when I have spoke with him, I will certify you of it : this is all that can be said of this matter at present. Also I would desire you to let our dear friend Mrs. Carter know that Mrs. Griffith is dead ; she died the 16th day of July, about six of the clock in the morning : I having the opportunity to write to you, I thought it convenient, that you might certify Mrs. Carter of it as soon as you can.

This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love and thanks unto you for all your kindnesses, I take leave, and

Remain your Friend in the eternal Truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*London, July 19, 1684.*

Pray present my love to Mr. Parker, and your daughters.

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. James Whitehead, of Braintree in Essex, bearing date from London, August 12, 1684.*

*Loving Friend in the true Faith, James Whitehead,*

I HAVE read over your letter you sent to our friend Delamaine, dated July 30, 1684, wherein you make mention of me to be the judge of this great difference between Henry Hawkes and you, as if I should do justice between you two, which if it did belong to me to give judgment upon two persons that doth both believe in the same God, and in the same messenger of God, my judgment would be very heavy and terrible to that person which hath, through covetousness and passion of this Spirit, broke forth into such outrage, railing, reviling, reproaching, scandalous judging and condemning a man of his own faith, which hath been longer and stronger in the true faith than himself, and a more righteous man in nature than himself; but in regard this difference between Hawkes and you hath been produced and occasioned through your temporal dealings together, so that it doth not concern me to divide the inheritance between two brethren of the true faith; but if the difference had been in matters of religion, or in spiritual debates or matters of faith, I would willingly have given my judgment between you; therefore I shall leave it to yourselves to agree or not agree, it lieth in your power to forgive him, upon his acknowledging his sin against you, because he hath sinned only against you; and if he doth not confess

his sin against you, but is hardened, as old Medgate was against me upon a spiritual account, who said he would perish first before he would confess his sin against me ; so it lieth in your power to deal with Hawkes, to cast him out of your society, and have no dealings or commerce with him, neither to eat or drink with him, and you will see that all the rest of friends in your town in a little time will follow your example, which will be punishment enough to Henry Hawkes ; for I understand by your letter, that you did employ Henry Hawkes to buy a part of a house for you, but it seems he had a mind to get something by it, not that he would do you that kindness for nothing; therefore he bought it for himself, thinking you would willingly have given him five pounds for his buying of it, seeing you had a desire to have it bought for you ; but you seeing he had, through covetousness, bought it for himself, not for you, he thinking to have got five pounds by it ; but when he saw that you were not willing to meddle with it, nor buy it at all, this occasioned his passion to break forth into such base and wicked, reproachful expressions, to one that was a better man than himself, both spiritual and temporal : which if he had spoke such words to a man of this world, they would have made his body and his purse to have paid for it, and would nothave left him worth a groat ; for of all the men and women I have known, neither saint or devil, these thirty years, did ever act or speak such words to one which he had dealings with, or more especially to one of his own faith, or one of his own principle in religion ; he hath derogated beyond all morality of nature, much more of grace ; therefore I shall relate his bad unhuman words and expressions against a brother of his own faith, as is asserted against him by

several witnesses, as followeth : *First*, That Henry Hawke came with one of the constables to your door, and Doctor Milford, and your cousin Ladd, that is now dead, meaning John Ladd, and many other neighbours, which you can produce to witness ; Henry Hawkes called you liar and fool, saying, that you could not carry any errand over the way, in a most abusive manner did taunt and rail, and went from your door to the Black Lion, where brother Thomas Ladd was met with his partners, where he did, to the great grief of brother Thomas Ladd, lash out behind your back with the most basest language, saying you was as great a liar as one he named of your neighbours, who lies under that odium, and that you was a silly fellow, not fit to carry an errand five rod ; and further he said, you had been distracted this half year. As to this I say, if Hawkes had not been distracted himself with envy and madness, he would never have uttered such mad expressions to a sober man, that was more in his senses then ever Hawkes was in his life ; for it doth not belong to that tribe and nature that Whitehead is of, to be distracted in his brain ; but distraction of brain belong to the Gentiles, such as he is, Amonites and Moabites, and Canaanites, and the race of the Gentiles, but not to the Jews, who are zealous of the law of God written in their hearts ; but the Gentiles, such as Hawkes is, through their experience of business in this world, and their passionate humours, many of them came to distraction, and to be distracted in the brain, which causeth them in the heat of their minds to utter such expressions out of their mouths, which are unsavoury and unseemly, which causeth repentance, else nothing but hell followeth. As to all these base reproaches, and undervaluing words, and despising speeches aforesaid, I

perceive by your letter that Henry Hawkes did acknowledge his fault unto you, and that you did acknowledge in your letter, that you have forgiven him this tresspass against you before. But now, last of all, in this month of July, 1684, Henry Hawkes hath committed a greater fault against you than the former; for, say you, Mr. Clarke, who owns the other part of the house, that is to say, that part of the house that you was about buying of Henry Hawkes, you having agreed with him. Likewise you say, for no other cause as you know, than for refusing to allow the one half of the five shillings and two-pence charge which you said was needlesly bestowed, and that Mr. Clarke, your partner, and yourself, told the workmen that you would not allow Henry Hawkes it; but he before your partner, Clarke, and Richard Amis, did call you damned knave, and damned rogue, and that you were a likely man to buy a house, when as you owed him money, and could not pay it. These are abominable words, which no man could or should have borne, had he not professed the same faith as you do; however, except he doth repent and acknowledge his fault to you, that you might forgive him, in that he hath sinned only against you in a high nature, you may do as I said before, cast him out of all concerns with you, even as the Jews did the Samaritans, have no dealings with him. If the house be yours and Clarke's which Hawkes lives in, and that he doth pay one half the rent to you, and the other half to Clarke; if he be a tenant to you both, as I perceive he is, give a letter of attorney to any other man whom you can trust, to receive your part of the rent quarterly, or half year, as the tenor of your lease runs; but if he hath no lease, but a tenant at will, you may advise with Mr. Clarke, and turn him out of the house

according to law, and let it to another to put him out of the house ; then you may do as aforesaid, and free yourself from having any dealings with him. This is all the justice I can give you in this particular at present, but take leave,

And remain your friend in the eternal truth, both natural and spiritual,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, August 10, 1684.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Elizabeth Wheately, of Andover, bearing date from London, dated September 24, 1684.*

*Dear Friend in the true Faith, Elizabeth Wheately,*

THIS is to certify you, that I have read your letter you sent to our friend Mr. Delamain, dated the 3d of September, 1684 ; wherein we have received the kind token of your love also ; I am glad to hear of your good health, and more especially of the strong faith you have in the personal true God, the man Christ Jesus in glory : I know your faith in him is built upon a rock, a sure rock ; which all the fiery darts of reason, (the devil in man) shall not prevail against you ; you being fully assured in yourself, that there is no devil to affright you, but men and women devils. And your faith is built upon a glo-

rious spiritual personal God, in the form of a man, whose nature is all faith, which faith is all power; and you being of the seed of faith, it is the great support of the peace of your mind here in this world, and doth give you the assurance in yourself, of that eternal life and glory in the world to come. So likewise, your faith in the true God doth give you the knowledge of the right devil, his form and nature; which knowledge doth keep you from all fears of the devil when you see him, knowing in yourself, that there is no devil to be damned but men and women: for as men and women are the seed of Adam, which is the seed of God, are appointed to be saved, because the seed of faith is risen into an act of faith, to believe God's messengers; and so come to have assurance of eternal life abiding in themselves, yet they are but men and women that are to be saved: and the cause why men and women are saved, is, because they are of the seed of Adam, which is the seed of God, and for no other cause. So likewise, there is no other devil to be damned to eternity, but men and women. Why? Because men and women are the seed of the serpent, and the serpent's nature, being reason fallen: and no creature else hath the seed of reason in it, but men and women; therefore it is, that when the seed of reason doth arise in man and woman, into an act of rebellion; and so the breach of the moral law, which God hath written in the hearts of men and women; then doth the fear of eternal damnation arise in the heart of the seed of the serpent, which are no other but men and women; so that as Adam and his seed are all appointed of God to be saved, both of men and women; so likewise, the serpent and his seed are appointed of God to be damned to eternity, which are men and women:

for there is but two seeds, that is, the seed of faith, and the seed of reason ; and herein lieth your eternal happiness, and all others, in that you have believed a true prophet's report ; whereby you come to know yourself to be of the seed of faith, of the seed of Adam, of the seed of God. This is that peace of mind, and comfort of heart, which the world cannot give ; neither can any religious man in the world whatsoever, attain to this peace of mind and comfort of heart in these days ; but those few that do believe in this commission of the Spirit. I have added these few lines, for the increase and strengthening of your faith, that your joy may be full, and so take my leave at present ; only my love, with my wife's love and respects, presented unto you.

I remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, September. 24, 1684.*

I perceive you have earnest desire to Mr. Delamain, to procure you these two books of Claxton's writing ; namely, The Dialogue betwixt Faith and Reason, and that book, called, Look about you, for that Devil you fear, is within you. Friend, it is a great wonder that we could help you to both, or to either of them ; but as it happened, Mr. Delamain looking over all his books, he found one Dialogue that was perfect, and no more, and I myself had the other devil book that was perfect, and no more. The price of the one Dialogue is 2s. and 6d. and the other 1s. and 6d. our friend Delamain will take care to send them.



*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Rebecca Hall, of Arnesly, in Leicestershire, bearing date from London, October 18, 1684.*

*Dear friend in the true faith, Rebecca Hall,*

THIS is to let you know, that I saw a letter of yours to our friend Mr. Delamaine, dated September 21, 1684. In which letter I understand you are like for to come into a great deal of trouble, about your not going to church, and not receiving the Sacrament: these two things are of late the snare to catch every tender conscience; and this snare is spread over all the land at this day, so that no tender conscience can escape being taken in this snare, but by suffering or conforming; so that his conscience must be wounded to save himself from suffering. This sacrament is as a net spread all over the land, to catch not only the fowls of the air, but also the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven; are caught in this net. To open the difference betwixt the fowls of the air, and the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, (mark!) the fowls of the air be these, viz. the dissenting Presbytery, Independents, Baptists, and Quakers. These be the fowls of the air, that dissent from the church, and yet doth the same things among themselves, and do believe the same doctrine as the church doth: their God is all one, and their devil is all one; their heaven and hell are all one, and their souls are all immortal, and do slip out of their bodies, and never dies, but goes to

heaven or hell. This is the spirit of reason in all men; and the seed of reason is risen more higher in all religious dissenters than in the common, ignorant, dark church people; that is, the righteous law of God is risen, and written in their hearts, more than in other people; which causeth them to be more righteous, that is, more legal righteous, to perform and keep the moral law written in their hearts, than those that are born churchmen, and never knew any other righteousness than to go to church, and to hear a church-boy say grace, and read prayer to a whole congregation. These Dissenters, aforesaid, are the fowls of the air, because the imaginations of reason goeth out of them, seeking and thinking, by reading the Scriptures, and by their righteous life, to obtain eternal life: yet being ignorant of the true God, in his form and nature, and the right devil, in his form and nature; upon these two foundations dependeth the secret decree and council of God concerning life eternal, and death eternal, to all mankind. And these fowls of the air being ignorant of these two foundations aforesaid, that is to say, the true God, his form and nature, and the right devil, his form and nature, they cannot enter into rest: neither can they have eternal life abiding in themselves; for their God is an infinite spirit, without any body or form at all; he fills heaven and earth with his vast spirit, the air and all places; he cannot be confined to no particular place; neither in heaven above, nor this earth, nor the air, cannot contain him. Likewise they have imagined a wrong devil; a spirit without a body, which is in hell-fire, and in chains of darkness; yet this chain is so long, that he comes out of hell upon this earth, and into the air, and at noon-day, to tempt men and women to murder, and adultery, and all manner of wickedness.

Thus the seed of reason in all Dissenters feedeth upon these aerial notions; therefore called the fowls of the air. But the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, are the saints that are Dissenters. And why do they dissent from the church? Because they know the true God, in his form and nature; and therefore they serve God, because they know God; for it is life eternal to know the true God. Likewise we know the right devil, in his form and nature; therefore we do not fear any other devil but the men devils that seeketh to devour us, in our lives and estates; for I am sure no other devil can do us any harm, but men and women devils. And we, the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, we do receive the true sacrament every week; because we do, by faith, eat the flesh of God, and drink the blood of God, and feed upon the true God in our hearts, by faith with thanksgiving.

I have administered this sacrament to many, and you, and several others of the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, have received the true sacrament of the Lord's Supper, in that they have eat the flesh of Christ, which is God become flesh; and they have drank the blood of Christ, which is the blood of God; for God could not become flesh without blood, for no living flesh can be without blood, for blood is the life of the flesh; therefore it was as Christ said when he was upon earth, *Except ye eat my flesh, and drink my blood, ye have no life in you*: that is, you have no assurance of eternal life abiding in you. Now you that have believed our report, who are the witnesses of the Spirit, as you say, let us comfort ourselves in the Scriptures of truth, and in the prophets writings, that bears witness to the truth of them: These words of yours proceeds from the

strength of your faith, which faith of yours will make you perfectly whole, as to the peace of your mind here in this life, and to eternal life in the world to come, because you have believed our report; and have believed our report, and hath believed our doctrine concerning the true God, in his form and nature, and how he became flesh, as our writings hath declared; so that by your faith in them, you do eat the flesh of God, and drink his blood; so that your mind doth feed upon the flesh of God, and drink his blood continually. This is the true spiritual sacrament of the Lord's Supper, which we, the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, do eat of while we live in this world: this flesh of God is meat indeed; and his blood is drink indeed. This meat and drink doth satisfy the soul, so that it doth thirst no more, nor hunger no more, after salvation, nor eternal life; because we know the seal and assurance of eternal life, abiding in ourselves; so that you, and all true believers of the commission of the Spirit, do, by faith, spiritually eat the flesh of Christ, which is the flesh of God, and drink the blood of Christ, which is the blood of God; so that you have received the true sacrament of the Lord's Supper, and that you have supped with the true God here in mortality, upon this earth; and all those that hath supped with the great God here, when he was upon earth, in the state of mortality, they shall be invited together, with all the fowls that fly in the midst of heaven, to come unto the supper of the great God, now he is glorified; that is, to sup with him in shame in mortality, and suffered persecution for his name sake in mortality. So likewise, in the resurrection, they shall be immortalized, and gathered together, to sup with the great God of heaven in glory; and, as the

apostles did, by their preaching, invite the fowls of heaven in their time to sup, that is, to believe in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, they did sup with God, so likewise Reeve and Muggleton, the two last prophets and witnesses of the Spirit, God hath chosen us two in this last age, to meet God's elect, the fowls of heaven, and you being one, and you have believed our declaration concerning the true God, how he became flesh, and dwelt amongst men, and hath supped with them here in mortality, you shall be invited to sup with the great God of heaven in glory; and that when you, and all the fowls of heaven, shall have to sup with the great God in this last age to eat, will be the flesh of persecuting kings, and the flesh of persecuting judges, and justices of the peace; and the flesh of persecuting captains of trained bands, and the flesh of mighty men of war; and the flesh of pampered horses, and them that sat on them; and the flesh of all persecuting men for conscience sake, both small and great; as church-wardens, constables, informers, and all inferior officers. This supper with the great God will be when he hath gathered his elect, the fowls of heaven, from the four winds, at the day of judgment, in the resurrection, when the sheep, which is called by John's Revelation, *The fowls that fly in the midst of heaven*, shall stand on God's right hand, and he shall say, *Come ye blessed*, because when I was upon earth in shame you believed in me, and believed my servants, the prophets and apostles, and my two last prophets reports; therefore inherit the everlasting kingdom, which I have prepared for you before the foundation of this worldly kingdom was laid; so likewise all the seed of the serpent; as persecuting kings, judges, captains, mighty men both small and great;

which are called in Scripture reprobates, goats; in the resurrection they shall stand on God's left hand; he shall say, *Go ye cursed into hell-fire, which was prepared for the devil and his angels*; because, when he was upon earth, you persecuted me, and put me to death, thinking in yourselves that I should never rise again. Also, you persecuted the prophets, and did kill them that did foretel of my coming; and ye persecuted my servants and messengers I sent unto you in all ages; therefore go ye cursed, both great and small, into everlasting torments, *where there is weeping and gnashing of teeth* for evermore. Then shall all the prophets, apostles, and we the witnesses of the Spirit, and you the fowls of heaven, shall sup with the great God of heaven, that redeemed us with his own blood: so that God himself with us shall eat the flesh of these persecuting reprobates before-said. That is, God himself, the prophets, and apostles, and we the witnesses of the Spirit, and you the fowls of heaven, shall rejoice in the everlasting damnation of these your enemies, the whole race of that serpent-devil Cain; the first man devil in flesh. For this will be the last supper that God will ever make with his saints, because there will be no wickedness acted between the seed of God, and the seed of the serpent, for ever, to eternity; and this is that we shall eat to eternity, which will be our joy. Thus, with my true love, and my wife's true love, remembered unto yourself, I take leave, and remain

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, October 18, 1684.*

*Dear friend,*

I PERCEIVE, by your letter, you have proposed several ways to yourself, what course you should take, how to deliver yourself out of this persecution for conscience sake, and yet keep your conscience free, that the peace of your mind may not be lost; for I perceive that the churchwardens and the constables have taken their oaths at the Sessions, which the justices keeps to persecute their neighbours for conscience sake; so that the churchwardens and the constables are the informers against you, and hath put your name into court, I perceive for one month, which will cost you twenty pounds, by the law which was made in Queen Elizabeth's days against the Papists; but now in these days it is put in execution against all dissenting Protestants. There is three ways to punish all kinds of Dissenters, both rich and poor: *First*, They proceed upon rich by Queen Elizabeth's law, aforesaid, upon the twenty pound act, to take their goods, and not their persons to prison. *Secondly*, They proceed against the poor Dissenters by way of excommunication, that they might keep their persons in prison, and not their goods; so that many of the rich do conform to save their goods; and many of the poor do conform to save their persons out of prison thereby. The law whereby they do persecute Dissenters is for meetings; the speaker twenty pounds, the house-keeper twenty pounds; and if any hearers be rich, he must pay five shillings a man, for a hundred persons, which they will levy upon his goods. This law was made by the Parliament since the King was restored; now you being rich is well known to the informers aforesaid, therefore your persecution is grounded upon Queen Elizabeth's law aforesaid

Now you have thought upon several ways to deliver yourself from all; but I cannot say that any of these ways you have proposed to yourself will do you any good; but the remedy will be worse than the disease. *First*, You say you told the churchwardens you thought to go to your mother, and then, if she were questioned about it, they may say you were gone from home. This will do you no good, except you could carry your lands, your chattels, your corn, and all that you have in the house, and all upon the ground, along with you to your mother; for it is your goods that they come for, or your money, and not for your person. *Secondly*, You say, if they bring you into trouble, you say you shall be fain to move to some other place. To this I say, unless you could remove your land, and all your other goods, to some other place, it will do you no good. *Thirdly*, You say you think you shall be willing to go to prison. To this I say, they will not let you go to prison, neither will they put you into prison; and if you go to prison before you take your land and goods with you, else that will do you no good at all. *Fourthly*, You say you think you shall be forced to make over your chattels and goods to some of your friends, for the use of your children. This you may do according to law; but your land must be made over also; but this I must tell you, if you should make over your estate to any friend whatsoever, your condition will be seven times worse than to stand to the persecution of the nation, let their persecution extend ever so far. Therefore let me advise you, that is now a freed woman, a widow, that hath full power as any lord in the land, over your husband's estate, for the good of your children; and though there be overseers, yet the power lieth wholly in you,



as it did in the man ; so you are the lady of all, and hath the possession of all, as your husband had ; and for you to make over your estate to another man, you will become a mere servant, and your children mere servants to another man ; therefore I will give you my advice and judgment in this matter : I have always given my advice and judgment for the widow and the fatherless, for their good, and those that did follow it did prosper ; and those that would not, if they did miscarry, I could not help it. Therefore my advice to you, and judgment is, that you should not make over your estate to any man, nor to remove to any other place ; but keep at Arnesby for the good of your children. Neither let your mother be grieved, but let your enemies proceed as far against you as they will ; and when they come with their warrant to seize your goods for the twenty pounds, do you pay them the twenty pounds down quietly, and let them not be put to that trouble to seize your goods ; and it will convince and melt the hearts of the most implacable enemies you have, in that you know you are an innocent, harmless woman, that suffers this only to keep the peace of your conscience ; so that perhaps they may never trouble you more : if they should trouble you again, I am confident it will be a great while first. Thus I have given you the best and safest advice I can in this matter.

Your friend,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, October 18, 1684.*

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ann Jackson, of York, bearing date from London, October 18, 1684.*

*Kind and loving Friend in the true Faith, Ann Jackson,*

I SAW a letter of yours to Mrs. Hatter, dated August 27, 1683; in which letter of yours to Mrs. Hatter, you do order her to pay forty shillings to my wife; and you give it her to buy a piece of plate, as a token of your love. I confess your love is very great for truth's sake, for I know of no other inducement to move you thereunto; for I nor my wife never saw your face in our lives, I think, nor you us, neither had I ever any concerns in temporal matters with you; so that your faith in those books and writings of ours, the witnesses of the Spirit, it hath opened your eyes to see, and your ears to hear, and your heart to understand the things that belong to your peace of mind here in this life, and in the world to come life everlasting; in that by your faith you do understand the form and nature of the true God: so that you do know God; for none can love God, but those that know God in his form and nature; which none in the world doth, but those that have faith in this commission of the Spirit. Likewise by your faith you do understand the form and nature of the right devil; which knowledge of the right devil, it casteth out all fears of seeing any invisible devil whatsoever, that hath no body. These are two great mysteries the Scripture speaketh of, and upon these two, the mystery of God become flesh, and the mystery of the devil become flesh, proceedeth all other

spiritual and heavenly knowledge, and secret decree and council of God, concerning the weal and woe of all mankind in the world, which is hid from the world, in that their eyes are blinded, and are kept in chains of darkness in their own minds until the last day, even to the end of the world; so that none can be partakers of these heavenly and spiritual enjoyments, and assurance in this life, but those few that have believed our report, and doth understand those two great mysteries aforesaid; therefore I may truly say unto you, as Christ did, when on earth, *Blessed are your eyes that see at such a distance, and your ears that hear, and your heart that understands these things, that you have read at such a great distance; whom I never saw, nor discoursed with.*

This is to certify you, that Mrs. Hatter was in the country, with her children, at that time, when you sent that letter, dated August 27, 1683, only her son James was in London, and it was almost August again before she came to London; and upon the 13th day of August, 1684, my wife received the forty shillings of Mrs. Hatter, and she bought a piece of plate, which is as you directed, and will keep it for your sake; and doth give you many thanks for your great kindness. I could not write to you before now, till the thing was accomplished, that I might certify you of the receipt of it; neither have I had time of late to write, through one occasion or other. Thus, with my love, and my wife's love remembered unto you, I take leave, and remain your friend in the true faith, in the true personal God, the man Christ Jesus in glory,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

October 18, 1684.

Pray James Doe deliver this letter to Mrs. Ann

Jackson, directed for his loving sister Jane Doe, in the Betheren, in York, but for Mrs. Ann Jackson, of the same city.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Rebecca Hall, of Arnesby, in Leicestershire, bearing date from London, January 20, 1684-5.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal truth, Rebecca Hall,*

I SAW a letter of yours, sent lately to our friend Mr. Delamaine, wherein you sent him a token of your love, and another to me; in which letter of yours I find that your faith doth grow very strong in the doctrine of the true God being in the form of man, and in us the witnesses of the Spirit, which doth comfort your soul, and bear up your spirit, in the troubles you do and shall meet with, in this troublesome world; which I am glad to hear of your strong faith in that personal God the Man Christ Jesus, now in glory, as our writings have declared. And blessed are you that have believed our report; to such as you, and no other, is the arm of the Lord's saving health revealed unto.

Also I find by your letter, that your troubles are like to increase more and more. You say that your brother Barker told you, when he was at your house, that you was indicted for one month; and that at Michaelmas assizes; and that he wrote you word, that if you did not come to church before the next ses-

sions, he thought that you might be indicted for three months, and in the court too. Now what he meant by the court too, I cannot tell; neither doth he nor you relate who it was that put you into the sessions-court first, at Michaelmas, for one month; whether it was the churchwardens of your town, or the constable of your town, which you say presented you: which of these it was you have not declared, nor, I perceive, do well know; and why your brother Barker should write for you to come to church before the next sessions, else he thinks you will be indicted for three months. As to this advice of your brother Barker, you cannot do; for if you should appear at church, the minister must be made acquainted with it, and he will examine you, and you must stay and hear common-prayer read, called divine service; and then he will tell you of a sacrament that you must receive, and that he will give you a certificate to carry to the justices at the sessions, and so you may save your goods, and lose the peace of your mind, which is of more value than the whole world.

Likewise you say, you were presented by the constable of your town, and not by the churchwardens: and you speak as if you are loth it should come to an excommunication. Likewise you desire to know, whether you had best take a lawyer's advice, or whether they can excommunicate you if you go from Arnesby. I cannot understand how they should proceed against you in the spiritual court, to excommunicate you; and sue you, or indict you, upon the twenty pounds act also. For excommunication is always out of the spiritual court, and that extends no further than to put your person in prison, and to keep you there until you do conform, and to pay the charges of the court besides. Before they excommu-

minate you, they are to cite you before the chief doctor of that court, and to instruct you, and to give you time to conform; and after that time is expired that was given you, if you do not conform, they must publish your excommunication in your own church, by your own minister of your town. Do you know who it is that doth prosecute you in this spiritual court? Or do you know who hath presented you into this spiritual court? or whether they have proceeded, and how far, in relation to an excommunication? If you know these things, it will be your best course to employ a proctor that belongs to that court; he can do you the best good to get you off, for money, of any man.

Likewise I perceive by your letter, that they prosecute you in both courts, both in the spiritual court, and in the temporal court, where the justices of the peace are to be judges; and both for one thing, for not coming to church to hear common prayer, called divine service; and receiving the sacrament, which is a very cruel deed to the widow, and the fatherless children; that is to say, the clergymen, they are to have your soul and body into a prison, whereby to make you confess, that you might utterly destroy the peace of your mind, and that your faith might fail in you; so that they might have full power over you, both in soul and body.

And as for the temporal court, the justices of the peace, they are to prosecute you upon the twenty pounds act, made in Queen Elizabeth's days, and they came by this act for your goods, and not for your body and soul. The justices have left your body and soul to those pretended spiritual men, as the priests of the nation. I confess these things are very hard to be done unto the widow and fatherless

children ; to suffer thus merely for conscience sake, having broke no temporal nor moral law of the land ; for the conscience belongs to God only to judge of, and not to man. You are edged in on both sides ; so that it is hard to give you any advice to do you good : but this I say, you had better fall into the hands of the justices of the peace, rather than into the hands of the pretended spiritual men ; because the justices will be content with your goods, or money ; but the other will not be content without your soul and body doth conform unto their worship ; which you cannot do without destroying the peace of your own soul, which is the peace of God, *which passeth all understanding* ; a peace which the world cannot give.

Now I perceive by your letter, that you had rather fall into the hands of the justices, to take away your goods, than into the hands of the clergy, that will keep soul and body in prison, except you will fall down and worship that great image of common prayer, called divine service, and receive the sacrament to eat a bit of bread, and to drink a spoonful or two of wine, and so destroy, and make shipwreck of, the peace of your mind, and of that comfort and assurance of everlasting life, which you have received already, by eating by faith in your heart the flesh of Christ, which is the flesh of God ; and in that you have drank the blood of Christ, which is the blood of God. This is the true sacrament of the Lord's Supper ; for the flesh of God is meat indeed, and this blood of God is drink indeed ; and as oft as you do eat of this bread of God, and drink of this blood of God, you cannot choose but remember that comfort, joy, and assurance of eternal life, abiding in your own soul, abiding in you whilst in this world ; besides those unspeakable pleasures in the kingdom of glory, where you shall see your God,

whose flesh you did eat of here in this life. I say, you shall see the same God, in the same flesh glorified, which you did eat of here in this life, in his bright burning glory, face to face, in his eternal kingdom of glory; which whosoever doth eat that bit of bread, and drink that spoonful or two of wine, in a sacramental way, as an ordinance of God, against his conscience, to keep himself from suffering, he doth eat and drink his own damnation, not discerning the Lord's body; he doing that which is so directly against his own conscience. It is a dangerous thing to worship a God, which he knows is not the true God.

Dear friend, I would willingly give you the best and safest advice, so far as I understand, in this business of yours, that you might keep the peace of your mind, that your own conscience may not condemn you; that you may always look with boldness to the throne of grace. For the conscience of every man is of God's side, and pleadeth for him; and that you might come off the great troubles you are like now to go through, as easy, and with as little loss, as you can;—which is this; if you be indicted and presented into no court, but the court of justices of the peace, which prosecute you only upon the twenty pounds act, then I look upon it your best course to go yourself in person to one or more of the moderate justices of the peace, and plead with him, that you are a widow, and hath so many small children to bring up; and that you never broke any of the King's temporal laws; neither did you ever go to any private meeting, contrary to the act of parliament; you always went while your husband lived, to the church of England, and since your husband died you have stayed at home, and do read the Bible, which is the scriptures, and am very well.



satisfied in my mind, and hath peace of conscience towards God, and peace with all men ; I do wrong to no man ; I meddle with no man about religion ; every man ought to worship God as his conscience doth dictate to him ; and if any person should do any thing contrary to his conscience, his own conscience will condemn him ; which if I should do, that which I am indicted for, before your worships, my own conscience would condemn me greatly, which I dare not do, though I suffer much for it : I know it lieth in your power to do me good or hurt ; therefore I shall leave it to your consciences to do what you will by me ; I must suffer it as patiently as I can.

Again you say you are loth it should proceed to an excommunication : I cannot blame you for it, because the spiritual court had rather have your soul and body in prison, that they purge out, through your sufferings, the sincerity of your heart, and that strong faith which you now believe, to fail, and question whether you may not be saved, though you do hear their doctrine, as they call it, and eat their bit of bread, instead of Christ's body of flesh, which you did eat of before ; and that you may drink a spoonful or two of their wine in a golden cup, the priest hath in his hand, instead of that blood of Christ which you have drunk many times of before, which hath proved water of life unto your soul ; and that it will be *as a well of water springing up in your soul unto eternal life* : so that you need not come unto this well which is digged, and set up by the powers of the nation, to draw any water, because their well is dry ; and you have no pitcher, that is, no affection in your soul to draw of that water out of the world's well, because, after the drinking of that water of the world's well, you will be more thirsty after the peace of mind, and

the assurance of salvation in yourself, than if you had never taken it at all; therefore it is a dangerous thing for any man or woman, that hath tasted of the good word of God, that is, that hath tasted of Christ's flesh; for he is that word of God which was in the beginning; and hath tasted of the powers of the life to come, which is eternal; for it is he that hath purchased by the body of his own flesh, and by his own soul, that was in the blood of his flesh, being poured out unto death, and rising again, hath all power, both in heaven and in earth, to give everlasting life to all those that truly believe in him; which faith in him is to eat his flesh, and drink his blood; so that if those that have tasted of these things aforesaid, do fall away to the worship of the nation for fear of suffering, contrary and against their conscience, it is impossible, as the apostle saith, to be renewed by repentance.

I would desire you to satisfy yourself in these things following:

*First.* Whether you be presented or prosecuted in the spiritual court, and Sessions court, indeed, or but in one?

*Secondly.* Whether the church-wardens of your town did indict you to the sessions or no?

*Thirdly.* Whether the constables of your town did present you into the spiritual court, or at the sessions court only, or into both courts, aye or no?

*Fourthly.* Whether the minister of your town hath any hand in this business, against you, aye or no?

I could wish you to speak with the church-wardens of your town, and with the constable of your town, and with the minister of your town, and they will inform you how they do proceed against you, that you may know how to make your defense the better.

This is all I can say at present in this matter; only my love, and my wife's love, remembered unto you, and remain

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, Jan. 20th, 1684-5.

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Mary Gamble, of Cork in Ireland, bearing date from London, March 6, 1684-5.*

*Loving Friend is the true Faith, Mary Gamble,*

THIS is to let you know, that I received your husband's letter and your's, dated Feb. 3, 1684: and because I never saw your face in my life, to my knowledge, nor received a sign from your hand-writing before now; but I have heard of you by the hearing of the ear, but mine eyes never saw you, nor you me; therefore it is that I shall direct or write these few lines chiefly unto you, as a true believer of this commission of the Spirit, and of the doctrine declared by us the two last prophets and witnesses of the Spirit, that God will ever send, while this world endureth. I perceive by these few lines of yours, that you have a true affection unto the truth, and to me the messenger of glad tidings of life and salvation,

in that you have a full assurance of your eternal happiness in the world to come, as you have expressed, and as hath been reported of you by others ; so that I can truly say by you as Christ did while on earth, that you *Mary hath chosen the better part, which shall never be taken from you*, in that you have believed our report at such a distance : your faith is so much the rarer, in that you never saw me, nor heard my voice in the streets : for I say by experience them words of Christ to be true, that *a prophet is not without honour, save of them of his own house*, or of his own neighbours : for this I know by experience, this thirty-three years that I have been in this commission, there hath not one neighbour, or acquaintance, or kindred here in London, as I knew of, that hath believed my report, save my own children : but I perceive you have read our own writings, which your father, and mother-in-law, and your husband, brought into that land. These three I have seen, and discoursed with in the days of their ignorance ; and since they all believed, I have written letters to them, to strengthen their faith in the knowledge of the true God, his form and nature ; and in the knowledge of the right devil, his form and nature : these two are the foundations both of hell and heaven, which I perceive you have heard, and read, and hath builded your faith upon that rock, which no fiery darts of reason, the devil, shall enter to wound your soul, as to question your salvation, or to fear your eternal damnation ; only I would strengthen your faith a little further, in what you have read in our writings, concerning these two foundations aforesaid, of hell and heaven, or of God and devil.

Mind, this God and devil were those two trees spoken of by Moses, which stood in the midst of the

garden ; namely, the tree of life, and the tree of knowledge of good and evil. From these two trees came hell and heaven ; that is, eternal life and eternal death. These two trees were two spiritual bodies in the forms of men, as I have declared in my other writings ; and they both descended from Heaven, and they differed in their natures ; the spirit and tree of life was God the father, and Creator of both worlds, and his nature was all faith, by which he created all creatures that hath the breath of life ; therefore he is called the tree of life. Likewise the tree of knowledge of good and evil was, in his creation, an angel of light, and his nature or spirit was pure reason ; but he falling from his created estate, his glory was changed into an angel of darkness, a serpent, a tree of knowledge of good and evil.

Now from these two trees did proceed hell and heaven : likewise these two trees, because these two trees had two several god-like wisdoms in them ; that is to say, the tree of life had the wisdom of faith, which is all power in him ; therefore God created Adam in his own image and likeness ; not only in his inward soul or spirit, but in his outward bodily form also ; only his body was earthly, and God's bodily form was spiritual and heavenly : and this spirit or seed of Adam ought to have eaten of the tree of life, by the motions in his mind continually ; besides the fruits of the wooden trees that was good for earthly bodies to eat, and have lived for ever in that state of innocency. Likewise the tree of knowledge of good and evil, it was a spiritual and heavenly body, cast down from Heaven, which lost his ascending power by his disobedience to his Creator, when he was a companion with the holy angels. This tree of knowledge of good and evil was in the

form of his bodily shape of Adam also, though a spiritual body, and his spirit or nature was all reason fallen; and why Moses calls him a tree of knowledge of good and evil, is, because the Creator hath written the law of obedience unto their creator in the seed of reason; therefore it is written, *Thou shalt worship the Lord thy God, and him only thou shalt serve.* Now, as all men and women in this world, by generation, doth come to be partakers of these two seeds, which came from these two trees, namely, the tree of life, and the tree of the knowledge of good and evil; now that man or woman soever, in their conception, doth partake most of the seed of faith, it is from the tree of life; and so it will stretch forth the hand of faith, and take and eat of the tree of life, and live for ever. And what man or woman soever, that doth partake of the seed or spirit of reason, which is from the tree of knowledge of good and evil in their conception, the spirit of reason in them will put forth its hand, and take and eat of the tree of knowledge of good and evil, and die to all eternity.

Now how these two trees came to be in flesh, and to dwell among men on this earth; that is to say, how he should become very God and very man; and how the angel should become very devil and very man: these are the two great mysteries that hath produced an eternal happiness to the seed of Adam, the seed of God; and an endless misery to the seed of the serpent, the seed of the devil; but these things are more large in print. It is the glory of God's prerogative power to make one vessel for mercy, and another vessel for misery; else how could we, that do believe in the true God, and hath assurance of his everlasting mercy, praise and magnify our God, our King, and our Redeemer, for his infinite wisdom,

and secret prerogative decree, to make us vessels of mercy, if he should not, by his prerogative power, wisdom, and secret decree, make vessels of wrath fitted for eternal destruction; or, as I may say, fitted for eternal damnation, to the seed of the serpent, the seed of Cain. So that God's prerogative power, he being above all law, hath made a necessity of two seeds, and a necessity of an eternal salvation unto the seed of Adam, and a necessity of an eternal damnation to the seed of the serpent: and who shall withstand a prerogative power, that is absolute above all law; that made himself capable to die, and to quicken out of death into eternal life again? By this means he hath purchased an eternal life and glory to the seed of Adam, his own seed; and an eternal death to the seed of the serpent; else there would have been no eternal life to the one, nor eternal death to the other. And by this means hath the God of Heaven prepared a kingdom of Heaven above the stars, with thrones of glory for Moses and the prophets, and for the faithful elders of Israel, and for the fathers of old, and for the twelve apostles, and for us the witnesses of the Spirit, and for all true believers in every communion called saints, shall, in the resurrection, enter into that kingdom of glory, where we shall see our God, our King, and our Redeemer, in whom we believe in this life, face to face. Also by this means of God's dying, and rising again, or quickening out of death into eternal life again, which no life could do but the godhead-life which was eternal; by this means he hath purchased a kingdom of hell for the seed of the serpent; and this kingdom of hell must be upon this earth here below, where the seed of the serpent hath acted all their wickedness; and this kingdom of hell will be in eternal darkness, or eternal

death: that is, a living death, and a dying life; that is, always dying, yet never dead to all eternity. These are wonderful things, which God hath appointed and decreed; and I know them to be true, and will come to pass in their time; and I do not doubt but that your faith in this commission of the Spirit will make you suitable to understand these great and wonderful mysteries of God's secret decrees concerning mankind, in that he hath been pleased to honour his poor creatures, the prophets, apostles, and witnesses of the Spirit, in revealing those wonderful things unto us, that we might make them known unto his elect saints, as I perceive, and do know you are one; which hath caused me to write so large unto you, being as it were a stranger, and at such a far distance, and would be glad to see you with these natural eyes, if with your conveniency, here in London, before I go hence, and shall be seen no more; for I am old, and cannot live long by the course of nature; but shall take leave at present, only my love, with my wife's love, remembered unto yourself, and to your husband, rest and remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth, .

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, March 9, 1684.*

And as for our friends here in London, there is put a stop for the present to that persecution that was before, only the meeters are a little prosecuted still; but let us stand still, and see the salvation of God, and we shall see this summer what the effect of these things will amount unto, whether for liberty, or for bondage.



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Priscilla Whitehead, containing her Blessing; bearing date from London, September 24, 1685.*

*Dear friend in the eternal Truth, Priscilla Whitehead,*

I RECEIVED your letter dated September 11, 1684, wherein your request and petition, as you say, unto me, is, that I would be pleased to give you the blessing of eternal life with my own hand writing. You do by me as Hezekiah the King, did unto the prophet Isaiah, when the prophet told the king, that the Lord had added to his life fifteen years more; which pleased the king very well, that his life should be preserved fifteen years longer; but this did not well content him, but the prophet must shew him a sign, else he could not be contented; then the prophet must propose what sign he would have, whether of these two, whether the sun should go ten degrees faster in the dial of Ahaz than was its usual course, or ten degrees backwards; the king was sure to ask the hardest sign; therefore the prophet said, thou hast asked a great thing, yet, notwithstanding, it shall be granted thee; so likewise I do partly remember, that I did once already declare you one of the blessed of the Lord to eternity by word of mouth, and you were well pleased and satisfied with it; but since that, I perceive you have read at Mr. Delamaine's in that you call the book of life, where several of the saints are recorded to have the blessing of eternal life and salvation pronounced upon them by me; so that now you are not contented with the blessing of everlasting life

and salvation by word of mouth, but doth sue and petition, as it were, for a sign; I may say for a sign, and that an hard one too, because it is not usual for me to give the saints a blessing by word of mouth, and writing too; but, however, your petition shall be granted you. I do perceive, that though you have the assurance of eternal life and salvation abiding in yourself by your faith in the first blessing, in that you are recorded in the book of life in heaven. When that book is opened at the resurrection, you are written one of God's elect; but I perceive your desire is to have your name written in the book of life here on earth, that is, to have your name recorded amongst the blessed of the Lord, that the age to come that shall believe, shall call you blessed. You have given in your letter sufficient testimony of your faith to be true and strong in the true God, and in this commission of the Spirit; therefore, to grant your request, I do pronounce Priscilla Whitehead one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LUDOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit that God will ever send to the end of the World's, with my love, and my wife's love remembered unto you.*

London; September, 24, 1685.

*A Copy of a blessing wrote by the Prophet Muggleton, to Mrs. Mary Whitehead, of Braintree, bearing date from London, June 1, 1686.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith, Mary Whitehead,*

**THIS** is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated May 18, 1686, written with your own hand, and with your own heart hath indited it, wherein you have expressed the sincerity of your heart, which I do believe: a child, as I may call you, so young, or as a tender plant that is watered with the dew of heaven, which makes you grow in faith, and in the knowledge of the true God, as you say, doth cause you to increase every day more and more. I am glad to hear that there is that well of the water of life digged in your heart, that will spring up in you unto eternal life, so that you may not go to draw any water out of the world's well, that is, the world's doctrine and worship, to satisfy your soul as to things of eternity. Besides, this I can say, as Christ did when on earth, in another case, concerning children, *That of such is the kingdom of heaven*; so I do say by you that do believe, even in your nonage as it were a child, so I say that of you and such as you are, is the kingdom of heaven prepared for. Likewise you say you long to be with me, and that you could live with me night and day; as to that, I perceive your love is great toward me, and other friends here in London, but I perceive it is not expedient at present; but wait a-while, and who knows but that good providence of God may bring things to pass in time, that may satisfy your desire in

the natural; but this I can assure you, in things spiritual and eternal, that you shall live with me, where there is no night at all, but all day; that is, an eternal day, or a day that shall never end; then shall you live with me, and with all true believers of this commission of the Spirit, in that boundless kingdom of glory, which no mortal eye can see, only the eye of faith doth see it at a distance here in mortality; but when our God shall change these our vile bodies, and make them like unto his own glorious body, then shall we see as we are seen of God, that is, when our bodies are spiritualized and immortalized, then shall we see spiritual bodies, as spiritual bodies doth see us, so that my faith here in mortality is the only evidence of those things we shall see in the state of immortality and glory, which will be fulfilled, when our God shall raise the dead; and we that die in this faith, doth die in the Lord with all the elect, God will raise first before he doth raise any one reprobate. This may seem to the reason of man at a great distance, and impossible to be done; but to a strong faith, without doubting, it is possible and easy for God to do; for the act of faith, without doubting, always taketh God's part, knowing that there is no time to the dead; therefore when you and I am raised again, we shall live eternally together; and, as you being but a child in age, yet a woman grown in faith and experience, as you have expressed, that your knowledge in the true God doth increase in you every day more and more, so that your faith is always working, so that your mind is of that world to come. These things I have considered; and of your great love to me as the prophet of God, it doth proceed from a true heart, being but a child for age, and an Israelite, in whom here is no guile; therefore, that the grace of God, which you

have received already; may increase in you more and more; to the full and perfect assurance of everlasting life abiding in you, I do pronounce you, Mary Whitehead, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and in body, to eternity.

Written by your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

London, June 1, 1686.

---

*A Copy of another Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton to Mrs. Anne Delamaine, Widow of Mr.  
Alexander Delamaine, Senior, bearing Date from  
London, February 3, 1687.*

*Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, Anne Delamaine,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, and your kind token, by the hand of our friend Thomas Ladd. I am very glad to hear from your own hand-writing, but should be far more glad to see your face, and enjoy your good company at your own house again, and so would many friends more here at London; but seeing it cannot be as yet, we may bear it more easy with patience, seeing you do bear it so patiently yourself, that is more concerned in it than we are. Faith and patience are two great virtues, which doth enable a man or woman to go through great troubles; faith makes a man to remove mountains of troubles, that is many great troubles, and pa-

tience, on the other side, doth enable a man to bear mountains of troubles, that is, many great troubles, and not sink under them; as many of this world doth. Faith in the true God doth enable and cause a man to love God so that faith, love, and patience are the three virtues that doth adorn a man or woman's life, and makes it peace. These three virtues I know you have had ever since I first came acquainted with you, which caused me to say I loved you more than other common believers of this commission of the Spirit, you following my advice in all things more than any womankind of this faith, nay, more than my own daughter's, which caused my daughter Sarah, which you knew very well, to express these words to a company of women at a woman's labour, that you, when your name was Anne Hall, were the beloved disciple of her father of all the women in London. The words were true enough, though I never did express it to any person myself. Indeed this cold weather is very unfit for you to take any journey, or to go into the cold air at this present. You give us some good hopes that your cough is breaking away, and that your nature is sound and strong still, and that, about the latter end of March, you do not question but you shall come to London; which doth increase our hopes to wait with patience. So with my love, and my wife's love, remembered unto yourself in particular,

I take leave, and remain your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, February 3, 1687.*

*Postscript.* My love with my wife's love remem-

bered to Mr. Whitehead, and his wife, and to Priscilla and Mary Whitehead, and give her thanks for her kind token she sent me by Thomas Ladd. Our love to all friends there with you.

---

*A Copy of a Blessing wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. John Mellford, of Braintree, bearing date from London, April 12, 1687.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, John Mellford,*

I DO understand you do truly believe the doctrine of the true God, the Man Christ Jesus, and how God became flesh, and dwelt amongst men upon this earth. This is the greatest mystery of all unto this world; and the second mystery is like unto it, how the devil became flesh, and dwelt amongst men, here upon earth. Upon these two standeth hell and heaven; and in the true knowledge of them both doth arise peace of mind, joy of heart, and the assurance of everlasting life; and on the contrary, the ignorance of both, not knowing these two great mysteries, doth arise the fear of hell and the fear of a devil, that hath no being at all in their sins, and of their eternal torments; which devil is that worm of man's conscience, that doth kindle a fire in the mind of man, which will never be quenched, because the worm of man's conscience doth never die in the body of man to eternity: upon these two dependeth all those wonderful secrets of God's council, which he hath revealed to the fathers of old, as Enoch, Moses, the prophets, the apostles, and to us the witnesses of the Spirit, as is

declared in all our writings, which I do perceive you do truly believe them ; else why did you ask a blessing of me by words of mouth ; but that will not serve your turn now, but you would have it in writing. But I knowing you are capable to understand more than you have yet read in our writings, I shall inform you yet a little farther of these great secrets of God's dealing with men. *First*, He doth chuse and ordain some particular man, and doth furnish him with revelation to declare unto the people what the true God is ; he did to Enoch, and he declared it unto the fathers of old ; and all that did believe the books of Enoch, they were as a parliament to enact it as a statute law to their children, from generation to generation for ever ; and so it was with Moses and the prophets, and Christ and the apostles. *Secondly*, That great and vast difference that there is between the seed of reason's heaven, which they do imagine, and the seed of faith's heaven, which they are fully assured of. Things, that though the prophets and apostles hath declared in several of their writings of those great and wonderful mysteries of God becoming flesh, and God manifest in flesh ; yet in all their writings, from Enoch to Moses' writings, nor the prophets writings, nor the apostles writings, nor Christ himself, when he was upon earth, did ever declare or make known not plainly, nor clearly, that great mystery of the devil becoming flesh, and dwelling amongst men to the end of this world, and to eternity : I say, no writings of prophets or apostles hath made known this great mystery of the devil becoming flesh, but John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, whom God chose in the year of the world 1651, as our writings doth declare. And now, dear friend, I do not question but you do understand these things I have written to



you before, and by your faith you have set to your seal, in believing that God hath chosen me the last prophet and witness of the Spirit, that God will ever send while this world doth endure. This for your farther satisfaction and assurance of your eternal happiness in the world to come, when our God shall come in the clouds of Heaven to raise the dead, then shall we, that die in the faith of the true God, rise first to meet our God in the air; and because my faith hath no doubt in it, I do pronounce you, John Mellford, one of the blessed of the Lord to eternity, both in soul and body, and that you and I, and all true believers of this commission of the Spirit, that doth hold out to the end of their life, shall arise spiritual bodies, like unto the glorious body of our God, in whom we did believe in, and that we shall be capable to enter into the clouds of Heaven; for they shall come down, and receive us, and carry us up to that place, where we shall be glorified, as our God, the Lord Christ Jesus, was after his resurrection. This, with my dear love, and my wife's, unto yourself, and to all our friends there with you, I take leave, and remain your friend in the true faith of that one personal God, which did die, and hath redeemed us from that second death, which the reprobates, the seed of the serpent, must suffer, where the worm of conscience shall never die, nor the fire of conscience shall never be quenched to eternity.

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*April 12, 1687.*

*A Copy of a Blessing wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Thomas Ladd, of Braintree, bearing date from London, July 15, 1687.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true Faith, Thomas Ladd,*

I PERCEIVE your desire is very earnest that I should give you a blessing in writing, you being not content with the blessing by word of mouth, because you have seen or heard of the blessing I gave to those two virgins in writing, which you know very well, and of Mr. Mellford's blessing, in which he did, as it were, wrestle with me, as Jacob did with God, that would not let him God go, except he would bless him: so I would willingly have put him off with the first blessing, by word of mouth; but he would not be satisfied with that: I did plead against it; so that he prevailed with me to give it him in writing. Likewise you know, when I was there with you, you pleaded with me to give it you in writing; but I gave you no encouragement that I would do it; neither did I absolutely deny it, but was silent, and was glad I did escape so. But since I came to London, I understand that you have chosen Mrs. Delamaine and Priscilla Whitehead to intercede for you in this matter; so that they have prevailed with me to give you the blessing in writing. Therefore, that I might satisfy your strong desire, I shall say as followeth: I have had several testimonies of your faith, both in your discourse, your words and actions, of your strong faith in the true God, and in me, his true prophet; and this faith of yours will bear you into

everlasting life; for this doctrine of the true God, and the right devil, the knowledge of those two, their forms and their natures, doth free the soul from the fear of eternal death; for men would never be so afraid of this first natural death, if there were not a second death, and hell, which is eternal, that doth follow upon the first death, and hell doth follow the second death; these three doth go, or join, hand in hand together, which causeth the soul of every man, which hath not the assurance of eternal life abiding in himself, to fear, which none hath in these our days, but those that doth truly believe this doctrine and commission of the Spirit, as you and many more can witness the truth of it; I say, is the cause that most men in the time of sickness are so afraid of this first death, because the second death and hell doth follow at the heels of the first death; for it is life eternal to know God as he is in himself, he having both form and nature; his nature being all faith, which is all power, which no man at this day doth know, but those that hath believed our report. God hath hid these things from the world, and hath revealed them only to his chosen messengers; for the world is so blind, that many think it a needless thing to know God in his form and nature, but think a good life and good actions a great deal better, as the Quakers do; but blessed be the God of Heaven, that hath blinded the eyes of the wise and prudent men of this world, that cannot understand that God, the Creator, can admit of any form or nature at all, and yet they do acknowledge that he created all forms and natures, both of man and beast, and all other creatures, yet had no form nor nature of his own. How blessed and happy are we, whom God hath opened our eyes to see by the eye of faith in our souls, that God,

Creator of all forms and natures, had both a glorious form, and a powerful nature of his own from eternity; and from the knowledge of God's form and nature, we come to know the right devil's form and nature; and this is to be minded, that the two seeds are the two natures, or the two keys of faith, that doth open the strait and narrow gate that leadeth into Heaven, and into the presence of God; and the other key, of reason in man, doth open that great and wide gate that leadeth into hell, and into the presence of the right devil (one which has been so long imagined by the seed of reason, to be a spirit without a body) which hath been so long feared; but God hath given these two keys into the hands of none but unto his commissioned prophets and apostles, and unto us, the two last true prophets that God will ever send while this world doth endure. Mine, with the eye of faith, I have opened the straight and narrow gate that leadeth you, and many more into Heaven, where you shall enter into the presence of the true God, in whom you did believe; where you shall see his person in the form of a man, and that he hath a face as you have, even that same face which our God had when he was upon this earth, being glorified; you and I, and all true believers, shall be spiritualized and glorified: then shall we see our God, our King, and our Redeemer, face to face. This will not seem a quarter of an hour's time after our death; there being no time to the dead. Likewise I having the key of reason in my hands, I have opened that great and wide gate that leadeth into hell, whereby you may see many go therein at, and shall come into the presence of the right devil, Cain, which they did imagine in this life was a spirit without a body, which they called a devil and his angels,

they supposing that the devil and his angels were all spirits without a body, which they called the devil and his angels, that were reserved in chains of darkness until the judgment of the great day; but when they came into hell, they found that the devil and his angels had all bodies, and saw that they were grossly mistaken in this life; but now it was too late to repent. This doctrine we have declared, hath opened your eyes, to see the blindness of the seed of reason, that lieth upon almost all the wise and learned men in this world at this day; which is the cause of that great fear of hell and of eternal damnation, when this first natural death doth appear. Likewise I have given to you, by print, and by discourse, many wonderful deep secrets of God's dealing with man, and how God always makes use of man to declare his secret councils, ordered by himself; but man hath declared unto man: Moses and the prophets were men; Christ and the apostles were men; so that God himself became a man, that he might be numbered among those holy men that were inspired to write or speak the Holy Scriptures, which is called the Old and New Testament; and now, last of all, God hath chosen John Reeve and Lodowicke Muggleton, to be the only interpreters of those secret mysteries, hidden in the Scriptures, according to those words God spake to John Reeve; which said, *I have given thee understanding of my mind in the Scriptures, above all the men in the world;* which words of God hath proved true, both by our writings and speakings, as I know you can very well experience the truth of it, in that you have believed the prophet's report; for without faith in the prophet there is nothing can be done. So that by faith we know the worlds were framed by the word of God; and it was God's own faith that moved him

to speak those words that framed the world ; in that he said, *Let such a thing be so*, and it was so. So likewise it is by faith that you came to understand those hidden mysteries, and deep secrets, which God hath revealed unto us, his messengers, which we have declared unto you ; so that, by your faith in God's messengers, it is given to you to overcome the motions of reason in yourself, and to overcome the enemy without you ; so that it is given to you to eat of the tree of life, which is in the midst of the Paradise of God ; and it is given you to eat of the hidden manna, and to have that white stone in your heart, and in thee a new name written by the finger of your own faith, which no man knoweth, saving he that receiveth it. This is the true sacrament which I have administered to you, and to many in my time, in that they eat of the tree of life, which is the flesh of Christ, the same that stood in the midst of the Paradise of God ; Christ being the same God, and tree of life, as stood in the midst of Paradise in the days of Adam ; and in eating of the hidden manna, is when the mind of man doth, by faith, feed upon those heavenly mysteries, and deep secrets of God's council and decree, which God hath revealed unto his servants the prophets, apostles, and us, the witnesses of the Spirit, as we have declared in all our writings, as the mystery of God's form and nature, and how God became flesh ; and the right devil, of his form and nature, and how he became flesh, which is a great mystery, with many other deep secrets, which are hid from all the world besides : therefore by the spirit of revelation this hidden manna to your great satisfaction, so that you need not hunger no more after the assurance of your salvation ; and this white stone, which is given unto you, is your faith, that hath purified your heart, in

that you have eat of the tree of life, and have eat of the hidden manna. So that, by faith in the blood of God, your heart is cleansed and made white as snow, therefore called a white stone, because your heart is enlightened in the knowledge of the true God, and in all those wonderful deep mysteries and secret councils of God, which is hid in the Scriptures, which we have declared unto you ; and the hearts of all unbelievers may be called black, stony hearts ; because their hearts are overspread with blindness, and thick darkness, therefore may be called black stony hearts : so that they can neither see with their eyes, nor hear with their ears, nor understand with their hearts, that they may be saved. And as for a new name written, which none knoweth saving he that receiveth it, this name is to be called the Son of God ; that is, he that hath the assurance of eternal life in himself, hath the white stone in his heart, and hath an assurance abiding in himself that he is an elect vessel, and that he is a Son of God, which is the new name written in his heart, which no man else in the world can know, but he that hath received it, as you have done. These things I have written unto you for your greater satisfaction, knowing that you do truly understand these great and deep mysteries, spoken aforesaid in this letter ; and for the further satisfaction of your mind, and strengthening of your faith, I do declare you, Thomas Ladd, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity.

*Written by me,*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

*London, the 15th of July, 1687.*

*A Copy of a Blessing wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. James Whitehead, of Braintree, bearing date from London, August 27, 1687.*

*Dear and loving Friend in the true Faith, James Whitehead,*

I RECEIVED your letter by the hand of our friend Ann Delamaine, dated August the 24th, in the year 1687, wherein I perceive you do follow the example of others that are far more younger in the true faith than yourself is; for I think you may be esteemed the father of all the believers of this commission of the Spirit that is in your town. And indeed I have written more letters to you than to all the people in that town; and I have justified your faith and your person to be one of the saved of the Lord in all my writings unto you, besides the blessing of eternal life in the world to come, by word of mouth; yet all this will not satisfy you, without I give you a blessing of eternal happiness with my own hand-writing; which request of yours I cannot well deny, knowing you so long to be a true believer, and a chosen vessel in the seed which God hath elected, even the seed of Adam, which is the seed of God; and as you say you was like that lost sheep, that wandered from the ninety and nine sheep that were never lost, and so never were found by God's shepherd; for all God's sheep were lost in Adam's fall, and are found again by the second Adam, the Lord from Heaven; therefore it was Christ, said he came to seek and to save that which was lost, and he came to none but to the lost sheep of the house of Israel;



and this I can say, though God hath chosen me to be the last true shepherd unto this bloody unbelieving world, these five-and-thirty years, there is not one man nor woman that hath believed our report, but those that were lost. So that it is happy for you, and all the rest, that they were of those lost sheep, which were lost in the fall of the first Adam, those only are found by the second Adam, the Lord Jesus Christ, the only true God. But all those that did fall in the fallen angels fall, were never found any more, neither by God himself, nor by his prophets, nor by his apostles, nor by us, the two last witnesses of the Spirit: they are left in utter darkness in their fallen state, that think they see, but are stark blind; and *have ears, but hear not*; and have hearts, but understand not any heavenly mysteries at all, yet conceited in themselves that their wisdom of reason is wiser than the wisdom of faith, which is God's own nature; and those be those ninety and nine just persons that never were lost, nor needed no repentance; therefore God hath left them to perish in their own conceits to eternity. So that it is happy for you that you are one of those lost sheep; for I was a lost sheep myself for several years, and whither to go I could not tell; but in the year 51, I was found of God himself twice in that year, and yet I knew not God, neither in his form nor his nature; but in the month of April, in the same year, there fell upon me a great trouble of mind about my salvation, and in the multitude of the thoughts of my heart, there arose the spirit of revelation in me, which opened the Scriptures unto me, and that spirit of revelation did grow and increase in me exceedingly: so that no question was too hard for me to answer; and I was well pleased, and was well satisfied, and did not mind what became

of all the people in the world besides; and was resolved to live a private life, and not to discourse with any man more about religion. So this continued with me, till the month of February, in the same year, God spake to John Reeve, by voice of words, to the hearing of the ear; then God chose John Reeve to be his last messenger, and gave me to be his mouth, as he did Aaron to be Moses' mouth; so that I have been chosen of God twice in one year, as aforesaid; which forced me to be the publicest man in the world; and in God sparing my life so long upon this earth, I came to understand the Scriptures, and to understand the tribes of Israel, and to distinguish between the Heathen and the Jews; and how God had placed the priesthood upon the tribe of Levi, in that Abraham did pay tithes unto Melchisedech, which was the true God and Creator in those days; and Abraham paid tithes unto him in the person of Levi before Levi was born. So that Abraham did act the person of Levi, signifying that the priesthood should be confirmed upon that tribe; therefore God did chuse Aaron to be Moses' mouth, Aaron being the first high priest that God ever chose, or did ordain, which did continue many generations; and now, in this last age of the world, God hath chosen one of that tribe of Levi to be the Lord's high priest in this latter age, according to those words God spake unto John Reeve, in that he said, *I have given thee Lodowicke Muggleton to be thy mouth*; and this is to be minded, that the Lord's high priest had always power to bless and curse: but our commission is altogether spiritual, therefore the blessings and the curses are all spiritual: also it reaches to eternal life, and to eternal death. These things I know you will understand, because you are of the tribe of Levi, as I am; and I

have the greatest respect for you, being of that tribe, hath caused me thus to write; and knowing that your judgment will be informed some more than it was before; therefore I shall not trouble you, nor myself neither, to enlarge any farther, only I do declare and pronounce you, James Whitehead, one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to all eternity.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*August 27, in the year 1687.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mary Gamble, dated August 29, 1687.*

*Loving and kind friend in the true faith, Mary Gamble,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated the 9th of July, 1687, which Mr. Rogers caused to be left at my house, for, I was in the country when Mr. Rogers was at my house; so that I never saw him, nor he me, which I was sorry that it was my lot to miss of him; but the chiefest matter of concernment in your letter, I perceive, is concerning a sister of yours, that is now afflicted, as you say,

with very wicked, vile, blasphemous, evil thoughts; and cannot get rid of them by any means. You say she hath had what spiritual comforts you thought needful; but you say evil comes, and turns it all aside. You say she hath taken physick several times, and been let blood, yet it is all one. You say she desires in her spirit, and by prayer, that it might please the Lord to remove that evil from her; for it hath made her despair of ever finding mercy. You say, though you tell her that Mary Magdalen had seven devils cast out of her, and many more of the elect, yet she thinks her condition worst. You say, she would willingly use all the remedies that can be thought on, and hath a desire to see me; you say truly you are free, if the rest of her friends would consent. You say you fear it will produce madness, if it run too long. You say, to all outward appearance, she seemeth to be well enough. You say, O! that it might please God, by his prophet, or some other way, to rid this poor soul of her torments. This is the whole substance concerning your sister.

To which I shall give you this answer as followeth: in the first place I do not know your sister's name, neither do I know the cause of this trouble of her mind, or that melancholy spirit that is produced in her, whether it be from some sins which she hath committed, but loth to confess it to her sister, or any other, for fear of shame, if it should be known: for secret sins hath generally a secret punishment in the mind: or whether trouble of her mind doth arise for want of assurance of her salvation in the world to come; from one of the two that melancholy spirit doth generally arise, which doth cause a despairing in the mind; and it was very ill done to give a woman

that hath a melancholy troubled spirit, to give her physic, or let her blood. It was the only means to procure an absolute despair, and to procure madness of. That is the cause the keepers of Bedlam doth practise to every person that is distempered in the brain; by physic and letting of blood, they make the spirit of the person so weak, that they can never get strength in the brain more to the day of their death. But if you had given her nothing but kitchen physic, that is, all kinds of broths, or spoon-meats, your sister's spirits would have been strengthened, and have been made strong, to reason out those melancholy thoughts: yet, notwithstanding, if your sister's trouble of mind doth arise from either of those two causes aforesaid, or any other cause whatsoever, let her confess it to you, her sister; and if she can but believe that I am a true prophet of the Lord, and hath power to bless some to eternity, and to curse some to eternity, as yourself and several others hath believed, and are blessed both in soul and body to eternity; and you have assurance of eternal life abiding in yourself, by the blessing and faith you have in me that God hath sent; for without faith in God's messengers it is impossible to please God: therefore I shall say this unto your sister, though unknown unto me, that if she doth declare the true ground and cause how this melancholy did first arise in her thoughts to you, her sister, Mary Gamble, and to nobody else, it shall be as well as if she had declared it unto me myself. And let the cause be what it will, I will assure her, if she can but believe my words in this letter, that her sins are forgiven her, and that her faith in me shall give the assurance of everlasting life that shall abide in herself. Thus, with my love remembered to your

sister unknown, and unto you, Mary Gamble, and to your husband in particular,

So resteth your friend in the true faith of the true personal God, the Lord Jesus Christ, upon his throne of glory,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

And if your sister can read print-hand, let her read our books, and if she doth but understand what she reads, it will be great satisfaction to her mind, and cast out all evil thoughts, and will settle her mind in peace.

*August 29, 1687.*

*A Copy of a Blessing wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Mary Whitehead, the Wife of Mr. James Whitehead, of Braintree, bearing date from London, November 17, 1687.*

*Dear friend in the true faith, Mary Whitehead, the Wife of James Whitehead,*

I UNDERSTAND by your husband that you are not satisfied with the blessing which I gave unto you by word of mouth, except I give it you in writing, as I have to several others of this faith. I had thoughts never to have given the blessing in writing to any person more, which had received it by word of mouth before; for that blessing by word of mouth will be as sure and true as the other, in case they that have it by word of mouth, doth hold out in their faith to the end of their lives, and not rebel against it, as some which you know have done; but indeed I never did knew any person, neither man nor woman, that did.

revolt or rebel, which had the blessing by me in writing, not this five and thirty years ; but because you made your husband your advocate unto me in this thing, I having no writing nor request from your own hand, nor your own mouth, as I have had from all others, I may say, as one did in the Scriptures, thou hast asked a great thing, yet, notwithstanding, your request shall be granted in this thing. I always had a respect for you in the days of your ignorance, because you did not speak against this commission of the Spirit, though you could not truly believe it ; but since you have truly believed the doctrine declared by this commission of the Spirit, wherein you have received in your understanding the knowledge of the true God, in his form and nature, and the right devil, in his form and nature, with many more heavenly mysteries and secrets of God's dealings with mankind ; and in that you have believed my report, and have owned me to be the last true prophet that God will ever send to this bloody unbelieving world, while this world doth endure, and that I have power to give you a blessing of everlasting life, both by word of mouth, and by writing, by this I do know, that you do set to your seal that I have that power from the true God, as I have declared in all my writing ; therefore your request in this thing shall be granted you. This is all I shall say unto you, my dear friend Mary Whitehead, the wife of James Whitehead, I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

*London, November 17, 1668.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs Sarah Delamaine, Daughter to Mr. Alexander Delamaine, Senior, Wife of Robert Delamaine, bearing date December 14, 1691.*

*Dear and loving friend in the eternal Truth, Sarah Delamaine,*

YOUR desire it was to me to give you the blessing of everlasting life in writing, notwithstanding I have given you the blessing by word of mouth many years ago, which I was unwilling to do; but you being so urgent upon me to do it, made me promise to give you the blessing in writing; so that I have considered that you have read in that book which your own father did send for, those letters that were sent to me for the blessing of everlasting life to eternity in many parts of England and Ireland, and many other parts of this world, which many of them never saw me in all their lives, yet were satisfied in their minds, and had the assurance of eternal life abiding in themselves while in this natural life, by believing in this commission of the Spirit, which is the last commission that God will ever send unto this bloody, unbelieving world, while this world doth last; and that book which your husband hath, it was your father's care and charge, and your mother-in-law's too, to get it recorded for the ages to come after my death, and it will be found at the last day as a book of life to all those whose names are recorded therein, to be the blessed of the Lord, because they shall have their part in the first Resurrection, so that the second death shall have no power over them; for God will raise the saints and the elect of God first, before he



revolt or rebel, which had the blessing by me in writing, not this five and thirty years ; but because you made your husband your advocate unto me in this thing, I having no writing nor request from your own hand, nor your own mouth, as I have had from all others, I may say, as one did in the Scriptures, thou hast asked a great thing, yet, notwithstanding, your request shall be granted in this thing. I always had a respect for you in the days of your ignorance, because you did not speak against this commission of the Spirit, though you could not truly believe it ; but since you have truly believed the doctrine declared by this commission of the Spirit, wherein you have received in your understanding the knowledge of the true God, in his form and nature, and the right devil, in his form and nature, with many more heavenly mysteries and secrets of God's dealings with mankind ; and in that you have believed my report, and have owned me to be the last true prophet that God will ever send to this bloody unbelieving world, while this world doth endure, and that I have power to give you a blessing of everlasting life, both by word of mouth, and by writing, by this I do know, that you do set to your seal that I have that power from the true God, as I have declared in all my writing ; therefore your request in this thing shall be granted you. This is all I shall say unto you, my dear friend Mary Whitehead, the wife of James Whitehead, I do declare you one of the blessed of the Lord, both in soul and body, to eternity.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

*London, November 17, 1668.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs Sarah Delamaine, Daughter to Mr. Alexander Delamaine, Senior, Wife of Robert Delamaine, bearing date December 14, 1691.*

*Dear and loving friend in the eternal Truth, Sarah Delamaine,*

YOUR desire it was to me to give you the blessing of everlasting life in writing, notwithstanding I have given you the blessing by word of mouth many years ago, which I was unwilling to do; but you being so urgent upon me to do it, made me promise to give you the blessing in writing; so that I have considered that you have read in that book which your own father did send for, those letters that were sent to me for the blessing of everlasting life to eternity in many parts of England and Ireland, and many other parts of this world, which many of them never saw me in all their lives, yet were satisfied in their minds, and had the assurance of eternal life abiding in themselves while in this natural life, by believing in this commission of the Spirit, which is the last commission that God will ever send unto this bloody, unbelieving world, while this world doth last; and that book which your husband hath, it was your father's care and charge, and your mother-in-law's too, to get it recorded for the ages to come after my death, and it will be found at the last day as a book of life to all those whose names are recorded therein, to be the blessed of the Lord, because they shall have their part in the first Resurrection, so that the second death shall have no power over them; for God will raise the saints and the elect of God first, before he

doth raise one reprobate or devil. And this I do know, that your own father and own mother, and your mother-in-law, and your own brother, Alexander Delamaine, and your own husband, Robert Delamaine, will all be saved, being all blessed of the Lord to eternity, in that they truly believed in this third and last commission of the Spirit which God will ever send, when they were alive, while this world doth last or end.

And you, Sarah Delamaine, the only daughter of your father Alexander Delamaine that is alive, doth truly believe in this commission of the Spirit, and that God hath given me power to pronounce you blessed to eternity, as I have done to many others; and your desire is, that I would give you the blessing in writing, that you might be numbered amongst the blessed of the Lord; therefore, to satisfy your desire, and in obedience to my commission, I pronounce you, Sarah Delamaine, blessed, both in soul and body, to all eternity.

*Written by me,*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Witnesses and Prophets of the Spirit  
unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus  
in Glory.*

*London, December 14, 1691.*

**FINIS.**

# SUPPLEMENT

TO

## THE BOOK OF LETTERS,

WRITTEN BY

JOHN REEVE AND LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

THE TWO

**Last Prophets of the only true God,**

OUR

LORD JESUS CHRIST.

---

BELOVED BRETHREN,

WITH the authority of the Church we have made diligent search through the Manuscript Records of the Church, and have found the following Letters, not in print in the "Book of Letters." The following Letters may be considered the conclusion of all the Writings of the Prophets REEVE and MUGGLETON, both of spiritual matter and temporal advice, as far as the Church is in possession of.

**JOSEPH & ISAAC FROST.**

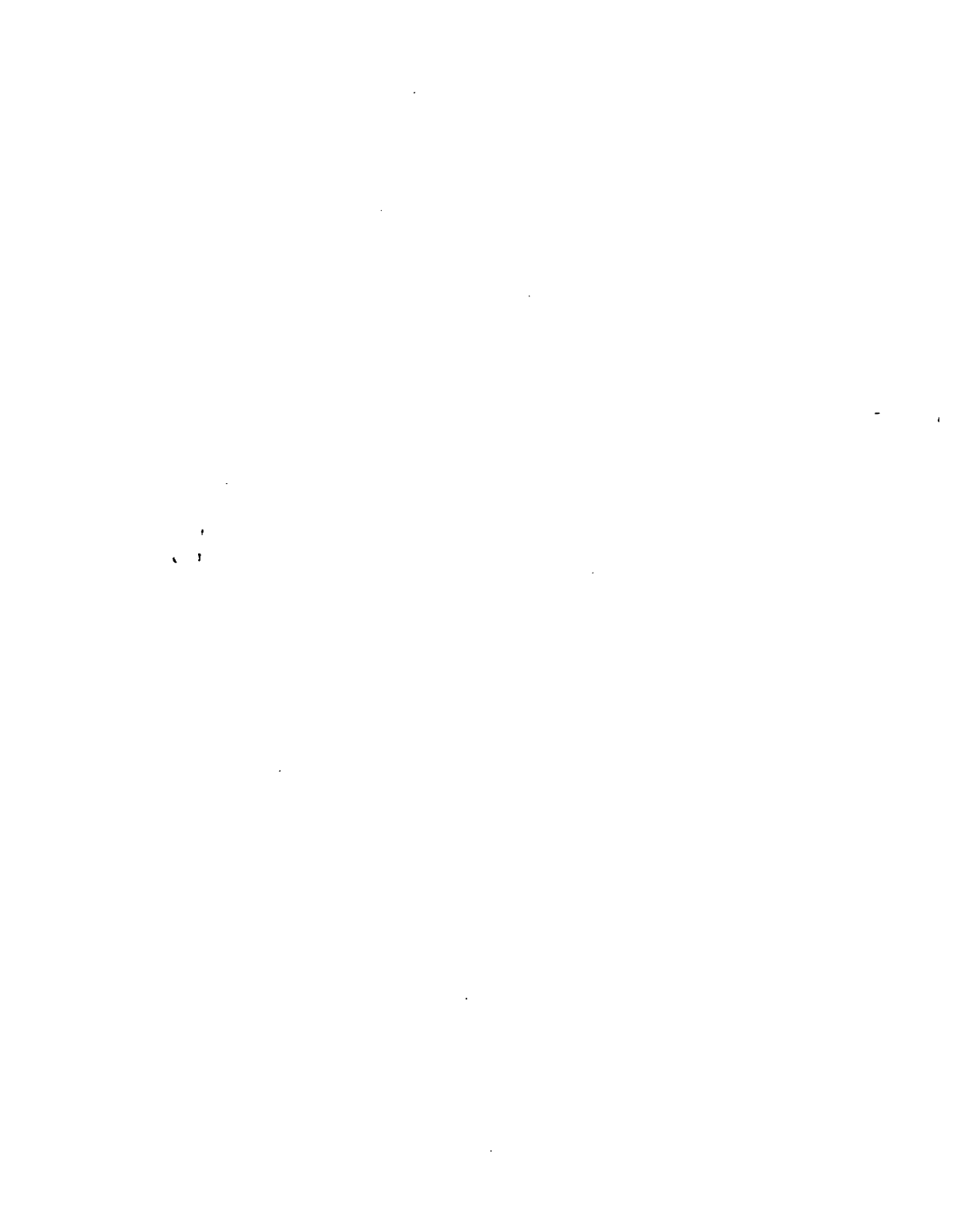
---

LONDON:

PRINTED BY R. BROWN, 26, ST. JOHN STREET, CLERKENWELL.

---

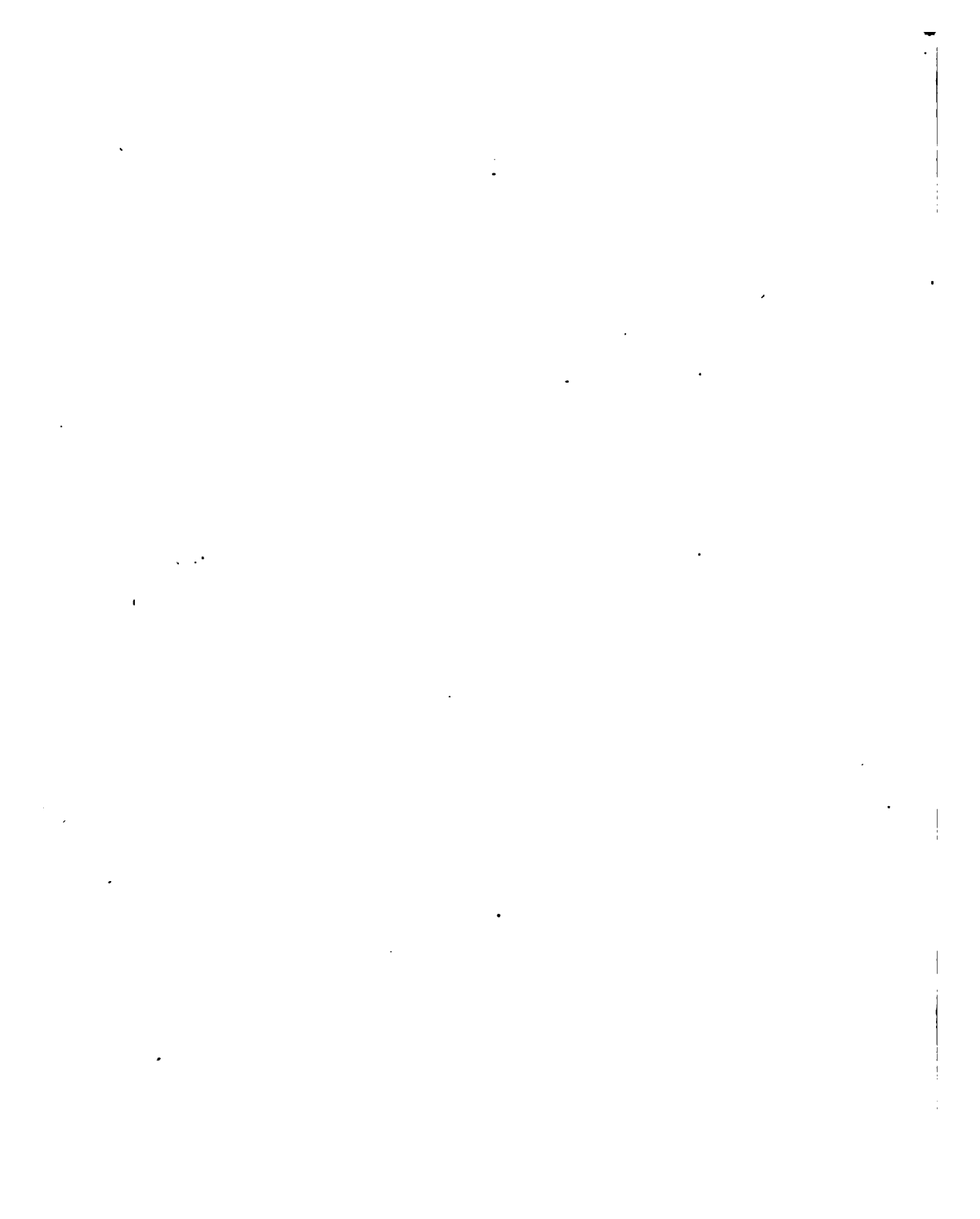
1831.



## INDEX TO SUPPLEMENT.



	Page
The Prophet Muggleton to Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, April 23, 1670..	8
..... Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Feb. 22d, 1676..	16
..... Carter, Mrs. Dorothy, Sept. 21, 1681..	36
..... Delamaine, Mrs. Anne, Dec. 26, 1687..	52
..... Flaggeter, Mrs. Elizab. Aug. 5, 1684..	42
..... Farmer, Mrs. Elizab. June 29, 1686..	50
..... Gamble, Mr. George, Aug. 20, 1677..	21
..... Gamble, Mrs. Mary, June 29, 1686..	48
The Prophet Reeve . . . Hill, Mr. Christopher, June 11th, 1656..	3
..... Hill, Mr. Christopher, June 30th, 1656..	5
The Prophet Muggleton to Marsden, Elizabeth, April 18th, 1685..	44
..... Nosworthy, Thomas, Nov. 4th, 1679..	26
..... Pedley, Mr. William, Jan. 12th, 1683..	39
..... Phaire, Colonel Robt. Aug. 9th, 1675..	11
..... Phaire, Mrs. Elizabeth, June 29th, 1686..	47
..... Sudbury, Mr. . . . . . Jan. 31st, 1669..	7
..... Tomkinson, Thomas, Nov. 14th, 1676..	17
..... Tomkinson, Thomas, April 23d, 1677..	19
..... White, Mr. John, . . Nov. 18th, 1665..	6
..... Whitehead, Mr. James, Oct. 18, 1680..	29
..... Whalley, Mr. John, May 11th, 1681..	31
..... Wakeham, Mrs. Mary, June 29, 1686..	51
..... Wakeham, Mrs. Mary, Aug. 15, 1688..	54



# SUPPLEMENT

TO

## THE BOOK OF LETTERS,

*&c. &c.*

---

*An Epistle of JOHN REEVE to CHRIS. HILL.*

Dear Friend in the eternal Truth, my love  
to you and the rest of our spiritual  
friends remembered.

*Brother Hill,*

IT seems very strange to me, that you with the rest of former friends, make no enquiry after me whether I am dead or alive. What, have the unnecessary things and cares of this world swallowed up your former love to the truth? Though I am moved in this manner to write unto you, I trust you have not so learned Christ.

Friend, the reason of my not sending unto you this long season is this, because my wife and I were both very sick and weak, of which sickness the 29th of March last my wife died.

Immediately after I had buried my wife, the Lord our God called me to visit some of his people living near the City of Cambridge, as he once called me to visit you; yea, it was in the very same manner, for one of the chief speakers of the Ranters being convinced by this truth, who formerly had deceived them, took a parcel of my books and presented them to them, upon which they greatly desired me as you formerly did; I hope there is about half a score of them that



have received the truth in sincerity of heart; they are husbandmen and tradesmen that labour for their bread as you do; they rejoice in those that really possess this truth though by face unknown.

*Christopher Hill.*

You seem to forget your engagement to your father-in-law, you know the time is expired concerning your payment of the money which was lent to you, and not to him; wherefore as you love the truth, I desire you to send me the fifteen shillings remaining behind speedily, that I may restore it to the right owner.

Now concerning my own condition, it is thus; on May Day last, I was senseless two or three times, inso-much, that if a faithful friend had not been by me to relieve me with a little cordial, I had immediately died. I still continue very sick and weak, so that of necessity I must either mend or end in a little space. As for relief now I have most need of it, it hath been very small of late; I wish it may not be a burthen to the conscience of some when I am gone; the widow's mite will be a witness against all carnal excuses in those that own this truth. It may be you may think I have no need of your charity now, because the merchant for a little season allowed me five shillings a week; but if you think so you are much mistaken, for I have had none from him a pretty while, neither do I know whether I shall have any more from him at all, for when he took ship for Barbadoes, he had not wherewithall to leave for his wife and children, through the unjust dealings of unreasonable men. Brother Hill you may remember you sent me word, that if the London Christians would contribute weekly or monthly to my necessity, you would do the like, you will do well to keep your covenant.

And so I commit you to the most High, and remain yours in all righteousness,

JOHN REEVE.

My dwelling is in Bishopsgate Street, near Hog Lane End, with three sisters that keep a sempstrie shop.

Direct your letters to our brother MUGGLETON, to be conveyed to me, and the fifteen shillings to him for me, you know where he dwells; it is in Trinity Lane, over against a Brown Baker's

*London, June 11th, 1656.*

---

*Another Epistle of JOHN REEVE'S to the same person.*

For his loving friend, CHRISTOPHER HILL,  
Heel Maker, in Stone Street, in Maidstone, in Kent. These

*Brother Hill,*

I HAVE received your letter and your kind token, for which I acknowledge your kindness to truth.

As for my neglect in writing to you, my great troubles of sickness and mortality hath hindered it, I hope whilst I am able to write for time to come, you shall not charge me with any such neglect; in the mean season I do not desire your charity unless you can spare it. Remember my kind love to your mother Wyles, to Thomas Martin, and Goodman Young, and I rejoice in the Lord for you, that the truth abides in you. As for the fifteen shillings I am glad of your care for the truth's sake, because it was lent to me upon that account.

No more at present, but desiring my God abundantly to establish you in all spiritual excellencies, unto whose infinite grace I commend you all, and remain yours in all righteousness,

JOHN REEVE

*London, June 30th, 1656.*

*The Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton's blessing to his Son-in-Law, Mr. John White, bearing date in London, 18th Nov. 1665.*

*Son John White,*

**YOUR** wife shewed me your letter unto her, in which letter I understand your desire of the blessing, if I may count you worthy of it.

As to that I say, God hath counted you worthy of it, else you would never have had such interest in the faith of this Commission of the Spirit as you have in your wife and the rest of the true believers of it. But I thought you would have been well enough satisfied without the declaration of it, for my thoughts were the same towards you before as to your eternal happiness. Yet, to satisfy your request, and for your further confirmation of your faith, in the assurance of your eternal life and happiness, I do declare and pronounce you to be one of the blessed of the Lord both in soul and body to eternity.

**P. S.** As for things of temporal affairs, I suppose your wife will certify you in her letter, but I thought it necessary to satisfy your desire with these few lines, though I be in haste, and could hardly spare time at present, so that I had thoughts to have let it alone till another time, but I thought you might be troubled a little at it, if it had been delayed.

*Written by*

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,**

**One of the two last Witnesses of the Spirit.**

*London, 18th of November, 1665.*

*Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke  
Muggleton to Mr. Sudbury, January 31st, 1669.*

*Loving and kind friend in the true faith, Mr. Sudbury,*

This is to let you understand that with much trouble and charge, I have got the interpretation of the Witch of Endor safe out of the press; but as for the other to Isaac Pennington, Quaker, I have had bad success, for it was taken in the press and the printer like to be undone; but money did buy it off. It cost the printer seven pounds, and me five pounds to pacify the matter, and not got it done neither; but most of the copies are preserved, and hereafter when times are something better, I will get it printed if it be possible; for the winter is the worst time to print in of all the year: but I am glad this of the Witch of Endor hath escaped, it being of more value than the other, because it was never written upon before by us nor no other; for I have been much crossed in the printing of it and very fearful it would have miscarried as the other did, because he kept it so long; these six months he hath had it in hand, but with much ado I have it safe home at last, so I have sent you four of them, desiring you to give Mrs. Parker one, and the rest you may dispose of as you please yourself.

I did hear by a letter from Mr. Tompkinson to Mr. Delamain, that you were very ill, which I am very sorry for, but where nature is overcome by natural diseases, death will get the victory, and swallow up life into death; but I am persuaded that your faith is so strong in the true God, and in this Commission of the Spirit, that you are sure you shall find everlasting life hereafter, according to your faith, and according to my word; and though the word of a prophet now in these days cannot cast out natural distempers and natural

diseases that are seated and settled in the blood, yet the word of a prophet can cast out all fear of eternal death.

Therefore that your confidence may be strong in yourself, in the assurance of your eternal salvation, I do confirm that word of blessing to eternity which I once did give unto you.

So being in great haste, I shall only present my love to yourself, and to your dear and loving wife, and to our dear friend, Mr. Parker.

I rest and remain your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Postern, London, 31st Jan. 1669.*

P.S. My wife desires her love remembered to yourself, your wife, and Mrs. Parker.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, bearing date, the 23rd of April, 1670.*

*Dear friend in the eternal truth, Dorothy Carter,*

This is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated 27th February, 1669, with one from William Newcome, and one to Mrs. Griffith, and one to Mr. Hatter, which letters I did deliver as you did appoint; but whether you have received any answer from them since I know not; also, you may think it something long that I did not send you some answer of the things you desired, but I seeing the matter contained in your letter did not concern me, and that there was such impossibilities in Mr Hatter to perform what you expressed in your letter, as what he promised in his other letter, that I did forbear writing unto you; and in a

little time after I went into Cambridgeshire, and being now returned, I thought it necessary to write a few lines unto you for satisfaction in the thing you desired, concerning Mr Hatter's daughter.

My opinion and knowledge is, that Mr Hatter is as uncapable to provide for his daughter at present, as ever he was since I knew him; for he is as a man of sorrows, always in straits and wants, and the more comfortless to all of the faith, because there is like to be no end in this life; and his sorrows are the greater because he brought them upon himself, that the saints cannot deliver him, not with small matters; for there hath been done for him by me and other believers more than to all the saints besides, yet not delivered at all; yet we cannot but look upon him with an eye of pity, in respect his heart is right towards God, and strong in the faith of this Commission of the Spirit, and many other natural endowments which few men have the like, which doth cause both saint and devil to respect him, and to have tenderness towards him; but his troubles are so many, and tied with cares---with many fast knots, so that neither saint nor devil can loose them, as I said before. His wife is now gone into Yorkshire, it may be if she prospers any better than heretofore, there may be something done for that child you keep; but my hope in this matter I fear will be much like the hope of the hypocrite that perisheth. Therefore as to my judgment concerning the maid and you, I am very loath to give any, yet because I would not have you altogether unsatisfied, I shall tell you my thoughts.—That seeing the God of truth hath moved you and your daughter, for truth's sake, to take the girl when she was fit for nothing, and have brought her up so long and so many years for nothing, neither do I think you will ever have any thing for this time past; therefore, I suppose, you must add this good work to your faith, and let it follow you in the resurrection in a degree of

glory above your fellows ; when the saints shall differ in glory as one star differeth in brightness from the other, which will not be a quarter of an hour's time after death before you will receive the reward. I know not whether Mr. Hatter hath sent you any answer concerning it, but seeing you have done all this for her when she was fit for nothing, I think now you have made her fit to do something towards her living, it will be best in my judgment to keep her still a while longer, and see if her father may be in a better capacity than at present to take her off your hands.

I speak this not to force you to keep her against your will, but only to let you know how the case is with her father, neither doth her father know that I write unto you, nor desired me, but of my own will I thought it convenient to let the naked truth be laid open before you, and leave it to your own consideration.

And as for Mr. Fewterill requiting you evil for good, that is a thing something common with poor people ; and yet for my part I never heard him speak a word of ill of you since he came to London, nor before ; therefore, if he hath done you wrong by thought, word, or deed, it is unknown to me, neither do I love to enquire after people's evil or weaknesses ; neither do I question but he and she have both carried themselves unworthily unto you for all your kindness towards them, but I am unacquainted with it, and by your patient bearing, knowing your own innocency, you will heap coals of fire upon their heads that do you wrong

I shall be glad to see you here at London this summer, if your strength will bear the journey. All the news here in London is now about this new act for the preventing of meetings, it puts a damp to all trade exceedingly, it is so strict and cruel, that all people are almost against it, but what effect it may produce, time will bring forth.

It was the great wisdom of God, that this Commission of the Spirit should not be tied to outward wor-

ship, so that no act the powers have made yet, doth reach us, but truth is preserved in secret, and no envy can have any law to hinder it or suppress it.

This is all at present, only my love and my wife's love remembered to yourself, Mr. Goodwyn and his wife, Thomas Marsden and his wife, Betty Slater, William Newcombe, and all the rest of our friends in the faith there with you.

I rest and remain, your Friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*From the Postern, London, April 23d, 1670.*

---

*Copy of a Letter wrote by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, directed these, for his loviny Friend, Colonel Robert Phaire, in Ireland. Give this with care.*

Dear Friend in the true faith, Robert Faire,

*Sir,*

I HAVING this opportunity to send by Elizabeth Faggetter, I thought good to write these lines unto you, to certify you, that I received your letter by Mr. Greatreakes, dated Dublin, this 27th day of May 1675, wherein I perceive your great faith and love to the true God, and to this Commission of the Spirit, not only in this letter, but in your former letters, in March 1669. I have heard a good report of you both by Saint and Devil; also, I have had experience ever since you received the doctrine of this Commission of the Spirit, you turned well that declared us to be true witnesses of the Spirit, ambassadors sent of God, in that you have obeyed the truth in believing God hath sent us; you know what great power is in a commission that is given by the powers of a nation or earthly kings, you



have had experience of that yourself; and are not those happy that obey the commission of earthly kings as far as kings can reward them with honour in this life, and those that disobey his commission are they not punished, the case is the same with John Reeve and myself, God hath chosen us two in this last age to be his two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, and hath a commission from God to give sentence of blessing and cursing to eternity; to seal the foreheads of true believers unto everlasting life, and to seal the reprobate and unbeliever in their foreheads, unto eternal torment, which is abundantly declared in our writings; and ought not this commission of God from heaven to be obeyed, yea it is obeyed by some few, but the enemies of it are more than can be numbered. I write not this to you as questioning your faith, but rather to make your faith the more strong, for I know your heart did close with it ever since you first saw the writings; and when you received me in the name of a prophet, you received him that sent me, even the true God, whereby you were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise, even the spirit of faith, which giveth assurance of everlasting life, which doth abide in yourself, which hath appeared in you have not been ashamed of your faith before men, but hath justified your faith in this commission of the Spirit against all gainsayers, so that you being justified by faith in your own soul, I know you have peace with God as to your eternal happiness on the other side of death; likewise I can truly say by you as Christ did when on earth to his disciples that believed on him, blessed are your eyes that see, and ears that hear, and hearts that understand the things that belongs unto your peace; not that peace which the world gives, but that peace which faith in the true God gives, which shall endure for ever, both in this life and in the life to come, even to eternity; and because you have stretched forth the hand of faith, and have taken and eat of the tree of life, you shall live for ever; that is, by faith you

have eat of the flesh of God, and drinked the blood of God, which is that water of life that doth quench the thirsty soul, so that you shall never hunger nor thirst more after the forgiveness of sin, nor after the assurance of everlasting life; and this doctrine and words of mine shall be as the leaves that fall from the tree of life, which is for the healing of the nations. This faith is the faith of God's elect, that removeth that mountain of ignorance and darkness that lieth before the understanding of all mankind by nature, and all that hath the light of faith in the true God. This faith is that which doth ascend up to heaven, and pierceth through the sky, and beholdeth our God, our King, and our Redeemer upon the throne of his glory, which is an evidence to the soul that we shall see him face to face in the resurrection, which will not be a quarter of an hour's time to the dead soul before it shall quicken again into an everlasting life and glory; likewise this faith of the elect doth descend into hell, and seeth the form and nature of the right devil, and seeth the place, manner, and nature of the devil's torment; it doth, as David said concerning God, if he should ascend up to heaven God is there, and if he should descend into hell, he is there by his power also to keep them in utter darkness; so I say, let the reprobate and unbeliever's imagination go down into hell, the faith of this commission will find him out there also; and though the seed of the serpent doth rage, rail, and revile against me without a cause, and cast out their malice as floods out of their mouths; they being, as David said in his time, my enemies are more than can be numbered, yet by the power of faith I know I shall prevail over them all. I write these lines only to certify you I received your letter, and for the further strengthening of your faith, having at present this faithful friend to deliver it to you, else I should not have wrote to you at this time, so at present shall only remember my true love unto yourself, and to your dear

wife, which I once or twice saw in London, whose faith I understand is grown very strong since that time, which causeth my love the more in her, she having that faith in her, that works by love, for none can love God but those that have faith in the true God, then will they love him that is sent of God, and rest your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

My love remembered unto your son-in-law George Gamble, and your dear daughter his wife, and to Doctor Moss, and to all the rest of our friends in the true faith there with you.

*The Postern, London, Aug. 9th, 1675.*

**SIR,**

I HAVE discoursed with Mr. Greatreakes three times, and he told me what the token was you mention in your letter, and who it was that gave it, and that he would pay it, but it is not yet paid, for he is now gone into Devonshire, perhaps he may send it to Mr. Delamain's before he goeth out of England, if he does you shall hear of the receiving of it, for I did not think to have wrote to you at all till I had received it, but because of Elizabeth Faggeter being here.

You speak of a token in your letter, dated the 20th of March 1669, and now in this letter, dated 27th of May 1675, if this be the same token and the same party that sent it, Captain Gaile, I give him many thanks for his love and kindness, in that his heart was free, though I never received it.

So rested your Friend,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*The Postern, London, Aug. 9th, 1675.*

Copied from the original Copy of the Prophet Muggleton's own writing.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicks Muggleton, to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, bearing date February 22d, 1676.*

*Dear Friend in the true faith, Dorothy Carter,*

I SAW your letter to Mrs. Griffith, dated February 13th, 1676, in which your desire is, if it were possible, to have a few lines from my own hand. To satisfy your desire I shall give you a small account of my sufferings, and how my wife and I do fare at present.

My sentence was, to stand upon the pillory three days, and the books they took from me were about four hundred, and they were to be divided into three parts, and burnt by the common hangman before my face every day I stood upon the pillory. The sentence was executed upon me with the greatest severity, beyond any felon or cheat that ever stood upon the pillory before. I was drawn in a cart like a thief to the gallows, without cap or hat, and stood upon the pillory bare-headed; I was exposed to all the shame and reproach that possibly could be invented; I was led as a lamb or as an ox to the slaughter, there was no mitigation at all of the rigor of the sentence, but rather more punishment added to it. The books were offered up in three burnt offerings unto the unknown God; and I myself was offered upon the pillory, to the rude multitude to be slain or stoned to death, and it was the wonderful providence of God that I escaped with my life, or being maimed in my limbs, which would have been worse, than to be killed outright. Now is my testimony finished, in that the last true Prophet that God will ever send, suffered for the truth as all his servants the Prophets did that went before me. The world shall never have Prophet of the Lord more to persecute while the world doth last, for the mystery of God is finished, both by declaration and suffering, as was declared by his Servants the Pro-

phets and Apostles of old. Wait but a while with patience and we may see how God will pour out his wrath and vengeance upon this wicked world, and especially upon the City of London, who has shed the blood of the last true Prophet that God will ever send, though not unto death; my innocent blood will be a testimony against them, and will cry to heaven for vengeance, for they thirsted after it as for sweet wine, and now they have drank it both great and small, their thirst is not yet quenched because I am yet alive; God doth seldom let sins of this nature go unpunished in this life, besides the punishment in the life to come, but gives them their own blood to drink by destruction, for they are worthy that touched God's annointed Prophet, and doth them harm.

The effects of these things will shortly come to pass and be made manifest. I cannot give you an account yet about the fine, it is £500. I am yet in Newgate, but removed into the Press-yard, a little better place than I had before. I have a handsome chamber for ten shillings a week by myself, where my wife and friends may come freely to me. I am indifferently recovered of my wound, but the cold and cough doth cleave to me still, but not so extreme as before, I hope I shall outgo it and be well again. My wife is not very well, her grief and troubles have been so many and so great of late, that it is a wonder she holds up so well as she doth.

As for the copy of the indictment it is very large, and cannot be had, my Attorney hath it, but the whole indictment, every word of it was taken out of the Book called the Neck of the Quakers broken, and in no book else at all; and as for the paper pinned to my breast, it cannot be had, it was so daubed with dirt; but the words were these: Lodowicke Muggleton standeth upon the pillory for publishing and printing a heretical, seditious and blasphemous books; these were all the words of it in great letters.

Thus I have given you an account of the substance of things that have happened unto me; particulars would make a volume. I was willing to satisfy your desire with my own hand-writing, with my love and my wife's love remembered to yourself and to Betty Marsden; your maid Ann, and all Friends else there with you, I take leave and remain your Friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON,

*From the Press Yard, Newgate,  
London, February 22d, 1676.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson of Slade House, in Staffordshire, bearing date from London, 14th of November, 1676.*

*Loving Friend, Thomas Tompkinson,*

I SHALL give you a little account of those things that were then upon me when you were in London last, which caused me to absent my own house, neither have I been at home never since, nor know not when I shall, for the king's messengers have been to seek after me several times, but have missed of me; and if I can keep out of their hands, (as I will do my endeavour,) I shall deal well enough with all my enemies, which are many, yet I see the law, and money will bridle them all; so the bit of the bridle be of silver to put in their mouths, it will keep their necks strait to the law, and turn their heads aside every way. I have been a whole year in law with two persons that do trespass upon the widow Brunt; and after her death it fell into my hands, so I commenced two suits of law against them, but they had several put offs, which caused a great charge the more to me and some to themselves, but I following it as fast as the law would permit; they perceiving the law

went against them, they devised to put me into the Spiritual Court, thinking to get me excommunicated, that I might not have the benefit of the law in these two causes; but I defended myself in the spiritual court, so that would do them no good.

They seeing that would not do, they devised another device, to inform the Warden of the Company of Stationers, that I had printed blasphemous books, being unlicensed, which caused six men that belonged to them to break open four doors, and took away fifty pounds worth of books, under the pretence of being unlicensed. After these men had broke open my doors and took away my books, they finding that I would sue them at the law for what they had done, they got a warrant from the council table for my person, but I have kept out of their hands hitherto, and have overthrown them men in law, and cast them, and recovered my title to the ground that was the Widow Brunt's:— likewise I have arrested two or three of those men that broke the door, and do proceed in law against them, and do intend to put in our declaration in court this week, so we shall go right to bring it to a trial next term. Also I have proceeded in the spiritual court so far as to get out their libel to see what they charge me with, and do intend to carry it out of the spiritual court into the court of king's bench, then I shall be the plaintiff in both suits, for they hang together, and now I have done with the other two causes, I shall the better follow these two.

I have acquainted several of our friends here in London, and advised with them, that if they of our faith that are of ability, will assist me in these two causes to wage law with them, and they are very free and willing to contribute towards the charge of law; we being many, the burthen will not be very great upon any particular person, it is left to every one's freedom whether they will give any thing or no. It concerns all of this faith, and I will stand in the gap to manage the law

by my attorney, and if I do overthrow them in both courts as I hope I shall, it will be upon record, so that none will meddle with me more about those books for ever. I have advised with the council that they have done that which the law will not justify them in what they have done, for it is contrary to law and to several acts of parliament; however it goeth, on my side or not, it will be good for the age to come, not to suffer any envious devil to do as they have done; if I lose my books they shall not have them for nought, and make others afraid to do the like.

Therefore if you please to propound this to as many of this faith as you know, whose minds are free to contribute what they please towards this business, I shall be very willing to accept of it. Thus I have given you as short an accountt as I can of those matters and troubles I have passed through one whole year, and how long my troubles will last yet I know not.

So I shall say no more at present, only my love and my wife's remembered unto yourself and wife; I take leave and rest your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

14th Nov. 1676.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Tompkinson, bearing date April 23d, 1677.*

*Loving Friend in the true faith, Thomas Tompkinson,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received of Mr. Delamain ten shillings at one time, and thirteen shillings and sixpence at a another time, which you and the rest of friends did send to him for me according as their particular names were set down; but I gave Mr. Delamain orders to give you an account that he had received the money both times, and had given it to me according to your order, but not that he should mention every person's name nor every particular shilling that every person gave. It was both troublesome and need-



less, and very inconvenient if the world should have seen it; therefore a receipt in general was enough, for if we received all that was sent, we must needs understand the names of them that sent it and all particulars.

I hope you nor the rest of friends do not doubt of Mr. Delamain's faithfulness to deliver to me whatsoever is sent to me by any friend of ours in any parts of the world, both by sea and land; whatsoever hath been directed to him to be given to me, either letters or any thing else, he hath faithfully delivered unto me, and I have desired him to give a receipt for me in general, when I have not been capable to write myself, and it hath satisfied all friends else; so that it was partly my fault more than his, that he did not write any larger at that time, for I and he and all our friends else here in London were in great trouble, and had not leisure to write at that time, for the shepherd being smitten, the sheep were all scattered.

Upon the 17th of January last past, judgment was given upon me to stand upon the pillory in three places of the City of London; and the books they took away from me were divided into three parts, and were so burnt before my face the three days I stood on the pillory; so they offered up the books as three burnt offerings unto the unknown God, and they offered me up as a sacrifice to be slain by the rude multitude; and it was a wonderful providence I was not slain outright; I was exposed to the utmost rigour of the law, more than any man that suffered in that kind. However they have shed the blood of the last Prophet, though not unto death; oh! what shall be done unto this bloody city for shedding of innocent blood? the God of heaven shall say unto this bloody city, "You shall be punished with poverty and beggary; but those who have had a hand in the persecution and blood of my servant the Prophet, shall be cast into the bottomless pit in utter darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of teeth for evermore, where they shall never see bright day to

eternity." This I am sure will be the effect upon those that have had a hand in this suffering of mine.

I cannot enlarge in particulars of those great sufferings hath happened to me of late, it would be too large a volume to relate the particulars of it; but you understand by a little what a great deal meaneth.

So being in haste, I shall take leave and rest, only my love to yourself, and my wife's love to yourself and wife, and all friends else there with you.

I rest your loving friend in the the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*From the Press Yard, Newgate,  
April 23rd, 1677.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. George Gamble of Cork in Ireland, bearing date, August 20th, 1677.*

*Loving friend in the true faith,*

THESE lines are to inform you of the truth concerning my sufferings; I shall only touch upon the chief heads of the whole matter, for particulars and circumstances would make a volume, which shall be left upon record, with many other acts and sufferings done by John Reeve and myself, which will be published after my death.

But as to this present suffering of mine, upon the 17th day of January, 1677, I was tried and condemned.

And in the trial I would note to you this, the judges were divided in themselves; the judges did not give consent to that sentence; therefore not to repeat circumstances nor particulars, I shall note this passage unto you that one of the judges said.

**“Gentlemen of the Jury,**

**“I cannot see by the laws of England how you can bring this man in guilty,” with many words to that purpose, “therefore,” said he to the jury, “look to it.”**

**Then stood up another judge, chief of England, and said, “that if it were not law we will make it law,” and many other words to that purpose, to provoke the jury to bring me in guilty, else they would be partakers with me in that horrible blasphemy; so the jury did hearken to him, and brought me in guilty.**

**Upon which the sentence was given in thus, THAT the court had no love to my person, and were sorry that the laws of England were so unprovided to punish such crimes of this nature. Therefore saith he, we shall give you but an easy punishment, that is, you shall stand upon the pillory three days in three of the most eminent places in the City of London, two hours at a time, from 11 o'clock in the forenoon till one of the clock in the afternoon, and a writing shall be tied upon your breast, to show the cause why you suffer, and that my books should be divided into three parts, and burnt by the common hangman before my face every day I stood upon the pillory, and that I should be fined five hundred pounds, and after the fine was satisfied, I should put in bail for my good behaviour during my life, and that none should be bail but such as were not of my principles.**

**This is the very substance and almost verbatim, the words and truth of this sentence.**

**This sentence have I suffered in every tittle in the greatest rigour that could possibly be inflicted upon man; they made me ride in a cart as a thief, or a murderer, bare-headed, without hat or cap, which never was done in England before: I stood bare-headed, which no cheat nor bawd ever did; I was set as a mark for every one to throw a stone at me, my books were offered up in three burnt offerings, at three sacrifices unto the unknown God before my face, and I myself was**

offered up as a sacrifice to the rude multitude, I was bruised and battered with dirt, mud, rotten eggs and stones; and my innocent blood was shed, though not unto death; it was the wonderful providence of God I was not slain outright. That my life was preserved being exposed to the rude multitude, even to unreasonable men, such as Paul in the like case desired to be delivered from; so that the blood of the last true Prophet that God will ever send hath been shed by this bloody city of London; which innocent blood doth cry to heaven for vengeance on them that have had a hand in it, because it was shed for God's cause only therefore the sin is the greater; I was willing to have been stoned to death by the rude multitude, and would have gone off the pillory to be stoned to death, but the officers would not let me come down.

When this was over, and my wounds washed, and the blood stanch'd, I was was put into the cold cellar again the same day at night; I went three pair of stairs to my lodging, and the next day I would willingly have kept my bed all day, being not well of my wounds, but the keeper said, if I would not come down into the cellar in the afternoon, they would put me into the common side; so I was forced to come down into the cellar, which had more need to have kept my bed; but there is no mercy in prison for in hell there is no mercy but justice only; neither is there any mercy in prison keepers at all without profit; and I was very well satisfied that God's hell which he hath prepared for all persecuting devils will be worse, neither will there be any mercy at all there, but justice only, and in the assurance of this I rest satisfied. And when I was in the celler, William Penn and William Mead came to talk with me, which I was unwilling at that time to talk with any man in prison, yet Penn asked me "if I had peace in this my suffering?" I said I had, and that now I had finished my testimony and sealed it with my

blood; and that I should never suffer more for it while I live, which I know I shall not.

Those are the words that he grounded that report, "that I had denied my commission." Further, he and several Quakers, upon a report that the Quakers were the authors of this my suffering, because the indictment against me was taken wholly out of that book, called 'the Necks of the Quakers broken,' there was not the least syllable in the indictment taken out of any other books but out of that only. But I answered Penn and the rest, that I did not think that the Quakers had any hand in this my suffering, but do clear the Quakers from having any hand in this matter, though I knew many of them were glad in their hearts that it was done by others.

Now I have given you a small account of my sufferings, let me give you a little account of my deliverance: while I was in the press-yard a prisoner, the sheriffs sent several times by the goal keeper to see what I would do about the fine, but they were at no certainty what fine they required; at last the clerk of Newgate said, they would take a fifth part, which was one hundred pounds, I was leath to give so much, and let it alone for a quarter of a year longer for some reasons I had, and after that time I appointed was over, I sent a letter to the sheriffs to treat with them about the fine, but they were very high, and would not abate one shilling of an hundred pounds, and the cause why, I understand, they were proffered by some of the goalers and others, an hundred pounds to keep me a prisoner for ever, or else to have a larger sum of money for my ransom, I perceive had not the sheriffs honour laid at the stake, I had been bought and sold as Joseph was in Egypt, a prisoner during life or till such ransom was paid, it would have been a great disparagement to the sheriffs if they had sold me, such as never was done in England before. But they having an eye to credit and some-

what to conscience, they would not do such wickedness ; but however it caused them to abate nothing of an hundred pounds, neither would they give any time, but to lay down the money presently ; so we borrowed an hundred pounds the next day and gave it to them upon the 19th day of July, 1677, and the same day at night I was released out of prison.

I was prized at a goodly price, far higher than the Lord of life was prized when he was on earth, he was valued but at thirty pieces of silver, but they valued me at one hundred pieces of silver ; the thirty pieces of silver was thirty pounds they valued Christ at, else it would not have bought the potter's field, and the hundred pieces of silver they valued me the last true Prophet, and Witness of the Spirit, it was an hundred pounds ; and the cause why they valued me at such an high price above my Lord and master, it was because they knew I had some inheritance and interest in this world, but the Lord of life had not a place to lay his head, therefore was he valued at such a low price ; and because they knew I had some interest in the world, and many followers of me, therefore they valued me at such a high price of a hundred pounds of silver ; and as the thirty pieces of silver was the price of innocent blood, therefore not fit to be put into the treasury to be expended upon any holy use, or to relieve the poor, but to buy a potter's field to bury the stinking carcasses of strangers, thieves, and murderers, so that the thirty pieces of silver was bestowed upon the basest way suitable to the purchasers, being the price of innocent blood ; so likewise the hundred pieces of silver I am valued at, it is the price of innocent blood also, a very goodly price ; and this money will not be put into the treasury to repair churches, or relieve the poor, but will be spent basely in lusts and drunkenness, and voluptuousness to the purchasers of it, being the price of innocent blood.

Thus have I given you an account of the whole mat-

ter as short as I can, both of my sufferings and delivery out of all these troubles, and that I am indifferent well in health; being restored to my own house again I thought good to write these lines unto you, to satisfy you in those parts touching all those things that have happened unto me of late here in London. If you please you may shew this letter to those of this faith, if you think fit, but shew it to none of the contrary party, let the blind lead the blind, that they may both fall into the ditch together.

So not to trouble you any further, but do remember my love, and my wife's love unto yourself, and to your good wife, unknown to me by the natural sight of the eye; but the time shall come, she shall see me face to face, when I am in a better condition than now I am in, even upon a throne of glory, though now I have been upon a throne of shame and reproach, even a pillory. My dear love remembered to Colonel Phaire and his good wife, to Major Dennison and Captain Gale, to whom I am much engaged for his kind token long ago, and to all the rest of the friends in the faith there with you. I take leave and rest,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

---

*The Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mr. Thomas Nosworthy, in Antigua, dated from London November 4th, 1679.*

*Loving Friend in the true faith, Thomas Nosworthy,*

**THIS** is to certify you that I received your letter about the beginning of Oct. 1679, with your brother's letter from Virginia, and that you received my letter with the rest, that we received your kind tokens. I am glad you receive satisfaction of mind though it be

but in temporal affairs, is more than all the riches of this world, what is it without peace of mind; but that peace that floweth from the assurance of eternal salvation in the life to come, all the kingdoms of this world is not to be compared unto it, but when this temporal peace and eternal peace doth meet together in one soul, which I do not question, but they do in you, so that nothing under the sun can be compared with it.

I have read over your brother's letter, he writeth very well as to moral wisdom, and as to temporal affairs, but stone blind as to spiritual and heavenly wisdom, even like unto those David speaketh of, who said to those prophets that came in the name of the Lord, "we desire not the knowledge of thy law, therefore depart from us. So doth your brother by those books you sent him, for he doth count the truth of God and the wisdom of heaven a stumbling block indeed unto them.

And you may see what reward you have for your good will, you are counted a poor weak man by it, and fallen into a greater error than you were in when you were a Quaker, and in effect they desire not the knowledge of God's law nor of your books, but do wish you had never sent them; neither would they have yourself to believe them, but to depart from them as they have done, for they desire not the knowledge of them neither.

Therefore do you do as Christ did, he went to his own, but his own received him not, neither did he do any miracle because of their unbelief; so you sent books to your relations, but they received them not in love, neither could they convert any of them, because of their unbelief. It is a vain thing to write or send any heavenly matters among the heathen, for they will count you the greater deluded and in the greater error; therefore let no heavenly wisdom come there no more. I am glad you are recovered to your health again, and except the truth were locked up in a chest and never opened, it will meet with oppositions as I perceive you do.



I have been more sick of a fever and ague this spring than ever I was in my life, but now I am in health again, and as for your sending three thousand pounds weight in sugar, and consigning it to our friend Mr. Saddington, this is to let you know that he is dead a matter of six weeks, almost before your letter came to my hands: likewise, I asked Mr. Clarke if he would undertake that which Mr. Saddington should have done, but he saith, he will not concern himself in such matters at all, so that there is no friend at all, that I know of, that is of any ability that will meddle in it, nor have any concerns in ship affairs, and if those that are poor should undertake it, perhaps they will sell the sugar and spend the money, so you may lose all. And as for my part, I never could endure to concern myself with any ship or sea affairs if it were ever so much for my profit. Therefore I thought good to acquaint you and give you notice, that you may appoint some other man that you can confide in, that you know hath been used and knoweth the custom and manner of sea affair, and of the custom-house; we are all very ignorant of these matters, therefore unwilling to meddle in it. And as for your sending me a further token of your love, I know it is out of pure love, but my desire is, that you would not send any thing to me at all, and I shall take it as kindly at your hands, and have as great a love for you, as if you had sent it, because I have enough in this world and have no need, neither would I have you to think that I do refuse your kindness out of any scorn, but out of true love, knowing that I have less need than yourself, neither do I love trouble myself to trouble others.

This with my love and my wife's love presented unto you, and to those two friends you speak of in your letter; I take leave and remain your friend,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, 4th Nov. 1679.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. James Whitehead of Braintree in Essex, bearing date from London, October 18th, 1690. Beginning as following.*

*Dear friend James Whitehead.*

I received your letter dated October 12th, wherein I perceive that the country justices have agreed and drawn up an order for the compelling of all persons to come to their parish church, according to the act made in the first year of the reign of Queen Elizabeth.

I cannot conceive how the justices of peace in any county have authority and power to put that act in execution in these days, except an act of parliament to authorise them, which no parliament ever did since his Majesty was restored; for that act was at that time made only against the papists, for all protestant episcopal and puritans did go to church generally; there was no Dissenters then as there is now, there was then when this act was made but two denominations, that is to say, papist and protestant; so that act the intent of it was only against the papist, and not against the protestant in the least, and none refused to worship in the protestant churches but the papists; but it is said that this act is in force to dissenters now in regard it stands unrepealed.

In answer to that, As that act is not repealed by parliament, neither hath it been confirmed and put in execution by any act of parliament since the king was restored, so that no justices ought to put it in execution; for this is to be minded, that this act hath been laid aside in England, Scotland, and Ireland, and three or four governments and parliaments have laid that act aside, as in king James's time, and king Charles the first, and the government of that, called the commonwealth, and since king Charles the second was restored, all these governments laid aside that act of Queen

Elizabeth, and made laws of their own for the quiet of the nation, not meddling with that act of Queen Elizabeth, that was made against the papists only. But to satisfy you further, the execution of that act hath been endeavoured by several justices in England and practiced by them, for when I was prisoner in Derby goal there was twelve men of the baptist people in prison, for not paying twelve-pence a Sunday for not going to church, and the justices of that county did commit them to prison for nothing else; because the king had set forth a proclamation suitable to that act, that every person that did not come to church every Sunday, should pay twelve-pence; but it was alledged before judge Tyrrell that the Baptists some of them should say, that the king's proclamation was no law; the judge said nothing to that, neither to justify the king's proclamation nor deny it, but acquitted them without paying any thing for not going to church, only the fees of the prison. After this trial that practice was laid aside by the justices in those parts ever since; several of our friends did pay twelve-pence a week for a while, it did not last long. After this the justices in Cambridgeshire were very hot upon this act of Queen Elizabeth, and made several of our friends and other dissenters to pay twelve-pence a week for not coming to church; our friends did pay it for a while, but the justices not being contented with twelve-pence a week, they proceeded further to another act of Queen Elizabeth, made against the papists, "that if any person were cited into the quarter sessions for not going to church three weeks together, he should pay but 3s. but if he were cited in for not going to church a whole month, then it was 20s. this did our friend Dickenson suffer, and other dissenters, but this did not last long but fell to the ground.

I suppose that the justices of the peace for your county do think and hope that the parliament when it sits, will make an act to establish their order they have

drawn up. This is but a bad time for justices to combine together to force the consciences of three parts of the nation; but it is hoped the parliament hath matters of more consequence and weight for the good of the nation, than to humour the malice of a few justices.— And wait patiently a while, and you will see this fall as other things of this nature have done.

Thus I have given you a little light concerning the law, and how justices have acted contrary to law, and many have suffered by unjust men that have made their own wills a law, being backed by authority; and how could the innocent help themselves, but bore down their necks and take the yoke that wicked men have laid upon them. And as for my advice in this thing is this, that if this order to compel all persons that cannot bow down to their worship, if it come to be general and take place in the nation, that those of our faith that are able to give twelve-pence a Sunday; rather than let

[The remainder of this letter by some accident torn out.]

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. John Whalley, bearing date, May the 11th, 1681.*

*Mr. John Whalley,*

I received your letter, dated February 12th, 1680, in answer to mine; and I give you thanks that you gave me your answer which causeth me to write this once more unto you, concerning this business.

First, you say that I was misinformed in that you stopped Nurse Holland's legacy for her abusing you; but you say the truth of the matter was, you stopped her legacy, because you found that you lost from your father's death to that time of what was committed to

her charge more than eight pounds; this, you say, caused you to forbear the payment of her legacy.

Answer. Why did you not then sue her for this at the law? but you sued her at the law for her abusive words to you. And Mrs. Middleton, and she and you together, did ruin the poor woman at the law, and made her spend all her wages she had of the captain and Mrs. Middleton, and you got nothing by it; you two punished her enough for her abusive words, which I blamed her very much for; and though the cause was Mrs. Middleton's yet you did appear in it, so that by the effort there was no great mistake that the legacy was stopped for her abusing you, in that you did not sue her at the law for what you charge her with, but now the case is altered, the legacy is mine, as sure as if it had been given in the will; neither do you know what I and my friends have done, and must do in relieving her in that miserable, poor, and sick condition this long time; so that she could do no less than make that legacy over to me.

Secondly, you say that your father left his estate so much in debt, in mortgages, bonds, bills and book debts, that it was very little worth more than the legacies have charged it withall, especially if I consider how miserably out of repair he left the house

As for that, I understand, that the greatest part of that money Mr. Cally was engaged for upon them houses, his own house he lived in did pay; for I am informed, you had two hundred pounds fine and ten pounds a year for that house ever since, and that now you have eighty pounds a year coming in for their rents, besides ten pounds a year ground rent to the College, besides your father's goods, plate and jewels, and whatsoever is your son's is in your possession. Which fine and rent this three years and a half, I suppose may defray all mortgages, bills, debts, and legacies, which I conceive cannot be much less than £100, which I suppose you are to pay out of the estate; but what is

this to me, if it were twice as much more I have nothing to do with it, the law hath given you the rule of it, and power to dispose of it, as a man in trust for your own child.

Thirdly, you say, that till the mortgages, bonds, bills and honest debts be paid you cannot lawfully pay her legacy; and if the law do allow it, you say, her legacy shall be the last that shall be paid when the estate is cleared, and you get money over or out of it, which is as much as to say, you will never pay that legacy at all; for who shall know of you when the estate is clear, and when you have money over and above out of the estate, sure no counsel told you that to be law or justice.

Fourthly, you say, if you have paid off debts or legacies, it was to preserve the estate and your father's reputation.

What you have done of that nature it was to preserve your own interest, and your own child's inheritance; you being executor in trust, else the child and you both might have been disinherited; for there was estate enough left to discharge all things in your father's will to my knowledge; therefore you need not plead your father's reputation, for this I must tell you, I have been an executor myself to houses that have been mortgaged, and legacies given, and debts to pay, and money owing to me besides, yet I have been faithful in my executorship, to pay the mortgages and honest debts that were due, and all the legacies according to the will of the deceased, before I paid my own debt or had received it out of the rents; for this I must tell you, that legacies are to be paid whether we received it out of the rent or no: besides it is a very unjust thing and guilt upon the conscience of man not to fulfil the will of the dead; I have known a woful effect upon one that I knew for not fulfilling the will of the dead.

Fifthly, I make no question but you have paid your own legacy of £50 to yourself, and that you have paid your father's kinswomen's legacy of £30, and that you

have paid Mr. Butler's legacy of £50, debt and legacy, and all other legacies mentioned in the will. Certainly the estate would have paid this £10 legacy as well as the rest if you had pleased, and you may pay it now to me if you please; and you have reason so to do because it is my right and the law requires it.

Sixthly, you say, if I am resolved to sue you in her behalf, you say, for my sake, you will put me to as little charge as you can, and answer me in any court; likewise you say, that an executor in trust pays no costs.

As to this, I am unwilling on my own behalf to sue you in any court at all, if you will pay it me, or any other I shall appoint quietly, for she hath nothing to do in this matter now: also, I know an executor in trust pays no costs, yet this I must tell you, that you must pay the legacy, and if you put me to spend ten pounds to get ten pounds, it is not the first ten pounds I have spent in law to get that which is my right; besides, though you pay no costs you must loose your own costs as I do mine.

Seventhly, you say, that you disbursed moneys for me when I was in troubles.

To this I say, you were the man that put me upon that way; I being innocent and ignorant of that proceedings, was led as a lamb before my potent enemies, and was not to open my mouth, for my dependance was wholly upon you, and those you employed in that business; and when I came before the court you durst not appear yourself nor those you did employ, neither counsel nor attorney, nor no other durst appear to speak a word for me in my behalf. The Judges called for one Rous, answer was made, he was sick a bed. The Judges called for two men more, answer was made to the court, That they were gone into Southwark about earnest business; so that I was made a scoff and derision to the whole court; and Jeffreys pleaded to the Judges, that this was but one of Muggleton's cheats,

and that I did not owe Mrs. Hall any thing, for she was called in ; and one King that you employed which managed the business was called for, but there was none to answer, nor to receive me, so that I was returned back again to Newgate with great disgrace, and with great charges ; and I seeing I was so basely abused by them you did employ, and had spent such a deal of money in vain, I was resolved to take a chamber in the Press-yard, which I did, and not to remove to the King's Bench if you would have given me ten pounds to remove thither

Yet after I was settled in the Press-yard, you put me upon the same thing again, and said, that a mark more would get me turned over, and that you would appear yourself ; and I like an ignorant fool, did hearken unto you, and put myself to thirty shillings charges more, besides what Mrs. Hall spent, and all her trouble she had, and you did not appear yourself, nor none else durst appear before the sheriffs of London, but that poor old man in all this business.

But I understood by those that knew, that the King's Bench officers dare not appear in court in my business ; so that your putting me upon this way, cost me first and last, at least ten pounds. Besides, this last bout made the sheriffs and jailers so mad with me, because I did not stand to their courtesy, they would not bate one shilling of an hundred pounds fine, which would before have taken forty or fifty pounds at the most, and would have saved me four months imprisonment.

Thus have I suffered greatly for hearkening to your advice in this matter. Likewise you know Mr. Brocke gave you two guineas which is mine which you have towards your disbursements in my troubles ; if you laid out more, it must be your own loss, for mine hath been great ; and to prevent a law-suit or quarrel, as we always have been friends hitherto, I shall propose this unto you, that if you will pay me this ten pound legacy quietly, I will return you forty shillings of it back again



and give you a full discharge of the whole, and you shall see the deed and will annexed together as sure as law can make it. I do beg your answer once more, whether you will or not; if you like, appoint your time when.

Direct your answer as you did your other letter.

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*May 11th, 1681.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Dorothy Carter, of Chesterfield, Sept. 21, 1681.*

*Dear friend Mrs. Carter,*

I SAW a letter of yours to my son White, concerning your grandson being an apprentice with him, and your great desire is to have my advice and judgment in it.

Truly friend I would willingly have waved the thing, for these reasons following.

First, if I should help the boy to never so good a master, and of a good trade, yet if it be not in the boy's nature to be obedient unto his master and apt in nature to learn the art of his trade, the parents of the boy are apt to blame the master of the child for his neglect in not learning the apprentice his trade and art in his trade according to his covenant and promise, which default may be in the apprentice, because his nature could not receive it himself; and if his master should be cruel and beat the boy, thinking by that means to force the boy to learn his trade, and yield obedience whether he will or no, the master will then be cried out upon as a cruel tyrannical master, which was the

cause the boy never came to learn his trade to any purpose.

Secondly, the experience I have seen by our dear friend Ellen Sudbury by her son ; I was not only myself, but prevailed with other friends to help her son John Sudbury to a place, to be apprentice both to a good master and a good trade ; truly I do think he was one of the best and patientest masters in London, and a very good trade which did not require strength but, fitted his fancy very well, for his idle nature never loved much labour ; yet he being naturally proud and disobedient to his master, insomuch that I have had much ado to keep him in his place so long as he hath, and have persuaded his mother several times to part with money to please his fancy, else he would go away from his master ; yet his master is blamed for letting him have so much liberty, which if his master had been strict he would never have stayed half so long as he hath ; and were it for a great necessity that lieth upon him, he would never stay that little time he hath to serve ; for now he must serve out his time, or else fall into the hands of destruction, or else be a burthen to his mother, which I am sorry for his mother's sake.

And now, dear friend, I know you have a tender love and a great care for your grandson, but you must not think that a master can have the same tender affection to apprentice as a grandmother hath, neither do you expect that he is put to apprentice as one to nurse or to board, but you put him out to be a servant, an apprentice to learn a trade to get his living another day ; and when he cometh out of his time, he will the better know how to take an apprentice himself, and then he will know what it is to be an apprentice, and the difference of being brought up with his parents, and learning a trade.

And as for my son White, I gave you my judgment before, and do give you the same still, that I do not know of any better master, nor of any better trade in

London than he is. And as for his trade, he is not only a bare brazier, but a curious artist, which is only in request in these times, which will not be so heavy nor require so much strength as a plain brazier doth, besides he worketh much at home himself now, which is very good, for an apprentice will the sooner learn his trade; and as for your grandchild's mistress, she is as good a woman as lives, as far as I can discern; and for liberty of conscience, he shall have with him more free than any people, whatsoever, in the world will grant him.

Also, I perceived by your letter, that you are resolved to give no more than fifteen pounds with him, because of three grand-children to provide for by you. I know you speak truth and that your care hath been great, and is great still, as I said to my son White. And upon this consideration, he said these words: that in regard of this and former kindnesses that he hath received at your hands, he would take him with that fifteen pounds and well-clothed, and that he would have you send him up as soon as you can, for I say it is better to send him now, because he may be seasoned with London air this winter, than stay till the spring when hot weather comes on apace.

Thus my son White is agreed to take your grandson, and if you and your grandson are agreed with him you may send him to him as aforesaid.

Thus according to your desire, I have given you my judgment and advice in this matter, and take leave and rest and remain,

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, Sept. 21st, 1681.

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mr. William Pedley, a Weaver and Dyer, a believer of the Commission of the Spirit, living in Southampton, bearing date from London, the 12th day of January, 1688.*

*Loving friend in the true faith, William Pedley,*

I RECEIVED your letter, dated January 4th, 1688, wherein you complain of your great troubles you have gone through in these late years, what in oppression, I suppose you mean oppression for conscience sake; and your greatest troubles I perceive, hath been in the natural concerns of this world, in respect of your first wife being dead, and leaving a charge of children behind her; and I perceive you have married another wife, and hath some charge by her also, which you say are in number five, thus poverty must needs come upon you like an armed man; these troubles are common to all married men, and people both poor and rich, but especially to the poor that do live by trade, for if trade doth fail, poverty doth increase and grow exceedingly, for trade is a very uncertain thing, especially in a time of persecution; for trade and commerce hath taking the wings of the morning and fly away in these our days; so that poverty cometh in upon the poor as a flood upon the dry land; this thousands can witness in this nation as well as you, for want of trade; and poverty is the great common enemy in the nation at this day and time; and in regard, this poverty and want of trade is so common and so natural in this world, therefore it is that no eye pitieth the poor, let him be saint or devil, righteous or unrighteous. Also I perceive by your letter, that all the rest of your faith in those parts are backslided, and hath forsaken their own peace, and hath conformed for fear of the loss of some of their wordly goods, or fear of imprisonment,

even against their own conscience, some only upon threats, others having lost some of their goods, for fear of losing more or all, and have submitted and conformed, so that now you are left alone, those are days of trial, but few are able to stand the trial, to keep faith and a good conscience; and especially in most counties in England several hath conformed; so that in saving earthly riches, they have lost heavenly riches, for they will never recover that peace and assurance of eternal life which they once had abiding in themselves, not while they live in this world; for you may read in the Scriptures, that he that doth fight the good fight of faith, and holdeth out to the end of his life, shall receive the crown of eternal life and glory; but he that looketh back as Lot's wife did, to fetch something that was in her house, which she thought might do her a pleasure when she was got out of the flames of fire and brimstone; so it is with those that go back from the principles of truth, which led them to Zoar, a refuge of safety, of peace and content of mind to free them from the fear of the fire and flames of hell in the conscience, which we see the Sodomites of this world are in; which makes them blaspheme against the God of heaven, and persecute steadfast and faithful men. It is a dangerous thing for men that have tasted the good word of God; and the powers of the life to come, that hath worshipped God in spirit and truth of heart for many years, according to the Commission of the Spirit, which is now in these last days in being, and now men because of a little persecution, to fall from it and worship that which all the ignorant and unbelieving people, and those that doth not know God doth worship. How doth such persons think to recover their peace with God again? neither doth God regard such worshippers, neither doth God's messengers regard such worshippers, that can suffer nothing for their faith, and they will reap the fruits of their own doings, which is the loss of their peace of their own minds while they live in this world,

and the fear of eternal death hereafter, to save themselves in this world, for a little time; for the Commission hath laid but an easy yoke and a burthen which is very light upon the neck of the believers of it. Christ said to those in his time, that his yoke was easy and his burthen light; yet those that would take his yoke upon them, must forsake father and mother, wife and children, if persecution should occasion it; nay, life itself must go rather than cast off his yoke, else no crown of eternal happiness, life and glory is to be had; this seems to the eye of reason to be a heavy yoke, yet Christ calls it easy, and the eye of faith doth count it easy. Still also you say that they have made a distress upon you already, and that you are left to wrestle with them, (meaning your persecutors,) which say you, according to reason, I am worse able. As to this I say, you are best able to wrestle with them for these reasons.

First, because you have suffered for your faith already.

Second, because you are a poor man and hath a great charge of children, and hath little or no estate to lose; for poverty and a great charge of children is a fortress, or as a tower of defence against your persecutors; for what town or city will persecute a poor man to cast him out of the town, or put him in prison, that hath committed no crime against the law of God, nor the laws of the land, and that hath nothing to lose, to bring upon the town a great charge; for you may by the laws of England throw all your children upon the town, and so shift for yourself elsewhere; and the town must by the laws of England provide for your children, and bestow them as they please. If they do persecute you and throw you into the streets, then do you throw your charge upon the town and shift for yourself; so that being poor will make you the more able to encounter with your persecutors, and preserve the peace of your mind, and your faith that fail not to the end of this natural life, that you may enjoy that

eternal happiness hereafter; for riches of this world is a great snare, and many men rather than lose this earthly riches and honors among men, they let go their hold of eternal life in the world to come; because that is at a distance, and this is in present being. I hope these lines may satisfy you, and bear up your spirit in the day of trouble, and deliverance will come in its time.

So resteth your Friend in the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, Jan. 12th, 1683.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to Mrs. Elizabeth Flaggetter, of Cork, in Ireland, bearing date from London, August 5th, 1684.*

*Loving Friend in the true faith, Elizabeth Flaggetter,*

**THIS** is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated July 3d, 1684, wherein I perceive your son hath been hindred of his purpose, which is a thing very common in these days, and that your time would not hardly permit you to write those few lines; I know where people are concerned in the affairs of this world, must be carried and spurred on both in body and mind; the business of this world is that which causeth all people in the world to forget God, some striving for riches and honour, so shat there is no room left in the heart, not to have any hope in a God, or any other heaven, nor the fear of any hell but what is in this world; and the poorer sort of people their hearts are so full of the cares of this world, how to get bread to feed their families and themselves, and to cloath their nakedness as Adam and Eve did; so that no fear of hell, or of a worse condition than poverty can enter into their hearts, but look upon the rich and honourable

people to be in heaven, and do wish he could attain to the same condition or hell after death, than poverty in this world, or any better heaven after death than riches and honour in this life or world, no more than Dives the rich man did till he came into hell in his conscience. And happy are you and all those that are chosen out of this world by this Commission of the Spirit, which hath shewed you a better heaven than the riches and honour of this world, in that you are made rich in faith in the true God, in his form and nature, which no people in the world besides doth know, but those that doth believe our report, to them the arm of the Lord is revealed at this day, and to no other. Likewise we have shewed you a worse hell than the poverty of this world, and by your faith in this Commission of the Spirit, you will escape falling into that hell which is eternal; though you be poor in spirit, this kind of poverty is blessed of the Lord; Christ did not say, blessed are the poor of this world, but "Blessed are the poor in spirit for they shall see God." I perceive you are all there in peace and in quietness of mind, which all the riches of this world will not give; I am glad to hear of your steadfast faith in the true God. I have not written these lines to discomfort you, nor with the believers there with you, but for the comfort and strengthening of you all to hold out to the end, because you will not have a prophet always with you; I being old cannot by the course of nature live many years longer, but those writings I have left behind me will endure to the world's end.

This is all at present, only my love with my wife's love remembered unto you, and to George Gamble and his wife, and all the rest of our friends in the true faith with you. I take leave and remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, August 5th, 1684.*



*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to the Widow Mrs. Elizabeth Marsden, of Chesterfield, bearing date from London, April 18th, 1685.*

*Dear friend in the true faith, Elizabeth Marsden.*

I HAVING an opportunity at this time to inform you, that there is a design in agitation that will be for your good, and your children's good also, as long as your natural life in this world, if you please to accept of it. I thought it convenient and necessary to give you timely notice of it, that you may not be surprised, but may have time to consider of it. The business is this, there is a friend of ours that is a widower, that is of this faith, that is a shopkeeper and of a genteel trade, namely, a salesman and a tailor both, that selleth all new apparel, and he hearing that you are a shopkeeper though of another trade and of this faith, and of a good natural temper, doth conceive you would make a good wife to live here at London, if you shall think good;— the man's name is John Croxen, he liveth at the corner house at Houndsditch, it is the best house for trade in all the street, being a corner house; his trade doth bring in at least two or three hundred pounds a year; and as for his person I suppose you will not dislike— and for his age it is very suitable unto yours, he is about four or five and forty years old is the most, and I suppose you are seven or eight and thirty years old, which is very suitable, and this was one of this faith we own, and we know him to be of as good a natured man to a wife as any I know in the world; I know you may live in as much splendour and credit as any merchant's wife in London doth, if you have him to your husband you shall have a maid servant, and men servants to be at your command; for my wife's brother's son is appren-

tice with him, and hath served now at Midsummer, five years of his time, which if I had not known him to be a good natured man, and a good trade, he should never have him put apprentice to him. All the rich believers here in London doth very well approve of his having of you to wife, and of your having of him to your husband, and would be glad to have you live at London, that you may be numbered among the rich in this world, as well as being numbered with the rich in faith, rich in the world to come, as I know you will ; besides I cannot conceive how you can raise yourself, or prefer yourself or your two children, if you should match with any man there in the country, though it were with a man of a hundred a year, yet your person will be made a mere drudge, and your children mere slaves, neither is there any of this faith there in that country as I know of, that is worth any thing considerable ; and for you to match with one that is contrary, it will cause shipwreck to be made of the peace of your mind, which is of more value than the whole world.

Now I shall tell you how the state of this man's condition is, that if you cannot bear with it you shall have your liberty to chose or refuse, and save him a journey ; this John Croxen hath had two wives, and hath at this time five children all alive, two by the first wife before I knew him, and those two are both out of the way ; the daughter geteth her living, being a good needle-woman, or at service, or might be married, but her father doth not like the man that she would have, because he hath no trade, for a trade is the surest thing to get bread in this England, if a man be a good husband ; the other is a boy that is apprentice to a silk weaver, which hath served great part of his time, so that he will be no trouble nor charge to his father nor his wife ; and by this last wife he hath three daughters, the eldest is I think a matter of twelve or thirteen years old, and she is put apprentice to a friend of ours for five years, to be a shop-keeper ; so that there is but two young

daughters that is at home with him, the one of them is about eight years old, and the other I think about four years old, these two must be at home, yet no great trouble to his wife, because the maid can make them ready and send them to school; for if you should be his wife you would do more good ten times, in looking to the shop and selling of garments, and to know the prices, and learn the trade, that in case he should die before you, you may drive the trade yourself; thus I have given you an account of the whole matter. Now he and William Chaire a batchelor, doth intend after Whitsintide to make a journey into those parts to see you and other friends in Staffordshire; Mr. Croxen cometh only to you, upon that account as to make you his wife, if you like the man when you see him; and William Chaire he cometh on purpose to Elizabeth Burton, to make her his wife if she will accept of him, he had a great love for her when she was here in London.

But now, dear friend, the case is thus, that you must send me word whether you are resolved to keep yourself a widow always, or whether you are minded to keep yourself a widow always, or whether you are resolved to live there where you are always, or whether you are minded to change your condition you are now in, or whether you will suffer him to come to see you; and if you do not like him when you have seen him, you shall have liberty in your mind to refuse him; for I would not persuade you to any thing against your own mind, nor advise you to any thing that were not for your good; therefore I would desire you to send your answer unto me as soon as you can conveniently, and as short as you can to those particulars, in the latter part of this letter; likewise, I desire you not to let any of our friends in those parts to see this letter, neither would I have you to mention it to any one, till after you have given me your answer; and if you do incline in your mind to hearken to the conditions contained in this letter, then keep it to yourself, and let

none know of it, until Mr. Croxen and William Chaire doth come to see you and the rest of our friends, which will be after Whitsintide So with my love and my wife's love remembered unto yourself, I take leave and remain,

Your friend in the true faith,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, the 18th day  
of April, 1685.*

Direct your letter unto me, thus, for Mr. Delamain, upon Bread Street Hill, at the sign of the "Three Tobacco Pipes," in London.

---

*A Copy of a Letter, written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Elizabeth Phaire, bearing date the 29th of June, 1686.*

*Dear friend in the true faith, Elizabeth Phaire, the Wife of Robert Phaire, who hath been dead some time since.*

THIS is to certify you that I received your letter, dated May 25th, 1686, by the hand of our friend Mrs. Stratton; and I am glad to hear of your good health, but more especially of your strong faith in the true God and in me his messenger, and in that the God of heaven hath preserved my life here upon this earth these many years, and hath delivered my soul out of many prisons and persecutions, and hath restored me to my own habitation again, without any limbs broken, or bruises, or maimed, and am as perfect in nature from all diseases and distempers as ever, only I am grown old and cannot live many years longer, by the course of nature. I have looked upon you as one of God's elect in the day when I first saw you, when your husband first brought me to your father's house, when you were, as it were,

creeping out of your ignorance and blindness of nature, which is near twenty-four years since, so that, I doubt not, but that you shall hold out in your faith to the end of your life, here in this world, because your faith is built upon a strong rock, even upon the true God the man Christ Jesus in glory, as we the commissioners of the Spirit have declared, so that you shall with us in the resurrection arise first, and shall ascend in the clouds of heaven into that glory, where we shall see our God in whom we have believed, when in this life, face to face, and receive that mansion of glory according to the measure of faith we had in this life. This is all at present, only my love, with my wife's love presented unto you. I take leave, and remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

London, June 29th, 1686.

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mary Gamble, dated June 29th, 1686.*

*Dear and loving friend in the true faith, Mary Gamble,*

**THIS** is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated the 27th of May, 1686, by the hand of Mrs. Stratton, wherein you make a good excuse why you did not return me an answer to my letter which you so joyfully received, and will as carefully keep for those that are growing up after you. I am very well satisfied in the causes you make mention of, and as for your inclination still to see me here at London, I should be glad it might be so, if it might not be too much to your prejudice, you being so far remote, and at such a distance from me, it would be no trouble to me, but joyous to me

to see you before I go hence and be seen no more ; but if it should be so, that you could not see me here in this life in the state of mortality, you shall be sure to see me in the state of immortality, when this vile body shall be made like unto our God's glorious body, then shall I be worth the seeing, and thrice happy will you and all those be that hath truly believed our report, in this life, in that you shall be made capable to see me and our God face to face, in that kingdom of eternal glory; these things will come to pass in their time, which will be finished in the resurrection; which will not seem a quarter of an hour's time between the death of your soul and the resurrection of it to eternal life and glory; for there is no time to the dead, all time is to this mortal life; and in this regard our state doth far differ from the state of the whole world, because it lieth in ignorance and darkness of their minds, of the knowledge of the true God and the right devil, which is the cause of all men and women's fear of death, they having no faith in the true God, nor knowledge what the right devil is; this is that, that causeth the fear of death and hell; for death and hell join hand in hand together against the soul of man, which hath not the shield of faith in him of the true God, and in this Commission of the Spirit, to keep off the fiery darts of the devil, off his heart in his life and at his death. And as for your desire of my advice, whether it would be more peaceable for you to live in England than there; as to that, I do know that it would be more safe and peaceable living in England than where you are; could you leave your concerns there where you now are without any extraordinary great loss and ruin of your estate, it would be far more safe and security of your lives here in England, than there will be where you are; now for this I am well persuaded, that England is the safest place for peaceable and quiet people to live in, that is in the whole world; besides, notwithstanding, it is bad enough in conscience, and wicked enough, yet the most righteous

place in the world at this day; neither will there, nor can be such a thing acted here in England, as you fear will be acted there where you be now; therefore, as I said before, if you can without too much undoing yourself in your estates, it will be safer for your lives to live in England—you must venture something—your lives are better than lands, and your bodies are better than raiment.

This is all the advice I can give you in this matter; so I shall take leave, only present my love and respects with my wife's love unto yourself and to your husband. I rest and remain,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, June 29th, 1686.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Elizabeth Farmer, bearing date from London, June 29th, 1686.*

*Loving and kind friend, Elizabeth Farmer, tho' to me unknown*

**THIS** is to certify you, that I received your kind token by the hands of Mrs. Stratton. I perceive by her, that you are one of this faith, and that you are Mary Gamble's sister, and daughter to Colonel Robert Phaire. I knew your father very well, and your mother-in-law, and your sister Gamble by letter, but I never saw her person in my life: but I perceive you are one that doth own and believe the same doctrine and commission of the Spirit as your father and mother-in-law, and your sister doth, else why should you send a token of your love to me, which is evident you have a love to the same truth as those aforesaid named; yet because I received

no line from you concerning your faith. I shall take leave at present, only my love, and my wife's love and respects remembered unto you, shall take leave, rest and remain your friend in the true faith of a personal God, the man Christ in glory.

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*London, June 29th, 1686.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mary Wakeham, dated June 29th, 1686.*

*Dear friend, though unknown, Mary Wakeham,*

THIS is to certify you that I received your letter with your kind token of your love, by the hand of our friend Mrs. Stratton; and as you say, I never did hear of your name before, but I perceive you have heard of my name to your unspeakable joy and comfort. I perceive, by your few lines, that your understanding is greatly enlightened, in that you have faith in the true God, our blessed Redeemer, and Lord Jesus Christ, and that you have received us his messengers in the love of our doctrine, which we received commission from God to declare also you have received me in your heart as a messenger sent of God, though you never saw me nor I you, but the sound of this doctrine and Commission of the Spirit hath gone through many parts of the world, and here and there one hath ears to hear the sound, and eyes to see the truth of it; so that in your receiving of me as a messenger sent of God, you shall and do receive him that sent me, and it will be your eternal happiness and your good lot that you did receive me as a messenger of God to direct you in the way of truth; indeed the number is but few, even like the gleaning of the field of this world; the world carryeth



cart loads of sheaves into their barn, that is into their heaven, because they have a multitude of messengers and teachers to drive people to heaven whether they will or no; but God's Messengers are sent but one at a time; if he should send two at a time the world cannot bear one, much less two; so that God's messengers are glad to gather a sheaf or two in one land, and three or four in another land in comparison, so that God's barn or heaven is very empty; there is room enough for you and such as you are being one of that scattered flock, you being numbered amongst God's elect in that you have believed his prophet's report.

So resteth your friend in the true faith,

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

My love and my wife's love remembered unto you though unknown.

*London, June 29th, 1686.*

---

*A Copy of a Letter, written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton to Mrs. Ann Delamain, the widow of Mr. Alexander Delamain, senior; bearing date from London, December 26th, 1687. Beginning as followeth.*

*Dear friend in the truth, Ann Delamain,*

**THIS** is to give you an account of our proceedings, and what we have done this last long term, in my wife's kinsman, Thomas Martin, concerning his being heir at law to that house and lands which his mother bought for her and her heirs for ever, in the days of her widowhood; I knowing that nothing would be done with his father-in-law by fair means, but by law, therefore I sent him first to see if he could get the deeds how his

mother bought this house and lands ; so his father-in-law let Thomas Martin, his son-in-law have the key of the chest, where was nine pair of sheets and other linen, and all the writings with it ; so Thomas Martin, being a good scholar both in writing and reading English, he took out of the chest those writings which concerned his house and lands, and locked the chest again, and gave his father-in-law the key again ; for no man could give the young man any advice until we had seen the deeds ; and after we had the writings he advised with an attorney at law, and his advice was at first, to have a writ of ejectment upon the tenant out of possession, except the tenant would own him to be his landlord, and he would give the tenant a bond under his hand to bear him harmless ; which thing was done by this means, his father-in-law was turned out of possession of the house and lands ; the next advice was given, to get a letter of administration upon the chest of linen and other things, and upon fourteen pounds rent, and upon two bonds of eight pounds which was unpaid to his father-in-law, which is twenty and two pounds ; the third advice was, for him to have a writ to arest his father-in-law for all the rent which he hath received for this house and land this eight years, which is now in suit of law, and the next term they do proceed. I shall say no more at present, but do hope I shall see you ere long at your own house, where I shall give you a full account of this matter ; therefore I shall only remember my dear love with my wife's love to yourself in particular, and to Mr. Whitehead and his wife, and Priscilla and Mary his two daughters, and all the rest of our friends in the faith with you. I take leave and rest,

Your friend in the eternal truth,

LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.

*Dec. 26th, 1687.*

*A Copy of a Letter written by the Prophet Lodowicke Muggleton, to his loving friend Mary Wakeham, dated from London, August 15th, 1688.*

*Loving and kind Friend in the true faith, Mary Wakeham,*

THIS is to certify you, that I received your letter, dated the 29th of May, in the year 1688, by the hand of our friend, Mrs. Stratton; wherein I perceive you have a desire to come to London to see me. I should be very glad to see you, if it were possible; but I may say unto you in the temporal, as Abraham said unto Dives in the spiritual, he being in hell, and Abraham in heaven, that there was such a great gulph between them, that Abraham could not come to him in hell; neither could Dives come out of hell and ascend up to heaven to come to Abraham; so likewise there is a great temporal gulph between you and I, as to the hundred miles by land, that might easily be done, but that gulph by sea will be very hard for you to come and see me; and I have such an antipathy in my nature, that if I might have ten thousand pounds, I would not come through that sea gulph to see you, though I have travelled several thousands of miles in England in my time by land, so that if you can come through this sea gulph to see me, I shall be very glad to see you, but as you say if you cannot see me in this state of mortality, you will be sure to see me in the state of immortality, in a better condition than now, when you and all others, that are true believers shall see me and John Reeve set upon thrones of glory, and there you shall see the twelve apostles and all the prophets, with Moses and Elias that represented the person of God the Father, while Christ the only true God went that journey in the flesh; all these and many more shall you see to sit upon thrones of glory, distinct one from another; nay, further I say, that we the two Witnesses of the Spirit being upon thrones of glory,

shall say to those the believers of this Commission of the Spirit, Come, we will lead you up into the kingdom where our God sits in his glorious throne, with all his holy angels round about him; there you shall see him face to face, because you did believe in him when he was in shame, when he was upon earth; this is that unspeakable glory and pleasures which my faith tells me, which we and all true believers shall see and enjoy those pleasures at his right hand for evermore. This is all at present, only my love, and my wife's love remembered unto yourself I take leave, rest and remain your friend in the eternal truth.

**LODOWICKE MUGGLETON.**

*London, August 15th, 1688.*

**FINIS.**

1

T H E  
Acts of the Witneſſes  
O F T H E  
S P I R I T,  
In F I V E P A R T S ;

---

By Lodowick Muggleton,

---

One of the two Witneſſes, and true Prophets of  
the only High, Immortal, Glorious G O D,  
C H R I S T J E S U S.

---

Left by him, to be publiſh'd after his D E A T H.

---

In the latter Days two Bright Stars ſhall ariſe, raiſing up Men  
being dead in their Sins, which ſhall reſiſt the Beaſt, and the  
Waters of the Dragon, teſtifying and preaching the Law of  
the Lamb, and the Deſtruction of Antichriſt, and ſhall  
diminiſh his Waters; but they ſhall be weakened in the Bread  
of Affliction, and they ſhall riſe again in ſtronger Force;  
and after Truth ſhall be revealed, and the Lamb ſhall be  
known: After this ſhall be but a ſmall Space.

Fox in his Book of Martyrs.

---

LONDON: Printed in the Year of our Lord God 1699: and  
Re-printed in the Year 1764.



---

---

T H E  
E P I S T L E  
D E D I C A T O R Y.

✱✱✱✱ O all true Christian People, that do or shall hereafter  
✱ T ✱ come to believe in this third and last spiritual Com-  
✱ ✱ ✱ mission, is the ensuing Treatise directed, with Love  
and Peace to you be multiplied: It being a Legacy left  
you by the Lords last true Prophet, for your further establish-  
ment in Truth: As also it is left for a convincement of the  
Seed of Reason, when he is in the Dust; that by these Acts  
they may see how he hath been slandered, reproached, and be-  
lied, persecuted and imprisoned without a Cause.

For how many lying Reports hath been not only flung upon  
them, but also upon the true Believers of them; saying, That  
we own neither God nor Devil, Heaven or Hell; and all be-  
cause they see us use no outward glittering shew in fruitless  
Forms of Worship; whilst we worship an invisible Spiritual,  
yet personal God, in Spirit and Truth, which the World knows  
nothing of.

For this we know and affirm, that the Doctrine of this Com-  
mission of the Spirit is of as great purity and power as to God-  
liness, as ever any was, and as they were themselves, ever  
kept innocent from the breach of the moral Law, as to Act:  
Even so the Fruits of their Doctrine is of the like Efficacy in  
the knowing seed of Faith, by which they have dominion over  
Sin, as in respect of Act.

And altho' this last Prophet in his Answer to the nine Affir-  
tions, hath shewed his great Mercy and Clemency to some cor-  
rupt Natures, yet it is but to such who act not so far, as the breach  
of the moral Law; as to borrow Money, and not to pay it



again; or to be passionate and hasty natur'd, overcome with strong Drink, or the like, and tho' these are evil, yet reach but to the Borders of the Law, being frailties in Nature, which disturb the Peace of the Mind, for in such things, as the Apostle *James* saith, We offend all: But where there is true Faith, it prevents the Act; as this Prophet saith in one Place, among many his Words are these, Faith, saith he, overcomes all Sin, Death, and Hell, within a Man's self, and that none but such shall be admitted into the Kingdom of Heaven. And the Prophet *Reeve's* Doctrine is thus, saying, All those that are led by the Voice of the holy Spirit of *Jesus*, do work Righteousness in their Bodies whereby they die unto Sin. Again, saith he, in another Place, The light of Christ in Man doth convert from the ruling Power of Sin. And in a third Place, which is not yet printed saith, That they that are led by the Spirit of Faith, are kept from the committing of Sin; I do not say, saith he, that they have no motion to Sin, but the Spirit of Faith purifies their Hearts, giving them power against those Motions, that they commit not the Act; and from hence it is, that all that are born of God, know the Voice of God, and hath this Power over Sin, as I have declar'd said he.

These Doctrines of the Prophets are absolute and positive, and do give great light into several Scriptures, as *Matt.* chap. v. ver. 28. 1 *John* chap. 3. ver. 9. and ver. 15. in these places we are to distinguish between the Motion and the Action of Sin: This may also give light into *Rom.* chap. vii. how that *Paul* spake there as to the state by Nature, as also of the strife and struggle between the two seeds of Faith and Reason, untill the Law of Faith was quickened, and power by it attain'd, and then had he dominion over Sin, as Chap. viii. and so came to have peace with God, and with his own Conscience, and assurance of eternal Life.

And from hence comes the grounds of true Worship, and flows forth all spiritual Praise, as *David* said, O how sweet is thy Law: This sweet Law is the Law of Faith; and he or she that is truly possessed hereof, can seal to those Words of the Prophet  
*Reeve,*

## DEDICATORY.

v

*Reeve*, which faith, That he that is born of God, his Language and Practice is such as speaks forth the power of Godliness, to the confounding of all glittering tongue Hipocrites, and faithless Formalists,

Now let all true Believers know, that under every Commission this is made the ordinary way of Life and Salvation; yet to prevent an Objection, this is confessed by us: That tho' there is this power in Faith as aforesaid, yet the Lord for the Trial of his Creature, may suffer some of his chosen Ones to fall in the Time of a Commission; and for the Praise of his free Grace, may grant them one Repentance, or second free Pardon; for thus writes the Prophet *Reeve* in a writing not yet printed.

The Lord, faith he, leaves some to their own Strength, through which he rebels against the Light that is in him, to the wounding of his own Soul; to the end that he may learn, that the power by which he is preserved from the Act of Sin, and so from eternal Ruin, is not in himself, but in the living God that made him. Therefore the Scripture here and there pointeth forth one that the Lord hath left for a Season, to manifest his prerogative Power over his Creatures, and afterwards doth his Godhead Spirit move him to a second free Pardon, wherein he raiseth that Soul to a higher and greater measure of Grace, Wisdom and Humility, than it had before; which fulfils that saying of *Paul*, Where Sin abounded, there Grace did superabound. And this was fulfilled both by *David* and *Paul*.

Here we see that if an elect Vessel should once fall after his Knowledge and Belief in Truth, that his second Pardon doth raise him to a higher degree of Grace, Wisdom and Humility than he had before: This by the Prophet is made a true Trial to know whether a Repentance or Conversion from the Act of Sin committed, be real or fained; as also that a second fall or relapse will prove dangerous, because it is rare to find a third Pardon, and a third increase of Grace to that Pardon.

Thus it is made clear that the Doctrine of this Commission of the Spirit it hath power of Purity in it, and none that is truly born

born of God can dispute against it, but rather fear to offend, as the Prophet *Reeve* saith, That a true born Saint is afraid of his own evil Thoughts, much more of evil Words or Deeds against God or Man.

Again we see by this Book of the Acts, that these two Prophets were jointly chosen of God, and made equal in Power and Authority; for the Prophet *Reeve* saith, That his fellow Witnesses had as great Power as he had himself: And further said, That he was the Lord's last High Priest; if this be granted, then it must follow, that there can be no Salvation to such as shall reject him, or his Writings, altho' they pretend to own *John Reeve*.

Moreover, the mighty sufferings that these Prophets have undergone for their Testimony sake, are admirable; yet notwithstanding all Opposition, Providence preserv'd them so, as that they both Died in their Beds in Peace; and not only so, but this last Prophet liv'd to see the downfall of many of his great Enemies, and of his Persecutors and Judges.

Now to come to a conclusion of this Epistle: When the Prophet had wrote this Book of the Acts, he kept it by him, not letting any to see it; but about two Weeks before he Died, it was put into the Hands of one of us, that was his true Friend, and ancient Acquaintance, in order to be printed after his Death, which now with the assistance of some Friends, through Providence, it is perfected, and is recommended to the whole household of Faith, which I doubt not, but it will be accepted of, being a true Copy from the Original, there being nothing here printed but what is really his own; only you are to know that there are some things omitted that are of a temporal Account, as a dispute with *Mr. Leader*, concerning Eclipses, and the height of the visible Heavens, with some other particulars, which things are left out, because of the greatness of the Charge, for all cannot be printed that is written, for it is evident, that altho' there is above a Hundred Sheets of theirs in print, yet is it not past a third part of what is written by them two Witnesses, for in the Year 1682, *Mr. Delamaine* did transcribe so many of their

their Works, and bound up in a Book, as contained 1052 pages in Folio; in which Book, and in what is printed, almost all the Scripture hath been Interpreted, that are of concernment to Salvation. But whether it may enter into the Heart of any that are Rich, to be stirred up to print the same; or whether the Powers of the Nation may permit it, we leave to Providence.

But before I conclude, it is requisite to give you an account of the Prophet's Death and Burial, which was thus, upon the first Day of *March*, 1697, the Prophet was taken with an Illness and Weakness, upon which he said these Words, Now hath God sent Death unto me; and presently after was helped to Bed, and tho' he kept his Bed, yet we could not perceive that he was sick, only weak, and he lay as if he slept, but in such quietness, as if he was nothing concerned with either Pain or Sickness.

So that it was meer Age that took him away, which was the 14th Day of *March*, he then departed this Life with as much peace and quietness, as ever any Man did, being about 88 Years of Age, so that he had that Blessing, to come to the Grave in a full Age, like as a shock of Corn cometh in at his Season. Upon the 16th Day his Corps was remov'd to *Larsons-Hall*, and on the 17th Day, was from thence attended on, with two hundred forty eight Friends, accompanying him to *Bethlehem Church-Yard* where he was Buried by his Fellow Witnesses, which was according to his own Appointment.

And thus was the Lord's last Prophet brought to his Grave in Peace, without noise, or without tumult, though thousands of Spectators beheld it; and there they are both to remain untill the coming of their Lord, their King, and their Redeemer the Lord Jesus Christ, the High and Mighty God, and our God; and blessed are they that know their Voice, and wait for that Day, and are not offended with these Things. Farewell.

T. T.

The

---

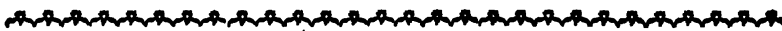
## ERRATA.

**P**AGE 12. verse 15. for *Bodily* read *Bodiless*. p. 18. v. 3. leave out the last single l. p. 23. v. 4, for *amongst* read *amongst*. p. 37. v. 21. for *out of Body* read *out of the Body*. p. 84. v. 12. for *will* read *shall*. p. 98. v. 17. for *Esleb* read *Fleeb*. p. 145. v. 9. for *and whom* read *and on whom*. p. 175. v. 22. for *plaspbeming* read *blaspheming*. p. 178. v. 11. for *incocent* read *innocent*.

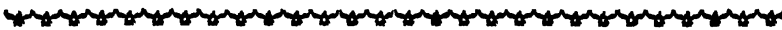
---



## The Acts of the Witnesses, &c.




### The First PART.



#### C H A P. I.

*The Prophet sheweth first, That Moses and the Prophets did record strange and wonderful Things; As also their Revelations, which we are bound to believe.*

1.  H E R E is, and hath been Recorded many and several wonderful strange Things and Deeds of the righteous Fathers, as, *Noah, Lott, Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob*, and of their Faith in God.

2. And also, how wonderfully God did appear unto them, and strengthen them in their Time, when they were upon the Earth. These things are Recorded by the *Revelation of Moses*, as God revealed it to him.

3. Also *Moses* declared his own Birth, and how he was preserv'd from being drown'd: These things did he declare, and how God appeared unto him, and chose him and *Aaron* for that great Work, to lead that great People through the *Wilderness*, and to be a Law-giver.

B

4. Which

4. Which was the first visible appearance of God upon Earth, that is Recorded, for all Generations to come. For tho' God did appear in a wonderful Manner unto *Enoch*, *Noah*, *Abraham*, *Ishaac*, and *Jacob*, and several other righteous Men, yet we could never have known it, had not *Moses*, by his *Revelation*, left it upon Record.

5. How could the Generations to come have known any thing of the Creation of the World; and how God made Man in his own Image and Likeness.

6. Or that there ever was the Man *Adam*, or *Cain*, that flew his Brother *Abel*; or that the World was ever drowned, except eight Persons, if it had not been revealed by *Moses*.

7. So that we have nothing but *Moses's* bare Word for it; for we did not live in his Time, to see the Wonders he wrought, nor hear him speak.

8. Yet we are bound to believe his Record, and *Revelation*, and Acts he did: And blessed and happy were all those that did believe him when he was upon Earth, when they saw his Acts, and heard him speak.

9. And more blessed are these now, that understand and believe, which have not seen his Wonders he wrought in his time, nor heard him speak forth those *Revelations* God revealed unto him concerning the Creation of the World as aforesaid.

10. Also we read in Scripture of many wonderful Acts that was wrought and done by the Prophets, in the time of the Law, after *Moses*.

11. As *Samuel*, *Ishaiab*, *Jeremiab*, *Elijab*, *Elisha*, and several other Prophets, in the time of the Law; their wonderful Acts are recorded in Scripture.

12. Besides the *Revelation* they declared as from God, which the Ages following did not see nor hear, yet many did truly believe, and doth truly believe, and are by Faith satisfied, as those that did both hear and see.

13. So that the Scriptures Record, is a Record of spiritual and heavenly Things, and of some of those wonderful and powerful Acts of *Moses*, and the Prophets, and the righteous Fathers, manifesting their great Faith in God, and being in Favour with God.

14. Which I, by Faith, have found their Record true, and so have many more of the seed of Faith, found their Record and *Revelations* to be true.



## C H A P. II.

*The Prophet makes a Rehearsal of the Acts of the Apostles in the New Testament, and of the Lord Christ; and how that they were written for the Comfort of the Seed of Faith: After which he enters upon the third Record, and shews the cause of his writing some of the most principal Acts of the Witness of the Spirit, under this third Record.*

1. **A**L S O we find written in the New Testament, many wonderful Acts and Miracles, acted by the Lord Christ, and his Apostles; as *Matthew*, *Mark*, *Luke*, and *John* doth declare concerning Christ; that if all the Things Christ spake, and Acts he did, were written, the World would not contain the Volume.

2. That is, the verge of a Man's Understanding could not retain the particulars, so as to tell it to his Friend, the particulars would be so many.

3. So likewise, *the Acts of the Apostles*; that Book hath little else in it, but wonderful Acts wrought by the power of Faith in the Apostles.

4. And these things were written for the seed of Faith, that they might have Comfort in believing the Record that is given of the Apostles, how God strengthened them in Faith and Power, as by the power of Faith to work Miracles.



5. Because they were chosen of God to bear Record on Earth, to the Blood of the New Testament, or, New Covenant.

6. Thus did the Apostles bear Record on Earth to the Blood, as the Prophets did bear Record on Earth to the Water, which signifies the Law of *Moses*, and the Blood signifies the Gospel of Jesus Christ.

7. The Scriptures are a Record, that sheweth many wonderful Acts, that Christ and his Apostles did when on Earth, besides the heavenly Revelation.

8. And it is very comfortable to the Seed of Faith, true Believers, to read of the Acts of the Prophets, and of the Apostles, as it is of their Doctrine, Revelation, Prophecies, Interpretations; or, Epistles.

9. These Things, I having experience of, and seeing it hath been the Practice of some of the Prophets and Apostles to leave a Record behind them, for after Ages to peruse, of some of the most remarkable Acts done by them, when they were upon Earth; as a remarkable Remembrance to their Prophecies and Epistles.

10. So likewise, I being one of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, being the Third and last Record from God on Earth.

11. I thought it convenient and expedient to leave some Record on Earth, behind me, of some of the most remarkable Acts and Passages that hath been done and acted by us, and to us, the Witnesses of the Spirit, since we were chosen of God, in the Year 1651.

12. That I may leave it as a Legacy to the Seed of Faith after me, who shall happen to Read and Believe those Writings of Ours after I am gone.

13. They may know by the Doctrine therein declared, who, and what we were, and what God we believed in.

14. Also I thought it necessary to write of those Acts myself,

self, rather than any other, being acted in my fight and perfect knowledge, as other Prophets have done before me, as *Moses* and Others.



### C H A P. III.

*Of the Birth, Parentage, and Trade, of the two Witnesses, and how the Prophets Nature led them forth to all Sobriety, bating Drunkenness, and of their inclining to the Principles of those Call'd Puritans, and of their being perswaded from judging Cases of Conscience before they knew the Truth.*

1. **B**UT before I write of the Acts, I shall give the Reader a little to understand what we were before God did chuse us two, to be his two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit.

2. And of some Experience I had, and Working within me, before I was Chosen of God, little expecting God would have Chosen me for such a great Work.

3. As for *John Reeve*, he was Born in *Wiltshire*, his Father was Clerk to a *Deputy of Ireland*, a Gentleman as we call them by his Place, but fell to Decay.

4. So he put *John Reeve* Apprentice here at *London*, to a *Taylor* by Trade. He was out of his Apprenticeship before I came acquainted with him; he was of an Honest, Just Nature, and Harmless.

5. But a Man of no great Natural Wit, or Wisdom; no Subtilty, or Policy was in him; nor no great store of Religion he had, but what was Traditional, only of an Innocent Life.

6. I knew him many Years before God spake to him by Voice of Words, to the hearing of the Ear, three Mornings together, as is declared in the Commission Book, call'd a *Transcendant Spiritual Treatise*, the first Book he writ.

7. And

7. And I *Lodwick Muggleton*, was Born in *Bishopsgate-Street*, near the *Earl of Devonshire's* House, at the corner House call'd *Walnut-tree-Yard*.

8. My Father's Name was *John Muggleton*, he was a *Smith* by Trade, that is a *Farrier*, or *Horse-Doctor*, he was in great Respect with the *Post-Master*, in King *James's* Time; he had three Children by my Mother, two Sons and one Daughter, I was the youngest, and my Mother lov'd me.

9. But after my Mother Died, I being but young, my Father took another Wife; so I being young, was expos'd to live with Strangers in the Country, at a distance from all my Kindred: I was a Stranger to my Father's House after my Mother was Dead.

10. But it came to pass when I was grown to 15 or 16 Years of Age, I was put Apprentice to one *John Quick*, a Taylor; he Made Livery Gowns, and all sorts of Gowns for Men; he Made Gowns for several Aldermen, and Livery Men of their Company in *London*.

11. And he lived in this *Walnuttree Yard*. and knew my Father and Mother very well; he was a quiet, peaceable Man, not cruel to Servants, which liked me very well.

12. For my Nature was always against Cruelty, I could never endure it, neither in myself, nor in Others, living peaceably in my Apprenticeship.

13. I took my Trade well, and pleas'd my Master better than any of his other Servants, for they were bad Husbands, and given to Drunkenness, but my Nature was inclin'd to be sober, hating Drunkenness and Lust in the time of my Youth.

14. But when my time of Service was pretty far expired, I grew to more Understanding, and hearing in those Days, a great talk amongst the vulgar People, and especially, amongst Youth, Boys, and young Maids, of a People call'd *Puritans*; some of these *Puritans* came to talk and discourse with my Master, though he was no Religious Man.

15. But

15. But I being Ignorant, did perceive they pleaded more for Righteousness, and were better versed in the Scriptures than he was, so that I liked in myself their Discourse upon the Scriptures, and pleaded for a Holy-keeping of the Sabbath-day, which my Master did not do, nor I his Servant.

16. But I not knowing my Right Hand from my Left in Religion at that time; yet, methoughts I had a Love for those People call'd *Puritans*, and could not endure my Companions should speak Evil of them.

17. And when young Boys as I was, and young Maids would speak Evil, and lay many Slanders upon those People call'd *Puritans*, as if they had been the wickedest People in the World, with many Scoffs and Jears.

18. Yet all this while my Heart did not close with their Reproaches, but rather was inclin'd to love those People, and to think the better of them; thinking in myself, Oh! that I might be so happy as them, yet I knew not what Happiness was, nor what Condemnation was, for I knew nothing by myself, why I should be Condemned.

19. But the Seed of God lay hidden in my Heart, which kept me from speaking Evil of things I knew not, even from my Childhood, which many others of my Age did.

20. Like unto those Children that mocked the Prophet *Elisba*, which two she Bears did tare in Pieces; so many of these mockers of Religion, in that my time, did come to great Poverty and Destruction in this World, but the God of Truth preserved me, though I knew him not.

21. Also I was smitten with the Plague in that great sickness, after King *James* Died; it was not extream tedious to me, for the sore broke, and I recovered quickly, and hath not had half a Days sickness since, not this Forty Years and more.

22. I never bestowed Six-pence in Physick in my Life for myself, but what the Kitchen would afford; as Water-Gruel,

Gruel, Broth, or such like; and I have had my Health, and hath been as perfect in Nature from all Distempers and Diseases, as any Man in the World ever since.



## C H A P. IV.

*How the secret Providence of God prevented the Expellation of the Prophet, in his Choice of a Wife, and in his desire of Riches, of the Prophet's Zeal for the Law, and a Righteous Life.*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass, my time of Service grew near out, and my Nature had a great desire to be rich in this World, that I might no more be Servant to any Man, and I thought the Trade of a Taylor would not gain much Riches, I having little to begin with; and withal, I thought I should be too much subject to the Humours of People to please them, which I had Experience of in my Apprenticeship.

2. So I went to work in a Broker's Shop, in *Houndsditch*, who made Cloaths to sell, and did lend Money upon Pawns, called a Pawn-broker, and the Broker's Wife had one Daughter alive; and after I had been there a-while, the Mother saw that I was a good Husband, and knew how to manage that way, being a Workman better than they, and that I was a civil and sober young Man, not given to Drunkenness, nor no Debauchery.

3. She was willing to give her Daughter unto me to Wife, and I lov'd the Maid well, and thought myself too inferior for her, because she had something to take too, and the only Child, and I having nothing; yet the Mother being well perswaded of my good natural Temper, and of my good Husbandry, and that I had no poor Kindred came after me, to be any Charge or Burthen to her Daughter.

4. Those

4. Those things consider'd, she thought I might be a convenient Match for her Daughter; so she seeing there was some kind of Affection between her Daughter and me, she propos'd unto me, that she would give me a Hundred Pound with her to set up, which thing I accepted on in my Mind, but told I was not yet a Freeman of *London*.

5. So she urg'd me to be made Free as soon as I could; also she urg'd me to be made sure to her Daughter before the Father-in-law, and herself.

6. So the Maid and I were made sure by Promise, before her Mother and Father-in-law, and before I was made Free; and I was resolv'd to have the Maid to Wife, and to keep a Broker's Shop, and lend Money upon Pawns, and grow Rich as others did.

7. And the Maid's Mother had Five Hundred Pounds more than what she promis'd me, which her Husband knew not of, for he was a kind of a Distracted Hare-brain'd Man; his Name was *Richardson*, there is many alive at this Day that knew them; but for the Daughter I should have had to Wife, she is alive at this Day, and is worth Seven Hundred Pounds a Year.

8. But the secret Providence of God prevented my expectation and desire of being Rich in this World, in an unlawful Way against the Checks of my own Conscience.

9. But it came to pass in the 22d. Year of my Life, not being quite out of my Apprenticeship, yet sure to the Maid, I went to Work as a Journey-man, and happened to Work with a *Puritan*, in *Thomas Apostles, London*. His Name was *William Reeve, John Reeves's Brother*.

10. He was a very zealous *Puritan* at that time, and many others of that Religion came to him, and disputed with me about the unlawfulness of lending Money upon Pawns, because they pleaded it was Usury and Extortion, and did alledge many places of Scripture against it.

11. And I used all the Arguments of Reason I could for it, because I had a great desire to be Rich, and considering I was engaged to this Maid, and that her Mother would not let me have her to Wife, except I would keep a Broker's-Shop and lend Money, so that I was in great strait, and much perplexed in Mind.

12. For I lov'd the Maid, and desired to be Rich, but these *Puritan* People being well versed in the Scripture Words, and zealous for Righteousness, threatened great Judgments, and danger of Damnation hereafter.

13. They overpowered my natural Knowledge, and civil Practices in me, and made me afraid of eternal Damnation; and they pressed the Scriptures so hard upon me, which exceedingly perplexed my Mind, reasoning in myself, that if I did lend Money upon Usury and Extortion, I should be Damned; and if I would not, then I should not have the Maid to Wife.

14. So that the love of the Maid, and the fear of the loss of my Soul did struggle within me, and dispute within me like two distinct Spirits, even as a Woman in Travail with two natural Sons in the Womb, so that I was in a great strait which I should cleave unto.

15. So after much dispute and reasoning in myself, it came to this result, I considered the Riches of this World, and the Love I had to the Maid, and I weighed it in my Mind, and was loath to forsake it.

16. Then I consider'd my Soul was of more Value, and what would it avail me to be Rich in this World for a Moment, and to loose my Soul, for I was extremely fearful of eternal Damnation; thinking my Soul might go into Hell Fire without a Body, as all People did at that time.

17. And after much struggling in my Mind, I came to this resolution in myself, that rather than I would loose my Soul, or be damned to Eternity, I would loose the Maid:  
And

And that way that would have made me Rich, and that I would be zealous of the Law of God, as afterwards I was.

18. Here the two Seeds of Faith and Reason did work in me, but I knew them not by Name nor Nature at that time, nor many Years after.

19. But as I did fear, it came to pass, for the Maid's Mother seeing my Mind so changed, and so zealous of the Laws of the Scriptures, and that I would not keep that way, as I thought to do before,

20. She would not let her Daughter have me to her Husband, so the Maid was perswaded by her Mother.

21. And my Zeal to save my Soul, perswaded my Mind to let her go, so we parted.

22. Thus I forsook the World and a Wife, which I lov'd in the days of my Ignorance, for Zeal to the Law of God, which I thought to be Truth, and the true Way, and so it was.

23. But I did not know it till many Years after; but the Lord God of Truth had Respect unto my Person and Zeal at that time, and prevented me from falling into that Snare of being rich in this World.



## C H A P. V.

*The Prophet shows his Care, his Fear, and Zeal in the Law of God, and of the working of his Thoughts, and height of the Puritan Religion.*

1. **S**O after I had parted with the Maid, and that way that did offend my Conscience, I was resolved to live so upright to the Law of God, and so just between Man and Man, that I thought in time I might procure Favour with God, and to attain assurance of my Salvation.



2. For I was fully possess'd that there was really Salvation to be attained unto by my Righteousness; and that there was a real Damnation to all those that were unrighteous, or did not demean themselves so strictly as I did.

3. For I was exceedingly fearful of Hell and eternal Damnation: The very Thoughts of it made my Spirit many times fail within me.

4. But by Prayer, and my Righteous Practices, I did many times recover some Hope and Peace again.

5. All this while I did suppose my Soul might go into Hell without a Body; and that Millions of Souls were in Hell Fire without Bodies; and that the Devil being a Bodily Spirit, did torment those Souls that came there, and that the Devil had Liberty to come out of Hell to tempt People here on Earth, and go there again; but no Soul that he had gotten there could come out of Hell more.

6. These things wrought in my Mind exceeding great Fear, and stir'd me up to a more exceeding Righteousness of Life, thinking thereby that my Righteous Life would have cast out those tormenting Fears, but it did not.

7. Yet, notwithstanding, I did continue in my Zeal, and was earnest in the *Puritan* Religion and Practice; neither did I know how to find Rest any where else; neither did I hear any Preach in those Days but the *Puritan* Ministers, whose Hair was cut short.

8. For if a Man with long Hair had gone into the Pulpit to Preach, I would have gone out of the Church again, tho' he might Preach better than the other.

9. But we *Puritans* being Pharisaically minded, were zealous of outward Appearance, and of outward Behaviour, for we minded that more than their Doctrine.

10. For we took it for granted, that God was a Spirit without a Body, and that Christ Jesus his Son had a Body in Form like Man; and that he did Mediate to God his Father,  
who

who was a Spirit without a Body, and that for Christ's Sake; this Spirit without a Body, did hear us, and speak Peace unto us.

11. Also I believed that the Devil was a Spirit without a Body, and could ascend out of Hell, when God did give him Leave, and suggest evil Thoughts of Lust, Theft, Murder, and Blasphemy against God; not thinking that these Thoughts and Motions did arise out of Man's own Heart, but from a Devil, a Spirit without a Body, without Man.

12. Also I thought, those Souls which God did save, were carried up to Heaven without Bodies, and should be with God, who was a Spirit without a Body; and that we should see Christ Jesus in Heaven, with his Body, with our Spirits that were saved without Bodies, till the Resurrection, and then Body and Soul should be United together again.

13. Also we did believe, that the wicked Spirits should be cast into Hell Fire without Bodies; where the Devil and his Angels, being Spirits without Bodies, should torment the Souls of the Wicked till the Day of Resurrection; and then those wicked Souls should be United to their Bodies again, and be tormented Body and Soul together, with the Devil and his Angels, who were Spirits without Bodies in Hell Fire for ever and ever.

14. And we did believe that the Angels of God were Ministering Spirits without Bodies, as God was a Spirit without a Body, so were they, and could minister Comforts unto Men without Bodies.

15. And we did believe our own Souls to be Immortal, and could not Die, but did subsist the good Spirits with God in Heaven without Bodies; and the wicked Souls did subsist in Hell without Bodies.

16. These were some of the Fundamental Principles of Faith and Religion, we zealous *Puritans* did believe and practice; and there is no better Faith in the World, to this Day, in the generality of Professors of Religion.

17. These

17. These things was I very well versed in, and I grew in great Experience and Knowledge in the Letter of the Scriptures, and had a good Gift of Prayer, and was very strong in Disputes, because my Mind was extremely perplexed with the fear of Hell, notwithstanding my exact Life to the Letter of the Law.

18. But the fear of Hell wrought in me much Experience, so that I did exceed several other Men in that Knowledge which was in those Days; and tho' I was judged a very godly knowing Man, and a happy Man by Others, yet I could not judge so of myself, but the fear of Hell was oft rising up in me.

19. For I never conceited well of my own Knowledge, but thought the Knowledge of other Men did far exceed me, because they seemed to be better satisfied in their Minds than I was.

20. Yet I thought in myself, that in time, by my Prayers and Righteousness, and exact Walking, and hearing of Preaching, that I might heal that Wound in my Soul which was made, and I knew not for what.

21. For I never had committed any Sin that I knew of, that did trouble my Conscience.

22. Yet the fear of Hell produced many deep Sighs and Groans, even from the bottom of my Heart, for fear God had made me a Reprobate before I was Born, because he did not answer my Prayers, nor speak Peace to my Soul; notwithstanding my earnest Desires and Zeal for him, I knew not at that Time.

23. Yet many times I had great Refreshments of Soul, and as I thought, Communion with God, whereby my Hope was increased for a Season, but it was quickly lost again; so that the Troubles of my Mind did continue still many Years.

24. Yet at some times I had Elevations in my Mind, and Raptures of Joy, that I thought I should never be moved again.

25. But

25. But a-while after all was lost again, and Doubting took place in my Soul; but since, I saw the Cause of those Raptures and fears of Hell were both groundless.



## C H A P. VI.

*After the Prophet hath given a Description of his Marriage, of his Wives, and of his Children, from the Twenty-sixth Year of his Life, to the Thirty-eighth; he then shews the Alteration of the Religion in the Puritan People, and of the Confusion that was amongst them.*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass, in the Twenty-sixth Year of my Life, I took a Wife that was of my own Mind and Religion. She was a Virgin of about 19 Years of Age, and I had by her Three Daughters, in Three Years and a half's Time.

2. The first Daughter I had by her was named *Sarah*, after her Mother's Name: She is yet alive, and is become the most experimental and knowingst Woman in Spiritual Things, of that Sex in *London*; but I shall say no more of her here, because I shall have occasion to speak of her hereafter.

3. Also my youngest Daughter *Elizabeth*, which I had by my Wife *Sarah*, is now living, but the second Daughter Died, when Three Years and a half was expired. my Wife *Sarah* Died also.

4. After this, my Children being young, I put them forth to Nurse in the Country, and lived a single Life, and followed my Trade; and lived very well.

5. Only the Spirit of the fear of Hell was upon me, but not so extreme as it was the Year before.

6. After this, in the Thirty-second Year of my Life, I took another Virgin to Wife: Her Name was *Mary*, she was about

about 19 Years Old, and I had by her three Children, two Sons and one Daughter; the eldest Died at three Years Old, and the youngest was a Daughter, and she Died three Days after she was Born, and my Wife *Mary* Died five Days after.

7. I had only one Son living by her, and I had her to Wife a matter of Six Years; and that Son lived until *John Reeve* and I was chosen of God; and about a Year and a half afterwards, being about Nine Years Old, he Died; so all the Children of my second Wife Died.

8. After my Wife *Mary* Died, I was then about thirty eight Years Old; but at the time when I was Married to my Wife *Mary*, about Six Years before, there was raising of Arms by the Parliament, against the King.

9. And generally the *Puritans* were all for the Parliament, and most of my Society and Acquaintance in Religion, did fall away from that Way we did use, and declined in Love one towards another: and every one got a new Judgment, and new Acquaintance, and new Discipline.

10. Some of them turned to *Presbytery*, and would have Elders; and some turned *Independants*, and would not let none Work to them, but their own People that was in Church Fellowship; others fell to be *Ranters*, and some fell to be meer *Asbeists*.

11. So that our *Puritan* People were so divided and scattered in our Religion, that I knew not which to take too, or which to cleave unto, for I was altogether at a loss; for all the Zeal we formerly had was quite worn out.

12. And to join with any of these new Disciplines I could not, except I would play the Hypocrite for a Livelihood, which my Heart always hated, notwithstanding my Kindred by my first Wife *Sarah*, were all *Puritans*, and zealous in Religion.

13. And I had a great stroke of Work of them, and they were a great Generation of them, and most of them pretty Rich in this World, and most of them went into Church  
Fellow-



had left that Zeal, and turned Ranters, not only in Judgment, but in Practice, to the Destruction both of Soul and Body.

3. When I saw this, that neither the Righteous could find Peace in the Days of their Righteousness, but were afraid of Hell; nor those that turned from their Righteousness to actual Wickedness, I thought I must needs go to Hell.

4. Yet they said all was well and quiet with them, so that I was as *David* was, almost like to have slept, and to have said in my Heart, *sure there is no God*. But all things comes by Nature, because the Righteous could find no Peace in their Righteousness, as I could not; nor the Wicked were not troubled for their Sins.

5. But when I went into the Sanctuary of my Mind, I considered the visible things of Nature, I could not conceive how this vast Element we see could make itself; or, how the Sun, Moon and Stars, could give Being to themselves.

6. How could the Beasts of the Field, the Fowls of the Air, the Fish of the Sea; I could not imagine how these things could give Being to themselves, nor how they should come by Nature; nor how they should Create one another. Then thought I, Man might as well Create himself, and come by Nature as those Things.

7. So I thought there must needs be some Original Cause, or, supreme Power, that gave Being to these Things, and hath placed a Law of Order in all Things, suitable to its Nature.

8. This supreme Power that made those Things; that Power that is the Cause of Causes, we call God; but what he is in himself I knew not at that time: But these Thoughts preserved me from saying in my Heart, as the Fool doth, *There is no God*. Many of my Acquaintance did say in their Hearts, and Tongues both, *That there is no God, but Nature only*.

9. But notwithstanding I did not know that God that made all things, and Man in his own Image and Likeness; yet I con-

considered that innocency of Heart, and a just upright Spirit, was good in itself, if there were no God to Reward it.

10. And that Unrighteousness and Lust after his Neighbour's Wife, and not to be of an upright Spirit, it was Wick- edness in itself, if there were no God to punish it.

11. Therefore I was loath to let go my Integrity, but kept close to it; for as I had been Innocent from my Childhood to this Day, I was resolved to keep to it to the End, if there were nothing after Death, yet would I keep my Heart up- right, and would do nothing to wound my Conscience.

12. For I never had no Guilt of actual Sin that did ever trouble me.

13. So with this Resolution I did resolve to live in, to do just between Man and Man, and to keep from all actual Sin, as I ever had been, and not to mind any Religion more, for I saw all profession of Religion in all Men was vain and unsatisfactory to all Men, as it was to me.

14. So I gave over all publick Prayer, and Hearing, and Discourse about Religion; and lived an honest and just na- tural Life: And I found more Peace here, than in all my Religion, and if there were any thing, either of Happiness or Misery after Death, I left it to God, which I knew not, to do what he would with me.

15. But I was in good Hope at that time, that there was nothing after Death, but all Happiness and Punishment was in this Life: For I saw a temporal Punishment follow Wick- edness in this Life to many.

16. And I saw Prosperity to those that were Righteous, even in this Life; so that I was in good Hopes all Punish- ments and Happiness would end in this Life.

17. So I was resolved to keep myself as I always had done, unspotted of the World, and not to defile my Conscience: And I had a great deal of Peace of Mind in this Condition:



And in this Condition did I continue some three Years, untill I was about Forty Years Old, and in the Year 1650.



## C H A P. VIII.

*The Propbet gives a Description of John Tannye, and John Robins, being counted greater than Propbets, and sets forth their Appearance and wonderful Actions*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass, in the Year 1650. I heard of several Propbets and Prophetes that were about the Streets, and declared the Day of the Lord, and many other wonderful Things, as from the Lord.

2. Also, at the same time, I heard of two other Men that were counted greater than Propbets; to wit, *John Tannye*, and *John Robins*.

3. *John Tannye*, he declared himself to be the Lord's High-Priest, and that he was to act over the Law of *Moses* again; therefore he Circumcised himself according to the Law.

4. Also he declared that he was to gather the *Jews* out of all Nations, and lead them to *Mount Olives*, to *Jerusalem*; and that he was King of Seven Nations: With many other strange and wonderful Things.

5. And as for *John Robins*, he declared himself to be God Almighty; and that he was the Judge of the Quick, and of the Dead; and that he was that first *Adam* that was in that innocent State; and that his Body had been Dead this Five Thousand, Six Hundred and odd Years, and now he was risen again from the Dead; and that he was that *Adam Melchisedeck* that met *Abraham* in the Way, and received Tythes of him.

6. Also he said, he had raised from the Dead that same *Cain* that killed *Abel*; and that he had raised that same *Judas* that betrayed *Cbrist*; and now they were redeem'd to be happy.

7. Also

7. Also he said he had raised several of the Prophets, as *Jeremiah*, and Others; and that he had raised the same *Benjamin*, *Jacob's* Son, that had been Dead so many Thousand Years, now he was raised again.

8. I saw all those that was said to be raised by *John Robins*, and they owned themselves to be the very same Persons that had been Dead for so long time.

9. Also I saw several others of the Prophets that was said to be raised by him, and they did own they were the same; for I have had Nine or Ten of them at my House at a time, of those that were said to be raised from the Dead.

10. For I do not speak this from Hear-say from Others, but from a perfect Knowledge, which I have seen and heard from themselves.

11. Also they declared unto me, That their God *John Robins*, was to gather out of *England* and elsewhere, an Hundred and Forty-four Thousand Men and Women, and lead them to *Jerusalem* to *Mount Olives*, and there to make them happy: And that he would Feed them with *Manna* from Heaven: And that he would divide the Red-Sea, and that they should go through upon dry Land,

12. Also he said, that those Prophets he had raised should be their Leaders, and on *Joshua's* Garment should be the *Moses* Man that should be chief under his God *John Robins*; and that all the Leaders should have Power, by the clap of their Hands and a stamp of their Foot, to destroy any that did oppose them.

13. Also I have seen one of his Prophets, that should have this Power, to kneel down and pray to *John Robins*, as unto God Almighty; with such high and heavenly Expressions, which was marvellous unto me to hear.

14. Those things, and many more lying Signs and Wonders did he shew to some; as presenting the appearance of Angels, burning shining Lights, Half-Moons and Stars in Chambers and thick Darkness, where it was Light to the Phantasies of People, when they covered their Faces in the Bed.

15. They



3. But shewed Kindness and Mercy to all of them, marvelling in myself what the Effect of these Things would be.

4. And one of his Prophets came to my House very oft, and he told me all things that was done amongst them; and he had a very high Language, and very knowing in the Scriptures, and spake as an Angel of God.

5. And my natural Temper was always merciful to Strangers; and this place of Scripture run much in my Mind: *Forget not to entertain Strangers, for some in entertaining of Strangers have entertained Angels.* So I never let him go without Eating and Drinking.

6. And if I had nothing in the House to Eat, if I had but Eighteen Pence I would give him One Shilling of it; and if I had but Twelve Pence, I would give him Six Pence of it.

7. This I did many times, though I had need enough myself, for I had three Children to maintain at that time; two Daughters by my Wife *Sarah*, and one Son by my second Wife *Mary*, then alive.

8. All these things never moved me to rejoice, in any Hope of any Happiness or Deliverance, to any better Condition than I was then in, or to be in any worse Condition after Death, then I was in at present.

9. But I kept close to my Integrity of Heart; that is, I would do nothing that should condemn my Conscience, but would do what I could to justify my Conscience.

10. Tho' I looked for no Reward hereafter, yet I would do well, that Sin might not lie at the Door of my Conscience.

11. And these things working in my Mind, kept me from actual Sin, and from the Pollutions of the Flesh.

12. Yet all this while was I as one without God in this World; as to my Knowledge of him, I had none that was true.



8. So my old fears of Hell rose in me, as it did formerly, when a *Puritan*.

9. So I began to reason in myself, what I should do to escape being Damn'd to Eternity, for I dreaded the Thoughts of Eternity; for I did not so much mind to be Saved, as I did to escape being Damn'd.

10. For I thought, if I could but lie still in the Earth for ever, it would be as well with me, as it would be if I were in eternal Happiness; for I believed the Soul was Mortal many Years before, which Belief yielded me much Peace of Mind, and was in Hope God would never raise me again.

11. For I did not care whether I was Happy, so I might not be Miserable. I car'd not for Heaven so I might not go to Hell; but I could not be sure I should go to Heaven, nor certain I should escape Hell, which was a great perplexity to my Mind, not knowing which Way to help myself out of God's Hands.

12. Now this place of Scripture of *Paul* in the *Romans*, pressed hard upon me, *What if God willingly make thee a Vessel of Wrath, fitted for Destruction.* And that saying, *What art Thou, O Man, that repliest against God?*

13. *Shall the Thing that is formed, say unto him that formed it, Why hast thou made me thus!* And that saying, *Shall not the Potter have Power over the Clay, of the same Lump, to make one Vessel to Honour, and another to Dishonour.*

14. These things pressed hard upon my Soul, even to the wounding of it. Then I replied against this, and said in my Heart, That God did seem to be more cruel than Man, for Man made Vessels of Honour and Dishonour of dead, senseless Clay, that is neither capable of Honour nor Dishonour; nor capable of Pain, nor of Misery; nor of Joy or Happiness: Oh! that I had been as the Clay I tread upon, rather than a living Man.

15. But God made Vessels of Wrath, to bear eternal Torments, of living sensible Creatures; not giving any Reason  
E why;



2. Again, I Reasoned in myself, wishing that I had Died in my Infancy : I thought, if I were a Vessel of Wrath, my Torments would be the less, than now I am grown to maturity of Age.

3. But the Answer said to this, though thy Torment be less than Others, yet it is Eternal. This Eternity struck a deep Fear in me, which made me almost despair.

4. Again I Reasoned in myself, saying in my Thoughts, that God dealt something hardly with me, that he should save *Adam*, which brought me and all Mankind into this Condemnation ; so that I must be damned for original Sin, which I received from my first Parents.

5. And that God should save him that brought me into this Condition, and condemn me that could no way avoid it, neither by Prayer towards God, nor by Righteousness towards Man.

6. So that right or wrong, I must be damn'd by God's prerogative Will, and which Way to help myself I could not tell.

7. Then I reasoned in my Heart with Anger against *Adam*, saying within myself, God made him upright, and gave him Power to stand, but he did not ; but did fall from that Innocency and Uprightness, and so corrupted his Seed : And so by this means do I come to be Damned.

8. Then was I answered in myself, as it were with a Voice without me, saying, How wilt thou help thyself if God will save *Adam* and condemn thee ? shall not a prerogative Power do what he will ?

9. Then was brought to my Mind that saying, *Jacob have I loved, and Esau have I hated* ; before the Children had done either Good or Evil : that the Purpose of God, according to Election, might stand : So that it is not of him that willeth, nor him that runneth, but God that sheweth Mercy on whom he will have Mercy ; and whom he will he hardeneth.

10. In this I saw, that a prerogative Power and Will of God, is not to be contended with.



11. These Scriptures and Arguments upon them, come so powerfully upon my Spirit, that my Heart failed me, and my Hope begun to turn to Despair.



## C H A P. XII.

*The Prophet raiseth Arguments more, to give him some Hope that he might escape Hell; but another motional Voice gave Answer, which quite frustrated all his Hopes again.*

1. **A**FTER a while I recovered another Argument or two, which I thought might give me some Hope to escape Hell: Which was this, I said in my Heart, There can be no Hell till the Day of Judgment, and except God doth raise me and Others again, I cannot be Damned; hoping there would be no Resurrection at all, then should I lie still in the Earth for ever.

2. Then Answer was made me to this: Dost thou think that God would be so unrighteous as to deceive *Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, Moses* and the Prophets, and Apostles, and all righteous Men that Believed and put their Trust in God, in hope of the Resurrection? And if God doth not raise them again, then God hath made them suffer great Sufferings, and loss of the Lives of many of them, in hope of the Life to come, and of the Reward hereafter; which if there be no Resurrection of the Dead after this natural Death.

3. And if God doth not raise them again, they cannot enjoy any such thing as eternal Happiness. Then to what Purpose did God speak these Words, and make such glorious Promises to *Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob*, and to the Prophets and Apostles.

4. That he would be the God of *Abraham*, the God of *Isaac*, and the God of *Jacob*; for God is not the God of the Dead, but of the Living, for all live unto him.

5. For

5. For said I, in my Heart, if God do not raise *Abram*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob* again in the Resurrection, then perhaps God may not raise me, which would have gladed my Heart, that I could have been sure God would never have raised the Dead.

6. But the Answer said to me, That God is powerful, and hath Power to fulfil his Promise he hath made unto Man, in that he can, and will raise *Abram*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob*, and the rest, at the last Day, and will give them the Inheritance he promised them in this Life. Consider, said the motional Voice, what an infinite, prerogative Power can do.

7. Because God doth not raise the Dead daily, as he doth other visible Wonders: And in this visible Creation thou dost think that God cannot raise the Dead when they are turn'd to Dust, because thou never didst read he did.

8. But this know, that God can do that which he never did, when his time appointed is come: For there is a necessity that God should raise the Dead; and that there is a Day, or Time prefixed in God's Will, which none knoweth; no, not the Angels in Heaven, but himself only.

9. Also the Resurrection of the Dead is the last great Work God hath to do; and he hath Power to do this his last Work, to put an end to this World, as he had Power to Create this World, and make a Beginning of it.

10. So that God will perform his Promise in the Resurrection to all the Righteous, in that he will give them everlasting Life in another Kingdom above the Stars, and he will execute that Damnation upon the Seed of the Serpent, wicked, unbelieving, persecuting Reprobates, here upon this Earth, where they acted all their Wickedness to Eternity.

11. And that none that have lost their Lives for his Promise sake, but it shall be given them Life everlasting that Day; which if God do not raise them again, then is he the God of the Dead, and not of the Living.

12. Then was *Abram*, *Isaac*, and *Jacob* their Faith vain the Prophets and the Apostles Faith vain, and their Condition,  
in

in believing God would raiſe them again, and he doth it not; there Condition is worſe than the Wicked, which thing I was afraid to think of.

13. Alſo I was afraid to queſtion, or doubt of God's prerogative Power in raiſing the Dead at the laſt Day, or performing his Promiſe to *Abrabam*, *Iſaac*, and *Jacob*, and the reſt of the Seed of the Lord: But I could have been glad if there had been no Refurrection at all, neither of the Righteous, nor Unrighteous.

14. But thought I, what is that to me, if I be raiſed to Hell-Fire. Then I reaſoned in myſelf, ſaying, It is above Five Thouſand Years ſince the Creation of this World, and perhaps it may laſt Five Thouſand Years more; then ſhall I lie ſtill in the Earth a great while before I am raiſed; ſo that I ſhall eſcape the Torments of Hell for a long time, thinking to have Hope in this Argument.

15. But I was thrown out here immediately, and my Hope cut off; for the Answer ſaid, What if it ſhould be Five Thouſand Years before thou art raiſed again, conſider it will not be a quarter of an Hours time before thou art raiſed again.

16. For there is no time to the Dead, all time is to the Living; for it will not be thought a quarter of an Hour by *Adam* the firſt Man, when he is raiſed from the Dead; he ſhall not think he hath been in the Grave one quarter of an Hour.

17. Then I conceived if a Man ſlept a ſound Sleep three Days, that is no time to him; time is known to him that was awake that three Days.

18. So this yielded me no Comfort, but increaſed my Fears of Hell the more.

19. One Argument more I had ariſing in me, thinking to have got ſome Eaſe and Hope here; thought I, this World hath been ſo many Thouſand Years already, and may be as many more, for ought I know.

20. And there hath been many Millions of People ſince  
the

the Creation, more than can be numbered, and more than can be numbered hath been drowned in the Sea, and other Places.

21. Sure, said I in myself, God cannot remember every particular Person since the Creation thereof: Thought I, perhaps God may forget me, and not raise me again, then shall I lie still and be quiet, and be as happy, never to be as those that are raised to eternal Joys.

22. But the Answer to this spake, with a strong motional Voice, saying, How wilt thou know whether any is missing when God doth raise the Dead? How can't thou tell whether any particular Person is wanting by Sea or Land that is not raised.

23. But however, said the Voice, if there be any wanting that is not raised, God will be sure to raise thee.

24. Then had I no more to say, nor to plead for myself, but must yield and submit to the prerogative Will of God; if he would Save me he might, if he would Damn me he might, I could no ways prevent his Will.

25. And this was my Resolution, seeing the Case in matter of Salvation, so with me, that it lay in God's prerogative Will only; I was resolved to seek after him in Forms of Worship no more.

26. But as I had been always kept innocent and upright in Heart, towards that God I knew not, and just between Man and Man, and never had committed any deadly Sin to trouble my Conscience, so I was resolved to keep myself free from Sin, to the end of my Life.

27. Thinking that if I were Damned meerly by God's prerogative Will, my Torment would be the more easy.

28. Here a secret Voice said, Tho' thy Torment may be easier than Others, yer it is Eternal.

29. This Word Eternity caused my Heart to fail within me, yet I resolved in myself to live Justly, and get as good a  
Lively-



7. Then was the Scriptures opened unto me so swiftly, and more swiftly than my Understanding could receive it; and the Waters of Life run down from the Understanding of the Scriptures abundantly: And the Knowledge of the Scriptures flowed in upon my Understanding faster than I could receive it, and yet I thought my Mind was very swift.

8. Then was no saying of Scripture too hard for me to understand; then I saw that the assurance of eternal Life, here on this side of Death; it lay in understanding the Scriptures.

9. Then I marvelled no longer at the Fathers of Old, in their expressing their Faith in God, and depending upon God's Promises to them.

10. Also I saw the Excellency of the Prophets Prophecies; neither did I wonder any more at *Paul's* Expressions, when he was wrapt up into the third Heaven, and saw things unutterable.

11. Neither could I utter the Revelations of the Scriptures as was poured upon me at that time, nor the Joy and Peace I received from the Revelation of the Scriptures.

12. For it brought unto my Mind all my Experience I had formerly, and shewed what did uphold me at that time, even a single, upright Heart before God and Man.

13. Then the assurance of eternal Life cast out all Doubts and Fears of Condemnation; neither did I ever doubt of that more after that Day.

14. Then I praised the Scriptures highly, which I had laid aside several Years before.

15. Then did I see it was not in vain to submit to God's prerogative Will, and to wait in Patience.

16. Here was that saying of Scripture fulfilled in me, *Isaiab xlii. 16. And I will bring the Blind by a Way that they know not; I will lead them in Paths they have not known; I will make Darkness Light before them.* Though this Scripture was fulfilled in Christ's time, yet it was fulfilled in me now.

17. For I was led by a Faith now, which I did not know : That was by the Revelation of Faith. This was a Path I did not know ; for I never knew what Revelation was before.

18. Also this Revelation of Faith, it made that Darknes of the imagination of Reason, be Light before me, to see the Truth of those sayings of Scripture, *Matt. iv. 16. The People that sat in Darknes saw great Light ; and to them which sat in the Region and Shadow of Death, Light is sprung up.*

19. This Scripture also was fulfilled in me at that time, for I sat in Darknes and in the Shadow of Death, but the Day before.

20. But in the Evening the Light of Faith sprung up in my Soul, and the Revelation of it took me, as it were, by the Hand, from place to place in Scripture, and shewed me the meaning of it.

21. Also it led me to that place of Scripture, *Luke i. 79. To give Light to them that sit in Darknes, and to guide our Feet into the way of Peace.*

22. Here did I see that the Day before I sat in Darknes, and in the Shadow of Death, but now the Light of Life is risen in me, and gave me Revelation to guide my Feet in the Path of Peace, where no Fear nor Doubt should lie in my Way, never to stumble more.

23. These, and many more, places of Scripture was set before me, and the Light of them shined clear about my Understanding, and gave me the Interpretation of all Scripture, and all Questions in Spiritual Things, that could arise out of the Heart of Man, was easy to me to answer.



## C H A P. XIV.

*Of the Time of the Prophets Revelation; his Satisfaction in it, and his Resolution to sit still now, and be quiet from Disputes about Religion. Yet shews that Providence order'd it otherways. Of the Prophet Reeve's Revelation of the Raven and Dove.*

1. **T**HIS Revelation aforesaid was upon me six Hours; it began about Nine of the Clock at Night, and about Twelve of the Clock I got a little Sleep, 'till Three of the Clock in the Morning; then it came upon me again, and lasted 'till Six of the Clock in the Morning: And so it did in like Manner for four Nights together, Six Hours in a Night.

2. And I never was without motional Voices opening the Scriptures all Day long, when I was alone, for a long time after.

3. So that I was so well satisfied in my Mind as to my eternal Happiness, so that I was resolv'd now to be quiet and still, and not to meddle no more with Religion, but to let every one go on in their own Way, for I looked at No-bodys Peace and Happiness but my own.

4. So now I thought to get as good a Living as I could in this World, and live as comfortably as I could here, for I knew all things would be well with me hereafter; thinking that this Revelation should have been Beneficial to No-body but myself.

5. For I lov'd for to be private and still; for my Nature could never endure to be publick. So I thought all was well now I had attained my Desire.

6. But when I thought to be most secure and most private, in a little time after, it made me the most publick. I not thinking that this Revelation was a Preparation for God to chuse me to be a Commissioner of the Spirit, to declare the Mystery of the true God, and the Interpretation of the Scrip-



tures, which is Life and Salvation unto Men; whereby I was made the most publick Man in the World in spiritual Things.

7. This Revelation continued with me all one from *April* to *January*, in the Year 1651; and in the Year of my Life 41. And in the same Year *John Reeve* came often to my House.

8. And he hearing me speak such high Revelation, and giving such Interpretation of Scripture, he was so taken with my Language, that his Desires were extream earnest unto God, which he knew not at that time, that he might have the same Revelation as I had.

9. His Desires were so great, that he was troublesome unto me, for I could not follow my Business quietly for his asking me Questions; for if I went out of one Room into another, he would follow me to talk to me.

10. So that I was weary of his Company, yet I was loath to tell him so, because I knew he did it out of innocency of his Heart, and love to the Things which I spoke.

11. Thus, as aforesaid, *John Reeve* continued, and came almost every Day to my House, most part of that Summer and Winter. And in the Month of *January* 1651, about the middle of the Month, *John Reeve* had the Revelation of the Scriptures in a large measure.

12. So he came to me very Joyful the next Morning, and said, Cousin *Lodowick*, now, saith he, I know what Revelation of Scripture is, as well as thee. Said I, let me hear what Scripture is opened unto you.

13. He answered, and said, as he was thinking of several things, there fell a quiet stillness upon his Mind, and immediately there was presented to his Understanding this place of Scripture, *Genesis* viii. 7, 8, 9, 10, 11, verses: Concerning *Noab's* Ark with the *Raven* and *Dove*.

14. Of which Scripture this was the Interpretation.

15. This *Raven* and *Dove* which *Noab* sent forth of the Ark,

Ark, saith he, was a Type of the two Seeds in every Man; and the Ark was a Type of the Body of Man.

16. For there is two Motions always speaking in Man; now, saith he, the Body of Man signifies the Ark of God; or, the Ark of *Noah*.

17. The *Raven* that is sent forth of the Ark signifies the Motions of Reason in Man; for the Motions of Reason goeth out of Man, walking through dry Places, seeking Rest but can find none.

18. Also it was the Reason of Man that took Christ, when on Earth, up into an exceeding high Mountain, and shewed him all the Kingdoms of the World.

19. This Reason in Man is that *Raven* that goeth forth of the Ark, the Body of Man, to and fro, and taketh Comfort in nothing but earthly Things.

20. For as soon as ever the tops of the Mountains of the Earth did appear, the natural *Raven* never return'd into the Ark again, as you may see in the 5th Verse.

21. So is it with the Reason of Man; that *Raven* when it goeth forth by its Motions out of Body of Man the Ark, it goeth to and fro the Earth.

22. For the Reason of Man cannot endure to be inclosed or confined, but will be flying upon the Mountains of the Earth, or in the Air. Therefore it is called the Prince of the Air, which ruleth in the Hearts of the Children of Disobedience.

23. Now what ruleth in the Children of Disobedience Hearts but the Spirit of Reason; the *Raven* which goeth out of the Ark, the Body of Man, and liveth upon the Mountains of earthly Things.

24. Also the *Dove* that *Noah* sent forth of the Ark signified the Seed of Faith.

25. And when Faith sends forth her Motions out of the Ark, her Body, they are innocent as a *Dove*, humble, meek, and low.

26. And

26. And when she findeth the Flood, and Waters of Trouble of Persecution upon the Face of the Earth, the *Dove* entereth into her Ark, her Body, again, and is quiet and still till the Waters of Trouble be abated.

27. For the *Dove* cannot fly upon the top of the Mountains of earthly Things, as Reason the *Raven* can.

28. The Seed of Faith, the *Dove* can find no Rest there, but when the Waters of Trouble are abated, and the dry Land appeareth, and the Olive Trees of Joy and Gladness are to be seen.

29. Then the *Dove*, the Seed of Faith, can go out of its Body, the Ark, and fetch an Olive Branch of Peace and Joy in its Mouth, and return into its Body the Ark again, and there remain until it is turned out of the Ark by Death.



## C H A P. XV.

*Shewing how John Reeve's Revelation gave him Satisfaction, and full Resolution to sit still and be quiet, never meddling about Religion more: But contrary to the Resolutions of them both, a little while after, were made the greatest Medlers of Religion of all the World.*

1. **T**O this Purpose, as aforesaid, did *John Reeve* declare his first Revelation, with a many more Expressions which he uttered at that time with great Joy of Heart, he not thinking in the least, nor I neither, that it was a great Preparation for God to chuse him, nor me neither, to be his two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit.

2. For said he unto me at that time, Cousin *Lodswick*, now I am satisfied in my Mind, and know what Revelation is, I am resolved now to meddle no more with Religion, nor go forth after any upon that Account.

3. But

3. But to get as good a Livelyhood as I can in this World, and let God alone with what shall be hereafter.

4. Now he had been with *John Robins* not many Weeks before he knew, or had Revelation himself.

5. For *John Robins's* Knowledge and Language overpowered *John Reeve*, before he had this Revelation; therefore he said, now he would not go forth after any, upon that Account no more.

6. Thus when he thought to be most quiet, and not to meddle with any about Religion, and so was I also then, a little while after we were made the greatest meddlers in Religion of all Men in the World.

7. Because our Faces were against all Mens Religion in the World, of what Sect or Opinion soever, as will appear hereafter, by our Writings and Speakings.

8. *John Reeve*, nor I, little thought at that time, that this Revelation we had given us, did prepare us for a greater Work than for the Peace of our own Minds.

9. But it prov'd that God prepared us for a Commission, and that he did intend to chuse us two, to be his last Prophets and Witneses of the Spirit, as will be seen as followeth.

10. For after *John Reeve* had this first Revelation aforementioned, it did continue and increase exceedingly, that it grew very high in him for two Weeks together.

11. And at the two Weeks end God spake unto him by Voice of Words, to the hearing of the Ear, three Mornings together, as is more largely set down in his first Book he wrote, called, *A Transcendant Spiritual Treatise*.

12. Were the Words of God, as he spake to him, are set down plainly, as they were spoken to him, the 3d, 4th, and 5th, Days of *February*, 1651; and in the Year of *John Reeve's* Life 42, and in the Year of my Life 41.

13. Thus

13. Thus I have given the Reader a little hint, whereby he may see the ground of things, and the rise how these wonderful things came to pass.

14. Also what we were at first, and how we were acted out in the time of our Lives, and of the Experience I had in the Days of my Ignorance; and of my Dispute with God and my own Soul.

15. And of that great Revelation I had before *John Reeve* had any; and of the Revelation *John Reeve* had, before God spake to him, in the Year 1651.

16. And now in the Treatise following, I shall only speak of some of the most remarkable Acts and Passages, which hath been acted and done by us, since we received our Commission from God.

17. That after Ages may see some of the Acts of the two Witnesses of the Spirit, as well as their Writings, and their Doctrine now in this last Age. As they have read of some of the wonderful Acts of *Moses* and the Prophets, and the Acts of the Apostles, so there will be some remarkable Acts of the Witnesses of the Spirit left upon Record, which is as followeth.

---

*The End of the First Part.*

---




---

## The Second Part.

---

### C H A P. I.

*Of the Commission given the Prophet Mugleton's Children, blessed by the Prophet Reeve; the great Wisdom given unto Sarah Mugleton.*

1.  HE first Morning God spake to *John Reeve*, he came to my House, and said, Cousin *Lodowick*, God hath given thee unto me for ever: And the tears ran down both sides his Cheeks amain.

2. So I asked him what was the Matter, for he looked like one that had been risen out of the Grave; he being a fresh coloured Man the Day before; and the tears ran down his Cheeks apace.

2. So he told me the same Words as is written in his first Book, and said unto me, that God had given him a Commission, and that he had given *Lodowick Mugleton* to be his Mouth: And said, at the same time was brought to his Mind that saying, that *Aaron* was given to be *Moses's* Mouth.

4. But, said he, what my Message is, he could not tell; but, said he, if God do not speak unto me the next Morning, I will come no more at thee.

5. Which I was in good Hopes he would not, for I was willing to be quiet.

6. Also he said at the same time, Cousin *Lodowick*, thy Children are all Blessed, but especially thy Daughter *Sarah*, she shall be the Teacher of all the Women in *London*.

7. She heard him say these Words, as she stood upon the Stairs, for she was afraid of him, that he would rather have condemned her, because he never did love her so well, as he did the youngest Daughter.

8. But he spake not then for Affection, but as the Revelation moved him.

9. And she was the first Person he blessed to Eternity, after God spake to him the first Morning.

10. It was the more Marvellous, because it was never heard this many Ages, that a poor Man should have that Power, to Bless and Curse Men and Women to Eternity.

11. And she believed him, and did grow exceedingly in Experience, and in Disputes with Religious People; and they marvelled that one so young should have such Knowledge and Wisdom to answer Questions; so that she did afterwards indeed become the Teacher of all Women in *London*, in Matters of Faith and Religion.

12. And she was employed by *John Reeve*, at the first, to carry Letters to any that he did send unto.

13. And there were several Persons came afterwards to my House, more to Discourse with her, than us.

14. She was, at that time, about fourteen Years of Age, when this Blessing was given her by *John Reeve*; And this was the first Morning.

15. But I was in good hopes God would not speak to him no more, for I was loath to be Publick: I would gladly have sat still and be quiet, and not to contend with People about Religion.

16. But the second Morning God spake unto him, and told him what he should do, as is set down in the Book afore said.

17. *John Reeve* said unto me the second Morning, If thou wilt not obey to go along with me, I must pronounce thee Cursed to Eternity, as God did me, had not I obeyed him.

18. Then





3. Neither are you, being of the Tribe of *Reuben*, ever to be chosen High-Priest, for your Father *Reuben* lost that Birthright of the Priesthood, by going up to his Father's Couch.

4. But the Priesthood was confirmed upon the Tribe of *Levy*, and to his Seed for ever.

5. And here is my fellow Witness of the Tribe of *Levy*, which you know yourself he is of that Tribe, and God hath chosen him High-Priest in the last Age, and the last that God will ever choose to the end of the World.

6. And as *Aaron* was the first High-Priest that God chose to be *Moses's* Mouth, so *Lodowick Muggleton* is the last High Priest that God hath chose to be my Mouth, by Voice of Words, to the hearing of the Ear.

7. Besides, said he, you are not fit to be the Lord's High Priest, because you stutter, or stammer in your Speech.

8. Which God never chose none to be High Priest, but perfect Men in Nature, which you are not.

9. Also he said, You pretend to be King of seven Nations, and to gather the Jews, in all parts of the Earth, together, and to lead them to *Jerusalem*. and to mount *Olivet*, and to make them Kings of all the Earth: And that you must follow *John Robins* with Sword and Spear.

10. These, and several other things did he speak to *John Tauny*; and told him that there should never any such things come to pass, as he pretended unto; and charged him to lay all these things down, upon the pain of eternal Damnation, and gave him about a Months time to lay it down.

11. But he did not, but afterwards went further on to prosecute that Design, and made Tents for every Tribe, and the Figures of every Tribe upon the Tent, that every Tribe might know their own Tent.

12. So *John Reeve* seeing this, he wrote the Sentence of eternal Damnation upon *John Tauny*, for his Disobedience of the Lord's Commission, and left it at his Lodging; for he would not be spoken with at that time.

13. Be-

13. Because he had shut himself up for nine Days, and he would speak with none for that time : But he received it afterwards of the Man where he Lodged ; and after a while he and his great Matters perished in the Sea.

14. For he made a little Boat to carry him to *Jerusalem*, and going to *Holland*, to call the Jews there, he and one Captain *James* were cast away and Drowned ; so all his Power came to nothing.

\*\*\*\*\*

### C H A P. III.

*Of the Transactions of the third Morning, and of the Message of the Prophet Reeve, to John Robins.*

1. **T**HE third Morning God spake to *John Reeve*, as it is written in the Book aforesaid ; where it is said, Go thou to *Lodowick Mingleton*, and he shall bring thee to such a Woman, namely *Dorcas Boose*, and she shall bring you to *John Robins*, Prisoner in *New Bridewell*, and deliver my Message when thou comest there.

2. So we went to this *Dorcas Boose*, and said unto her, You must go with us to *New Bridewell*, for we have a Message from God, to declare to *John Robins* ; She was willing to go, but her Husband made a little Demur : Then said I to her Husband, If you will not let her go, I must pronounce you cursed to Eternity.

3. So he was willing to let her go, for he was some Kin by Marriage, to *John Reeve* and me both : The Woman was a true Believer of this Commission afterwards.

4. So we three went to *New Bridewell*, and asked for *John Robins* ; and the Keeper opened the Gate, and said, Who would you speak with ? *John Reeve* said, with *John Robins*.

5. The Keeper said, You shall not speak with him.

6. Then

6. Then said *John Reeve* to the Keeper, Thou shalt never be at Peace.

7. So he shut the little Gate upon us; and as we stood a little while without the Gate, there came a Woman, a Disciple of *John Robins*, to come out: Saith the Keeper to the Woman, There is two or three without would speak with your Lord, shew them the other Way.

8. So the Keeper let the Woman out, and the Woman said unto *John Reeve*, Would you speak with my Lord? Yea, saith he, I would speak with thy Lord: Saith the Woman, He is the same, and will be the same for ever. Thou saith right, said he, He is the same, and will be the same for ever. Meaning the same false Christ for ever.

9. So the Woman went and shewed us the Place where *John Robins* was; and she said, Knock at that Window, and my Lord will look out.

10. So the Woman parted from us; then *John Robins* put by a Board of the Window, and looked out, and *John Reeve* put off his Hat, and held it under his Arm, and said, Art thou *John Robins*? He said to *John Reeve*, Put on your Hat: He said, I put it, not off to thee, but to him that sent me.

11. Stand thou still, and hear the Message of the Lord to thee: He answer'd, and said, I will not, except you put on your Hat: This he said three times. Said *John Reeve* the third time,

12. I put not my Hat off to thee, but to him that sent me, therefore I charge thee to stand still, and hear the Message of the Lord to thee; after the third time *John Robins* said, speak on.

13. Then *John Reeve* spake, and said, Thou may'st remember I was with thee about Six or Eight Months ago, and thou didst declare unto me, That thou wert *Adam Melchisedeck* that met *Abraham* in the Way, that received the Tythes of the Spoil, and that gave *Abraham* Bread and Wine.

14. Also thou saidst to me, that thou wast the first *Adam* in state, and that thou wert the God and Father of the Lord Jesus Christ;

Christ; and that thou knewest the Names of all Angels, and their Natures : And that thou hadst Power over all Voices : And that thou wast the Judge of the Quick and the Dead : And that Christ was a weak and imperfect Saviour, and afraid to Die, but thou wast not afraid to Die.

15. Also thou didst deceive many People, in that thou madest them bring in their Estates, and then gavest them leave to abstain by degrees from all kind of Food, that should have preserved and strengthened their Natures : But thou didst feed them with windy things, as Apples, and other Fruit that was windy ; and they drank nothing but Water.

16. So that thou hadst full Power over their Bodies, Souls and Estates ; and some were Starved under thy Diet, and Died ; therefore look what measure thou hast measured to Others, must be measur'd again to thee.

17. That Body of thine, which was thy Heaven, must be thy Hell ; and that proud Spirit of thine, which said was God, must be thy Devil.

18. The one shall be as Fire, and the other as Brimstone, burning together to all Eternity : This is the Message of the Lord unto thee.

19. *John Robins* pulled his Hands off the Grates, and laid them together, and said, It is finished ; the Lord's Will be done. These were all the Words he spake : I was both an Eye-Witness and Ear-Witness of it.

20. After this it came to pass, that about two Months after, *John Robins* did write a Letter of Recantation of all his great Matters, unto General *Cromwell*, and so obtained his Liberty out of Prison.

21. And one of our Acquaintance went to him, and asked him how he could do so : And he answered and said, That after those two Men had passed Sentence upon him, he had a burning in his Throat, as if he should be burn'd to Ashes, and that he had a Voice within him, which bid him deny those things he had declared of himself before, and he should have his Liberty.

22. And

22. And said afterwards, he should come forth with a greater Power; but he never came forth more with any Power at all, to his Dying Day.

23. Thus these two great Heads, *John Tauny* was the Head of that Mystery *Babel*, the Atheistical Ranters and Quakers Principle: And *John Robins* was the Head of all false Christs, false Prophets, and false Prophetesses, that were in the World at that Day; and there were many.

24. Now *John Robins* was that Man of Sin spoken of in *Thessalonians*: Neither will there come any so high after him, to the end of the World.

25. Thus the Reader may see that these two Powers were brought down in these two Days Messages from the Lord.

\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P I V.

*When the transcendant Treatise was Wrote, many People were more offended with the Doctrine than the Commission Of the Letter sent to the Ministers, and when. How the Children mocked John Reeve, called him Propbet, Propbet, and followed him, flinging Stones at him; And how a Woman hearing this, followed the Propbet to his House, and was Converted to the Faith. Of Sentence given upon one Penfon, and its Effects.*

1. **A**FTER this there came a many People to Discourse with us, and asked Questions about many things, in matters of Religion, and we answered them to all Questions whatsoever could arise out of the Heart of Men; and some few were satisfied and believed.

2. And many despised it, calling it Blasphemy, Delusion, and Lyes; and we gave the Sentence of eternal Damnation upon all those that Blasphemed against the Holy Ghost.

3. After this, in the Year 1652, *John Reeve* wrote that Book called, *A Transcendant Spiritual Treatise*, wherein is declared the  
Words

Words God spake unto him, three Mornings together, to the hearing of the Ear, and his Message to *John Tauny*, and to *John Robins*; which is more largely set down, with several Interpretations of Scripture, concerning the true God, and right Devil.

4. Never so clearly made manifest by any, as now in that Treatise.

5. Many People were more offended at the Doctrine therein, than at the Commission.

6. After this *John* wrote a Letter to several Ministers in *London*, and about *London*; which was afterwards Printed, forbidding them to Preach any more after the Receipt of this Epistle, upon pain of Damnation to Eternity.

7. These Epistles were given to the most eminent Presbyterian and Independant Ministers in *London*, and about *London*; for they were in Power at that time.

8. After this it came to pass in the same Year, that as *John Reeve* was going through *Pauls-Church-Yard*, one that he had given the Sentence of Damnation upon, said unto some Boys, There goes the Prophet that Damns People.

9. The Boys hearing this run after him, calling him Prophet, Prophet, and threw Gravel and little Stones at him; so he made haste into *Pauls*, and the Boys left him: And a Woman, named *Elizabeth Moore*, seeing the Boys cast Stones at him, and calling him Prophet, she followed him into *Pauls*, keeping a distance from him, to see where he would go; so she followed him, and he came to my House in *Great Trinity-Lane, London*.

10. And she desired to speak with him, being a Prophet, for she had a great Respect for Prophets; so she told those things she had seen, and she became a true Believer of this Commission of the Spirit.

11. After this, it came to pass in the same Year, that *Lodowick Mudgeton* having occasion to go into *Houndsditch*, to see my Master's Son where I was 'Prentice; as I went through the *Misories, London*, there I met with one *Morgan Guillian*, a Man that had been 'Prentice with my Master.

12. And he would needs have me Drink with him that he might have some talk with me, for he said, he heard strange Things of me; so I went in with him into the Alehouse to Drink, and there followed, of his Acquaintance, a Neighbour of his, a Gentleman, as we call them: His Name was *Penfon*, and he sat down in our Company.

13. So *Morgan* began to tell me, that he heard that *John Reeve* and yourself do say, That you have Power to Bless and Curse Men, that do oppose you, to Eternity! He desired me to tell him whether these things were true or no.

14. So I told him the Words that God spake to *John Reeve*, three Mornings together, as is set down in that Book aforesaid: But when I repeated those Words, I have put the two-edged Sword of my Spirit into thy Mouth, that whoever I pronounce Blessed through thy Mouth, is Blessed to Eternity; and whoever I pronounce Cursed through thy Mouth, is Cursed to Eternity.

15. Then did he begin to fear, and said, for God's sake, *Lodowick*, do not say so; Upon that, this *Mr. Penfon* said it was Blaphemy, and that it was the Devil that spoke those Words.

16. Whereupon I did pronounce this *Penfon* Cursed, and Damned both in Soul and Body, from the Presence of God, elect Men and Angels, to Eternity.

17. Whereupon, this *Penfon*, his Spirit was struck into his Body, so that he could not speak for a Season.

18. And the Woman of the House hearing me give this Sentence upon him, and seeing him in that Condition, she was troubled in her Spirit and grew sick, and went up to Bed: And an old Man her Father, being there, and seeing this, he railed exceedingly at me, and grinded his Teeth at me.

19. So in a little Season after this *Penfon* had recover'd himself again, and said unto me, Wilt thou say I am damn'd to Eternity? yea, said I, thou art. Then he rose up, and with both his Fists smote upon my Head; and after I had receiv'd a few Blows, my Friend *Morgan* stood between us, and bore off the Blows.

20. And

20. And said, for God's sake, *Lodewick*, let us be gone, else we shall be killed; so he paid for the Drink, and we departed out of the House, and went to another a little distance off.

21. And immediately after came in the Woman's Husband, and finding her not well, he asked what was the Matter, and they told him all that was done; he asked where the Man was? They answered, they went down that Way.

22. So he found *Morgan* and I together, the Man knowing him, asked if he knew me, *Morgan* answered, He did know me, and said, He did not speak ever a Word to your Wife, or to her Father; but that which he spake, it was to *Mr. Penson*, which did abuse him, and smote him on the Head with his Fists, and your Father kicked at him with his Feet, and he did nothing to them again.

23. So the Man went away quiet and satisfied, and comforted his Wife, that the Man said nothing against her to be troubled.

24. But it came to pass that this *Penson* was sick immediately after, and in a Week or ten Days after he Died, much troubled in his Mind, and tormented.

25. Inasomuch that his Friends and Relations sought to apprehend me for a Witch, he being a rich Man; but they could not tell how to state the Matter, so they let it fall.



## C H A P. V.

*Of one Jeremiah Maunte, a great Friend to this Commission; And of a Damn'd Man and his Fury; And how John Reeve entreated the People that he might lie down and expose himself to his Fury, with the Effects of that Submission. And of one James Barker his Hypocrisy to get the Blessing of John Reeve; and how he was Cursed by Lodowick Mugleton, with the Effects of that Curse.*

1. **A**LSO thus it came to pass in the same Year, that one *Jeremiah Maunte*, a young Gentleman, hearing that  
 H 2 God



God had spoke to *John Reeve*, and that he had Dam'd severall of his Acquaintance, he came to us to Discourse about those things; and when he had heard an Answer to all his Objections he submitted unto us, and did believe the Voice that God spake to *John Reeve*, that it was the Voice of God, and that the Lord Jesus Christ was the true God.

2. Also there was one Captain *Clark*, of his Acquaintance that did truly believe in this Commission of the Spirit.

3. Also this *Jeremiah Maunie* was the greatest Friend to this Commission, and shewed the greatest Love to it of any, all the Days of *John Reeve's* Life.

4. But he and Captain *Clark*, their Acquaintance many of them were of the Ranters People, who were at that time very high in Imagination, like *Capernaum*, exalted in their Knowledge up to Heaven, as they thought; but this Commission of the Spirit brought them down to Hell in a short time.

5. These Ranters were the most Company we had at that time, and they to have Discourse with us, did use to club their Twelve-pence a Piece every Week, that they might have Discourse with us.

6. And it came to pass that one of those Ranters kept a Victualling House, and sold Drink in the *Minories, London*; And they would spend their Money there.

7. So *John Reeve*, and myself, came there to Discourse with them, but there came in many more than was appointed, to Discourse with us, and many of them despised our Declaration, and the Voice of God to *John Reeve*, calling it Blasphemy, the Voice of the Devil, and such like.

8. So *John Reeve* gave Sentence of eternal Damnation upon many of them, for this their Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, we being the Witnesses of the Holy Spirit that sent us.

9. But one of them being more offended at his Damnation than all the rest, he was moved with such Wrath and Fury, that he would be revenged of *John Reeve*, and would fall upon him to beat him, so that five or six Men could hardly keep him off, his Fury was so hot.

10. Then

10. Then *John Reeve* said unto the People standing by; Friends, said he, I pray you stand still on both sides the Room, and let there be a space in the middle.

11. And I will lay down my Head upon the Ground, and let this furious Man tread upon my Head, and do what he will unto me.

12. Our Friends, and the rest, were loath to venture, lest this furious Man should tread upon his Head and spoil him: But *John Reeve* entreated the People to let it be so.

13. And the People were perswaded. and did stand of a Row on both sides, and a vacant Place in the middle.

14. So *John Reeve* pulled off his Hat, and laid his Face flat to the Ground, and the People stood still; and *John Reeve* said, with his Face to the Ground, Now let the Man do what he will unto me.

15. So the Man came running with great Fury, and when he came near him, lifting up his Foot to tread on his Neck, the Man started back again, and said, No, I scorn to tread upon a Man that lyeth down to me. And the People all marvelled at this thing.

16. After this it came to pass, in the same Place in the *Minories, London*, that several Ranters and Astrologers did come to talk with us: And one Astrologer being more knowing in that Art than the rest, would feign himself to be humble, and desirous to be Saved, and would endeavour to get the Blessing of *John Reeve*.

17. The Man's Name was *James Barker*; he was a Gun-Smith by Trade, but very skilful in the Art of Astrology: There were many more People talking with *John Reeve* at that time.

18. So this *James Barker* came near to him, and desired him to tell him what it was that God spake unto him three Mornings together: For, said he, I have heard much of you by Others, but now he was glad he had that Opportunity to speak with him himself.

19. So

19. So *John Reeve* related to him all the Words God spake : And when this *Barker* had heard it, he said, He did verily believe it was the Voice of God that spake unto him : And further said, that he did desire him to give him the Blessing.

20. *John Reeve* answered, and said, If thou dost truly believe it was the Voice of God that gave me this Power : He said, he did believe it. Whereupon *John Reeve* did pronounce him one of the Blessed of the Lord, both in Soul and Body to Eternity.

21. Immediately after he had got the Blessing he departed from him into another Chamber, and said unto some of the Company, I have got the Blessing of *John Reeve*, but if any of you will but lay a Quart of Sack with me, I will go to *John Reeve* again, and call him a false Prophet, and say, it was the Devil that spake to him three Mornings together, and see if he will Curse me again.

22. There were several Men that heard him, said unto him, That he dar'd not do it : He said but he would, if any one of them would lay with him.

23. So one Captain *Clark*, a Friend of Ours, was afraid to lay with him without my Consent ; so he came to me, which sat at a Distance from *John Reeve*, (and knew nothing of it,) and whispered me in the Ear, telling me what *Barker* had said, then said I, Do you lay a Quart of Sack with him, to prove him.

24. And when *Barker* saw that he would lay with him indeed, he began to Repent, and was loath to stand to his Word : But the Company seeing him begin to flinch, they scoffed and jeer'd him, and said, We thought you durst as well be Hang'd as do it.

25. Yet rather than he would be jeer'd for not performing his Words, and loosing a Quart of Sack besides, he said, he would do it.

26. So he, with the Company, came towards *John Reeve*. (and *Barker* came with his Hat off, and put it under his Arm) saying these Words : Mr. *Reeve*, you have declared me one of  
the

the Blessed of the Lord, both in Soul and Body to Eternity : But said he, I do verily believe that you are a false Prophet, and that it was the Devil that spake unto you three Mornings together, that gave you that Power to Bless and Curse Men to Eternity. These were all the Words he spake.

27. So I came to him, and said, *Barker*, Thou hast acted the part of a Hypocrite, both with God and Man, and with thy own Soul.

28. Thou lyedst against thy own Heart, when thou saidst to *John Reeve* thou didst believe it was the Voice of God that spake to him, and that he had Power to give a Blessing to whoever believed ; whereupon thou didst ask him to Bless thee ? He said, If thou dost truly believe what I have said, thou repliedst, Thou didst believe, and said, else why should I ask a Blessing of you.

29. Whereupon he gave this Blessing both of Soul and Body to Eternity : And this I say, though thou, out of thy Dissimulation and Hypocrisy of thy Heart, hath got the Blessing of *John Reeve*, so that he cannot Curse thee again.

30. But I gave not my Consent unto it. Therefore for this thy Hypocrisy of thy Heart, I do pronounce thee Cursed and Damned both in Soul and Body, from the Presence of God ; elect Men and Angels, to Eternity.

31. And not only so, But thou art Cursed in thy Estate in this World ; for Sins of this Nature are to be punished with a double Curse.

32. He was exceeding Wrath and Angry at me, more for cursing his Estate, than for his eternal Damnation, he was so mad at that, so that he knew not whether he had best Fight me, or take the Law of me as a Witch, if he did not prosper.

33. But my Words and Curse came to pass upon him, even in this Life, as many can witness ; even a poor, miserable, beggarly Fellow.

35. Notwithstanding he was as cunning a subtil Serpent as most Men in the World : But at last a Lawyer which he had cheated, followed the Law so close upon him, that he fixed upon

upon all his Goods, and took them away, and put him into Prison besides; and there he lay some Years, and Died there miserably Poor, which was the last End of him.

35. Thus I saw the Effects of that Curse upon him, even in this Life; and in the Life to come I am sure he shall endure those eternal Torments, for that Act of Hypocrisy.

\*\*\*\*\*;\*\*\*\*\*;\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P. VI.

*What the Ranters God was. And how them and their God was Damn'd by this Commission. And of the Resolution of Three of the most desperatest to Curse the Prophet Reeve and Mugleton's God.*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass, at another Meeting of the Ranters in *Aldersgate-Street, London*
2. There was many Ranters that heard what was done by *James Barker*; so they consulted among themselves why they might not Damn us, as we did them.
3. Now those that were to Damn us, were three of the most desperatest, atheistical Ranters, that had ever been in our Company as yet.
4. And they thought nothing too hard for them; but two of those Ranters which had been often in our Company, and had seen the Passages that passed with, and upon those we had Condemn'd: That their God they worshipped was Damn'd with them; for they had no other God but a Spirit without a Body, which they said was the Life of every thing.
5. So that the Life of a Dog, Cat, Toad, or any venomous Beast, was the Life of God: Nay, That God was in a Table-Chair, or Stool.
6. This was the Ranters God, and they thought there was no better God at all.
7. This God did we Damn with their Persons, these two Men that had seen many Condemn'd by us: The one, his  
Name

Name was *Proudlowe*, a notable Ranter, the other his Name was *Remington*.

8. So this *Proudlowe* he consulted with those three desperate Men which knew nothing of us : So they asked him what they must do, he said, this you must do.

9. You must curse them and their God, and perhaps you may bring down their Power.

10. They said they were willing to do that, and that was but a small Matter to Curse them and their God, ; they made nothing of that.

11. So the time appointed came, and there was prepared a good Dinner of Pork, and the three came ready prepared to Curse us, and our God.

12. So *Proudlows* and *Remington* went from us to those Men, and *Remington* said unto them, If you Three will go up and Curse them and their God, you shall have a good Dinner of Pork.

13. Then one, the stoutest of the three, said unto him, pray tell me what is their God that we must Curse ?

14. *Remington* answered and said, That the Lord Jesus Christ is their God, and they own no other Father or God but he : And now if you will go in, they be there, and Curse them and the Lord Jesus Christ, their God, you shall have a good Dinner of Pork.

15. When they heard this, the most stoutest Man of them smote his Hand on his Breast, and said ; If that be their God, I will never do it, if I might gain the whole World ; and said, That he was sorry and troubled that he should conceive such a thing in his Heart. So said the other two, We will do no such Wickedness. So they departed without their Dinner of Pork.

16. But he that repented himself could not be at quiet in his Mind, untill such time he had asked us Forgiveness.

17. So we forgave him his Sin for that, and he remained very kind to *John Reeve* all his Days, tho' he did not believe that we were the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit.

18. Also this *Remington* was called to an account by *John Reeve*, as one in this Plot; and he told the truth, how *Proulove* laid the Plot, and that he did but go with him, being an old Acquaintance: So we forgave *Remington*, and gave *Proulove* the Sentence of Condemnation to Eternity.

\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P. VII.

*Of the Dispute with Mr. Leader, a New-England Merchant; and of the Prophet's convincing him how that God had a Body; and how God is worshipped in Spirit and Truth with Bodies; and that there is no Spirit without a Body.*

1. **A**FTER this in the Year 1653, there came a certain Man, a Merchant, and a great Traveller into many parts of the World; and he was a Religious Man, but had somewhat declined the outward Forms of Worship, because he could find no Rest there.
2. So he applied his Heart more to Philosophy and the Knowledge of Nature, more than Religion, for he thought he had seen the utmost of Religion, and that there was nothing in it.
3. Indeed he was a great Philosopher, and a very wise Man in the things of Nature: His Name was *Richard Leader*.
4. It came to pass when he came out of *New-England*, being Persecuted there, because he could not submit to their Forms of Worship; and when he came into *Old-England* again, he heard there were two Prophets now risen up, who called themselves, The two Witnesses, &c.
5. So he enquired where he might speak with these Prophets; so he was brought unto us, and he was very sober in his talk, and he propounded his Questions with great Moderation.
6. The first Question was concerning God: Whether God  
that

that created all things, could admit of being any Form of himself.

7. We answered and said, That God made Man in his own Image and Likeness: And if Man have a Form, then God must needs have a Form himself, even in the form of Man, else them Words of *Moses* are not true, That God made Man in his own Image, and breathed into him the Breath of Life, and he became a living Soul.

8. Mind, the form of Man was the Image and Likeness of God, before God breathed into him the Breath of Life.

9. Therefore God must needs be in the form of a Man from Eternity; therefore it was that God said, Let us make Man after our own Image and Likeness. This was the true Sense and Meaning of *Moses*, and it is dangerous for any Man to deny it.

10. Besides, said we, there is no Spirit can have any Being without a Body, neither God, Angels, nor Man: And further, that God that is a Spirit without a Body, is no God at all.

11. For we that are Men that have Bodies, have Power over all Spirits whatsoever that have no Bodies: For it is the dark Imagination of Reason in Man that hath created to itself Spirits without Bodies, which is none of God's Creation.

12. When he heard this, he considered the things of Nature, that no Spirit could have any Being without its Body.

13. Then he marvelled, and said, Where have we been all this while, that took God for a Spirit without a Body: Oh! how have we been in the Dark.

14. But, said he, doth not Christ say, God is a Spirit, and God will be worshipped in Spirit and Truth: And Christ said, his Words were Spirit and Life.

15. We answered and said, Can a Man worship God in Spirit and Truth without a Body? He said, No. Then said I, neither can God accept of any Man's Worship, except he hath a Body of his own: For God hath a Body of his own, as Man hath a Body of his own; only God's Body is Spiritual and



Heavenly, clear as Crystal, brighter than the Sun, swifter than Thought, yet a Body.

16. But Man's Body is Earthly, and made of the Earth; in the Image and Likeness of God's own Body, only Man's Body is of the Earth, earthly; and God's Body is the Lord from Heaven, heavenly; yet Man's Body is the Image of God, as well as his Soul, as *Moses* did truly mean as he spake.

17. For this I say, that if Man's Body and Soul had been Spiritual in its Creation, then when Man's Thoughts do ascend up to Heaven, his Body would ascend with it, in the twinkling of an Eye.

18. For the Thoughts of Man are swift; and if his Body, which is Earthly, do but put on Immortality, then his Body would ascend with his Thoughts up into the Air, and so to Heaven.

19. These immortal Bodies can do and at the last Day these vile Bodies of Ours that doth truly believe, shall be made like unto his own glorious Body.

20. For now our Bodies are natural Bodies, but when these natural Bodies shall rise spiritual Bodies, than shall Immortality take Place; and these vile Bodies of Ours, that are now Mortal, yet made in the Image of God's own glorious Body, shall be spiritual and heavenly Bodies, even like unto his glorious Body.

21. And because God's Body is Spiritual and Heavenly, and cannot be seen by the natural sight of the Eye, therefore it was that Christ said, God is a Spirit, and will be worshipped in Spirit and Truth.

22. Observe, For as a Man cannot worship in Spirit and Truth without a Body, neither is that any God at all that hath no Body of its own; neither is a Spirit without a Body of its own any Object of Faith or Worship; for a Spirit without a Body hath no Substance: And as for those Words of Christ being Spirit and Life, consider they were spoken from a Body.

23. For this I say, no Words whatsoever can be spoken of any Spirit that hath no Body: For these Words God spake to

*Moses*

*Moses* and the Prophets, they were from the Body of God : And those Words *Christ* spoke, that was Spirit and Life, was from his Body when on Earth : And those Words he spoke to *Paul*, after he was ascended up to Heaven, it was from his own Body.

24. So that, without Controversy, no Spirit can speak at all, or hath any being without a Body : And this is the very Cause that Men find so little Comfort, in worshiping and believing in such a God, that is a Spirit without a Body.

25. Also we declared unto him the nature of God ; shewing that there can be no Form without a Nature, for it is the Nature that gives the Form.

26. Also we shewed unto him the Person and Nature of Angels, and the Person and Nature of the right Devil, and the rise of the two Seeds ; and the secret Mysteries how God became Flesh ; and how the Devil became Flesh, and many other things which satisfied his Mind.

27. So that he became a true Believer of this Commission of the Spirit, and shewed Kindness unto *John Reeve* all the Days of his Life, likewise his Brother *George Leader* became a true believer.

28. This *Mr. Richard Leader* grew very mighty in Wisdom and Knowledge, both in natural and spiritual Wisdom ; so that every great Man of his Acquaintance did submit unto his Wisdom, and lov'd him for his Knowledge ; so he continued in it all his Life, but about a Year or two after *John Reeve* Died ; he Died at *Barbadoes*.



## C H A P. VIII.

*Of one Mr Cooper a great Disputant, and how convinced ; And how a true Ministry is known from a false. Of his Conversion ; And how he passed Sentence of Damnation upon Fifteen of his Companions ; And of his trouble for so doing without Commission ; And of a Minister's censuring him to be Bewitched.*

1. **A**FTER this, in the same Year, it came to pass that a certain Man, a Silk-Weaver, his Name was *Cooper*, he

he being acquainted with one Mrs. *White*, who was a believer of this Commission of the Spirit; she lived in *Duningbill-Alley*, near *Moorfields*.

2. This Man was very desirous that she would tell him how he might speak with these two Prophets, for he had a great desire to see us, and speak with us; so she directed him where.

3. So when the Man came and found us both together, the Man desired to drink with us, thinking in himself that he could talk and discourse better over a cup of Drink than other-way, because it was his Custom so to do.

4. For he thought himself very strangely armed with Questions, thinking it impossible for us to answer, because he could find none that ever he had talked withal, Ministers, nor others to do it.

5. So we went with him to Drink, and he propounded his Questions concerning the true God, and the right Devil, and how the Devil came to be; and how a Man may know the History of the Scripture to be true, seeing they did contradict themselves in many Places, with several other things.

6. Unto which we gave him a full Answer unto whatsoever he asked, so that he could not make any Reply against any thing we said.

7. Also we shewed him the Power of the Commission of *Moses*, and the Power of the Commission of Christ and his Apostles, and the Power of our Commission in this Age.

8. And that every Commission had Power to Bless and Curse Men to Eternity; and that he was no true Minister of Christ which had not Power to Bless and Curse.

9. For if a Man pretend to be a Minister of the Gospel, and cannot say to him that believeth in him to be a true Minister, and the Doctrine he Preacheth to be true, is Blessed to Eternity.

10. And say to that Person as despiseth and persecuteth the Person of this Minister, and his Doctrine, is cursed Soul and Body to Eternity; if he have not Power to do this, he is

no

no true Minister of Christ, neither did Christ send him to Preach unto the People.

11. These things stuck upon the Man's Mind exceedingly, and he was much affected in Love towards us, and he was elevated in his Mind, as if he would get up to Heaven immediately.

12. And he thought himself so strong now, that he could drive all People before him.

13. So he departed from us elevated in his Mind: He went among his own Company, and those of his own Trade, and he talked amongst them of things he had heard, and that he had been with two Prophets.

14. But his Company laughed him to scorn: But he in his Elevation and Zeal to what he had heard, gave Sentence of Damnation to Eternity, upon fifteen of his Companions.

15. Some were angry at him, and some laughed and scoffed at him, and said he was bewitched.

16. It came to pass that the next Day after he had given Sentence upon those fifteen Persons, he fell Sick, yet he held to what he had said the Day before.

17. So that his Wife, and some of them he had Damned, said, the Man was Bewitched, and would needs send for the Minister of the Parish to Pray with him, and give his Judgment whether he was Bewitched, or no.

18. But when the Minister came, the Man would not let him Pray for him.

19. So the Minister gave his Judgment, that the Man was absolutely Bewitched; but after three or four Days the Man got up, and was well again, and told us what the Minister had said, and confessed that he Damned fifteen Men, which was the cause of that Trouble in his Mind.

20. Because he did it without a Commission; not but that I do believe they will be all Damned as I said, but my Trouble was for giving Sentence without a Commission.

21. For at that time no Believer gave Sentence upon any Despiser, but us two only; but in that he confessed his Fault, he was forgiven by us.



## C H A P IX.

*Of one Captain Stafy, a Friend to the two Witnesses, and of their Dispute with a Minister, proving that God was in the form of Man. And of the Minister's Blasphemy, and John Reeve's passing the Sentence upon him, and that he shou'd never see any other God but that Sentence: And how John Reeve was threaten'd with a Warrant from Cromwell, or the Council of State: And how John replyed, that if they despised as the Priest had done, that he would pronounce them Dam'd*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass in the Year 1653, there was one Captain *Stafy*, in the Parliament's Service, that came to talk with us; he was a wise and moderate Man, able to hear and bear Words, but did not believe what we said.

2. But he heard us gladly, and liked many things which we spake, infomuch that he invited us to Dinner at the Inn where he Quartered.

3. So we went, there was of his Acquaintance a Minister, as they are called, a *Cambridge* Scholar, and with him an Excise-Man; his Name was *Ebb*, and the Priest's Name was *Goslin*, and there was with them two Soldiers.

4. These Men being at Dinner with us, Captain *Stafy* put the Priest upon Discourse and Dispute with us.

5. So we disputed with him concerning God; and when we came to prove by Scripture, that God was a Form like Man, according to those Words in *Genesis*, *God made Man in his own Image and Likeness*, the Priest pleaded, that was Holiness and Righteousness.

6. We

6. We shewed him that Holiness and Righteousness had no Form nor Image without a Body; nay it is nothing at all in itself, but as it is acted forth by a Body.

7. For it is a Body that acteth holy, good and righteous Things, therefore it is we call such a Man a holy Man, a good Man, a righteous Man: Now if God made Man in his own Image an holy, upright Man, could he be said to be Man, except he had a Body.

8. Neither could them Words be proper to say, God made Man in his own Image and Likeness, if Man was made with a Body to act holy and righteous Things, and God that made him had never a Body himself.

9. How then could Man be said to be made in the Image and Likeness of God, when as there is no Likeness at all between them; for the one hath a Person, Form and Body, and the other hath none.

10. And if you say Holiness and Righteousness is the Image and Likeness of God, we pray will you shew us the Form and Likeness of the Image of Holiness and Righteousness, distinct of itself from a Body.

11. Then wherever we see Holiness and Righteousness distinct of itself, then we shall know God, and that Holiness and Righteousness is the Image and Likeness of God without a Body.

12. And when we see this, we will worship Holiness and Righteousness for God without a Body, if you can shew us the Form of it by itself.

13. Then the Priest grew Angry, and called it Blasphemy, to say God was a Form or Person, and said we were Deceivers, with many other railing Speeches.

14. Whereupon *John Reeve* pronounced him Cursed and Damned both Soul and Body, from the Presence of God, to Men and Angels, to Eternity.

15. And further said, that he should never see any other  
K God

God in the Life to come, but the Sentence he had passed upon him.

16. Then the two Soldiers were very Angry to see the Priest Damn'd, and they would have fallen upon us to beat us, and one of them took up a great Stool to knock *John Reeve* on the Head.

17. But Captain *Stafy* held him, and perswaded him, then they said they would have a Warrant for us, either from General *Cromwell*, or the Council of State, or from the Parliament.

18. *John Reeve* answered, and if General *Cromwell*, the Council of State, or Parliament should despise those things we declare as you have done, and as this Priest hath done, I would pronounce them Damn'd as I do you.

19. So with a great many Words more, at that time, between them and us, and Threat'nings wherewith they threatned us, we parted.

20. And Captain *Stafy* seemed to be sorry that they were no more Civil; but he was glad the Priest was Damn'd, because he was a great Enemy to the Clergy.

---

## *The End of the Second Part.*

---

---

## The Third Part.

*From the Year 1653, to the Year 1665.*

---

### C H A P. I.

*Shewing how five Men got a Warrant from the Lord Mayor, and brought the two Witnesses before him: Of their Accusation: Of their Examination: And of their Answer to it with Boldness.*

1. **B**UT a little while after this, as is aforesaid, it came to pass, that these Men did get a Warrant from the Lord Mayor of *London*, because we lived in the City of *London*, it was under his Jurisdiction.

2. So this Priest, and the two Soldiers, and *Ebb* the Excise-Man, and another Salesman, his Name was *Cbandler*, a Damn'd Man; he lived near me in *Great Trinity Lane*.

3. These five join'd all together to Prosecute us, and having a Warrant from my Lord Mayor they came to my House, and they brought the Marshal of the City of *London*, and his Men, to apprehend us, and bring us before the Lord Mayor.

4. And they came up to the Chamber where *John Reeve* and I was; and the Marshal and his Men took us before the Lord Mayor to be examined.

5. And when we came before him there were several Accusations against us, besides what these five Men did accuse us of.



6. First, That Book intituled, *A Transcendant Spiritual Treatise*; the Lord Mayor had this Book in his Hand. Secondly, There was a Pamphlet by one *Needham*, sent to the Lord Mayor, of his own Damnation.

7. And several Letters we had sent to the *Presbyterian* Ministers in *London*, and about *London*, to lay down their Preaching, (because they had no Commission from God to Preach) upon the Receipt of this Letter, upon pain of eternal Damnation: These Letters were in the Lord Mayor's Hands also.

8. And there came one Minister forty Miles, to accuse us before the Lord Mayor; he came Riding all Night, and came in great Fury and Rage, at the very time the Lord Mayor called for us to examine us.

9. But the Lord Mayor did not mind this raging Priest at all, notwithstanding his great Journey,

10. But he minded these five Men that joined in the Warrant, and set them together by themselves, and us two by ourselves.

11. The Lord Mayor's Examination of us the two Witnesses, and our Answer to him, as follows.

12. He asked the Accusers what they had to say against these two Men; one of them answered and said, that *John Reeve* did say, That he was their God.

13. The Lord Mayor said to *John Reeve*, Did you say so? He answered and said, No. What did you say? said the Lord Mayor.

14. Said *John Reeve*, These Men desired to have Discourse with us about Spiritual Matters, and when I had declared the Truth to them, they called it Blasphemy, Delusion, and Lyes.

15. Whereupon I did pronounce the Sentence of eternal Damnation upon them, in that they had sinned against the Holy Ghost, which the Scriptures saith, shall never be forgiven, in this World, nor in the World to come.

16. And

16. And that they should see no other God in the World to come, but that Sentence which I had pass'd upon them: This I did say, and this his Clerk set down.

17. Another of the Accusers said, that *John Reeve* should say, That General *Cromwell*, the Council of State, and the Parliament, were all Damn'd.

18. Did you say so? said the Lord Mayor; No, said *John Reeve*.

19. What did you say? said the Lord Mayor,

20. *John Reeve* answered, That we were in a Place where one Captain *Stasy* invited us, and these Men, being Strangers to us, they would needs propound Questions to us, concerning God and the Scriptures, because this Minister was among them, and he was the greatest Blasphemer of Truth of all of them.

21. Whereupon I pronounced him (for his Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, and for Preaching without a Commission from God) Cursed and Damn'd, both in Soul and Body, from the Presence of God, elect Men and Angels, to Eternity.

22. Upon this, he and the rest of them said, They would fetch a Warrant from General *Cromwell*, the Council of State, or from the Parliament to Prosecute us.

23. And I said, That if General *Cromwell*, the Council of State, or the Parliament, should despise those things we have declared, and sin against the Holy Ghost, as these Men did, that General *Cromwell*, the Council of State, and the Parliament, would be all Damn'd as you are? This I did say.

24. This was set down by the Clerk.

25. Then said the Mayor, You are accused for denying the three Persons in the Trinity: You say there is but one Person Christ Jesus, you deny the Father.

26. No, said *John Reeve*, we own the Trinity more than any Men, both Father, Son, and Spirit, are all but one Person, and one God Christ Jesus, as is declared in that Book in your Hand.

27. Then.



6. What, said I, without a Body or Person?
7. Said the Mayor, God hath no Body or Person at all.
8. Why, said I, hath God that made Man in his own Image, who hath a Body and Person, and hath made all other Creatures with Persons; and shall he that made them have no Body or Person of his own?
9. Doth not the Scriptures say, That Christ was the express Image and Brightness of his Father's Person; and had not Christ, a Body or Person in form like Man; Sin excepted.
10. Then said the Mayor unto me, must I believe you?
11. Yea, said I, That you must, or you will be Dam'd.
12. Then there was a Gentlewoman in the Court called out, and said, Mr. *Reeve*, pray tell me what the Devil is?
13. *Jobn* answered with a loud Voice, and said, Thy own Soul is the Devil.
14. Then one of the Officers said unto the Woman, I think he hath met with you now.
15. Then the Lord Mayor asked the Accusers if they would be bound in 40l. Bond a piece to prosecute against these two Men, they said, they would; so the Clerk bound them to prosecute.
16. Then the Lord Mayor called for the Act of Parliament, which was newly made against Blasphemy; so the Mayor read this Passage in it, That if any Man should say that he is God, and that God is no where else, shall be guilty of Blasphemy, and shall suffer six Months Imprisonment, without Bail or Main-Prize.
17. Then said I unto him; Sir, What have you to do with this Act, you are a temporal Magistrate, and ought to judge of temporal Things between Man and Man.
18. And you are to do Justice between Man and Man, in all moral and temporal Affairs, which concerns you to be the judge of, and you will do well to keep there, for you are not to judge of Blasphemy against God; nor those that made this Act neither.
19. Why, said the Mayor, must I believe you?
20. Yea,

20. Yea, said I, That you must, else you will be Damned.

21. For God hath chosen us two to be the judge of Blasphemy against God; and hath given us Power to pronounce Sentence of Damnation upon all those that do Blaspheme against that God which is a Person, which you do deny.

22. Why, said he again, must I believe you?

23. Yea, said I, else you will be Damn'd.

24. Many things more than what is here written was spoke at that time, but these were of most concernment to take notice of.

25. And when this Dispute and Examination was ended, the Lord Mayor asked if we would put in Bail? and we said No.

26. So he gave order to his Clerk to make our Mittimus, and send us to *Newgate*; and he went away out of the Court into another Chamber, and the Clerk carried the Mittimus in to him to set his Hand to it; so that he came no more into the Court.

27. For *John Reeve* intended to give the Sentence of eternal Damnation upon him, both Body and Soul, in the open Court, it being full of People.

28. But he came no more out, until we were led away by the Marshal and his Men to *Newgate*, there to remain Prisoners till the next Sessions.

29. This Commitment was the fifteenth Day of *September*, 1653.

\*\*\*\*\*

### C H A P. III.

*Shewing how the Prisoners brought Irons; required Money of the two Witnesses; they having none, took one of their Claaks for a Pledge. How long they were Prisoners; the Boards were their Bed. And of the Wickedness of some of the Prisoners, which had a Design to have hanged them; and how Providence preserved them.*

1. **N**OW we being Prisoners in *Newgate* Goal, I shall speak of some Passages that happened there.

2. As

2. As soon as ever the Keeper had put us in, and shut the Gate upon us, the Prisoners brought to each of us a pair of Irons to put on our Legs, except we would lay them down Three Shillings and Six Pence a-piece.

3. Also they said, they must have Money for Garnish, which did amount to Five Shillings a-piece in all.

4. I said, we have no Money about us, but however, if they pleas'd, they might put the Irons upon our Legs, and I held out my Leg for them to be put on: I was very free to wear them for Truths sake, though it was a thing unusual, for it was the first time that ever I was in Prison before in all my Life.

5. The Prisoners seeing us so willing, they said they would trust us for Ten Shillings, upon this condition, that we would give them one of our Cloaks for a Pledge; we said, do take which you will.

6. So they looked on *John Reeve's* Cloak, and said, it was not worth Ten Shillings; then they looked upon my Cloak; and took it off my Back, and said, This will do, this is a good Cloak, it is good fine Cloth; said they, We will keep this Cloak till you pay Ten Shillings.

7. And in five Days after my Daughter *Sarah* brought Ten Shillings, and I gave it them, and sent my Cloak home by my Daughter, for I durst not keep it there, for fear I should loose it, though I had need enough of it, for the Weather was Cold at that time, for it was the 15th of *September*, 1653, we were committed, and we were there Prisoners until the 17th of *October*.

8. And the Boards was our Bed, we had no Sheets, only a poor Flock Bed upon the Ground, and one thin Blanket at top; and we paid seven Groats a Week for this Lodging, and thought ourselves very well used in a Prison, which thing we was never acquainted with before.

9. But we were more perplex'd with the Prisoners within, than with the Imprisonment itself.

10. For there were three Highway-Men, and they were very

very malicious againſt us, eſpecially one of them, that if he went to the Grate when any came to ſpeak with us, he would lay his Leg in the Dark for me to ſtumble at, and ſtrike me in the Neck with his Fiſts, thinking to throw me down.

11. And if I were but walking in the Hall, he would come and drive me out, and ſtrike at me, and ſay, You Rogue, your damn'd Folks: And ſo it was with the Boys that were Priſoners, that when I went to the Grates to ſpeak with any, they would ſnatch off my Hat, and pawn it for half a Dozen of Drink; ſo the Boys did.

12. And I gave them Six Pence every time they did it, to pleaſe them.

13. So that other Priſoners ſaid it was not fit I ſhould be ſo abuſed, and wiſhed me to complain to the Keeper, and he would puniſh them.

14. No, ſaid I, it is not for Priſoners to complain of Priſoners.

15. And when theſe three notable Thieves ſaw they could not provoke me, no ways, ſo much as to ſay why do you ſo?

16. Then they thought upon another way, and wrote a Letter to *John Reeve*, with the Sentence of Damnation to us both, thinking to have provoked *John Reeve* to have given Sentence of Damnation to Eternity upon them, that they might have had wherewith to have done him a Miſchief.

17. But he gave them no Answer at all.

18. When they ſaw this would not do, they came into our Room where we lay, with a Rope in their Hands, to meaſure how high the Beam was, that they might Hang *John Reeve* in the Room.

19. And as it happened there was four condemn'd Men in *Newgate* at that time, and theſe Men were our greateſt Friends, to protect us from the Violence of other Priſoners.

20. And theſe two that lay in our Room, they pulled out thoſe Men by Head and Shoulders, that came to meaſure the  
Beam;

Beam; those condemned Men had great Respect for us, because we gave them many times Victuals and Money.

21. Also we gave seven Prisoners, at one time, Twelve Pence a piece, so that we found Favour in their Eyes for the Loves sake.

22. There was one Prisoner that begged at the Grate, and when he was Drunk, he would trouble *John Reeve* to Bless him; so one Day, when he was very Drunk, he broke into *John Reeve*, and kneeled down upon his Knees before him, and held his Hands together and said, for Jesus Christ sake *John Reeve* bless me, for I am a wicked Sinner.

23. And *John* went from him, and prayed him to be quiet, but he was so much the more earnest for him to bless him.

24. He was so troublesome to *John Reeve*, that he could not tell how to be delivered from him; 'till one of them that lay in our Room came and pulled him out by Head and Shoulders, and turned him down Stairs.

25. Those convicted and condemned Men were made under Keepers, which did help the upper Keeper to shut up the Prisoners every Night. These were the Preservers of us from the Violence of the Prisoners all the while we were in *Newgate*.

26. And while we were in *Newgate*, *John Reeve* wrote a Letter to the Lord Mayor, Alderman *Foske*, who committed us to Prison: And one *Jeremiah Mount*, a Friend to us, got it Printed, at his own Charge, against the Day of Tryal.

27. There was in it, the Sentence of Damnation upon the Lord Mayor; and they were given to the Recorder *Steele*, and several other Officers in the Court. That Letter was Printed in the Year 1653; and in the third Year of our Commission.

28. There is many Believers of this Commission of the Spirit that hath them Letters in Print at this Day; but none will part with them at any Rate, not now.





## C H A P. IV.

*Of the two Witnesses being brought to their Tryal. How John Reeve would not suffer the Mayor, a Damn'd Man, to speak; How the Jury brought them in Guilty; And of the Recorder's Sentence upon them. And of several other Transactions.*

1. **A**ND when the Day of Tryal came, we were brought before the Court, and the Accusers stood all Five before us; but the Court asked the Accusers not one Question, neither did the Accusers speak one Word before the Court.

2. But when the Lord Mayor, the chief Judge of that Court, began to speak against us,

3. *John Reeve* said, with a loud Voice, That he would not hear a Damn'd Man speak, neither will answer to any thing: But, Mr. Recorder, we will hear you.

4. So the Lord Mayor sat down, and said never a Word more.

5. Then *John Reeve* called to the Recorder for our Examination before the Lord Mayor, for that will shew all things, and that we will stand to.

6. But there was no Examination could be produced by the Lord Mayor, notwithstanding *John Reeve* called for it three Times, but they gave no Answer at all; therefore no need for the Witnesses to accuse us, for the Examination answered to all that the Accusers could say against us.

7. But the Court waved them, and tried us only by that Book *John Reeve* first Printed; in which Book Christ is proved to be the only God; so they judged it Blasphemy to deny the Trinity of Persons.

8. Therefore the Recorder asked *John Reeve* what Father it was that Christ prayed unto in his Agony?

9. *John*

9. *John Reeve* answered and said, It was to his representative Power in *Moses* and *Elias*, that he prayed unto; as you may see, said he, when he said *Eli, Eli, Lama Sabacthani; my God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?* You may see that the Jews knew the Hebrew Language, for the Jews said he called for *Elias, Let him come and save him if he will have him.*

10. So that it is clear, that Christ prayed in his Agony, to his representative Power in *Elias*.

11. Then said the Recorder, *Mr. Reeve, Mr. Reeve, You have spoke enough; let Aaron speak.*

12. Said *John Reeve*, Scoff on Mr. Recorder.

13. Truly Friend, said the Recorder, I do not scoff.

14. Then said I, I can say no more to that one Question, than he hath said before, but if you have any thing else to ask, I will answer you.

15. But he asked never a Question more, nor spake a Word more, because the Examination which they would not produce in the open Court, had fully answered to all things they could object against us.

16. But commanded us to withdraw, and the Jury laid their Heads a little together, and brought us in guilty of Blaphemy, and execrable Opinions.

17. So the Recorder gave Sentence upon us, that we should be sent to *Old Bridewell*, and be kept Prisoners there for six Months, without Bail or Main-Prize.

18. So there we remained full six Months.

19. And while we were Prisoners in *Old Bridewell*, *Jeremiab Mounst* got that Epistle to the Ministers Printed, which are yet to be seen, and will be to the end of the World by some.

20. After this, while we were Prisoners there, we wrote a Remonstrance of all the Transactions that had passed, that was remarkable, from the Day of our Commission 1651, to this our time of being committed Prisoners in *Old Bridewell*

21. And this Remonstrance was directed to General  
*Cromwell,*



2. There was but four Believers in that Country, at that Time.

3. And he going to visit them, having never been in that Country before, after he had been three Days there, he met with Enemies enough.

4. But they falling in Discourse with him, they despised his Doctrine and Commission; so he gave Sentence of Damnation to Eternity, upon one or two of them.

5. And they stir'd up others to persecute him, so they got a Constable to apprehend him, but having Notice of it, he departed out of those Coasts in haste, and over-heated his Blood, with travelling to the Water-side, which was sixteen Miles; and he went upon the Water at *Gravesend*, at Night, when he was all in a Sweat, and cooled himself too soon.

6. So he surfeited his Blood, and drove him into a Consumption, which killed him: He lived almost two Years afterwards, but in a sick, wasting Condition.

7. That surfeit he got then, was absolutely the cause of his Death, else he might have lived many Years longer.

8. Yet, notwithstanding his Sickness, he wrote that excellent piece, a Book called, *Joyful News from Heaven*; or, *The Mortality of the Soul*.

9. This he did in the time of his Sickness; and just as it was in the Press, to be Printed, he saw the first Sheet Printed, but his Eyes were dim that he could not see the Print, not to read, for he Died in two Days after.

10. There was at that time; three Sisters that were true Believers, which he did oft resort unto; the one was Mrs. *Frances* the eldest; the second Mrs. *Roberts*; the third Mrs. *Boner*.

11. This Mrs. *Frances* closed up his Eyes; for he said unto her, *Frances*, close up mine Eyes, lest my Enemies say, I Died a staring Prophet.

12. And she did so, and he gave up the Ghost, and said not one Word more.

13. And

13. And she took and cut one Lock of his Hair to keep, for a Memorial of one of the two last Prophets that God will ever send, while this World endureth.

14. He had a fine Head of Hair, it was black, waving over his Shoulders.

15. So he was Buried in *Beblebem Church Yard*.

16. He Died about the latter end of *July*, in the Year 1658, in the seventh Year of our Commission, and in the Forty Ninth Year of his Life.

17. Thus I have given a true Account, to be upon Record of some of the most remarkable Acts and Passages, and Sufferings, which we the Witnesses of the Spirit hath acted and suffered in this Seven Years of our Commission.

18. Only for God's Cause, in Obedience unto the Voice of God, that spake to *John Reeve* the Third, Fourth, and Fifth Days of *February*, in the Year 1651.

\*\*\*\*\*;\*\*\*\*\*;\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P. VI.

*Of Laurance Claxton, what Books he wrote of his exalted Pride, The Believers complain of him; The Prophet forbid him for Writing any more. How he humbled himself. The Prophet, forgave him. And of his Death.*

1. **A**FTER *John Reeve* was Dead, there was one *Laurance Claxton*, who had been a Preacher of the Ranters, that came to believe this Doctrine and Commission of the Spirit.

2. And he owned it some little time before *John Reeve* Died, and afterwards he asked me to give him leave to write in the Vindication and Justification of this Commission of the Spirit.

3. And I gave my Consent, whereby several of his Acquaintance in *Cambridgeshire*, were brought to the Faith of this Commission.

4. The

4. The first Book he wrote, the Title of it is, *Look about you, for the Devil that you fear is in you.* It is in Print at this Day.

5. The second Book he Wrote, the Title is called, *The Quakers Downfall*; which is in Print at this Day.

6. The third Book he Wrote, the Title is called, *A Dialogue between Faith and Reason*; which is in Print at this Day.

7. The fourth Book he Wrote, is called, *A Wonder of Wonders*; which is in Print at this Day.

8. After this he grew so Proud and Lording over the Believers, saying, That no-body could Write in the Vindication of this Commission, now *John Reeve* was Dead, but he; And to that Purpose he Wrote another Book, Intituled, *The lost Sheep found*; it is in Print at this Day.

9. Wherein he had proudly exalted himself into *John Reeve's* Chair, exalting *John Reeve* and himself, but quite excluded me in all the Book.

10. \* So many of the Believers complained to me of his lording over them, and that he had excluded me quite in this last Book.

11. Whereupon I read the Book over, and found the Report was true.

12. Whereupon I put him down, for ever Writing any more, and I Wrote to the Believers in *Cambridgeshire*, and elsewhere, that he was put down for his Pride and Covetousness, for ever Writing any more on that Account.

13. And the Believers did obey my Voice every where.

14. He continued thus, four Years after *John Reeve* Died, until the Year 1661, and in a while after *Laurance Claxton* humbled himself to me, and acknowledged his Fault, and I forgave him, and took him into my Favour, but ty'd him not to Write any more.

15. So he continued several Years afterwards, justifying his Faith and Confidence, in this Commission of the Spirit.

16. But it came to pass, when the Fire destroyed the City of *London*, he, to get a Livelyhood, did engage to help Persons of Quality to borrow Money, to build their Houses again.

17. But the Persons that had the Money did run away, and left *Claxton* in the Lurch; the Debt was one Hundred Pounds.

18. So he only was Arrested, and put in *Ludgate* Goal, for this Money: He lay there a whole Year, and Died there.

19. But he gave a very good Testimony of his Faith in the true God, and in this Commission of the Spirit, and of that full assurance of eternal Happiness he should enjoy to Eternity, after his Death.

20. Inasmuch that all the Prisoners marvelled, and were sorry they had opposed him so when he was alive.

XX

## C H A P VII.

*Shewing how the Prophet caused, The Divine Looking-Glass to be Re-printed. Of the Prophets printing a Book of the Interpretation of the xi. of the Revelations. And, The Quakers Neck Broken. Of his Travels to Nottingham; and the Transactions that passed there; and then to Chesterfield.*

1. **T**HE first thing I did after *Claxton* was put down, I caused the *Divine Looking-Glass* to be new Printed 1661; which was done very handsomly, and is now to be seen.

2. After this I wrote a Book, containing Twenty-four sheets of Paper; Intituled, *The Interpretation of the 11th Chapter of the Revelations by St. John*, and got it Printed in the same Year 1662, which is yet to be seen: Never was such a thing extant in the World before.

3. After this I wrote a Book called, *The Neck of the Quakers Broken*, containing ten sheets of Paper, and got it Printed in the same Year 1663; which is yet to be seen.

4. After

4. After this it came to pass, that several in the North Country, hearing and seeing these Books, had a great desire to see me, and especially one *Ellin Sudbury*, at *Nottingham*, and one *Dorothy Carter*, of *Chesterfield*, in *Darbyshire*.

5. These and others were very desirous to see me, but they could not tell how, for they thought it would be too much Charge and Labour for them to come to *London* to me so far, for they were loath to put me to so much Charge to come to them; yet *Ellin Sudbury*, her Desires were so strong, that she could not be satisfied except she did see me; so she wrote a Letter unto me, that I would come into those Parts, and that the Society should bear the Charge.

6. Now I marvelled what that Society should be, but it was the *Beamonists* mix'd with the *Quakers*, as I found afterwards; but this being in the Winter, I sent Word I would come and see her in the Summer.

7. And accordingly it came to pass, that one *Thomas Hudson*, a Friend of Ours at *London*, had occasion to see his own Relations in *Lancashire* and *Nottingham*, and *Chesterfield* being in his Way, he was willing to travel with me, to see those Friends we had never seen before.

8. And when we came to *Nottingham*, *Ellin Sudbury* was glad to see us, and so was her Husband also, but at that time he was upon the *Beamonist* score; so there came several of the *Beamonists* People to Discourse with me, and some of the Speakers of them, and Mr. *Sudbury* he thought they would be able to dispute with me, though he could not.

9. But he saw they were more weak than himself, to maintain their Principles of Religion; so that he disliked them, and said, That there was no true knowledge of the Scriptures amongst them: Also he heard me pass the Sentance of Damnation to Eternity, on four of them.

12. And one of these was very much troubled, and asked *Ellin Sudbury*, whether she did believe he was Damn'd, because



I had paſſed the Sentence upon him, only to enſnare her, ſhe being but weak, and had never heard ſuch a thing before.

11. But I, to free her from that Bondage in her Mind, for I knew ſhe had not Confidence enough, at that time, to ſay ſhe did believe he was damn'd, and if ſhe ſhould ſay no, then ſhe would looſe the aſſurance of her own Happineſs, in believing me to be a Prophet of the Lord, and had Power to give Sentence of Bleſſedneſs to one, and Curſedneſs to the other; ſo I knew the Woman was in a ſtrait what to ſay, and he urged her for an Answer

12. But I ſaid, ſhe will not give you her Judgment at all, to enſnare her Mind: I have paſſed the Sentence upon you, and I do believe, without doubting, that you are the Seed of the Serpent, and will be Damn'd to Eternity, and it matters not if all the People in the World, ſhould believe to the contrary, yet my Faith ſhall be ſtronger than all to keep you down.

13. Then they grew angry, and threat'ned to proſecute me, but could not tell how to ſtate a ground of Proſecution.

14. After *Thomas Hudſon* and I went from thence to *Cheſterfield*, which was Twenty Miles further, to *Dorothy Carter's* Houſe, a Widow; ſhe had one Daughter, her Name was *Elizabeth*, that was a true Believer; and a young Maid that was Servant to *Dorothy Carter*, her Name was *Elizabeth Smith*, a true Believer alſo.

15. And there was in that Town, a Man, his Name was *Edward Fewterer*, a Chirurgeon, that was a true Believer alſo; theſe four were glad to ſee me, for they had never ſeen me before.

16. But the Profeſſors of Religion, in that Town, hearing of me, there came ſeveral to diſpute with me, but ſome of them Blaſphemed, and deſpiſed what I ſaid; whereupon I pronounced the Sentence of eternal Damnation upon four or five Men there.

17. And they being enraged at it, they thought to proſecute us both, and they went to the Mayor and Aldermen of the Town, to ſee what could be done unto us.

18. And

18. And the Mayor and Aldermen said, they could not tell what to do in it, seeing there was no Law against any Man for saying a Man is Damn'd; but if you bring them before the Mayor, and if they cannot give a good Account where their Habitation is, they may be set in the Stocks for Vagabonds, if they stay in the Town any more than so many Days; but we did not know this till afterwards.

19. And while they were plotting this Mischiefe, we not thinking of it, *Thomas Hudson* was to go Fifty Miles further, so *Edward Fewterer* and I took Horse, and went a matter of Fifteen Miles, on the Way with Mr. *Hudson*. Upon this, the Quakers reported, that I fled away from *Chesterfield* to *Bakewell*, for fear of a Whipping, when as we did not know there was any Mischiefe intended against us.

20. Besides *Edward Fewterer* and I came back again, to *Chesterfield* the same Night, but none fought after me as I heard off, and in two Days afterwards, I departed from *Chesterfield* to *Nottingham* again.

21. And as I stay'd there three Days more, there was a Conspiracy amongst those I had passed Sentence of Damnation upon, how to apprehend me.

22. For every Place in the Country, where I had any that believed, and that was a Friend to me, there was a many Enemies that fought to do me harm, only they had no Law on their side; but I being of Mr. *Sudbury's* Acquaintance, and at his House, the Mayor or Sheriffs would do nothing in it.

23. And it came to pass afterwards, that the Sheriff's Wife came to be a true Believer unto this Day; her Name is *Mary Barker*.

24. So after three Days I departed for *Nottingham* to *London*, to my own House; This was in the Year 1663.



6. After this it came to pass, the same Year that I was Married, great Troubles did befall me, both upon a spiritual and temporal Account, as may be understood in the following Relation.

7. It came to pass, that one *Richard Hatter*, a true Believer; had some Business at Law, at the Assizes at *York*. He had a Mind to go by *Nottingham* and *Chesterfield*, to see those Friends there; and if I would go with him, he would bear me Company so far.

8. Now these Friends had greatly desired me to come down into the Country to see them, so I was glad of his Company, and we Journeyed together; but *Mr. Hatter* stayed but one Night at *Nottingham*, and went his Way, and left me there at *Mr. Sudbury's*, and I stayed there a few Days; and in that time there came several *Quakers*, *Beammonites*, and *Independants*, religious Men and Women, to discourse and dispute with me.

9. But several of them despised and blasphemed against what I said, whereupon I gave Sentence of eternal Damnation, in that they had sinned against the Holy Ghost, a Sin which God will not forgive, which made them very Angry, and spread it abroad the Country, wherever I was known; and after a few Days I went from *Nottingham* to *Chesterfield*.

10. And in the middle of the Way there is a Market Town, called *Mansfield*, and there I used to bait my Horse and myself, and that Town is full of *Quakers*; and when I did Inn there, the *Quakers* and Others they would press into the Room where I was, to see me and talk with me; and they being an obstinate and stiff-necked People against a personal God, many of them came under the Sentence of Damnation at *Mansfield*, and they had reported it at *Chesterfield*, before I could come there.

11. And when I came to *Dorothy Carter's* House, after I had been two or three Days there, came several Persons to speak with me in that Town, being a Market Town, and they were wicked despisers of a personal God.

12. And several of them were Damn'd at *Mansfield* and *Chester-*

*Chesterfield*, and about Twelve: But these at *Chesterfield* were most of them *Independants*, and they consulted with the Priest of the Parish, with the Mayor and Aldermen of the Town to Persecute me, and the *Quakers* were glad the *Independent* People did so.

13. So the Priest being a more subtil Serpent than all the Beasts of the Field, he consulted the Mayor and Aldermen, to send a Constable for me, before them, and he would examine me, and see what Words he could get out of me, to have Matter to accuse me of; for, said he, we can do nothing to him for saying a Man is Damn'd.

14. So the Constable was commanded to fetch me before the Mayor, and he came where I was, and said I must go before the Mayor.

15. I asked him if he had any Warrant for me; he said, No, then I said, I will not go: Said he, I can command Aid; then he commanded the Man of the House, where my Horse was at Grass, but the Man was loath to do it, but he commanded him in the King's Name, to Aid him.

16. So the Man took hold of one Arm, and the Constable by the other, and led me to the Hall, where the High Priest sat, for he was one of the Commissioners of the Ecclesiastical Court, with the Mayor and Aldermen of the Town, and the Town-Clerk, and all the Officers of the Town, were gathered together against me,

17. My Examination before them was as follows: The Priest's Name was *John Cupe*, the Mayor's Name *John Allwood*, the Recorder's Name was *Needham*, and the Constable's Name was *Slater*, and the Aldermen, one was *Clarke*, and another his Name was *Pinder*; the rest I did not know their Names.

18. The first thing the Priest asked was, what I came into that Country for?

19. I said, I came to visit some Friends at *Nottingham*, and *Chesterfield*, and that I was sent for: He asked me where I Lived, I said at *London*, and what Trade I was of; I said, a Taylor

Taylor by Trade, and that I lived in *Trinity-Lane*, and had Fined for most Offices in the Parish where I lived.

20. Then he waded that, because he thought I was no House-keeper, but a Lodger, that hath no certain abiding Place, but as a Vagabond that goeth to and fro, and hath abiding every where; so when he saw he could do nothing here, then he asked me whether I did believe the Three Persons in the Trinity, Father, Son, and Holy Ghost.

21. I answered, No, I did believe there was three Names, or Titles, of Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, but one Person, the Lord Jesus Christ.

22. He rejoiced at this before the Mayor, and said, This was enough, and caused the Recorder to set it down, the same Words.

23. Then he asked me if I was one of the two Witnesses spoken of in the 11th of the *Revelations*.

24. I answered and said, I was one of those two Witnesses of the Spirit, spoken of in the 11th of the *Revelations*; then he commanded the Recorder to set these Words down.

25. Again he asked me, if I had Power to Damn and to Save.

26. I answered, and said, I had Power to give Sentence of Damnation upon those that despised my Doctrine that I declare, and to pronounce the Sentence of Salvation upon those that truly believe it.

27. And that you may know that I have Power, I do pronounce you Cursed and Damn'd both Soul and Body, from the presence of God, elect Men and Angels to Eternity.

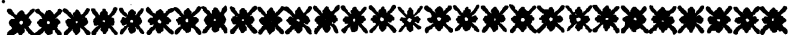
28. Then was the Priest struck Dumb for a Season, and when he had recovered himself to his Senses again, he said to the Recorder, set that down, but did not mention a Word that the Priest was Damn'd.

29. Then said the Mayor, Mr. *Mugleton*, we do not believe you, we do believe the Apostles.

30. I answered, and said, That will do you but little good now.

31. Those Words the Recorder was commanded to set down.

32. There were many more Words and Circumstances in the Examination, but these were the main Things they made a Charge against me.



## C H A P IX.

*Shewing that the Prophet proved before the Priest, Mayor, and Aldermen, that Christ was the only God. The Priest made no Reply against it, but sauning upon him with fine Words, to ensnare him against the Government. The Prophet's Wisdom discover'd it. Of his Commitment.*

1. **B**UT this I observed, that after I had given the Sentence of Damnation upon the Priest, he was very meek and moderate, and asked me Questions in the Scriptures, concerning Christ being the only God.

2. And I opened unto him the First of *John*, *In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God, and the Word became Flesh, and dwelt amongst us.*

3. Now, said I, Was not Christ the Word become Flesh, and that Word that became Flesh was God: And did any other God dwell among Men but Christ.

4. And is it not said in Scripture, *That in him all the fulness of the Godhead dwelt Bodily*; not a part, or a piece of the Godhead, but all the fulness dwelt bodily in him.

5. Again, doth not the Scripture say, *Great is the Mystery of Godliness, God manifest in the Flesh, justified in the Spirit, seen of Angels, believed on in the World, received up into Glory.*

6. Now was not this Christ manifest in the Flesh? Was not he preached unto the Gentiles, and believed on in the World? And was not he received up into Glory? so that Christ must needs be God become Flesh, and God manifest in Flesh.

7. Also,

7. Also, was not this Jesus Christ that *Alpha* and *Omega*, the *First* and the *Last*, the *Beginning* and the *End*, he that was Dead and is Alive for evermore.

8. Here you see the *Alpha* and *Omega* was Dead; And was not the *Alpha* and *Omega* God? And you see by the Scripture, that the *Alpha* and *Omega* was Dead: And was there any *Alpha* and *Omega* that Died but Jesus Christ? And was there any *Alpha* and *Omega* that quickened out of Death to Life again, but Christ? Therefore he is said to be a quickening Spirit.

9. Therefore it must needs be, that Christ is God become Flesh, and manifest in Flesh; and he it was that dwelt among Men; and he was in the Person of a Man, in all Things like unto Man, Sin excepted.

10. So that God is but one Person in Form, like a Man, and not three Persons, as Men do vainly imagine.

11. But when he heard these sayings of mine, he replied nothing against it, but seemed to faun upon me, and speak softly unto me, tempting me; and asked me secretly what I thought of this present Power, that he might have had somewhat to accuse me of, that the Law would have taken hold of.

12. But I answered him, and said, That I never was concerned with no temporal Powers, neither did I meddle with them at all.

13. So when the Priest saw he could get nothing out of me, concerning the Government of the Nation, then he applied to the things before mentioned.

14. And he caused the Recorder to read over the Examination before the Mayor; the things were but few.

15. *First*, Denying the Three Persons in the Trinity: *Secondly*, That I said I was one of those two Witnesses spoken of in the 11th of the *Revelations*.

16. *Thirdly*, That I said I had Power to Damn and Save: And *Fourthly*, That I said their believing the Scriptures would do them little good now.



17. Those were the chief Things I was charged with; then the Priest asked me if I would be Prisoner that Night at the Constable's House, at my own Charge, or at the Town Charge.

18. If I had said at the Town Charge, then I must have lain in the Cage all Night; but I answered and said, At my own Charge.

19. But I said to the Mayor, Do you not take Bail in these Cases? The Mayor said, Yes: But the Priest, before the Mayor had perfectly spoken, said, If you can put in Bail that are not excommunicated Persons.

20. Then *Dorothy Carter*, my Friend, being a Widow, would have been Bail, with one of her Sons, and she pressed at the Door to come in, but the Priest thrust her out, and said, She was an excommunicated Person, neither should the Mayor accept of her.

21. And I had never a Friend more in that Town, but one *Edward Fewterer*, but he was not in the Way at that present, so could not procure Bail.

22. But was committed into the Constable's Hands that Night; and as soon as ever I was committed Prisoner into his Hands, to be sent to *Darby Goal* the next Morning, being Sixteen long Miles from *Chesterfield*.

23. Then the Bailiffs of the Town seized upon my Horse, for the Lord of the Manor, and sent me to the Goal upon their own Horse.

24. But I was more troubled for the Horse than for myself, because my Friend *John Brante*, at *London*, was engaged for the Horse, else pay four Pounds.

25. But my Friend *Dorothy Carter*, she went to the Earl of *Newcastle*, he being Lord of the Manor, and she told him what these Bailiffs had done.

26. So the Earl sent for them, and was angry with them, and did reprove them, and said, Will you take away a Man's Horse before he be Convicted and Condemned? I charge you, said he, that the Horse be put to Grass, and that no Saddle be put

put upon his Back, and let the Owner pay for his Meat, if he be quit, or otherwise.

27. So it was done according to his Command.

\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P. X.

*The Priest gave that Character of the Propbet, of a wise and sober Man. The Propbet gave the like Character on Pendor. Of a Dispute between the Propbet, and two of the Officers of the Town, and the Keeper of the Prison, and the Sheriff's Men. The Propbet proves three Records on Earth, to answer the three Records in Heaven; all this in the Goal.*

1. **N**OW I shall speak of something of my Imprisonment in *Darby* Goal, which is as follows.

2. For all the Priest's Malice towards me, yet he could say to the Aldermen, when I was gone, That this Man was the soberest, wisest Man of a Phanatick, that ever he talked with; for he thought I had been like the Quakers.

3. This did one of the Aldermen tell me, for he was as *Nicodemus*, his Name was *Pendor*; he came to me by Night, for he had a great desire to talk with me alone, so that Night I was in the Constable's House, he had his desired Opportunity.

4. And when I was Prisoner in *Darby* Goal, there came the Sheriff's Men, and two of the Officers of the Town, and the Keeper of the Prison, to talk with me.

5. The Officers of the Town came to me, thinking themselves wise and knowing enough in the Scriptures, especially one of them, for to talk or dispute with me.

6. But the Sheriff's Men came on Purpose to ensnare me, if they could; so one of them, the most surly, angriest Man of them, asked me, saying, Have you taken the Oath of Allegiance and Supremacy?

7. I answered and said, That Prophets do not use to Swear:  
Did

Did you ever read in Scripture, that Kings have been subject to Prophets Words, and those Kings were happy that were obedient to the Voice of Prophets?

8. Why, said he, Are you a Prophet?

9. Yea, said I, That I am a Prophet.

10. Then said he, Do you go to Church to hear our Ministers; at that time there was a Law to persecute Men that did not come to Church, which caused him to ask that Question.

11. I answered him, and said, That it is not the practice of Prophets to go to Church to learn of your Ministers; the Ministers ought to hear Prophets and learn of them.

12. For Prophets were always above Bishops and Ministers.

13. When he heard me answer him so confidently, and with Authority, as from Heaven, he said no more.

14. And when the Officers of that Town heard me answer him so positive, they were the more afraid to enter into a Dispute with me.

15. Yet one of them being more Atheistical, being of the Saduce Spirit, upon whose Wisdom and Knowledge they all depended upon; he was a moderate Man, and asked his Questions moderately, as you shall hear.

16. Saith he. Mr. *Mugleton*, you say there is three Commissions, or Records to be acted upon this Earth, and you say your Commission is the Commission of the Spirit, and the last: Now, saith he, if you could prove this by Scripture, I should be satisfied.

17. I answered, and said unto him, Will you believe me if I do prove it by Scripture, here before these People.

18. Then said he, truly I think I shall believe you, if you prove it by Scripture.

19. Then the Keeper, and all the Men were silent, and spake not a Word, none but he and I.

20. Then said I, you shall not be troubled with any more Scriptures, than that in the Epistle of *John*, the 5th Chapter,  
and

and such Scriptures as do allude to the same Purpose; where it is said, *There is three that bear Record in Heaven, the Father, Word, and Spirit, and these three are one. And there are three that bear Record on Earth, the Water, Blood, and Spirit; and these three agree in one.*

21. Said I, here you see that there is three Records to be upon Earth, answerable to the three Records in Heaven; and as the three Records in Heaven were but one God, though called Father, Word, and Spirit.

22. So likewise the three Records on Earth, of Water, Blood, and Spirit are said to agree in one, as the Scripture saith, do you believe this.

23. He answered, and said, he did, and so they said all.

24. Then, said I, you see this one God in Heaven is called Father, Word, and Spirit, yet but one God; yet said to be three that bear Record in Heaven, yet but one God.

25. Said I, how will you interpret this Scripture.

26. He answered and said, he knew not how, but desired me to unfold it.

27. Then, said I, these three that bear Record in Heaven, it was spoken in Relation to the three Records on Earth.

28. For this one God bearing three Records in Heaven, would have signified but little unto Mankind, had there not been three Records on this Earth given unto Men, to declare unto Men the three Records in Heaven.

29. That Men might understand that one true God that is in Heaven, demonstrated by three Titles, of Father, Word, and Spirit.

30. Which God cannot be known, but by the three Records on Earth, and those three Records on Earth must be acted by Men, that Men and Women may come to know that one true God in Heaven, which is distinguished by Father, Word, and Spirit, and be saved.

31. For it is Life eternal to know the true God, and he is to be known no other Way, but by these three Records on Earth,

of



8. The Interpretation of the Record of the Blood upon Earth, it was Jesus Christ and his Apostles, in that Christ came to fulfil the Law, and he is said to be the end of the Law to every one that Believes, and to lay down his Life for many.

9. Now in laying down his Life is understood, that he shed his own precious Blood; therefore it is said, *His Soul was teary unto Death, and he pour'd out his Sou! unto Death; and except you eat my Flesh and drink my Blood, you have no Life in you.*

10. That is, no Man hath the assurance of eternal Life abiding in him, except he doth truly believe that Flesh of Christ that was Crucified upon the Cross, to be the Flesh of God.

11. That is, the Word became Flesh and dwelt amongst Men, and that Blood of Christ that was pour'd out unto Death, to be the Blood of God; except this be believed, there can be no eternal Life abiding in Man.

12. For this Blood of Christ doth purge the Conscience from dead Works, to serve the living God; so that Christ which is manifest in Flesh, as the Scripture saith, did pass through Blood.

13. And his Apostles, after he had given them a Commission, as in the Second of the *Acts*, they bear Testimony and Record on the Earth, that Jesus was the Christ.

14. And they did witness that he shed his Blood, and was put to Death by the Jews, and did rise again and ascend up into Heaven, in that same Body he suffered Death in.

15. For which Record of theirs they were put to Death, and their Blood was shed, and so were many Believers in their Commission put to Death, and passed through Blood, for bearing Record to this Jesus which they had Crucified, to be the Son of God.

16. And this Record on Earth was acted by Men, who lost their Lives for their Record; therefore it is called the Record of Blood upon Earth,

17. Answerable to the Record in Heaven, in that the Word became Flesh; and Christ is that Word that bear Record in  
 O Heaven,

Heaven, and became Flesh, and shed his Blood; and those that bear Record unto him, their Blood was shed also.

18. So that the Blood of Christ, and the Blood of the Apostles, and the Blood of Saints, is that Record of Blood on Earth: And this Record of Blood on Earth, it was acted by Men, by Christ, his Apostles, and Saints.

19. This is the true Interpretation of the second Record of Blood here upon Earth; is it not said I?

20. They all rejoiced, and said it was true so far, and that they never hear'd the like.

21. Now the Interpretation of the third Record of the Spirit upon Earth; you see, said I, that there is to be three Records upon Earth, as there is three in Heaven: Now you see there is but two acted upon Earth as yet, to wit, Water and Blood.

22. Now the Water Record was to witness to God the Father, the Blood Record witnessed to Christ the Son; and you see they were Men like yourselves, that did bear these Records on Earth, of Water and Blood.

23. Likewise you see, that these two Records on Earth, they did witness to one God in Heaven: Did they not? said I. He answered and said, They did. Yet, said I, you see they differ one from the other, in point of Worship, notwithstanding they did agree to bear Record to one God in Heaven.

24. Now, said I, as these two Records of Water and Blood were acted upon Earth by Men, so likewise must the Record of the Spirit upon Earth, be acted by Men also.

25. And not as People do vainly imagine, that the two former Records were acted by *Moses* and the Prophets, and the High Priests, which were Men: And the Record of the Blood was acted upon this Earth, by Christ, and his Apostles, and Saints, which were Men.

26. But you cannot conceive the Record of the Spirit upon Earth is to be acted by Men, as the other two were; but you con-

conceive that God doth act this Record upon Earth himself, only by inspiring his Spirit into every Man's Heart secretly, giving the Knowledge of himself.

27. Two answered, and said, Indeed this was their Belief.

28. But, said I, the Record of the Spirit upon Earth must be acted by Men, as the other two were, else them Words be not true, *That there is three that bear Record on Earth.*

29. For if God which is in Heaven doth act the Record of the Spirit himself, and Men acted the other two, then there is but two Records on Earth, and four Records in Heaven.

30. When they heard this, they rejoiced, and said to the Man that disputed with me, *Mr. Bennet*, We think you have met with one that is two hard for you now.



## C H A P XII.

*The Interpretation of the third Record on Earth, the Record of the Spirit, and who it is acted by.*

1. **T**HEN, said I, the Record of the Spirit upon Earth must be acted by Men, as the other two were. Now, said I, there must be Witnesses of the Spirit upon Earth, as there was Witnesses of Water and Blood:

2. And some Men must be the chief Teachers or Commissioners, as he did *Moses* and the Prophets, Christ and the Apostles; these were chosen of God, and happy was it for those that believed them in their Time.

3. Now, said I, God chose *John Reeve* and myself by Voice of Words, to the hearing of the Ear, to be his two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, and he gave us Understanding of his Mind in the Scriptures, above all the Men in the World at this Day.



4. And this I know to be true, and many that can witness the same: I spake not this out of any Pride of Heart, but out of perfect Knowledge; for true Knowledge is never Proud.

5. For I would make nothing of the greatest learned Man that is upon the Earth, if he will dispute of the Scripture in the *English Tongue*; and not persecute with a Sword of Steel, to overthrow him by the Scriptures, that there is but one true God in the Person of a Man, who made Man in his own Image and Likeness, as the Scriptures saith; and not three Persons and one God, as all Professors of Religion do own at this Day.

6. Also we being the third Record of the Spirit upon Earth, we use no outward visible Forms of Worship, but do worship God in Spirit and Truth, as Christ said.

7. So that every Record on Earth doth differ one from another, in point of Worship.

8. For it is not proper for every Record to act one and the same thing, over and over again: And as there is a difference in the three Titles, called three Records in Heaven, of Father, Word, and Spirit; now these are three distinct Titles, yet but one God.

9. So it is with the three Records on Earth, of Water, Blood, and Spirit: These be three distinct Records, and three distinct Persons; the head of these three distinct Records: And there is three distinct differences, in their visible Worships, yet they all three agree in one.

10. In witnessing to that one Jesus Christ, to be the very true God, and Saviour of all those that believe in that the Word was God. And God was that Word, and the Word became Flesh, and dwelt among Men: He that is called the *Alpha* and *Omega*, the *First* and the *Last*; the *Beginning* and the *End*; He that was Dead and is Alive for Evermore.

11. This one God, doth all the three Records agree, to witness unto this one God, though differing all of them, in their several Dispensations of outward Worship, as aforesaid.

12. For

12. For every Record acts his part upon this Earth, suitable to the three Titles in Heaven; *Moses* and the Prophets, their parts in the dispensation of Water, as being under the Title of God the Father, and Creator of all Things.

13. Christ and the Apostles acted their Commission of the Blood, under the Title of the Redeemer, by his own Blood; and he was that Word made Flesh, and dwelt among Men.

14. And now we the Witneses of the Spirit, do act a spiritual Record on Earth, which is to worship God in Spirit and Truth, answerable to the Title of Spirit in Heaven.

15. In witnessing to that one Personal God, though three Titles, of Father, Word, and Spirit; yet but one Personal God.

16. So that the three Records on Earth do agree in one, though they differ in their outward Dispensations of Worship as aforesaid; so that we the Witneses, do act our Part on Earth, under the Title of the Holy Spirit in Heaven; therefore our Worship is Spiritual and Invisibile, in the Heart only.

17. And now you see, I have prov'd by Scripture, that the Commission of the Spirit is now Extant upon the Earth, and acted by Men like yourselves, even by *John Reeve*, and myself, and those that believe our Doctrine.

18. Said I, Do you believe me now? I have proved by Scripture, that I am one of the two last Prophets and Witneses of the Spirit, or last Record on Earth.

19. He answered and said, That he could not gain-say any thing that I had spoken, but did approve of what I had said, better than of any that ever he heard in his Life, but said he could not venture his Salvation upon my Words.

20. Then said the Sheriff's Men, and the Keeper of the Prison, Now, Mr. *Benet*, you have met with your Match, one that hath answered you all Things.

21. Then said Mr. *Benet*, suffer me to ask you one Question more,

22. What

22. What is that said I?

23. Why, faith he, I have been a long time of the Opinion, that the Soul of Man is mortal, and doth Die, but I cannot satisfy myself in it.

24. I answered and said, your Opinion was true, for the Soul of Man is Mortal and doth Die, for nothing doth Live but the Soul; for it is the Soul that Eats and Drinks, and Walks and Talks; and the Soul that Lives and Dies; for nothing can be said to Die but Life: For if the Body be Dead, the Soul or Life is Dead also; for the Body and Soul is all one Being, and if one be Alive, both are Alive; and if one be Dead, both are Dead.

25. For both Body and Soul came into the World together, for the Soul is begotten by Generation, as well as the Body; so that they go both Body and Soul, out of the World together: For that Life that is begot by Procreation must Die, which all Souls are, and not by Infusion from God, but by that very Law that said, Increase and Multiply.

26. Therefore the Soul or Life of Man, and all Things else, that is begotten by Generation must Die, as well as their Bodies.

27. When he heard this, he was very much taken with my Answer, and seemed very Respective to me, and so did the Sheriff's Men, they shew'd themselves very Civil.

28. This Dispute was upon the *Sunday* before the Assizes, for that began on the *Monday* following, a matter of four Hours in the Afternoon this Dispute was.



## C H A P. XIII.

*The Prophet's Arraignment, and Examin'd by the Judge; And he required of the Judge to take Bail, the Judge granted it. The Mayor, Aldermen and Recorder that Committed him, saw their Folly and Madnes, and were asham'd of themselves. How the Prophet had the Love of all the Prisoners. Of his Printing of the whole Book of the Revelation, &c.*

1. **A**FTER this Dispute aforefaid, upon the *Wednesday* following, being the last Day of the Affizes, I was call'd before the Bar: And when I came before the Bar,

2. The Judge asked me, if I would be try'd by this Note of Examination.

3. I answered No, and said, I thought your Honour would have accepted of Bail for my Appearance the next Affizes; for *Mrs. Carter* had deliver'd the Judge a Writing, to that Purpose, of mine, the Day before; and the Judge, his Name was *Ferral*.

4. The Judge answered and said, that he would take Bail, but had said to her, he would see the Man; so when I asked him at the Bar to take Bail, the Judge said, he would, and asked me who they were.

5. And I said, one is *Richard Sudbury*; He asked where he Liv'd, I said, at *Nottingham*; He asked what Trade, I said, an Ironmonger. Then *Richard Sudbury* was call'd, and the Judge asked him, whether he would be bound for my Appearance the next Affizes: He said, he would; then the Judge commanded him to be fet down for one.

6. Then said the Judge, there must be another; then said I, there is one *Edward Fewterer*; where Liveth he said the Judge?

I said

I said, at *Chesterfield*; what Trade said the Judge? I said, a Surgeon; then the Judge commanded *Edward Fewterer* to be called; then the Judge asked him, whether he would be bound in two Hundred Pound Bond, for this Man's Appearance: He said, he would.

7. Then spake one of the Aldermen of the Town: If it shall please your Honour, Mr. *Fewterer* is not capable to be his Bail; why said the Judge? said he, Because he is an excommunicated Person; said the Judge, What was he excommunicated for? said he, For not coming to Church. Said the Judge, How long hath he been excommunicated? He said, but last *Sunday*. Puth, said the Judge, that signifies nothing, except it was for the cause of Adultery; set him down to be Bail.

8. Then the Mayor, Recorder, and Aldermen, all of them were ashamed and vexed, they could do me no further Mischief, than Imprisonment.

9. And when I was Bail'd out of Prison, the Mayor and Constable, and the rest, were afraid I would trouble them.

10. The Mayor, for committing me to Prison, without any Accusers, and denying to take Bail for me, and for not binding some over for to Prosecute against me, which Things he did not, but was in Danger to pay Five Pound a Day, for false Imprisonment.

11. And the Constable was like to suffer for Apprehending me, without a Warrant.

12. I was Councelled to sue them at the Law, and so I would, if they had put in any Indictment against me, but they were afraid, and did nothing but let it fall.

13. So I was quit, only it put me to a great deal of Charge, but seeing they put no Indictment against me, I let it pass, and fall.

14. *Dorothy Carter* and Mr. *Sudbury*, were great Friends in this Business, both in Purse and Person; because I was taken  
at

at her House, and she brought me from *Darby Goal*, to her own House again on Horse back, which is sixteen long Miles.

15. I had the Love of all the Prisoners, on that side I was put, and they said, They thought themselves blessed for my Sake.

16. For they were every one of them, that were with me, free'd without any Punishment, only the Fees of the Prison: I was in Prison in *Darby Goal* but nine Days, but this falling out so quickly after I was Married to my Wife *Mary*, it was some grief to her, but being delivered so quickly, she was pacified the better.

17. This was a Year of great Trouble to me, both upon a spiritual Account, as afore written, and upon a temporal, which I shall not mention.

18. This was in the 13th Year of my Commission, and in the 54th Year of my Life, and in the Year of the Lord 1664.

19. After this I wrote a Book, containing 32 sheets of Paper, called, *The Interpretation of the whole Book of the Revelations of Saint John*, the biggest Volume of all the Books that were written by us.

20. Also I wrote a Letter after that to *Thomas Tayler*, a Quaker, containing two sheets of Paper: And in the Year 1665, I got them both Printed; they are yet to be seen by many.

---

*The End of the Third Part.*

---

\*\*\*\*\*


## The Fourth Part.

*From the Year 1665, to the Year 1670.*

---

### C H A P. I.

*The Propbet's Travels into Kent. Of Judge  
Twisden; and of the Propbet's Letter to him.  
Of the increase of Believers.*

1. FTER this I travelled into *Kent*, to see my  
Wife's Friends, and there I had like to have  
been apprehended by the Judge of the Town,  
his Name was *Twisden*; but I having intelligence  
of his wicked Intent, I escaped away out of his Coasts.

2. And I wrote a Letter to him, forbidding him for perfe-  
cuting any Man for his Conscience: For tho' he was made a  
Judge of the Law in temporal Matters, yet he was not the Judge  
of Conscience, nor of spiritual Matters.

3. Therefore I advised him to meddle with those Things  
he knows, as the Laws of the Land, and not with those Things  
that belongs to God, as the Conscience doth.

4. For God only is the Judge of spiritual Things, and them  
whom he doth chuse, leaft you bring yourself under the sentance  
of eternal Damnation. This Letter is large, but not in Print,  
but is yet to be seen in Writing.

5. He

5. He was nettled in his Mind at it, but knew not how to help himself; so he brought the Letter in his Hand to my Wife's Mother's House, and asked her, if she thought he should be ever the worse, if he did Persecute me, on purpose to ensnare her, because she did not go to Church, and was under his Power, for he was the cruelest Devil to all professors of Religion, that did not conform to Worship as he did, that was in all that Country: Also he would have had a Book of her, that he might have done me the more Mischief; but I charged her before to let him have none, nor none in that Town should let him have one.

6. Also I told him in the Letter, that if he would send to me at *London*, and send Money, I would let him have half a Dozen of Books, several, but without Money he should have none, for they cost a great deal of Monies Printing; but he never sent for any, but threat'ned my Mother, that if ever I came there any more to deceive People, as he called it, that he would do great Matters to me, so he went his way, and never came there more, as I heard of.

7. Now by this time there was many Men and Women that did believe in this Commission of the Spirit, and the Doctrine of the true personal God was received by several Persons of Quality, so that many were added to the Faith; some I shall name.

8. *First*, One Mrs. *Feild*, who lived in *Wales*, she was counted a Lady in that Country; and one Mrs. *Sbarte*, a Draper's Wife, in *Cannon-breet*. This *Sarab Sbarte*, she sent for me several times, to speak with her, but the Messenger missed of me so oft, that she thought herself forsaken of God, that she could not speak with me.

9. For she had kept her House several Years, of a Weakness she had in her Body, so that she could not go forth, nor come to me herself; so she seeing none of them she sent could meet with me, she grew out of Patience, and could not Sleep till she had seen me.



10. So she desired her Husband to go himself in the Morning betimes, before I was gone out; so he did, and he engaged me to come to his Wife about Two of the Clock in the Afternoon, the same Day, for she had a great desire to speak with me.

11. So at the time appointed I went, and she was glad to see me, who had desired it a long time; and when she had seen me, and had discoursed with me about spiritual and heavenly Things, concerning God, his Form, and Nature; the right Devil, his Form and Nature; the Person and Nature of Angels; the Place and Nature of Hell; the Place and Nature of Heaven; the Rise of the two Seeds, and of the Fall of *Adam*.

12. And how every Man came to have two Voices, or Motions, speaking in Man: These were all heavenly Secrets, and hidden from the World, which I declared unto her, so that she was very well satisfied in her Mind, and she desired that I would come often to her, which I did always when she sent for me, not else; and she was a true Believer afterwards, and lived in the full assurance of her eternal Happiness after Death, all the Days of her Life.

13. And she had a Kinswoman, a Virgin, that waited upon her, by reading of the Books her Aunt had of mine by stealth, she became a true Believer, her Name was *Ann Loe*; and in process of time this *Ann Loe* Married one *William Hall*, a true Believer of this Commission of the Spirit.

14. And she did grow in Wisdom and Knowledge, in spiritual and heavenly Knowledge and Experience, and strong in Faith, more than her Aunt before her; and she was a great preserver of me, from the hands of my Enemies, when the King's Messengers sought after me, as will more appear hereafter.



## C H A P I I.

*Of one Captain Wildye, an honourable Man. And of one Mrs. Cowlye, of her Faith and Obedience of her Husband, and of her Son a University Scholar; and of his Convincment by the Prophet, both as to the Ministry, Law and Physick.*

1. **A**LSO there was one Captain *Wildye*, he was one of the Masters of *Trinity-House*, an honourable Place: For that *Trinity-House* is a Court for the ordering of Shipping, and Seamen: This Captain *Wildye* became a very true Believer of this Commission of the Spirit, and he shewed a great deal of Charity to several poor Believers of this Faith, more than any particular Person in his Time.

2. Also he was the occasion of bringing to this Faith, one *Ann Cowlye*, a Gentlewoman at *Mile-End-Green*. She was carried through several Principles of Religion, as *Independant*, *Quaker*, and *Virgin-Life-People*. She was zealous in all things she came unto, being very desirous to be Saved, and afraid to be Damn'd.

3. She was in the Principle of a *Virgin-Life*, and would not let her Husband know her in twelve Years, before she saw me, notwithstanding she had borne several Children by this Man, and had one Son and one Daughter living by him.

4. But after she came to be acquainted with me, I convinced her both by Scripture, and Reason, of the unlawfulness of a Married Wife, to live a *Virgin-Life*, and that she could not possibly have Peace, as to another Life, in that Practice; and I advised her to give herself up to her Husband, else I could not give Judgment of Blessedness upon her to Eternity.

5. She being troubled at this saying of mine, was forced to yield to her Husband, which thing she thought an Angel from Heaven could not have persuaded her to do.

6. But

6. But the Words of a Prophet was of great Power, whose Word she could not resist, but obeyed his Voice, and had peace of Mind, and the blessing of eternal Life in herself, and she grew very zealous for the Commission of the Spirit, and contended for the Faith very much; and this thing wrought upon her by the Word of a Prophet.

7. This caused her Husband to believe also, and he was a very wife and prudent Man of the *Independent* People, who had been a Preacher among them; he became a very knowing Man in the Faith, also his Son and his Daughter became both true Believers of this Commission of the Spirit.

8. His Son, *John Cowlye*, was well Bred; he was brought up at the University of *Cambridge*, his Learning cost his Father many hundred Pounds, and when he was to receive some Benefit or Livelyhood for the future, for all the Cost past, the Benefice was, to be ordain'd a Minister, or a Doctor of Physick, or a Lawyer; these three be the most honourable things in this World.

9. But when he came to speak with me, I convinced him of the unlawfulness of all the three, for any Saint, or God's Elect, to undertake that Practice.

10. The seed of the Serpent were the fittest Men to take them Practices upon them, because all the Kingdoms of this World is given into the hands of the seed of the Serpent, as the Devil said to Christ.

11. And these three sorts of Men are reputed by the seed of the Serpent, the most honourable Men of all, and are revered and subjected unto, both by Princes and common People, yet the greatest Cheats that is in this World, as will appear.

12. *First*, I shewed him how dangerous a thing it was to take upon him to be a Minister of Christ, without a Commission from God, it would be counted by him spiritual High-Treason; for Ministers are in more danger of eternal Damnation than any other Men, for going to Preach, and are not sent of God.

13. For

13. For when they shall say in the Conscience at that Day, *Lord, we have preached in thy Name, and prayed in thy Name. and cast out Devils in thy Name,*

14. The answer of God in the Conscience will say, *Depart from me you Workers of Iniquity, I know you not.* And why did not God know them? Because he did not send them! So that preaching and praying as a Minister, without a Commission from Christ, is counted but a Work of Iniquity.

15. And as for the Doctors of Physick, they are the greatest Cheats, upon a natural Account, that is in the World. They cheat the People of their Money, and of their Health; for they are in the original, but atheistical Witches, and it would be good if there were never a Doctor of Physick in the World, People would live longer, and live better in Health.

16. For God never appointed any Doctor of Physick, but he appointed Nature to preserve Nature.

17. But through the wicked, intemperate Life of Man, it hath brought a necessity of Doctors of Physick.

18. But those People that go to a Doctor of Physick to get Health, he goeth to a Witch to seek his Health, even as a Man that is troubled in Mind, seeketh unto a Witch that hath a familiar Spirit, for Satisfaction, as did King *Saul*.

19. But when the Conscience of the Doctor of Physick shall be opened at the last Day, he shall say, Lord, We did not think that there were any God at all, but Nature only, therefore our Minds fed upon Gold and Silver that groweth in the Earth, that we might cloath ourselves in rich Apparel, that might make us honourable among great Men of the Earth, and revered by the Poor; not thinking, in the least, that there was any better Heaven hereafter, or any punishment after Death, for practising this Cheat, that is Authorized by the Powers of the Nations.

20. And tho' we have done a great deal of hurt, yet, Lord, we have done some good; we have cast out many Devils in  
Drunk-

Drunkards and Whoremasters, and Whores, who by their Wickedness have procured that Pox, which no righteous Man could Cure; we have made them leave off that Practice by our Medicines and Advice, and from Drunkenness, and have lived a sober Life afterwards, and many devilish Diseases have we cast out by our Spirits of Witchcraft, which we have given them to drink.

21. But the answer in the Conscience will say, Inasmuch as you forsake me, the living God and Creator of all Things; and said in your Hearts, There is no God, then you gave yourselves up to natural Witchcraft, diving into the nature of the Planets and Stars, and into the Spirit of the Herbs of the Field, so that you became absolute Witches yourselves, and you have caused Thousands of Men and Women to be bewitched by you, both in their Bodies, Souls and Estates.

22. Therefore depart from me you atheistical workers of Iniquity, into utter Darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of Teeth for evermore.

23. And as for the Lawyers, they keep the Keys of the Knowledge of the Law, and will neither enter into Truth and Honesty themselves, nor suffer others to enter in that would.

24. For no Man can do any thing in his own Cause, but as his Lawyer instructs him; for he is Sworn when he enters into that Practice, he hath a Commission to keep the knowledge of the Law from his Clyant, so that the Clyant being ignorant how to proceed in Law, Step by Step, the innocent Clyant his Cause is many times put off and neglected by his Lawyer, to the great Discontent and further Charge of the innocent and just Cause.

25. And as for the Poor, they can have no Law at all, tho' his Cause be ever so just, no Judge will hear him, nor no Lawyer will give him any Council, except he hath Monies in his Hand; nor no Judge will do the Poor any Justice, except he go in the way of the Law, and that the Poor cannot do.

26. So that if the Birthright of the Poor be ever so great, or just, it must be lost, for want of Monies to see Lawyers:  
Besides,

Besides, where Monies is to be had, let a Man's Cause be never so unjust, yet Lawyers will undertake it, though they know certainly that their Clyant will be overthrown, before they took it in hand : This is Wickedness in a high degree, so contrary to the Law written in Man's Heart, To do as he would be done unto.

27. But the Government of this World hath brought a necessity of the use of Lawyers ; but it is not expedient that any Saint should take that Practice upon them, there is enough of them in the World, it being the Devil's Kingdom.

28. But when the Book of Conscience, the Law written in the Lawyer's Heart, is opened, at the last Day, what can they plead for themselves ?

29. They will say, Lord, we thought, because it was the Government of the Nation, and that Learning of the Knowledge of the Law it made us rich and honourable among Men ; it made us Companions for the wise and great Men of the World ; the Knowledge of the Law it made us Attorneys, Councillors and Serjeants at Law, honourable Places, and by degrees we came to be Judges of the Land.

30. So that Kings and Princes have asked Counsel at our Lips, we have cloathed ourselves with fine Scarlet and white Robes, signifying Justice and Mercy to the People : We have been as Gods upon the Earth, and we have done Justice to some in all our Degrees, tho' we have failed in others, therefore hope for Mercy.

31. But the answer in the Conscience will say, In as much as you have fed upon Riches and Honour all your Days, and have not walked by the Law written in your Hearts, To do as you would have been done unto, had you been in their Condition, and they in yours ; but you have the Penny of this World, Riches and Honour, your Hearts Delight ; therefore depart you wicked Lawyers, workers of Iniquity, into utter Darkness, where is weeping and gnashing of Teeth for evermore.

Q

32. This

32. This I know will come to pass in these three sorts of Men, in that Day when God shall raise the Dead.

33. When the young Man heard these things, he left all Preferment that way, for Truths sake, and became a stedfast and true Believer, and he being a Scholar, was mighty able to oppose the Learned.

34. Also there was one *Robert Phare*, he was Governor of the City of *Cork* in *Ireland*, he was inclinable to be a *Quaker*; but after he saw me, and had read our Writings, he became a true Believer of this Commission of the Spirit, and so did the Lady his Wife: She became the chief Champion in this Faith of all the Women in that Nation.

35. Also he had four Sons and Daughters that were true Believers: He was the cause of many Persons of Value in that Kingdom of *Ireland*, that did truly Believe, as one Captain *Moss* and his Wife, and Doctor *Moss*, his Son; and Captain *Gaill*, and Major *Denson*, and *George Gamble*, and Mr. *Rogers*, Merchant; and several more, which I omit to name, because it would be too tedious, that were true Believers in that Kingdom of *Ireland*.

36. After this it came to pass that I wrote a Book in answer to *George Fox*, *Quaker*; containing twelve Sheets and a half of Paper, and got it printed in the Year 1668; and in the Seventeenth Year of my Commission, and in the Year of my Life 58.

37. This Book caused the *Quakers* to be exceedingly angry at me, and several Speakers of them to write cursed Letters unto me, and some of them came to discourse with me, and a woeful Effect did befall some of them a little while after, as is expressed in the Writing following.

The Copy of *Thomas Loe*, a *Quaker's* Letter, Dated  
London, 16th of the 7th Month, 1668.

**L** Odowick Muggleton, having seen some of thy Writings, more especially thy Book, Intituled, A Looking-Glass, which I have looked in, and do clearly see thy wicked, abominable, and anticristian Spirit;

*Spirit; and can do no less than cry, Ob! thou Blasphemer, thou Enemy of God, and of all Righteousness; thou Son of Perdition and Child of the Devil, how hast thou laboured to pervert the right Way of God, in speaking of the blessed Truth.*

*And, Ob! thou seed of the Serpent, and old Sorcerer, how hast thou belied, slandered, wickedly and falsely accused and condemned the Just? And now, be it known unto thee, That thy false Judgment and wicked Envy, both in speaking and writing against the Servants of the living God, is returned back upon thy own Head; and thee, with it, will God in his Fury and Indignation, sink in the pit of Darkness, from whence it hath risen. And in the great and mighty Power of God and Christ, I Reprove, Judge, and Condemn thee, which shall stand upon thy Head; and thy Power, thou boastest so of, shall not reverse it. Ob! ignorant Sot, how canst thou consider thy Blasphemies, and not be ashamed. This is a Testimony in the Power and Spirit of God, against thee, and all thy Wickedness, by a Servant of Jesus Christ, who am a Witness of the Spirit and Power of God, with many others.*

---

### C H A P. III.

*The Prophet's Answer to Thomas Loe's Letter. His Sentence, with the Effects of it. The Prophet's Dispute with George Whitehead and Josiah Cole. With his Sentence passed upon them both.*

1. **W**Hoever may read this Letter, let them understand thus much, that I never saw the Man, nor he me; but he reading the Book aforesaid, he was moved by the Light within him to send this cursed Letter unto me; whereupon, after I had read it, I sent him an answer to it, with the Sentence of eternal Damnation for his cursed Blasphemy. The Bearer staid for it 'till it was written, he being a Quaker, would not go without it.

2. But it came to pass the same Night that this Thomas Loe received his Sentence, in answer to his cursed Letter, he

Q 2

went



went to Bed sick, and never did rise more till he was carried to the Grave, which was almost three Weeks after; which is a clear Testimony that the Curse of God, the Man Christ Jesus, by his Messenger, doth take hold of the Quakers People, and more especially of their Ministry.

3. Because they are the absolute Spirit of Antichrist in this last Age, which teacheth the People to deny both Father and Son to become Flesh, and that the Father, nor the Son, hath no Person of his own distinct from Man, but denyeth a personal God in form like Man, his own Image.

4. For which cause hath the Wrath of this God overtaken several of these desperate Quakers, even of their Ministers or Preachers, hath been cut off this Earth, that they might not deceive People no more, nor incumber the Earth with their wicked Antichristian Spirit, which desieth the living God, who is in the form of Man, who made Man in his own Image.

### *Lodowick Muggleton.*

5. Upon the Sicknefs and Death of this *Thomas Loe*, Quaker, after the Sentence sent him, it caused several to discourse with me about it, therefore I shall relate some of the most remarkable Passages, and the Persons I discoursed with upon the 17th Day of *October* 1668. The Persons discoursed withal were *George Whitehead* and *Josiah Cole*, both Speakers of the Quakers.

6. *First*, The Words *Cole* spoke unto me are these, (saith he) Thou sayest God is in form of a Man, and thou sayest his Hand is not much bigger than thine or mine, and thou seeft what a little this Hand will hold. Yet (saith he) God is said to have measured the Waters in the hollow of his Hand, and behold the Nations are as a drop of a Bucket.

7. I answered and said, Do you believe God to be so big to hold the Waters in the hollow of his Hand? That is spoken in relation to his great Wisdom, Power and Dominion, as he is a  
 Creator,

Creator, not relating to the bigness of his Hand, but to the greatness of his Power, being infinite.

8. An earthly King may be said to be King of many Kingdoms, and that he hath brought the People of those Kingdoms to Obedience to his Law, by the strength of his own Arm; for Power or Strength is the right Hand of an earthly King.

9. Yet the King doth not hold all the People under his Arm, nor in the hollow of his Hand; but the People may be said to be under his Hand, and that he holds them in the hollow of his Hand, because his Power and Laws doth protect them, and keep them within Bounds, for a prerogative Power is great, but the Hand of a King is no bigger than the Hand of another Man, that hath no Power at all.

10. So it is God's prerogative Power that is above all Law, in setting Bounds to the Waters, and keeping the Waters within Bounds in the deep Places of the Earth; and so may be said, that God doth hold the Waters in the hollow of his Hand, that is, they are confined to a little Place of his Power in his Creation.

11. Also I said, that I that am but a mortal Man hath Power over such a great God whose Hand is so big; for that God, whose Hand is much bigger than thine or mine, I have Power to Condemn. This was passed by, and no Reply made by them.

12. Then spake *Whitehead*, and said, He did hear that I had cursed a Man, and he changing his Apparel, came afterwards and did procure a Blessing; and that this Man, or some other, did smite a pewter Pot upon my Head.

13. This, I said, was false, for never did any Man strike me over the Head with a Pot, in all my Life; it was that reprobate *Pope*, that damn'd Devil, that hath reported that he was blessed after he was cursed: It is a false Report, and he hath reported it several times amongst the Ranters and Quakers.

14. This *Pope* was a Ranter then, when he was cursed, which

which was about fifteen Years ago, in *John Reeve's* time, and he is a worse Ranter now than he was then, and that you Quakers know very well, and what a wicked, lustful Life he liveth now in, and yet you will rather believe the damn'd Devil, and wicked, lustful Person, than believe me, who have been kept innocent from the breach of any Law, from my Childhood to this Day.

15. But I know, you Quakers being of the same Nature and Seed of the Serpent, as those Jews were in Christ's Time, who desired of *Pilate*, that a Thief and a Murderer should be delivered from Death, rather than Jesus, the Saviour of all them that believe in him.

16. So is it with you, for you had rather believe this *Pope*, this notable Sinner, than to believe me, who am the Prophet of the most high God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory, and have Power given of God, as *Moses* had, to set Life and Death before you; but I know you do say in your Hearts, tho' not with your Lips, as those Jews did by Christ, Away with this *Muggleton*, let us have *Pope*, that wicked, lustful Man, that we might hear and enquire of him.

17. Then said *Josiah Cole*, Thou sayest thou art an Embassador in God's stead, and thou standest in his stead; said he, I would willingly do any thing that I might be saved.

18. Then I answered him and said, I will tell thee what I will say unto thee: If thou wilt but deny and forsake the Quakers Principles, and believe me, I will assure thee thou shalt as certainly be saved, as ever any Prophet or Apostle ever was.

19. Then *Cole* fell into a Fit, and waited upon his own Thoughts what to answer, and I waited for his answer.

20. But *George Whitehead* perceived that *Cole* was in a strait, he came unto me, and spied a Knot of Ribbon upon my Coat Sleeve, and said unto me, Why dost thou wear this Vanity? and touched the Ribbon with his Fingers.

21. I answered and said, I know a piece of Ribbon is a great Sin in a Quaker's Eye : But, said I, Why dost thou wear silk Buttons on both thy Coats ? He said, they were necessary : I said, No, thou mightest wear Hooks and Eyes, Clapfes or Eyletholes ; that was past by.

22. But then I will tell thee why I do wear Ribbon, it is on purpose that I might not be taken, or thought to be a Quaker, for I do hate the Quakers Principle.

23. With that *Whitehead* said, Thou hatest all Righteousness, and spake as if he himself, *Cole* and *Fox*, and others of the Quakers were writing a Book against me, to make me manifest, which in a little time after it was set forth by *William Pen*, a Quaker ; and further said, that they would post me up, and he slighted my Power and my God, and said, he would trample my God and my Power under his Feet as Dirt, and taped his Foot upon the Ground.

24. Whereupon I did pronounce *George Whitehead* cursed and damn'd Soul and Body to Eternity, and that God within him, which he trusted in, was cursed also, and so I ceased Discourse with him.

25. All this while *Cole* was in his Fit, and said not one word, but immediately after he uttered these Words, saith he, I have heard of several thou hast cursed ; but said he, I did not believe, had I not heard or seen, I could not have believed that a Man could have spoken so presumptuously.

26. Then said I, dare you say that I speak presumptuously, to *George Whitehead*, he said, he did believe it was Presumption.

27. Then said I, on the contrary, I do believe that thou art the seed of the Serpent, and wilt be Damn'd ; and now see whose Faith will be strongest, yours or mine ; for my Faith shall keep you down for ever.

28. Under what said *Cole* ?

29. Under eternal Damnation, said I.

30. Then said he, Dost thou ground thy Sentence upon my Belief.

31. Yea,

31. Yea, said I, I do, for you believe I speak presumptuously, and I do believe you to be the seed of the Serpent, and will be damn'd to Eternity.

32. Then said he, Dost thou judge this to be a final Sentence upon me? said I, Yea, what should it else be?

33. With that *Josiah Cole* rose up with great Zeal for his God within him, and said, I told thee before that I would try thee and thy God, saying, that they were setting forth a Writing against me, and withal *Cole* pronounced many Curfes upon me, with his Eyes dazzled with the witchcraft Power in him, being disturbed with my Words, it got up into his Head.

34. So that *Whitehead* and he both came near me with great Threat'nings and Judgments upon me, being both so full of Curfes: *Cole* curf'd me into utter Darknes, pit of Darknes, chains of Darknes, blacknes of Darknes, and that he would trample that God of mine, that was in the form of Man, under his Feet, as Dirt, and stamp'd his Foot upon the Ground, as the other Devil did: *Cole's* Curfes were much, what like *Thomas Loe*, his Curfes in his Letter to me.

35. But when *Cole* had done curfing, I said these Words unto him, That this Sentence that I had pass'd upon him should stick by him for ever, and that he should never put it out of his Mind, neither should he grow mad nor distracted to forget it, but should be sensible all the Days of his Life.

36. And when my God, whom you trampled under your Feet, shall raise you again at the last Day, which will not seem to you a quarter of an Hours time, you shall remember afresh my Words, what I said unto you in this Life to Eternity.

37. Many more Words was between us at that time, but these were the Words and Passages of most concernment at that time, and a final Judgment and Sentence of eternal Damnation, that I gave that Day upon *Josiah Cole*, and *George Whitehead*, Speakers of the Quakers.

## C H A P. IV.

*Of Cole's being sick unto Death immediately after the Sentence of his Testimony against the Propket. Of his Death. The Quakers God described; with the nature of Reason, and the Law that is written in it. Of William Pen's blasphemous Letter to the Propbet.*

1. **N**OW in some four or five Days time after our Dispute, I heard that *Josiah Cole* was sick, and going out of the Body: For the Quakers do not believe that their Souls do Die, but slips out of the Body.

2. This caused the Quakers People to visit him very much, to know of him, whether *Muggleton's* Words had taken place in him, wondering that he should go out of the Body so suddenly after *Muggleton's* Sentence, as *Thomas Loe* did after his Sentence. But he denyed very stiffly that my Words had no Power over him, but that he had left me in chains of Darknes.

3. Nevertheless he grew worse and worse, so that the Quakers were not satisfied, except he would go to the *Peal* in *St. John's-street*, at their Meeting-place, and give his Testimony against *Muggleton*, before the People, to satisfy the ignorant Quakers, else they would judge that his Power in *Loe* and him, was greater than the Ministry of the Quakers.

4. So they led him by the Arms to the place aforesaid, and *Josiah Cole* wrote his Testimony, as followeth, exactly word for word. For as much as I have been informed that *Lodowick Muggleton* hath vaunted concerning my departure out of the Body, because of his pretended Sentence of Damnation given against me, I am mov'd to leave this Testimony concerning him behind me; namely, That he is a Son of Darknes, and Coe-worker with the Prince of the bottomless Pit, in which his Inheritance shall be for ever, and the Judgment I passed on him when present with him, stands sealed by the Spirit of the Lord, by which I then declared to him, that in the Name of that God who spans out the Heavens with his span, and measures the

Waters with the hollow of his Hand, I bind thee here on Earth, and thou art bound in Heaven, and in the chain under Darknes, to the judgment of the great Day thou shalt be reserved ; and thy Faith and Strength thou boasteth of, I defy and trample under Foot. And I do hereby further declare the said *Lodowick* to be a false Prophet, in what he said to me at that time, who told me, that from thenceforth I should be always in fear of Damnation, which should be a sign to me that I was Damn'd ; which fear I was never in, so that his sign given by himself did not follow his Prophecy, which sufficiently declares him to be a false Prophet.

*Josiah Cole.*

5. This was given forth word for word by *Josiah Cole*, about three Hours before his departure out of the Body, the fiftenth of the Eleventh Month 68.

6. Whoever doth read this last Testimony of *Josiah Cole*, may easily see that the Curse I pronounced upon him by Commission, received from the Man Christ Jesus, the only wise God, blessed for ever, in the form of a Man, whom he despised and trampled under his Feet as Dirt.

7. For this very Sin, did this curse of this God pronounced by me, take effect upon him and *Thomas Loe*, immediately after their cursed Blasphemy against the true God.

8. I was zealous in giving Sentence upon them, in that I heard the true God was trampled under their Foot as Dirt.

9. As for their Reproaches, Lyes, Slanders, and Judgments threatened against me, I did not matter : For this I know the Quakers do believe, that *Loe* and *Cole's* Souls is not Dead, but slipt out of their Bodies, and gone you know not where, and into a Power you know not what.

10. But I said their Souls is where you laid their Bodies, they both came into this World together, they both despised the Truth together ; they, both Bodies and Souls received Judgment and Condemnation together, and both Died together,  
and

and were both Soul and Bodies buried together, and shall both rise again spiritual dark Bodies and Souls together.

11. Every seed its own Body; that seed of Reason which was their Life, which they thought was the divine Nature of God, but it was the Nature of the Devil and Serpent.

12. And the Law written in their Hearts, which you Quakers call the Light of Christ, or Christ in you, which is no other Christ or Light but the Law written in your Hearts; and the Light of the Law, which doth accuse and excuse the Conscience of every Man, you call the Light of Christ, yea Christ himself.

13. For this Light of the Law written in your Hearts, is that which doth cause your Thoughts to accuse when you do evil, and to excuse when you do well: And when God shall raise them again, that seed of Reason shall rise and bring a spiritual dark Body with it: And that Law which was written in their Hearts here in this Life, shall quicken again in that new dark spiritual Body.

14. And then shall they and you, despisers of a personal God, know that your own Souls, which you thought was the Life of God, but it was the Life of the Devil, and that yourselves were Devils, and that Law written in your Hearts, which you in this Life called the Light of Christ, and that was no other God or Christ but this Light within you.

15. But when this Law doth quicken again, as I said before, it will prove the only and alone Devil to torment you to Eternity; because you made the Light of this Law in your Hearts to be your only God; and by this Light of the Law you do fight against the true personal God, who created Man in his own Image and Likeness, and hath trampled him under your Feet as Dirt.

16. These things may seem strange, and as a Riddle unto you, and as a thing impossible, but with God all things is possible, which his own Will moves him unto.

17. And this I say, as it was possible for God to write the



Law in the Angels Natures, and by his secret Determination suffer one of these Angels to become very Man, and so the Angels Seed and Nature having conjunction with the Seed and Nature of *Eve*, which was of *Adam's* Nature, and so by Generation the Law comes to be written in every Man's Heart; in that every Man and Woman that is born into this World, is partaker of the Angel's Nature of Reason, and so comes to have this Law written in every Man's Heart.

18. Man finds it there accusing of him, but knows not how it came written there.

19. So it is as strange for you Quakers to believe, that God will raise your Souls again that were Dead, how they should quicken out of Death, by the Power of that God that made all Souls to live at the first: In as much as he made all Things by the Power of his Word in the Beginning.

20. So by the same Power of his Word he shall quicken the Souls of Men and Women again out of Death, to Life again at the last Day; and the Law that was written in them shall quicken also, and be alive again in you, to torment you to Eternity.

21. For the Law and your Souls shall never part one from the other; for as the Law is secretly written in your Hearts, but originally in the Reprobate; so by God's secret Decree and Power, he will revive that Law again in that reprobate seed of Reason, as in *Thomas Loe*, *Josiah Cole*, *George Whitehead*, *William Pen*, and many of you Speakers of the Quakers, and others of your Brethren, who are under the Judgment and Sentence of this Commission of the Spirit. You shall find my Words to be true upon you, and over you, to Eternity; neither shall you be delivered from it.

22. For if I had but any thought of Compassion towards you in my Mind, it was answered me, That there is a necessity that there should be enmity between the seed of the Woman, and the seed of the Serpent, which hardened my Heart against all despisers of a personal God, in the form of Man.

*Lodowick Muggleton.*

22. After

23. After this, in the same Year, came another thundering Letter, from a Lyon-like Quaker, being a learned Man brought up at the University; his Name is *William Pen*; here is the Copy of it *verbatim*.

**L**ODOWICK MUGGLETON, having had a deep and serious sense of thy insulting Spirit, over the Death of that valiant and painful Servant of the most high God, *Josiah Cole*, as if it were the effect of thy solely Curse; who, alas! for these twelve Years, hath in these Nations and Isles abroad, in all Straits, Difficulties, and hard Sufferings, been an incessant Labourer for the Lord, and so impaired his Health, that within these twelve Months, or little more, have I known him five times Sick, and three even unto Death, before he had ever seen thy Face: I say being sensible of thy Vaunts, and it now being laid upon me,

Therefore once more I come in the name and authority of that dreadful Majesty, which fills Heaven and Earth, to speak on this wise: Boast not, thou enemy of God, thou Son of Perdition, and Confederate with the unclean, croaking Spirits, reserved under Chains to eternal Darkness; for in the everlasting glorious Light thou despisest, thou art seen arraigned, tryed, condemned and sentenced, for a lying Spirit, and false Prophet, who having counterfeited the Commission and Seal of that God, whom the Heaven cannot contain, hath bewitched a few poor silly Souls; but their Blood, Oh! *Muggleton*, lies at thy Door, and the wrath of the Almighty is kindled against thee, and his eternal Power in his Servants the Quakers came, whom thou hast past thy envious Curse, shall suddenly grind thee to Powder; and as formerly, so again, on the Behalf of the God of the Quakers whom I worship.

I boldly challenge thee, with thy six-foot God, and all the Host of luciferian Spirits, with all your Commissions, Curses, and Sentances, to touch or hurt me; practice your Skill and Power! Behold I stand in a holy Desiance of all your Enmity and Strength: And this know, Oh! *Muggleton*, with thy God art chained, by the Spirit of the Lord, and on you I trample  
in

in his everlasting Dominion, and to the bottomless Pit are you sentenced, from whence you came, and where the endless Worm shall know and torture your imaginary Soul to Eternity.

Written, signed, and sealed by Commission, received about the first Hour of the eleventh Morning, of the twelfth Month 1688, from the glorious Majesty of the most high God, who fills Heaven and Earth, that lives in his Servant,

*William Pen, Junior.*

XX

## C H A P V.

*The Answer of Lodowick Muggleton to William Pen, Quaker; his proud, presumptuous and blasphemous Letter.*

1. **W**ILLIAM PEN, I have perused your proud, presumptuous, blasphemous Letter, against the true God; how hath your Learning lifted up your Heart with Pride, to fight against the true God, and to bid him defiance to his Face, and let him stand forth and see if he can deliver himself from your bodiless God, that gave you a Commission, as you say.

2. You know that *Reeve* and myself have declared in all our Writings, that the Lord Jesus Christ is our God, and that the Worlds were made by him, and that nothing was made in the Beginning, but what was made by him, as the Scripture saith.

3. This Man Christ Jesus was in the form of Man, a spiritual, heavenly and glorious Body, before this World was.

4. And in the beginning, this glorious, spiritual Body made Man in his own Image and Likeness, the form of Man; else *Moses's* Words were not true; do you disprove it if you can.

5. Only the Man *Adam*, his Body was earthly, and made of the Earth; but God's Body was spiritual and heavenly, yet in form like *Adam*; and *Adam* was a Man, which none can deny that owns the Scriptures.

6. And

6. And in process of time this God became Flesh, and dwelt among Men, and that he took upon him the form of a Servant, and was in all things like unto Man, Sin excepted, and made himself capable to be put to Death, by the seed of the Serpent, his own Creatures; his Blood was poured out unto Death, for the Redemption of the seed of *Adam*, to make good that promise to *Adam* in Paradise, *That the seed of the Woman should break the Serpent's Head*; which was fulfilled when he suffered Death upon the Cross.

7. And when he quickened out of Death into Life again, then was that saying fulfilled, Oh! Death, I will be thy Death, Oh! Grave, I will be thy Victory. And that other saying, I am *Alpha* and *Omega*, the *First* and the *Last*; he that was Dead, and behold I am Alive for evermore.

8. This *Alpha* and *Omega* was Christ, and he was God; and this Christ was the Lord from Heaven, a quickening Spirit. And was there any other God, or *Alpha* or *Omega* that Died, but Christ! And did any quicken out of Death to Life again but he! And did any God become Flesh and dwell with Man, but Christ.

9. And was not Christ in the form of Man when on Earth! did not he retain the same form when he ascended up to Heaven, and doth retain the same Form now he is glorified, and is in the same Glory which he had before this World was.

10. Oh! *Pen*, How is it that you cannot understand that Eternity did become Time, and Time is become Eternity again. That is, that spiritual and glorious immortal Body of God, that was eternal before Man was made; but in the fulness of time, this glorious immortal Body became a pure mortal Body, even Jesus Christ, capable to Die, so Eternity became Time; and in that he quickened out of Death into Life again; Mortality became Immortal again, and Time became Eternity again.

11. This great mystery, That God became Flesh, is hid from the Eyes of the seed of the Serpent, such as *William Pen* the Quaker is, and revealed unto us unlearned Men.

12. And

12. And this is that God that *Reeve* and *Muggleton* hath declared in our Writings, and this God we received our Commission from, and that Power to bleſs and curſe to Eternity.

13. This God you have proudly and blaſphemouſly deſied and trampled under your Feet as Dirt; alſo you have boldly challenged the true and living God, that is in the form of Man, to touch or hurt you, and ſtand in a holy defiance of me, and my God's Strength, and that me and my God is chained, and on me and my God you trample, and to the bottomleſs Pit you have ſentenced us, both me and my God: And if this be not high Blaſphemy, Pride and Preſumption, againſt the living God, there never was any.

14. Oh! *Pen*, Did you never read how *Goliab* deſied the living God, the God of *Iſrael*; and how *David* flung a Stone into his Forehead and ſlew him, for deſying the living God, the God of *Iſrael*. For *David* knew the God of *Iſrael* was in the form of a Man, but *Goliab* his God was the ſame God, as the Quakers God is, a bodileſs God, ſo vaſt and ſo big that he cannot be confined, neither to the vaſt Heavens above, nor in this vaſt Earth below, but he muſt fill the Air alſo. and all Places at one and the ſame time. This is the Heathens God, and the Quakers God alſo.

15. Did you never read of *Korab* and his Company, Captains of Rebellion and Conſpiracy againſt *Mofes* and *Aaron*. and againſt God that choſe them to teach the People; neither would God ſuffer any other Men to do it but them he choſe; therefore it was the Earth clave and ſwallowed them all up alive.

16. Now you *Pen*, and many of you Quakers have praſticed the ſame thing againſt *Reeve* and *Muggleton*, whom the God of Heaven hath choſen in particular, and no other Man upon Earth at this Day, to ſet Life and Death before Men.

17. Now hath not you, and your Captain Teachers of the Quakers, railed, reviled, reproached, and condemned *Reeve* and *Muggleton*, and our God the Man Chriſt Jeſus in Glory, becauſe we had our Commission from him to open Hells Mouth, and ſwallow up ſuch Rebels as you are, into thoſe eternal torments,  
where

where the Worm of Conscience shall never Die, nor the Fire of Hell never go out, for your despising the living God in the form of a Man; which you Quakers have done, and are more guilty than any People in the World.

18. Neither are you sensible of the great effects that this Commission God gave to *Reeve* and *Muggleton* hath wrought; how many of your valiant Captains, and mighty Men of War have fallen by the two-edged Sword of the Spirit put into my Mouth, even the Commission God put upon me.

19. Do not you miss many of your Captains and Leaders of the Quakers? What is become of *William Smith*, *Samuel Hulston*, *Thomas Taylor*, *Richard Farnsworth*, and many more I could name here of late Years? Do you not miss *Thomas Loe*, and *Josiah Cole*? These were valiant Men, like yourself, to reprech and defy the living God.

20. Are you not sensible how the curse of God took hold of them suddenly, after they had defied the living God, in the form of a Man.

21. And now, last of all, you come like *Goliab* the *Philistine*, with a Commission from a great bodiless God, that can neither be found, neither in Heaven, nor in Earth, nor no Place else; signed and sealed, to defy the living God that made Man in his own Image and Likeness.

22. As, first, you have proudly challenged me and my six foot God, with our Commissions, to touch or hurt you. Secondly, You say you stand in a holy Defiance of all our Strength. And Thirdly, You say, know, Oh! *Muggleton*, with thy God art chained, and on you I trample, and to the bottomless Pit are you sentanced, where the endless Worm shall knaw and torture your Soul to Eternity.

23. For those wicked, proud, presumptuous, blasphemous Speeches, not only against me, but against the living God, as your two Brethren did before you; therefore in Obedience to my Commission from the true God, I do pronounce *William Pen*, Quaker, cursed and damn'd, both Soul and Body, from the presence of God, elect Men and Angels, to Eternity.

24. I thought good to leave this upon record, that the Age to come may be instructed, and take heed how they despise Prophets, and that God that sent him.

Written by *Lodowick Muggleton*, one of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, unto the high and mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory, *March* the 16th, 1668.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of the Prophets Travels into Cambridge, Leicester, Nottingham, and Darbyshire, to visit Friends there.*

1. **A**FTER this it came to pass in the Year 1669, and in the Year 1670. In these two Years I had a great deal of trouble, both upon a spiritual and a temporal Account; but in the beginning of the Year 1669, in the Month of *April*, before my troubles began, I had a desire to travel into several Countries, to visit Friends there.

2. And there was one *James Whitebead*, who lived in *Brain-tree*, in *Essex*, a true Believer, and a Man of an Estate in this World; he was of the Independant People before he came to believe in this Commission of the Spirit; he had a desire to visit Friends of this Faith in other Countries, because he had never seen them, so he was willing to bear me Company.

3. I went this Journey in secret, and let no Believer in *London* know of it, but my Wife only.

4. I appointed *James Whitebead* to meet me at *Ware*, and so he did, and we went from thence to *Cambridge*, and we stayed there three Days with Friends at *William Dickinson's* House, for I had many Friends in that Town and Country about, and they were very glad to see us, and entreated us kindly,

5. So we departed after three Days from thence to *Leicestershire*, which was forty Miles from *Cambridge*, and in two Days we came to some Friends in *Leicestershire*, where were several Believers which I had never seen before.

6. And

6. And we lodged at one *John Hall's* House, a Farmer, where was kind Entertainment, both for ourselves and Horses; and the Mother of this *John Hall* was a true Believer, and she had three Sons that were true Believers of this Commission of the Spirit; but they knew nothing of my Journey before-hand.

7. But they entreated us exceeding kindly, and was exceedingly rejoiced to see us, because they had never seen us before, though much desired; and coming upon them unawares, they having no Intelligence, it did amuse them the more.

8. Also there was one *John Sadington*, a true Believer; had a Sister hard by there, named *Lydia Brooks*, that did truly believe, and she rejoiced to see me, because she never saw me before, nor none of them there, tho' they had heard of me, by the hearing of the Ear; the Towns Name was *Armsby*, in *Leicestershire*.

9. We stayed there but two Days and departed, and journeyed towards *Nottingham*, there we came unawares to Mr. *Sudbury's*, and his Wife, and *Mary Parker*, a Sheriff's Wife of that Town; there were but those three Believers in that Town, and they kindly received us with much affection.

10. And *James Whitehead* departed from thence in two Days, and left me there, for to meet him at *Chesterfield*, in *Darbyshire*, which was twenty Miles from *Nottingham*, because he was to go forty Miles further about other Business, and was to call at *Chesterfield* as he came back.

11. Likewise he was to see if he could enquire in his Journey for one *Thomas Tomkinson*, a true Believer, and a great Writer in the vindication of this Faith; he lived at *Sladebouse*, in *Staffordshire*.

12. He did in his Journey enquire for *Sladebouse*, and the name of our Friend, but could not hear neither of the Place, nor of the Man, nor could not hear that any knew *Sladebouse*, or *Thomas Tomkinson*, he not travelling within twelve Miles of the Place.

13. So he missed of him, which was a great trouble to us



all when he came back to *Cbeſterfield*, and told it to us, we were much troubled.

14. For I did fully expect he had found him, becauſe he ſtayed two Days longer than was intended.

15. But it was an exceeding great trouble to him that he ſhould miſs of the Sight of us, being ſo near; and many more in that Country had an earneſt Deſire to ſee me, for I had not then ever been in that Country.

16. And when it was too late, he did hear by one *Alexander De'amaïne*, a true Friend at *London*, and a great writer in vindication of this Commiſſion of the Spirit; for as ſoon as ever he heard that I had ſtolen away out of *London* into the Country, and none in *London* knew of it; for it was above a Week afterwards before he heard I was gone, for he heard from ſome in the Country where we had been.

17. So he ſent *Thomas Tomkinſon* Word by the Poſt, that I and my Friend were ſome where in thoſe parts of the Country; ſo *Tomkinſon* went immediately to *Bakewell*, a Market Town, where one of our Friends ſaw me at *Cbeſterfield*, his Name was *William Newcome*, a Bookſeller, who lived at *Darby*, but was every *Saturday* at *Cbeſterfield* Market, and at *Bakewell* Market on the *Monday*.

18. And he told our Friend *Tomkinſon*, that I and my Friend Mr. *Whitehead* departed from *Cbeſterfield* that *Monday* Morning, and that he ſaw us take leave of Mrs. *Carter* and her Daughter, as alſo *Elizabeth Smith*, and other Friends at *Cbeſterfield*, for to go by *Nottingham*, and from thence, on *Tuesday*, they ſaid they would go for *London*, the ſame Way they came, and call of the ſame Friends.

19. And when our Friend *Tomkinſon* heard this, and that it was too late to meet with us, neither at *Cbeſterfield*, nor *Nottingham* neither, he was exceedingly troubled, and liſt up his Voice and wept, and could not tell who to be angry with, himſelf, or with us.

20. So that he could not be pacified in his own Mind; 'till  
Patience

Patience had possess his Soul, until he heard from me the cause of that Misfortune.

21. For I depended wholly that Mr. *Whitehead* would have found him out; but it was such a cross Road that no Letter could be sent unto him but from *London*, except it were on purpose, so that I made no question but my Friend would have brought him along with him to *Chesterfield*, for he enquired, but could not hear of the Place, nor of the Man.

22. So all Intents were frustrated, which caused trouble of Mind to us all; for no People have greater Love to one another, than those of this Faith.

23. We were in this Journey, going and coming, and at Friends Houses, about five Weeks.

\*\*\*\*\*

## C H A P VII.

*The Propbet's House searched for Books. The Searcher's Civility. The Propbet acknowledges their Kindness, and after sent them a Gratiuity. A second search for Books, where several were taken. Of a great Rebellion that happened upon the Propbet's Absence.*

1. **A**FTER this, in the same Year 1669. I wrote two Books, the one of them was an Answer to Esq; *Penington*, a Quaker, who wrote a Book against me: And the other Book was the Interpretation of the Witch of *Endor*, and other Witches; and in the Winter I did endeavour to get them printed, and had agreed with two several Printers.

2. But it came to pass, that the Answer to *Penington* was taken in the Press, through some neglect of the Printer, when half a Sheet had been printed; but the Searcher of the Press, he being a violent Man, he made a great ado about it, and troubled the Printer, and put him to the charge of seven Pounds, and me five Pounds, to pacify the matter: But the Interpretation of the Witch of *Endor* escaped in the other Printer's Hands, and is now in print, and giveth great Satisfaction to many in that Point.

3. After

3. After this it came to pass, in the Year 1670, before *Mrdjummer*. there came fourteen Men to search my House, for unlicens'd Books; these Men were inform'd by the Printer, but they would not confess who sent them. There was three or four of the King's Messengers, and the Warden of the Stationer's Company, and Printers and Booksellers.

4. The Warden was very furly when my Wife ask'd what he would have: He bid her open the Door, else he would break it open: She said she would not, unless he would tell his Business. So he made no more ado, pulled the Hatch, and wrenched open the Spring Lock, and came running up Stairs so suddenly, that no Door in the House could be locked.

5. And being so many of them, they ran into every Room in the House, and they came into the upper Rooms where I was, and there they siezed upon ten Pounds-worth of Books, and were binding them up to carry away.

6. I said, I hope you are civil Gentlemen, there is nothing in the Books that is against King or State, and some of them were printed before the King came into *England*; and if you will be pleas'd to ask what Money you will, for your Pains and Civility, I will give it you.

7. Then said one of them, Do you think we will be bribed? Then said I, Who is the chief among you, that I may appeal to him for Relief, when you have taken them away? Said they, Here is Mr *White*, the Warden of the Stationers Company, he hath the Warrant, and is chief; and he liveth in St. *John's*, on *Clerkenwell-Green*. Then said I, take them away, and I helped them to Strings to tie them fast.

8. And when they saw this, that I was so fair, and gave them goodly Words, not in the least charging them with Folly or Unrighteousness; they went from me into another Room, and whisper'd among themselves, and said one to another, These Books are most of them against the Quakers, and some printed long ago, we had best only take one a piece single, and one bound altogether, and leave the rest till we have read them over, to see what is in them; so they agreed thus among themselves.

9. The<sub>n</sub>

9. Then Mr. *White* the Warden, came to me and said, Mr. *Muggleton*, you shall see that we will be civil, we will only take one of these bound altogether, and of each single, and let the rest be forth-coming when we shall call for them.

10. I thanked him for his civility; so they departed away at that time, only one of them took one of the Books bound altogether under his Coat, more than was agreed by themselves, and it was well I escaped so; and about four or five Days after I sent a Letter to Mr. *White* the Warden, praising him, and the Gentlemen with him, for their Kindness and Civility; and withal I sent him two Guinea pieces of Gold by my Wife, to drink with the Gentlemen, and prayed him to accept of them, and if I were a Man of Ability, I would have given a great deal more.

11. For civil Kindness ought to be respected, for I know you had Power to have taken them away, and that if you would be pleased to send but one of those Books bound, again by my Wife, that I might know by that you have accepted of that small token of my Love, for your civil Usage.

12. The Letter was more large, but Mr. *White* read the Letter twice, and said to my Wife, Indeed one of the Men did take a Book under his Coat, but said, he shall restore it again, for it is your Husband's; and as for the two Guineas, said he, let them alone 'till you hear further from me, for it doth not lie altogether in my Power to accept of them; so he would not receive the two Guineas,

13. So my Wife brought them again, and I waited, expecting to hear from him, but did not, for I perceived he had turned the Power over to the King's Messengers, as I found afterwards; for I heard by one that belongs to the Law, that saw my Name in a Warrant in the Office, to take my Person, and to bring me before the Council of State, so he gave me Intelligence of it.

14. So I went from my own House, and lodged at a Friends House in *Wapping*, three Quarters of a Year, and a Week after  
I was

I was gone, came the King's Messenger with his Warrant, but I being not at home, he lost his Labour. He came three times, and saw he could do no good, he gave over coming for a long time.

15. After this, in the same Year, (no sooner out of one trouble but into another) about the Month of *October*, a little before the Parliament sat, there came eight or ten Men of the Stationers, and other Officers, to my House, to search for Books.

16. But it happened that my Wife was newly gone out, else they would have taken away many Books, to a considerable Value; but she being not at home, went away very angry, saying, they would take some other Course; but after this, I took and got away all the Books out of my House, by this means I prevented them from taking away any more, for many Years.

17. These troubles, and many more, I went through in the Year 1670, and in the Year of my Life 60; and in the 19th Year of my Commission.

18. And while I was in these troubles, and absent from my own House, even as a Prisoner, for three Quarters of a Year, there did arise a great Rebellion and Conspiracy amongst the Believers, of me, which was like the Conspiracy and Rebellion of *Korah, Dathan, and Abiram*, against *Moses and Aaron*

19. The heads of this Rebellion were these, *William Medgate* the elder, Scrivner; *Thomas Burton*, a Flax-Man; *Mr. Wisal*, Brewer; *Walter Bobanan*, Scotchman.

20. These drew a many Believers to side with them for a Season; some of these Rebels, two of them, I did excommunicate, and the other two I gave Sentence of Damnation to Eternity.

21. And gave charge to all those that sided with them in their Conspiracy, not to Trade, nor Eat, nor Drink with those Men any more, upon the pain of being excommunicated out of my Presence, which the People did obey, and were settled in Peace again.

22. Like-

22. Likewise one of these Conspiritors, namely *Thomas Burton*, came and humbled himself, and acknowledged his Fault, and I forgave him, and received him into my Favour again.

23. There is the whole Relation left upon record in Writing, in a Volume by itself; which is as followeth.

24. *William Medgate*, in his Rebellion, sent unto me nine Assertions, as he calls them, being contrary to all Truth, as he saith, and against all sober Reason, being *verbatim*, as follows.

1. That God taketh no notice of his Saints, nor doth not mind them at all.

2. That you are not to mind God at all, but by the Prophet only.

3. You must pin your Faith upon the Prophet's Sleeve, or else you can have no true Peace.

4. Altho' the Saints give sentence against Blasphemy, if the Party comes to the Prophet he can take it off.

5. Altho' a Man have a corrupt Nature, and defraud and deceive all Men, yet if the Prophet's Love be in him, he will uphold him.

6. Tho' false Worship be an Idol, yet with the Prophet's Leave he may go to that Worship blameless.

7. To whom the Prophet gives the Blessing it shall support him, altho' his Life and Conversation be wicked.

8. If the Prophet should disown the Commission of the Spirit, all those that believes it should be Damn'd.

9. And lastly, That after the Blessing is given to any by the Prophet, yet though they walk contrary to the Commission, yet they shall be damn'd but to the Graves Mouth.

*William Medgate.*

## C H A P. VIII.

*The three first Assertions answered.*

1. **N**OW these Assertions seemed very strange to many of the Believers, as they were laid down together, but being interpreted apart, they became easy to the understanding of all, as may appear: As First, of God's taking no notice of his Saints.

2. For if God did take notice of all Actions, there would be a present effect of Blessing and Cursing, as in times past; neither can either Saint or Devil prove he doth take any notice of him at all, but as he doth vainly imagine, because his Thoughts doth sometimes accuse him, when he doth evil, and excuse him when he doth well.

3. But thus far I do acknowledge, that God doth take notice and mind particular Saints here on Earth; that is, when God hath any Work to do for a particular Saint, or any particular Devil, then God taketh particular notice of Saint or Devil, if it be one or more, according to the pleasure of his Will.

4. But no Man now upon Earth, can truly say that God hath minded, or taken notice of him, but myself only; also I do acknowledge that God doth take notice and mind every particular Saint, and every particular Devil, in the Original, as will appear thus.

5. God hath written the Law in every Man's Heart, both Saint and Devil, and this Law is God's Watchman, and stands in God's Place and Stead, both to acquit and condemn the Conscience of every Man; and where this Law doth acquit, God doth acquit, and where this Law doth condemn, God condemns, yet God's Person minds it not, but leaveth the whole Power to the Law, to justify or condemn; only God's Power is to be seen, and to be taken notice of, when he shall  
raise

raise the Man again, and that Law in his Heart shall quicken again by God's Power, and shall stand as God, to judge, to justify, or condemn the Conscience of every Man.

6. So that if a Man have not true Faith in his Heart to justify his Person in the sight of God, while on Earth, to free him from that Law of Sin and Death written in his Heart, then in the Resurrection that Law written in his Heart shall quicken again, and shall stand as God and Judge, to condemn him to Eternity.

7. Therefore I may say unto you Rebels, as God did unto Cain, *If thou dost well, shalt not thou be rewarded, and if thou dost evil, Sin lieth at the door of thy Conscience*; for the Law said in his Heart, *Thou shalt not Kill*. And shall not your act of Rebellion lie at the door of your Consciences, as sure as Cain's Murther lay at the door of his Conscience.

8. Therefore it was that Paul did thank God, that he was delivered from the Law of Sin and Death, and so doth every Man that is delivered from that Law written in his Heart: And John saith, *if thy Heart condemn thee not, then hast thou Confidence to the Throne of Grace, but if thy Heart condemn thee, God is greater than thy Heart, and knoweth all Things*. That is, if the Law written in a Man's Heart do condemn a Man worthy of eternal Damnation, God is greater than this Law, and knoweth how to raise you again, and to condemn you to eternal Torments.

9. Thus in the Original, God taketh notice, and mindeth Saints and Devils here on Earth, by the Law written in their Hearts; and if the Saints grow in Faith, Love and Knowledge of the true God, then is Conscience justified in the sight of God, because the Prophet and Messenger of God justifies the Saints Faith to be true Faith.

10. But if the Prophet doth not justify a Man's Faith to be a true Faith, nor him to be a true Saint, neither will God do it, and that Man's Heart will condemn him also.

11. For it is a true Prophet, or true Minister that make a



Saint, one or more, for a Saint cannot make a true Prophet, nor true Miniſter, but a Prophet may make a wicked Sinner a glorious Saint, as I have done ſeveral: As Chriſt, he could make ſimple, ignorant Men Apoſtles, but Apoſtles could not make him their Chriſt, ſo that no Prophet no Saint.

12. They may be elected Veſſels, but not Saints, for no Man can poſſibly be ſaid to be a Saint, except they come actually to believe in a true Prophet, true Apoſtle, or true Miniſter of Chriſt.

13. And further, I ſay, whoever doth not ſtand in Awe, and fear to offend that Law of Conſcience, as if God himſelf did ſtand by and take notice of all his Actions, ſo he doth well, becauſe God's Eye is over him, elſe not: I ſay all ſuch a Man's doings is but Eye Service, and reſpected of God no more than the cutting of a Dog's Neck, and that Man is in the depth of Darkneſs; but ſuch a Man, if he doth evil, then he deſires God to take no notice of that, but to blot it out of his Remembrance, as if God were beholding to Man to do well, when as there is a Bleſſing in well doing, and a Curſe in evil doing.

14. For this I ſay, if there were no God to reward the good, nor puniſh the evil, yet could I do no otherways than I do; for I do well, not becauſe I expect any reward from God, and I refrain from evil; not for fear God ſhould ſee me, or ſeeing me, will puniſh me, or that his Perſon doth take notice or mind me in it at all; but I do well, and refrain from evil, to pleaſe the Law written in my Heart, ſo that I might not be accuſed in my own Conſcience, by that Law written in my Heart, as God hath placed for a Watchman, to tell me when I do well, and when I do ill.

15. So I being juſtified by Faith in my own Conſcience, and being not condemned by the Law written in my Heart, I have confidence to the Throne of Grace. Neither do I refrain from evil, for fear God ſeeing me, and ſo to puniſh me; but I refrain from evil, becauſe the Law in my Heart ſeeth all my doings, and that Watchman God hath ſet there to watch

me will tell God of all my doings, and that Law will be the only accuser of Conscience.

16. So that God needs not to trouble himself to watch over every Man and Woman's Actions himself, but hath placed his Law a Watchman in every Heart, as abovesaid.

17. Thus in the Original, God taketh notice by his Law, not that I do own the Law written in Man's Heart to be the very God, as the Quakers do, but God is a distinct Person of himself, and distinct from this Law, and no other ways doth God mind or take notice, now at this time, but by this Law.

18. And to that second Assertion, how the Saints are not to mind God at all, it is plain, and is Truth also, as by Scripture appears, how that he that receiveth a Prophet in God's Name, receiveth him that sent him. And seeing God doth not come to treat with Men himself, he sends his Prophet or Embassador in his stead, and he is impowered by him to make Peace between God and Man, upon such Articles as the Prophet and the People can agree on: And thus,

19. Whoever believes the Prophet's Report shall be saved, and he that doth not believe his Prophet's Report shall be damned. Therefore it is said by *Ijaiab*, Who hath believed our Report, and to whom is the Arm of the Lord revealed; so that God hath placed the whole Power in the Prophet, to determine upon Life and Salvation, as if God was present himself, and if the People do not agree with the Prophet while he is in the Way, how shall a Man make his Peace with God.

20. For God will say to such that shall think to come to him, and despise the Prophet; if you would not receive the Prophet whom I sent, you will not receive me, if I should come myself.

21. So that God doth not expect that you should come unto him, but unto the Prophet only; neither doth he own your coming unto him, for he will say, you should have minded my Prophet, and have believed him, and have made your Peace with him, and then I would have accepted of you; for it will  
be

be said to you as it was unto *Dives*, *They have Moses and the Prophets*, &c.

22. So it will be said to you, if you believe not my last Prophet whom I sent; he hath spoken unto you, and hath declared Life and Salvation unto you, and if you will not believe him on Earth, you will not believe if God himself should come from Heaven and speak unto you.

23. So that there is a necessity that Men should believe the Prophet only. These things are common Practices with the Kings of the Earth, would a King be well pleased with that Man that rejects his Ambassador? For doth not an Ambassador stand in the King's Place? And what he doth, the King doth, &c.

24. Why should you that are Men think it strange to mind the Prophet only: Were not all those People blessed that minded the Prophets only, as *Moses* and *Aaron*, *Elijah* and *Elisha*, and those that did not mind the Prophets only, were they not cursed.

25. So likewise whoever mindeth the Prophet now alive only, shall have true Peace with God; and whoever doth not, shall never have true Peace with God, nor perfect Peace in his own Soul; for this is God's Way, and that Honour he hath put upon Prophets for all their Sufferings. Therefore it is said, *How beautiful are the Feet of such as bring glad Tydings of Peace and Salvation? And whoever receiveth a Prophet, shall receive a Prophet's Reward* Which Reward is no less than the Blessing of everlasting Life; and if so, sure such a Prophet ought to be received while on Earth, to be minded only, seeing that he that receives him receives God; and in this sense People ought to mind the Prophet only, and no other ways.

26. And as to the third Assertion, my Answer is this, I say it is impossible for any Man or Woman to have true Peace, except they do pin their Faith upon the Prophet's Sleeve. Why? why because the Prophet represents the place of God, nay God himself; and he that doth believe a Prophet's Report, he believeth in God; for such a one resteth his Soul only upon  
the

**the Prophet's Words.** Now if a Prophet's Words be Truth, then a Man that believes, rests his Soul upon the Truth; and this is setting the Seal that he is true.

27. And so it may be said, a Man pins his Faith upon the Prophet's Sleeve, that if he be true my Faith is true; if he be false, my Faith is false also; and if he be a false Prophet, then he shall be damn'd, and he that believes him will be damn'd also.

28. For if a Man be saved by pinning his Faith upon a true Prophet's Sleeve, so by pinning his Faith upon a false Prophet, a Man is damn'd; this must and is ventured by some: For this I say, there is no Man upon Earth, that professes the Christian Religion, but he hath either a true Faith, or a false Faith, and he pins his Faith upon either a true Minister, or a false Minister's Sleeve; and he loveth one Teacher better than another, and here he pins his Faith, and hath Peace so long as his Faith holds there.

29. But when his Faith faileth, the pin looseneth and falleth quite out, so their Faith and that Preacher is parted, and that Peace he had in that Faith is lost, and another Faith sought after; for no Man in the World can live but by a true Faith, or a false Faith, so that all Men in the World doth or must pin their Faith upon some Man's Sleeve or other, or else there can be no Peace at all.

30. But when their Faith faileth, the Peace they had in that Faith is lost, and another Faith sought after, which Faith pitches upon the dead Letter of the Scriptures, which yields no Peace at all without an Interpreter.

31. Thus all Men in the World must and do pin their Faith upon some Man's Sleeve or other, else there can be no Peace at all to the Mind of Man; and in this sense the Saints must pin their Faith upon the Prophet's Sleeve, else they can have no true Peace at all.



## C H A P IX.

*The Fourth, Fifth and Sixth Assertions answered.*

1. **T**O this Fourth Assertion, I say, Who made any of you Saints, but the Prophet only? For as I said before, no Prophet, no Saint; for though Men and Women be elected in the Seed, in God's electing Power, and may be saved by Election, yet they cannot properly be called Saints, as aforesaid, because he must first come actually to believe in a true Prophet, or true Minister of Christ; for a Saint cannot make a Prophet, but a Prophet can make a wicked Man a Saint, as I have done several.
2. Furthermore, who gave any Saint, in these our Days, power to give sentence upon any Man for Blasphemy; was it not the Prophet now alive?
3. God gave the Saints no such Power, neither did *John Reeve* give any such Power to any Saint all his Days of his Life, neither did any Saint give sentence upon any all his Days.
4. Now seeing the Saints receive their Power to give sentence for Blasphemy, from the Prophet now alive, and not from God; sure then there is a power in that Prophet to take off that sentence that any Saint shall give, in case the Party so sentenced comes unto the Prophet, and the Prophet discerns him capable of true Sorrow for his rash Speeches, the Prophet can take off that sentence that any Saint hath given, and shall have perfect Peace of Mind, as if no sentence at all had been passed upon him.
5. There hath been an example of this both in *John Reeve's* time, and since; for it came to pass that *John Reeve* had passed the sentence upon a Man for writing blasphemous Words upon the Margin of the Commission Book, and when the Man read the sentence, he was exceedingly troubled all that Night,  
so

so that no Rest could be found: So that he came in the Morning with the sentence in his Hand, and besought us with tears, upon his Knees, to take this Writing again: For, said he, I have done foolishly, and spoken rashly before he had considered; with several other Words of Repentance.

6. So *John Reeve*, seeing his Sorrow for this Sin, he took the Writing from the Man again; and the Man was settled in peace of Mind, as at first.

7. Now if the Prophet *Reeve* had Power to take off his own sentence for Blasphemy, then much more can he take off the sentence that any Saint shall give against Blasphemy.

8. Another Example since it, was so: That *Claixon* gave the sentence of Damnation upon *Mrs. Masson*, and he was, at that time, as knowing a Saint counted by the Believers, as ever any of you were; yet when her Husband caused her to apply herself unto the Prophet, I understanding the Cause, I took off that Sentence he had given her; and not only so, but for that and other Things, I took away his Power also, so that no Sentence of his afterwards should be of any Value to any Man.

9. So that Prophets have a prerogative Power, as God, above the Power of Saints; because the Power of a Saint is at the second hand, subordinate to the Power of a Prophet; and therefore a Prophet hath Power to take off that Sentence, where, and whom he pleaseth, &c.

10. And as to the answer of the fifth Assertion, this I say, Who should uphold a corrupt natured Man but a Prophet, in case a corrupt natured Man do believe the Prophet, then the Prophet's Faith shall uphold him from the Censure and Judgments of those that looks upon their own Natures, to be more pure and uncorrupt, as to his Happiness in the Life to come; the Prophet's Love being in him, he will uphold him.

11. And whereas you say, defraud and deceive all Men, to this I say, I do not uphold no Man to defraud nor deceive any Man; it was always contrary to my Nature, to uphold any such Practice in any Saint or Devil, because I never did

practice any such Things myself; not in the Days of my Ignorance.

12. But in case some Mens Natures are so corrupt, as to practice such Things, and yet are true Believers, what shall the Prophet do with such Men, shall he cast them out of the Kingdom of Heaven for ever, because his Nature is corrupt, surely no? For this was not the practice of Christ when on Earth: But this I do allow and tolerate every Saint, that if they cannot freely forgive the defraud and deceivings of such natured Men, they may take the Law of them: The Law is open to right himself that is deceived, or else let them trust such Men no more.

13. But this I say, I think you Fault-finders are the least defrauded or deceived by those corrupt natured Men of any: Prophets cannot give Men honest Hearts, that are not honest by Nature; and if they be honest by Nature, Prophets cannot give them Money to uphold their Honesty.

14. Neither can a Prophet change corrupt Natures, for if the Prophet could, I would have changed yours, and have made you more merciful to forgive the trespasses of your Brother of your own Faith, and not to rake up the Sins of others, and lay them as a charge against the Prophet, as if he were the cause of their defraud and deceit, because I uphold them in peace of Mind, concerning the Life to come, my Faith being in him it shall uphold him, so that the fear of eternal Death shall not surprize him.

15. Also, if I could have changed your corrupt Nature, I would never have suffered it to have broken forth into Rebellion, as it hath done, but would have upheld you in peace of Mind, and hope of eternal Life, notwithstanding your Nature is corrupt enough; yet while my Love was in you, I did uphold you in peace of Mind, but now my Love is taken from you, through your Rebellion, your Peace, Hope and Assurance, will wither and die in you; and in this sense will he uphold corrupt natured Men, if his Love be in him.

16. The sixth Assertion answered, which saith, Tho' false  
Worship

Worship be an Idol, yet with the Prophets Leave he may go to that Worship blameless: As to this, I never did forbid any Believer of this Commission of the Spirit from going to Church, neither did *John Reeve* in his time, they all went to Church, or to Meetings; *John Reeve* nor I, never laid any Injunction upon any Believer, not to go to Church.

17. But since I wrote the Book of the whole Revelation, I had occasion to write concerning Worship, and the Believers reading of it, their Eyes were opened to see it was Idolatry to worship as the Nation doth, so that many of them refrained from it, and they found much peace in it; but some could not refrain, because of Persecution; but those that did refrain, had much peace in themselves, and were better beloved with me, than the other which did go to Church; so that they that did go to Worship, they had Shame and Trouble, and doubting in themselves; and I let them bear their own Sin, and never reproved them for it.

18. And because I did not advise, nor command them to the contrary, they were the more encouraged, but had not that peace in themselves, as those had that did refrain, not because of my dislike, but because of their own peace of Conscience; but having no command from us to the contrary, some few took leave, that were in high places, which could no ways uphold their Honour and Livelyhood, except they went sometimes to Church.

19. Now those not being forbid by the Prophet, they were not disobedient to the Prophet, nor to God, but to their own Souls, they brought guilt upon their Conscience, and fear upon their Mind; yet by the Prophets winking at them, as God did in the Days of old at their Ignorance, and not accusing them of evil, but continuing his Love in them; the Prophet remembering their former Faith and Love to *John Reeve*, they are blameless as to the fear of eternal Damnation; and why, because the Prophet did never forbid them, nor never did condemn them for any thing they had done in that Nature.

20. And in this sense they are blameless of the Prophet,  
V 2 and



and blameless of God, for a Prophet's power is unlimited as God's power is; none is to call a Prophet to an account, but God only, for if the Prophet will wink at the failings of some, upon consideration of the snares great Men are in, and of other good they do, and the Prophet will not wink at others that are not under such snares of this World, nor can do no good to others of their own Faith, who shall again-say it, none but Rebels.

21. They will undertake to be more Righteous than the Prophet, they would make all the Lord's people Holy, if they were in the Prophet's place, by reprovng and exhorting, and judging the people, some for going to worship an Idol, and others for defraud and deceit, but if we were in his place we would give righteous Judgment upon all, according to demerit, without respect of persons; this is *Korab, Dathan, and Abiram* like, the practices of Rebels.

22. And in this sense, those that go to worship an Idol, may be said to be blameless of the Prophet, and no other Ways.

## C H A P. X.

### *The Seventh, Eighth, and Ninth Assertions Answered.*

1. **H**OW should Men that do evil, after the blessing is given, be supported, if the Prophet should not support him; suppose some that are under the blessing may borrow Money of his Brethren of the same Faith, and never pay them again; others perhaps are passionate, hasty natured, which wounds their own Souls; others may sometimes be Drunk; others of a hasty, rashful Nature as you are.

2. Those things are all evil, the one as well as the other, and perhaps some of this Faith to whom the Prophet hath given the blessing, are guilty of those things; now to whom shall they apply themselves too, to be supported; in the trouble of his Mind he hath borrowed Money, but cannot pay it again,  
so

so his Credit is lost, he can borrow no more there, neither will he forgive him freely, but looks upon him, though he be of his own Faith, but a paltry, deceitful Man, and will have no more dealing with him: This is punishment enough, where an honest Heart is.

3. And where shall such a Man be supported, but by the Prophet, for his Brethren will not support him, and the World condemns him for a base Cheat, and his own Conscience condemns him and makes him ashamed, and where shall he go? he cannot go to God for Relief, but to a Man like himself, a Prophet.

4 And to this Prophet he can appeal unto, and be supported under his Blessing he once gave him, for a Prophets Word is as the Word of God himself, in case the Man's Faith be in it: For who hath need of Support but such, for legal righteous Men need no Support, neither of God, nor of the Prophet, for it hath a Blessing in itself, in the very deed doing.

5. Therefore it is said, that Christ did justify the ungodly, but not the legal righteous Man, but rather condemn him, as the proud Pharisee, who boasted of his Righteousness, and did thank God that he was not like the Publican, who deceiv'd all Men he dealt with.

6. And in this sense it may be said, that the Prophet doth uphold a Man, though his Life and Conversation be counted wicked by Rebels, yet his Faith being stedfast, shall be upholden by the Prophet.

7. As to the eighth Assertion, my answer is, suppose Christ when he was taken and carried before *Pilate*, and when he was examined by him, whether he was the Christ, the King of the Jews; if Christ for fear of Death should have denied, and said, No, I am not the Son of God, &c. If this should have been said by Christ, then he would have proved a false Christ, and his Faith, a false Faith.

8. And so, those that believed him, their Faith would be false and vain, and the assurance of eternal Life in them would have perished, for a false Christ will be Damn'd, than all that believe in that false Christ will be Damn'd also.

9. For

9. For it is by Faith that Men are saved; now if a Man's Faith be pitched upon the true Christ, and hold out to the end, he shall be saved, because the Christ he believed in shall be saved.

10. But if a Man have Faith in the true Christ for a while, and afterwards his Faith wither and grow cold, and not hold out, this Man may perish to Eternity, yet the Christ saved.

11. Furthermore, if the Prophet now alive should disown the Commission of the Spirit; that is, if he should deny and disown that God spake to *John Reeve*, and that God did not chuse us two jointly to be his two last Prophets, that God will ever send to the end of the World; now if it were possible the Prophet should disown this, but it is not possible, which way then can those that have believed in us, possibly be saved, but must be damn'd.

12. For a false Prophet will be damn'd: And again, if a true Faith justify a Man, being pitched upon a true Prophet, then a false Faith pitched upon a false Prophet, it withers and dies, and condemns the Heart of Man.

13. If it should be objected, that we believe *John Reeve*, that God spake to him, and we believe his Writings, and that he Died in that Faith: But if the Prophet now alive should disown *John Reeve*, that God spake to him, &c. yet we shall be sav'd, by believing in *John Reeve's* Writings, now he is Dead.

14. This is just like the Faith of all the World that believeth the Prophets and Apostles that are Dead, many hundred Years before they were Born, but would not have believed them when they were alive, no more than their Fathers did; for it is the nature of Reason to believe dead Prophets, rather than living Prophets, and it is the nature of Faith to believe live Prophets, rather than dead Prophets; for a living Faith believeth a living Man, but a dead Faith believeth a dead Man, and thus the seed of Reason dealeth by me.

15. But to this I say, this Faith will not save you, nor do you little good in the Day of Trouble; why, because God did  
not

not chuse *John Reeve* singular, but God chose us two jointly, so that there could be no separation but by Death, and seeing God hath honoured me to be the longer Liver, he hath given me a double power, as he did to the Prophet *Elisa*, when *Ely's* Mantle fell upon him.

16. So that God hath feated and established the Commission wholly upon me, so that the Prophet now alive doth stand in God's place, and doth represent his person to make peace with Men; neither can any Man have true peace in his Soul, but by casting himself, by Faith, wholly upon the Prophet that is now alive.

17. Now if it were possible for this live Prophet to disown the Commission of the Spirit, (but it is not possible) then should he be found a false Prophet, and will be Damned, then all that believes him will be Damned; also this must be ventured by all Men and Women that are saved by Faith in a Commission.

18. But as Christ spake many hard Words, which made many forsake him, so likewise the Prophet hath spoken many hard Words as those Assertions were by some, that were his Disciples, were offended at him, and forsook the Prophet and followed him no more; this hath been the practice of some in all Commissions.

19. But woe will be to all that set the Hand of Faith to the Plow of Obedience to the Prophet, and look back as *Lot's* Wife did, or draw back unto perdition, whose Faith doth not hold out to the end, that they might be saved.


20. And in this sense, if the Prophet should disown the Commission of the Spirit, all those that believed him would be Damned.

21. As to the ninth Assertion, in Answer thereunto, behold the Power of a Prophets blessing, that though a Man walk contrary to the Commission his Faith is in: Yet the Condemnation of his Conscience, it shall not reach unto Eternity, but unto the Graves Mouth; why because the Remembrance of the Prophets blessing is in him, and doth uphold him, else his Sin might

---

# The C

*Of one Sir John James  
Death. The Prophet  
sell his Birthright, but  
his great Troubles and*

I.  **A** **F T E R** thi  
1675, and  
me, both up  
through the  
by what doth follow.

2. There was a certa  
he was a Knight, his N  
through his cruelty and  
of 30 Foot long, and 4  
closed in this parcel of G  
Ground, to considerable V  
*Brunts*, and this he lett to  
Yard wider.

3. Also, this Knight di  
Timber-Merchant, and t  
Light of the poer Widows  
that it was a great hindran  
no Tenant would live in  
could no way deliver herse  
from her for ever, for this  
two Tenants, and they enjo

4. It came to pass in  
Died, and I was her Execu  
every particular, according  
knowing this rich Man ha  
mentioned, from the poer V

# The Fifth Part.

## C H A P. I.

*Of one Sir John James's Oppression of Widow Brunt, and of her Death. The Prophet left her Executor; and how he would not sell his Birthright, but Arrested Sir John James's Tenants. Of his great Troubles and Tryals.*

I. **A**FTER this it came to pass, that in the Year 1675, and 1676, that great Troubles did pursue me, both upon a natural and a spiritual Account, through the Envy of wicked Men, as will appear by what doth follow.

2. There was a certain rich Man, being covetous and cruel, he was a Knight, his Name was called Sir *John James*; he, through his cruelty and covetousness, did take away a matter of 30 Foot long, and 4 Foot broad, and a brick Wall that closed in this parcel of Ground, and a Pump that stood in this Ground, to considerable Value; the Womans Name was *Deborah Brunt*, and this he lett to another Tenant of his, to make his Yard wider.

3. Also, this Knight did lett another part of his Yard to a Timber-Merchant, and this Tenant of his did stop up the Light of the poor Widows House with his Timber, infomuch that it was a great hindrance and loss to the Widow, in that no Tenant would live in it: This rich Man did, and she could no way deliver herself, but her Right was clearly taken from her for ever, for this rich Man had stated it upon his two Tenants, and they enjoyed it for a Season.

4. It came to pass in a while after, this Widow *Brunt* Died, and I was her Executor; and I performed her Will in every particular, according to the Laws of *England*; and I knowing this rich Man had taken away these Things before mentioned, from the poor Widow, that was her Right, which

Widow I had been as a Father unto several Years before, and did more for her, than her Husband could do for her, had he lived.

5. So that I thought in myself, I would not; like profane *Esau*, to sell my Birthright for a mess of Pottage, but would gain that, the poor Widow had lost wrongfully; whereupon, I did, according to Law, arrest these two Tenants for Treypass and Damage.

6. The Men I went to Law withal were three, one was *Denis Swenye*, a notable wicked Devil; the others were *Charles Mall*, and *William Picke*; they were three inveterate Devils, being encouraged by this rich Man; yet notwithstanding I proceeded on in the Law, and when they saw they were in danger to be overthrown, they used all ways possible to defer the Cause.

7. And when they saw that would not do, but that I would bring it to Tryal, they consulted together, and summon'd me into the Spiritual Court, thinking to have me excommunicated, that I might not have the benefit of the Law against them; but I spent Money in that Court, and kept off their Excommunication, and proceeded in the common Law, towards a Tryal.

8. And when they saw that would not do, then they conspired and consulted with the Wardens of the Company of Stationers, to search my House for unlicensed Books; upon which the Wardens brought many Bookfellers and Printers, and three of the King's Messengers with them; and because my Wife denied to let them come up Stairs, they immediately with a Weapon they had, broke open four Doors that were lock'd and bolted, contrary to the Laws of *England*, and they took away four hundred Books, great and small, from me, of a considerable Value.

9. After they had done this, they consulted with the Bishop of *London*, to put me into the Spiritual Court, and sue me there for Blasphemy, and get me excommunicated, that I might not have the benefit of the Law against them, neither for breaking open my House, and stealing away my Goods.

10. And

10. And for that purpose they got the Lord Chief Justice *Rainsford's* Warrant for to take me; he was a deadly Enemy to me, as will appear, in that he would have taken away my Life if he could, but I defended the Spiritual Court from being excommunicated, and from his Warrant being executed, or served upon me, until these two Trials in the common Law, against these two Tenants of the rich Man, were ended.

11. I was forced to be absent from my own House, for above a Quarter of a Year: I was entertained by that ever honoured, and true Believer; that young Widow, *Ann Hall*, I was entertained by her as an Angel of God, when other Believers durst not: I was kept at her House in obscurity from Friends and Enemies, not knowing where I was, yet I employed my Lawyers to manage my Business in both Courts; and in my Absence they overthrew my Adversaries, in the two Causes afore-mentioned, in the common Law, and I received again, that which the rich Man had taken away, with some of my Charges again.

12. But the Wardens of the Stationers Company, because they could not catch me, though they hunted after me as Blood Hounds, but could not find me out to serve their Warrant upon me; then they pressed hard in the Spiritual Court to get me excommunicated, they fearing I might overthrow them in the common Law, for breaking open my House, and taking my Goods, for they had committed an absolute Burglary and Felony, by the Laws of *England*.

13. But I being pressed so hard upon in the Spiritual Court, that it came to this Resultation in the Court, that if I did not personally appear the next Court Day, then I should be excommunicated, and being advised by him that managed my Business in that Court, to appear, he saying, he thought there would be no Danger.

14. Now by his Words I was perswaded to appear, though against my own Mind, for I did fear I should be trapan'd, and as I fear'd it came to pass, and it proved of woeful consequence to me; as will appear by what doth follow.



15. To omit many Circumſtances, I ſhall record the heads and ſubſtance of the whole Matter, and as I did appear in the Spiritual Court, to prevent myſelf of being excommunicated; the Court had little to ſay unto me, only asked me, if I did own that Libel, which they knew I denied by my Proctor before.

16. This was only to deliver me into the temporal Magiſtrates Hand; for the Wardens, the Lord Mayor, the Lord Chief Juſtice, together with the Spiritual Court, were agreed together to proceed againſt me this way; otherways they could never have caught me while they lived, nor have brought me under their Law.

17. Therefore the Wardens, *Merne* and *Clark*, they got the Lord Chief Juſtice of *England's* Warrant, with a Conſtable ready, and as ſoon as I was diſcharged in the Spiritual Court at *Doffors Commons*; that curſed Court is meerly to betray People into the Hands of their Enemies, and to ruin the Eſtates of the poor People, for it is of no more conſequence for the good of the Nation, then to throw Stones againſt the Wind.

18. For the Wickedneſs and Envy of the ignorant People is ſuch, becauſe they cannot be revenged of the Innocent and Juſt, by the temporal laws of the Land, then they cite the Innocent, (that cannot bow down to their Worſhip) into the Spiritual Court, which I have had great Experience of this curſed Court, which did betray me into the Hands of wicked, envious Magiſtrates, as will appear.

19. For as ſoon as I was coming out of the Court, the Conſtable ſerved the Lord Juſtice *Rainsford's* Warrant upon me; then was I delivered into the Hands of Satan, to be plain, into the Hands of Devils.

20. And I was led to Guild-Hall before the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen, the Mayor's Name was *Thomas Davis*, a Stationer by Trade, a deadly Enemy to me, and to all Moral Juſtice, and a Man made up more of Malice and Ignorance of the law of the Land, than natural Wiſdom, or moral Knowledge: And as to ſpiritual Knowledge he was as Blind as a Beetle.

21. The Constable gave Judge *Rainsford's* Warrant into the Lord Mayor's Hand, and the Wardens gave the whole Book bound into his Hand; and the Lord Mayor asked me whether I did own this Book; I said, I did.

22. Then he commanded me to withdraw into another Room, and I did so, with an Officer with me; I stayed a little while, and the same Constable brought my Mittimus from the Lord Mayor, to carry me to the Goal of *Newgate* until the next Sessions.

23. So I being carried to Prison, I was Bailed out until the 17th of *January*, in the Year 1676, then did *Merne* and *Clark* draw up an Indictment against me, but out of one of those Books they stole from me, called, *The Neck of the Quakers Broken*.

## C H A P. II.

*Of the Bill of Indictment, and of the Cruelty of the Judges.*

1. **N**OW follows the Bill of Indictment, as I was condemn'd for. The Persons or Jury Sworn for our Lord the King, gave in that *Lodowick Muggleton*, late of *London*, Labourer, being a Man Pernicious, Blasphemous, Seditious, Heretical, and a Monster in his Opinions.

2. Pretending that he the said *Lodowick Muggleton*, is one of the two last Witnesses of Almighty G O D, and devising, and intending to spread abroad his pernicious, blasphemous, seditious, and monstrous Opinions, and to disturb the peace and quiet of this Kingdom of *England*, and despise and debase the true Religion, established and exercised therein.

3. As also to make and excite discord, between the King and his Subjects, and to bring into Odium and Disgrace, his said Majesty's Kingdom, as to ecclesiastical Matters.

4. He the said *Lodowick Muggleton*, on the 30th of *August*, in the 23d Year of His Majesty's Reign, in *St. Giles's* Parish without *Cripplegate*, *London*, aforesaid, by force and arms, did

un-

unlawfully, wickedly, maliciously, scandalously, blasphemously, seditiously, scismatically, and heretically, write, print, and sell, utter and publish, a certain malicious, scandalous, blasphemous, seditious, and heretical Book, Intituled, *The Neck of the Quakers Broken*.

5. In which Book, written to *Edward Burne*, are contained these unlawful, blasphemous, seditious, heretical, and scandalous Sentences following, *viz.* I write these Lines unto you *Edward Burne*, knowing you to be the seed of the Serpent.

6. There was repeated out of this Book much more, as page the 18, 31, and 54. That whosoever reads that Book, may see those Blasphemies, these Quakers did first judge me with; so that I had cause enough given me to pronounce those sad Sentences of Damnation upon them, and those Books was known to the powers of the Nation many Years before, and the powers of the Nation took no Notice of it, because that, and all others were pardoned by the King, and act of Parliament, till within three Years, and that Book was printed 13 Years before.

7. Yet these wicked Judges, and Jury, and others, conspired together, to perswade the Court, that this Book was antidated 13 Years ago, yet published this, *August* 30th, 1676, that it might come within the act of three Years.

8. Now these Words that were taken out of this Book, made some of the Judges mad with Envy, and grind their Teeth, and their Council said, It made his Hair stand on an end, he was so affrighted, which caused one of the Judges to belch out of his Mouth, saying, It was to the great contempt and scandal of their said Lord the King, of his Crown and Dignity.

9. When as that Book did not meddle with their Established Religion at all, neither was it any dishonour to the King, but rather an Honour, if he had but read it over; but Truth doth always offend the Reason of Man, as is seen by what a multitude of hellish Expressions, and palpable Lies, uttered in their Indictment, being patch'd up with Reproaches, and Slanders, against the purest Truth, that ever was spoken by Prophet or Apostle.

10. I shall now record how unjustly Judge *Rainsford*, dealt with me before the Trial: The Sessions before I was tryed, the Bill of Indictment was read in Court, and I answered not Guilty, and said unto *Davis*, then Lord Mayor, that I would travis the Indictment, and put in Bail to the Indictment.

11. So *Davis* asked whither I could put in three sufficient Men, that could swear they were worth two Hundred Pounds a Man, he would accept of Bail, thinking I could not have procured such great Security: And Judge *Rainsford* sat at the right Hand of the Mayor, and I heard Judge *Rainsford* say to the Lord Mayor, that it was pity but I should be burn'd; I heard by his Words, and saw by his Countenance, that he was, and would be a deadly Enemy.

12. But the Mayor could not deny Bail, nor to travis the Indictment by the Laws of *England*; so the Men were called, and the Mayor being envious, asked one of them if they were of my Gang, one of them answered and said thus? Sir we do not come here to be examin'd whose Gang we are of, but we came to be Bail for this Man for Six Hundred Pounds for his Appearance the next Sessions; The mayor said no more but accepted it.

13. And when the Time drew near, I did according to Law (with my Lawyer) go to this Judge *Rainsford*, and got his Clerk to draw up a Sessarary, which was to remove it out of that Court, into the Court of King's Bench, and this envious Judge, being Judge of the King's Bench-Court, and we could not have a Sessarary in any Court else, which he knew well enough, which caused his envy to act so wickedly and unjustly towards me.

14. For when his Clerk, and my Lawyer had drawn up the Writing, and had received their Money, (near Forty Shillings) they went into the Judges Chamber, for him to set his Hand to it, to remove my Cause into his own Court, which was but Law, but he made them Answer, and said, he would not set his Hand to it, but would hear the Trial himself, at the Sessions.

15. So

15. So I was cheated of my Money by his Clerk, and he knew it, and he deprived me of it, and of the juſt Law; which is the birth Right of every free born Man of *England*.

16. But now as to the Trial, I ſhall in the next Place record ſome of the moſt remarkable Words, and Paſſages of the Judges, and the Councillors, and the Witneſſes againſt me in the Tryal. Upon the 17th of January 1676, firſt the Indictment was read, and the Cryer of the Court, ſaid, are you guilty or not guilty?

17. I answered nor guilty, but deſired the Court to let my Council plead the Cauſe, becauſe I knew they would have taken hold of my Words, and made them a more horrible Crime, than the Book itſelf; which Judge *Rainsford* readily granted, and asked who was my Council, I ſaid *Mr. Gener*.

18. And he received a breviat of the Cauſe, ſhewing the wrong I had received, by their breaking open my Houſe, and taking away my Goods, contrary to the Laws of *England*: Alſo I gave into my Councils Hands, the King's gracious Act of Pardon; that whoſoever did ſue any Man, for what was pardoned in that Act afterwards, that the Party ſo ſued, ſhould plead the general Iſſue, and ſhould recover Ten Pounds a Man, of thoſe his Adverſaries.

19. This Act was given into my Councils Hands to plead, and that Book that ſtated the Indictment out of, was given into his Hand, which Book was pardoned by that Act; being printed 13 Years ago, all was pardoned till within three Years.

20. Alſo their Council, I know not his Name, had one of the Books, with the whole Volume Bound and Clasp'd, which they ſtole from me, in his Hand; I ſaw the Chief Judges were bent upon Miſchief againſt me:

21. Therefore I was reſolved to follow the Practice of Chriſt, when examined by the high Priests, Rulers and Counſel, gave them no answer, neither before *Pilate*, for he knew they watched to catch Words out of his Mouth, that they might have ſomewhat to accuſe him of, to make his Cauſe worſe, then what his Enemies did accuſe him with, as may  
be

be read, *Luke* xxii. 70. where Christ held his Peace, and answer'd nothing.

22. Then said they all, Art thou the Son of God? And he said unto them, Ye say that I am; and to this they said, What need we any further Witness, for we ourselves have heard out of his own Mouth; so *Mark* xiv. and in verse 62, Jesus answered and said to his Question, I am the Son of God, &c.

23. Then the high Priests rent their Cloaths, and they all condemned him to be guilty of Death; so likewise I did perceive that if I had pleaded myself, I should have justified my Commission from GOD; and that he gave *John Reeve*, and myself, that Power and Authority, to give sentence of Damnation to all that blaspheme against the Holy Ghost, as they did, as are written in that Book.

24. These Words would have enraged the Judges and Jury, and the People, more than that Book; so that they would have said by me, as the Priests, Scribes and Pharisees, said by Christ as aforesaid: The angry and malicious Judges, and envious Jury, and ignorant Officers, and People in the Court, would have rent their Hearts with Madness against me, and said, What need we to mind this Book or Indictment, or Witness against him, for you hear his horrible Blasphemy out of his own Mouth, therefore what think you? so that they all would have condemned me to greater torments than they did.

25. Considering this, I held my Peace, and spake not one Word, which prevented the expectations of Thousands, which thought to have had a large relation of the matter.

26. So that I left the Book that was pardoned, and Act, and Indictment, and Witnesses, for them to judge and condemn me by; so they had no farther matter from me at all, which did frustrate their Expectations, and moderate their Punishment, as the Reader may perceive by what doth follow.

## C H A P. III.

*The Counsel against the Propbet pleads with Fear and Horror,  
The Propbet's Counsel pleads, and through Fear, did wrong his  
Cause.*

1. **U**PON the 17th of *January*, 1676, after the Indictment was read, my Counsel pleaded to it, proving that this Book the Indictment was grounded upon, it was pardoned by the King's gracious Act, being printed 13 Years ago; neither was this Book Published, nor Sold in any Shop, or to any Person in Publick, as can be proved, but were locked up in Chests, &c. This, with many other Words, according to the Laws of *England*; this my Counsel pleaded, and my Counsel sat under Judge *Atkins*

2. And their Counsel sat under Judge *Rainsford*, and he did hold up the Book in open Court, which Book was the whole Volume bound and clasped: He held one of the Clasps between his Finger and his Thumb up in the open Court, in Opposition to my Counsel.

3. And he expressed these Words, and said, with a loud Voice, That he did read one leaf of this Book, and turn'd over another; but, said he, it was so full of horrible Blasphemy, that he durst not read any further, for the Blasphemy was so great, that it made his Hair stand an end, and his Heart to tremble; with other Expressions of Dread and Fear.

4. As if the very reading of it would have caused God to have parted the Heavens asunder, and have rained down Vengeance upon him for reading it, if he had read any further: For, said he, It was impossible for any Man to write such a horrible, blasphemous Book, in assuming the place of God upon him, except he went to the bottom of Hell; for, said he, it is so cunningly contrived, that it confounds all the Reason in  
Man;

Man; with many other hedious Expressions, which I cannot remember.

5. He spoke truth, but knew it not, for the Spirit of Revelation doth descend to the bottom of Hell, else we could not tell others where it is, and prevent others from falling into it; and as Christ himself descended into Hell, and quickened again out of it, so hath the Spirit of Revelation in me, descended into the bottom of Hell a Thousand times, and hath quickened out of it again, and hath forewarned many from going into that Place; but I know this Counsellor shall go into Hell, that hath no bottom, called a bottomless Pit, and he shall never come from thence, to Eternity.

6. Likewise indeed the Revelation of Faith in me, hath confounded all the Reason in Man, as to spiritual and heavenly Matters.

7. After this my Counsel pleaded again, to the same purpose as he did before; but he, through extream Fearfulness, did wrong my Cause, in two Things: First, in that he made no mention of the Wardens breaking open four Doors, contrary to the Laws of *England*, which was by the Law absolute Burglary; and the taking away the Books was absolute Felony.

8. This was in the Forefront of his Breviat, and I had reposed the Business to him, because I would not plead myself; but he, like a deceitful Knave and fearful Fool, did not speak one Word of it before the Court, which if he had, it would have put these envious Judges and Jury to a Nonplus, how they could have brought me in Guilty; so he spoil'd my Cause.

9. For after he had pleaded the King's Act of Grace, as aforesaid, he said these Words, That he had pleaded so far as the Law would bear him out, but as for the Words, and cause of Indictment, he was ashamed of it.

10. Upon these Words, did Judge *Rainsford* say unto the Jury, You see that his own Counsel is ashamed of his Cause.

11. Here the Reader may see those Words verified, as I have read, for my Counsel did do at my Tryal those things



which he ought not to have done; and he left undone those things which he ought to have done; for he ought to have pleaded the breaking open of so many Doors, but he left that undone, and to say he was ashamed of my Cause, he ought to have left those Speeches undone, and not to have spoken them, being not forced by the Court.

12. And for a Man to take Forty Shillings to plead a Man's Cause, and to say he is ashamed of his Clyants Cause; what Man that hath but moral Reason and Sense in him, but will say such a Counsellor hath no Truth in him.

13. But Judge *Atkins* sitting over my Counsel, might see the Breviat in my Counsel's Hands, which caused him to ask one of the Witnesses, (his Name was *Garat*) how did he come by those Books: He answered, That he did sieze them, as they use to do; the Judge asked how many there were of them? He said a Porter's Load: The Judge asked him where the Books were; he answered, at the Bishop of *London's* House.

14. The Judge asked him again, if they were all of a sort, or all of a bigne's, he answered, No; some were great ones, and some lesser, some three or four bound together, and some single: He was asked how many of them great Books that were in the Court, he answered six of them; he was asked what was the price that great Book was Sold for; he answered, twelve or fourteen Shillings.

15. Now when the two Counsels had done pleading, and the Witnesses examin'd, the aforesaid Judge *Atkins* stood up, and said, Gentlemen of the Jury, You see that the Book which the Indictment was grounded upon, was printed 13 Years ago, and is pardon'd by the King's gracious Act; therefore, said he, I cannot see, by the Laws of *England*. how you can possibly bring this Man in Guilty; therefore Jury look to it.

16. Then stood up Judge *Rainsford*, and said, That if it was not Law, we will make it Law; and further said, Who knoweth but this Raskal might antidate the Book 13 Years ago, and publish it this 30th of *August* last past.

17. The

17. The envy of this wicked Judge made him speak against his own Conscience, for he knew it was impossible for me to do such a thing, as to get it printed so lately, for he knew it were those that stole my Books, published them.

18. And further, this *Rainsford* vented his envy exceeding high, and called me Incorrigible Rogue, that should assume to himself to be in God's Place, a Man Pernicious, Blasphemous, Seditious, Heretical, and a monster in his Opinions; pretending himself one of the two Witneses of Almighty God, to the great Scandal and Contempt of our Lord the King, his Crown and Dignity; as also the Religion of this Kingdom rightly established: And further said, He was sorry that the Laws of *England* were so unprovided, to punish Crimes of this Nature.

19. And further he goeth on in his Rage against me, and saith, Gentlemen of the Jury, if you do not bring this Man in Guilty, you will be partakers with him in all his horrible Blasphemy, and grand Apostacy.

20. Many more hateful Words, with the Fire of Hell, that proceeded from his Heart, and did appear in his Face; his Zeal was great to have me punished; nay, he thought in his Heart, that Hanging was too good a Death for me, for said he, This Crime of horrid Blasphemy (as he accounted it) was worse than Murder, Felony, or Treason; and was sorry that the Laws was so unprovided to punish such Crimes.

21. I was so moved in my Mind, to hear this cursed Devil to blaspheme against the Holy Spirit that sent me, and gave me Power to give sentence of eternal Damnation upon such blaspheming Devils; that I could have wished, that God would have executed some visible Vengeance from Heaven upon this blasphemous Judge, to have smote him with a natural Blindness, for I knew he was spiritually Blind, for I had done wrong to no Man.

22. Only I had executed the Commission of God faithfully, in giving sentence upon all despising Devils, who sinned against the Holy Ghost. This was that Sin the high Priests  
and

and Elders committed in Christ's time against him, in that they said he cast out Devils by Belzebub, the Prince of Devils.

23. I know this, that Judge *Rainsford* would have said the same to Christ himself, had he been in my Place, for his Blasphemy was great, not only against me, but against God that sent me, which God he knew not.

24. Therefore my Anger was kindled against him, and desired an immediate visible Vengeance from Heaven upon him, that might have been a visible Witness, whether God did own him or me.

25. But there was a secret Voice within me said, thy Commission is Spiritual, and hath to do with the spiritual and eternal Estate of Mankind; and that all such Persons are the Seed of the Serpent, and are to receive for their Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, their Punishment in the Life to come, even eternal Damnation, which is the second Death, where the Worm of Conscience shall never Die, nor the Fire of Hell shall never be quenched to Eternity.

26. Then I was quiet, and willing to bear all they could do unto me, even to the Loss of my Life.

#### C H A P. IV.

*The Prophet is brought in guilty of his Sentence and Judgment; with the Nature of his Sufferings.*

1. **A**FTER that Judge *Rainsford* had made his Speech to the Jury, then was the Goaler commanded to take me away from the Bar, and put into a little Room for a Season, and after a little Space I was called for to the Bar again, and *Jefferies* being then in the Recorder's Place, that bawling Devil, was to give Sentence, and Judgment upon me.

2. And when I did appear before him, a great Fire was between us, where they did burn those in the Hand which  
were

were condemn'd to that Punishment, but all that was over before I did appear.

3. And this *Jefferies* sat in the Judgment Seat, as *Pilate* did against Christ, and I stood a Prisoner at his Bar; and when he saw my Face, the first Words he spake, he called me Impudent Rogue, because my Countenance did not change, nor look sad, nor ask'd any Favour of the Court, and said nothing to all their threats, revilings, and reproaches, whereby they reproached me.

4. Then he asked the Jury, Is *Muggleton* Guilty, or not Guilty? They stay'd a little Space before they spoke; *Jefferies* asked again, Is *Muggleton* Guilty, or not Guilty? the Jury said Guilty.

5. Then he proceeded in Judgment and said, the Court is sorry the Laws of *England* are so unprovided to punish Crimes of this Nature, therefore the Court hath thought fit, to give you but an easy, easy, easy, Punishment.

6. You shall be committed, and put to stand upon the Pillory, in three of the most eminent Places in the City: That is one Day in *Cornhil*, near the *Exchange, London*; another Day in *Fleet-Street*, near the End of *Chancery Lane*; and the third Day, being on the Market Day, to stand in *West Smith-Field, London*, from the hours of Eleven in the Forenoon, until One in the Afternoon.

7. On which said several Days, a writing Paper shewing your Offence, to be put upon your Breast, and also your blasphemous Books, in three Parts, to be divided, and with Fire before your Face, near the Pillory aforesaid, by the common Hangman, then and there to be burn'd.

8. And then to be returned into *Newgate* in safe Custody, untill your Fine of five Hundred Pound be paid, and then to put in good Security, to be of good Behaviour the Time of your Life, but none of your own Gang, as he called them, shall be Security for you; These are the Words of the Sentance that *Jefferies* passed upon me the 17th of *January* 1676.

9. The Paper that was tyed to my Breast every Day I stood

stood upon the Pillory, to shew my Offence, and Cause of this Suffering, the Words were as followeth.

10. *Lodowick Muggleton*, Standeth here for writing, causing to be printed, selling, uttering and publishing, a blasphemous Book.

11. After this Sentence, and Judgment was passed upon me, I shall record as short as I can, the Manner of the Execution of this Sentence; and how I did suffer it, and bear the Curse of their wicked Wills; for they did make that Law, which was not Law, as *Rainford* said before, and as Judge *Akin*, when he saw me condemn'd contrary to Law, he went off the Bench and said, there were no fair Dealings with me.

12. This Sentence have I suffered, in every Tittle in the greatest Rigour that could be inflicted, even beyond their own Law, they made me ride in a Cart, as a Thief, or a Murderer, bareheaded, without Hat or Cap; which never was done in *England* before: I stood bareheaded upon the Pillory, which no Cheat ever did, but were suffered to wear a Cap of Steel under another Cap.

13. I was set as a Mark for every one to throw a Stone at me.

14. My Books were offered up in three burnt Offerings unto the unknown God, as three Sacrifices before my Face, the smoke of them ascended into my Nostrils, which caused me to cry to Heaven for Vengeance, upon those great Men of the Earth, that were the Cause of those burned Offerings unto Devils.

15. And myself was offered up, as a Sacrifice three Times, to the rude Multitude: For the People came from the four Winds, or from the four Quarters of the City, and Suburbs round about; they were for Multitude without Number.

16. I was mau'd by the People, some cast Dirt, and Mud out of the Kennel at me, others rotten Eggs, and Turnips, and others cast Stones at me, some Stones weighed  
a Pound;

a Pound; and out of the Windows at the *Exchange*, they cast down Fire Brands, (pieces of Billets with Fire upon them) at my Head, which if they had lighted upon me, would have done the Work, as they desired.

17. I was bruised and battered, and my innocent Blood was shed, tho' not unto Death, for God's Cause, for that the Blood of the last true Prophet, and Witness of the Spirit, hath been shed, by this bloody City, for my Testimony to the Commission of God put upon me.

18. And it was the wonderful Providence of God, my Life was preserved; for I was delivered into the Hands of unreasonable Men, the rude Multitude, by the Hands of *Rainsford*, *Davis*, and *Jefferies*, Judges of the Law of Reason, and Jury, these were the Men that were guilty of my innocent Blood.

19. I was willing to be stoned to Death, by the rude Multitude, and would have gone off the Pillory to be stoned to Death, but the Officers would not let me come down, when this was over, my Wounds and the blood stanch'd, I was put into the cold Cellar again, the same Day at Night, I went three pair of Stairs high to my Lodging.

20. And the next Day, I would willingly have kept my Bed, but the Keeper said, if I would not come down into the Cellar in the Afternoon, they would put me in the common Side? so I was forced into the Cellar, who had more need to have kept my bed.

21. But there is no Mercy in Prison, therefore it may well be compared to Hell, for in Hell there is no Mercy, but Justice only, neither is there any Mercy in Prison Keepers at all without Profit.

22. After I had suffered these things, I was put into Prison again for the Fine of five Hundred Pounds that was laid upon me to pay, but I did lie in Prison six Months after I had suffered these things afore said.

23. And now in my Imprisonment, I considered that my Sufferings were much like unto the Sufferings of the Prophet

*Jeremiab* Chap. xi. 19. He suffered for his Message from the Lord of Hosts, the mighty God of *Jacob*.

24. And my Sufferings was for my Commission received from the high and mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus, in Glory, the only wise God my King and my Redeemer.

25. And as his Enemies, that caused him to suffer, and would have had him put to death, were Princes, and great Men of the Earth; so likewise those of my Enemies, were great Men, and as Princes on the Earth; and they sat upon the Thrones, as Gods on Earth, in Judgment against me.

26. And as it was with *Jeremiab*, so it was with me, for I was like a Lamb, that is brought to the Slaughter, and I knew not that they had devised devices against me, if I had, I could have prevented them. They saying, let us destroy the Tree with its Fruit thereof, and cut him off from the Land of the Living, that his Name may be no more remembered.

27. That is, let us destroy this *Muggleton*, the Tree, and the Fruit thereof; his Doctrine of the true God, and right Devil in his Writings, that none may receive his Writings more, nor believe his Doctrine, or Commission, that he hath power from God, to bless, and curse to eternity any more: This reprobate Men have practised against me.

28. So that I have had cause, to make my Complaint unto my God, my King, and my Redeemer the Lord Jesus Christ, as *David* and *Jeremiab* did.

29. Oh! Lord God of Truth, that judgeth righteously, that trieth the Reins, and the Heart, let me see thy Vengeance on them, for thou knowest I have been faithful in executing thy Commission, the Burthen of the Lord, which thou didst lay upon me.

30. And thou knowest the unrighteous, unjust Judgments, these wicked unjust Judges gave against me: They were not only Enemies to me, but thy Enemies, Oh God; for they have hated me without a Cause, and they have said, let us smite him with the Tongue, with lies, slanders, and reproaches.

31. Therefore give heed, Oh! Lord God of Truth, and  
hearken

harken to the Voice of these wicked Judges, and Jury, and all those that assented to that Judgment for harm, that contended with me: And let me see thy Vengeance on those thy Enemies, for their Fathers did unto thee, when thou was upon Earth, as those do unto me.

32. Thou hast saved me from bloody Men: For they laid wait for my Soul to kill it, had the Law been provided with Strength, and not for any Transgression of any Law that I had broken, but for thy Commission and Doctrine thou gavest me to declare.

33. Therefore Oh Lord God of Truth! be not merciful unto any wicked Transgression, that persecuteth only for Conscience sake; it being the Sin against the Holy Ghost.

34. And God will let me see my desire upon my Enemies, and bring them down, Oh Lord my God.

35. This was my secret Supplication unto my God, when I was Prisoner in *Newgate*, after I had suffered all those corporal Punishments, which they sentenced me to suffer.

## C H A P. V.

*Shewing how that the Prophet in a short time saw his desire (unto God) in part fulfilled.*

1. **A**ND a little while after these my Sufferings I saw my desire (in part) granted, and several of my potent Enemies cut off this Earth by Death: As first, that certain rich Man that took away poor Widow *Brun's* Ground, as is aforementioned; he was called Sir *John James*.

2. And notwithstanding I had overthrown his two Tenants in the common Law, yet when he saw that I was in Prison, and condemn'd for those Books, and had suffered as aforesaid; yet I being fined five Hundred Pounds, he thought I could not be delivered out of Prison no more, the Fine was so great.



3. Whereupon he wickedly took advantage upon my Sufferings for God's Cause, and sent a Writ of Ejectment to my Tennants, to eject me out of Possession, so my Attorney read it, and said, I must Answer to it, else he would eject me out the next Term, so I was forced to employ a Solicitor to answer to it, which wickedness of his cost me three Pounds

4. And my Lawyer went to treat with him, and this Knight was not very well, very cross, and said, he had turn'd his Business over to his Attorney: And his Attorney was so full of employment that nothing could be done.

5. So I hearing by my Lawyer that he was Sick, I desired of God, that he might never come down from that Bed of Sickness, whereon he lay; and in a few Days after, it came to pass, that he died.

6. So our Law-suit was ended, I had been a quarter of a Year in Prison then, now I knew this Man was the Seed of the Serpent, a Devil, and will be damn'd to all Eternity.

7. After this, there was another great Enemy, his Name was *Garret*, he was one of those that broke open my House, and stole my Books, and was a Witness against me in the Court: He brought the Books to the Court, for the common Hang-Man to burn, every Day I stood upon the Pillory, my Wife *Mary* gave him the Sentence of Damnation to Eternity, and he died six Weeks after.

8. The third Person was Judge *Rainsford*, Chief Judge of *England*, he was an implacable Enemy to me, but in a little time after his Judgment upon me, before I was delivered out of Prison, he was put down from his seat of Justice, and all his temporal Power taken from him by the King; and another put in his Place: And the King would give no reason for it, but his own will.

9. So that his great Power, Honour, and Glory, was departed from him, and he had not so much Power as a common Justice of Peace, he was in the same Condition as King *Saul* was, the good spirit of Power of giving righteous Judgment

ment in temporal things according to Law was departed from him, and an evil Spirit of shame and disgrace was sent unto him.

10. Which troubled his Soul, so that in a little time after he Died, and went to the same Place, as King *Saul* did, that did enquire of a Witch that was rejected of God, and not of his Prophet *Samuel*. And I am sure he shall be rejected of God, even this *Rainsford*, and rejected of me, the last true Prophet of the Lord, and that he will be damn'd to all Eternity.

11. And he shall remember in the Resurrection, that his Damnation is the very same which he call'd horrible Blasphemy, which he judged me for, and said, he was sorry the Laws of *England* were so unprovided, to punish me no worse than they did.

12. And as he had no Mercy for me when he was in Power, neither have I any Mercy for him: and I am sure God will have no Mercy for him, but hath provided a Law to punish him for his Envy against me, who did him no wrong.

13. And his Blasphemy against the Holy Ghost, which God hath said, and made it a Law (never to be altered) that shall never be forgiven in this World, or in the World to come: This is the Law that God hath provided for us, the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit, to judge by; so that I know the hottest of Hell Fire will be his Portion and Reward, for his Sin against the Holy Ghost, to Eternity.

14. The fourth great Enemy to me was Sir *Thomas Davis*, then Lord Mayor, he being a Stationer himself, he was confederate with the whole company of Stationers and Bookfellers, and Jury, to fight against the Lord and his chosen Prophet, and Witness of the Spirit, which did incense the Court and Jury, that I might antidate that Book 13 Years ago, and yet publish it this *August*; even against his own Conscience.

15. Wherein he shewed himself of that wicked, reprobate seed of the Serpent, a Son of the Devil; and I certainly know him to be a Devil, and that he will be damn'd to all Eternity.

16. And

16. And about two Years and a half after he judged me, he Died, and passed through this first Death, which is Natural, into the second Death, which is Spiritual and Eternal.

17. These great Enemies, I have lived to see them cut off from the land of the Living; with many others, more inferior Devils, which were my Enemies, have I seen cut off by Death, and some to Poverty.

18. There is one more that is yet alive, that I desire of God to have executed some visible Vengeance at my Tryal; his Name was *Jesseries*, Recorder of *London*. He was the Man that sat in the Judgment Seat, and gave sentence against me: He used several scurrilous and disdainful Expressions, in the sentence he gave upon me.

19. He was a Man, whose Voice was very loud, but he is one of the worst of Devils in Nature; for he is not only an Enemy to God and all righteous Men, but an Enemy to all moral Justice and Equity.

20. For if a Man's Cause be never so just, except he be employ'd in it, he will be sure to baffle and make quabbles, and wrangle out the justest Cause that is, and will make that which is unjust itself, to be right by Law; were it not for more juster Judges, that have a more just Conscience than he hath, else the Innocent would always loose his just Right, if he be against him.

21. But that which I have against him is, for his Blasphemy against the Holy Spirit that sent me, and his wicked Malice and Envy against me, when he sat in Judgment against me; that he said, he was sorry the Laws of *England* were so unprovided to punish Crimes of this Nature; he was sorry the Laws could not empower him to give sentence of Death upon me: This I know was the desire of his Heart.

22. And as he was sorry the Laws of *England* were so unprovided to punish me, so in like Manner, am I glad that the Laws of Heaven is always provided to punish him with Eternal Torments, which is a living Death, and a dying Life; it is well for me, and all the Elect, that God's Laws are always pro-

provided to give sentence of eternal Damnation upon all such despising, persecuting, blaspheming Devils, as this *J. Herries*.

23. I knew he was a Reprobate, and appointed of God to be Damn'd before; but this Tryal of mine hath given Testimony to me, and all that truly believe me, that he is an absolute Devil in Flesh, and his Sin doth cry to Heaven for Vengeance.

24. And look what measure he would have measured unto me, in that he would have slain my innocent Blood unto Death, the same measure shall be measured to him again: because the Laws of Heaven are always provided, and hath impowered me to give Sentence and Judgment upon him; for I know, by Revelation of the Spirit of God, that he is recorded in the tables of Heaven, for a reprobate Devil, and he shall be recorded here on Earth to the end of the World, for a damn'd Devil.

25. For that Body of his, which is now his Heaven, which cloathed itself in Scarlet, and sat on the Judgment Seat against me, shall be in Hell. And that lofty, bawling Spirit of his, shall be his Devil; the one shall be as Fire, and the other as Brimstone, burning together to all Eternity.

26. And he shall remember in the Resurrection, when he is raised again, that he gave Judgment upon me for writing this Sentence to others; and I am sure the God of Heaven will not deliver him from those eternal Torments.

27. There is a necessity that these Men of all others, should be Damn'd to Eternity; for there was more Enemies against me than could be numbered, through the occasion of these five Men afore-mentioned.

28. And I could freely forgive the rude Multitude, for they knew not what they did; but there is no forgiveness of these five Men, nor Jury, nor Judge, nor Officers, that gave their Consent to that Judgment that was passed upon me, the 27th of *January*, 1676.

29. Therefore I have left these five Men upon Record, that the Age to come may see the wickedness of them; and  
take

take heed how they persecute innocent Men, that doth not break any temporal Law; and especially such Men that hath a Commission from God to give sentence of eternal Damnation upon them, lest they come under the same Condemnation as these Men are under.

30. This I have left upon record for the Age to come, after my Death, some of the most remarkable Sufferings, which I have passed through, in the Year 1676.

## C H A P. VI.

*Of the Prophet's Deliverance out of Prison. Of the Price and Value that was made of him. The Rewards to the two Seeds at the last Day.*

1. **N**OW having given an Account of my Sufferings, it will be necessary to give an Account of my Deliverance out of those Troubles.

2. While I was in the Press-Yard Prisoner, the Sheriffs did send several times, by the Goal Keepers, to see what I would do about the Fine, but they were at no certainty, what they required: At last the Clerk of *Newgate* said, they would take the 5th Part, which was one Hundred Pounds.

3. I was unwilling to give so much, I let it alone a quarter of a Year longer, for some Reasons I had in myself; after that time I sent a Letter to treat with them about the Fine: The Sheriff's Name was one Sir *John Peak*, Sheriff of *London*. The other was Sir *Thomas Stamp*, Sheriff of *Middlesex*.

4. But they were very high and would not abate One Shilling of one Hundred Pounds, and the cause why, was because some of the Goal Keepers, had proffered one Hundred  
dred

dred Pounds for me, to keep a Prisoner for ever, or else to have a large Sum of Money, for my Ransom.

5. I perceive, had not the Sheriffs Honour lain at Stake, I had been bought and sold as *Joseph* was in *Egypt* for a Prisoner during Life, or till such Ransom was paid: It would have been a great disparagement to the Sheriffs, if they had sold me, such as was never done in *England* before.

6. But they having an Eye to Credit, and somewhat to Conscience, they would not do such Wickedness; but however it caused them to abate nothing of one Hundred Pounds, neither would they give any time, but pay down presently.

7. So we borrowed an Hundred Pounds the next Day and gave to them, upon the 19th Day of *July* 1677, and the same Day at Night I was released out of Prison, and many of the Believers do keep that Day as a Feast-day every Year, in remembrance of my Deliverance out of Prison.

8. For I was prized at a goodly Price, far higher than the Lord of Life, when he was on Earth: He was valued at but thirty pieces of Silver, the thirty pieces of Silver was thirty Pound, but they valued me at a hundred pieces of Silver, for the thirty pieces of Silver they valued Christ at, must be so much, else it would not have bought the Potters Field.

9. Now the cause why they valued me at such a high Price above my Lord and Master, it was because they knew I had some Interest in this World: and many followers of me, therefore they valued me at such a high Price as a hundred pieces of Silver.

10. And as the thirty pieces of Silver was the Price of innocent Blood, therefore not fit to be put into the Treasury, to be expended upon an holy Use, or to relieve the Poor and the like; but to buy a Potters Field, to bury the stinking carcases of Strangers, Thieves, and Murderers, in-somuch that the thirty pieces of Silver was bestowed on the basest Way, suitable to the purchase, being the Price of innocent Blood.

11. So likewise the hundred pieces of Silver they valued me at, it was the Price of innocent Blood also, tho' not unto Death, as our Lord was a very goodly Price.

12. And this Money will not be put into the Treasury, to repair Churches, or relieve the Poor, but will be spent basely in Lust, and Drunkenness, and in Voluptuousness suitable to the purchase of it, being the Price of innocent Blood.

13. Thus have I left upon Record, the substance of the whole Matter, as short as I can, both of my Sufferings and my Deliverance out of all those Troubles that hath happened upon me in the Year 1675, and in the Year 1676, and 1677, and in the Year of my Life 67.

14. This is the fifth part of the Acts of *John Reeve* and *Lodowick Muggleton*, the two last Prophets, and Witness s of the Spirit, from the Year 1651 to the Year 1677 I have been preserved, and had experience of the truth of all these things.

15. And wonderful Revelations, and Passages, and Acts, that are written in these five Parts, that I might leave it as a Legacy for the Age to come upon Record, that the unbelieving World may be convinced when I am turned to dust, as my Father *Adam* is, that I was slandered, reproached, belied, persecuted, imprisoned, and pilloried, without a Cause,

16. But I shall be raised again, by the Power of that God, the Lord Jesus Christ, in whom I believed, that he was dead, even the *Alpha* and *Omega*, and is alive for evermore.

17. And it will not seem a quarter of an hours time to me from my death, to my rising again: For there is no time to the dead, time belongs to the living.

18. And this I know, that as the twelve Apostles in the Resurrection, shall sit upon thrones and judge the twelve Tribes of *Israel*; those that believed them when they were upon the Earth. They were judged with an eternal blessing of  
Life

Life eternal, and those that despised, and persecuted them when on Earth, are judged by them to be cursed and damn'd to eternity, which is a second Death, which is Eternal.

19. So shall *Reeve* and *Muggleton*, in the Resurrection, sit upon Thrones, and judge all true Believers of our Doctrine and Commission of the Spirit, when we were upon Earth, to be blessed both in Souls and Bodies, that were mortal when they believed us, but now Immortal to Eternity.

20. And we shall judge all those wicked despisers and persecutors of us when we were upon Earth, with the same Judgment in the Resurrection, as we did here on Earth.

21. That is, they are cursed in that Soul and Body they shall have in the Resurrection to Eternity; and shall remain in utter Darknes here upon this Earth; weeping and gnashing of Teeth for Evermore.

---

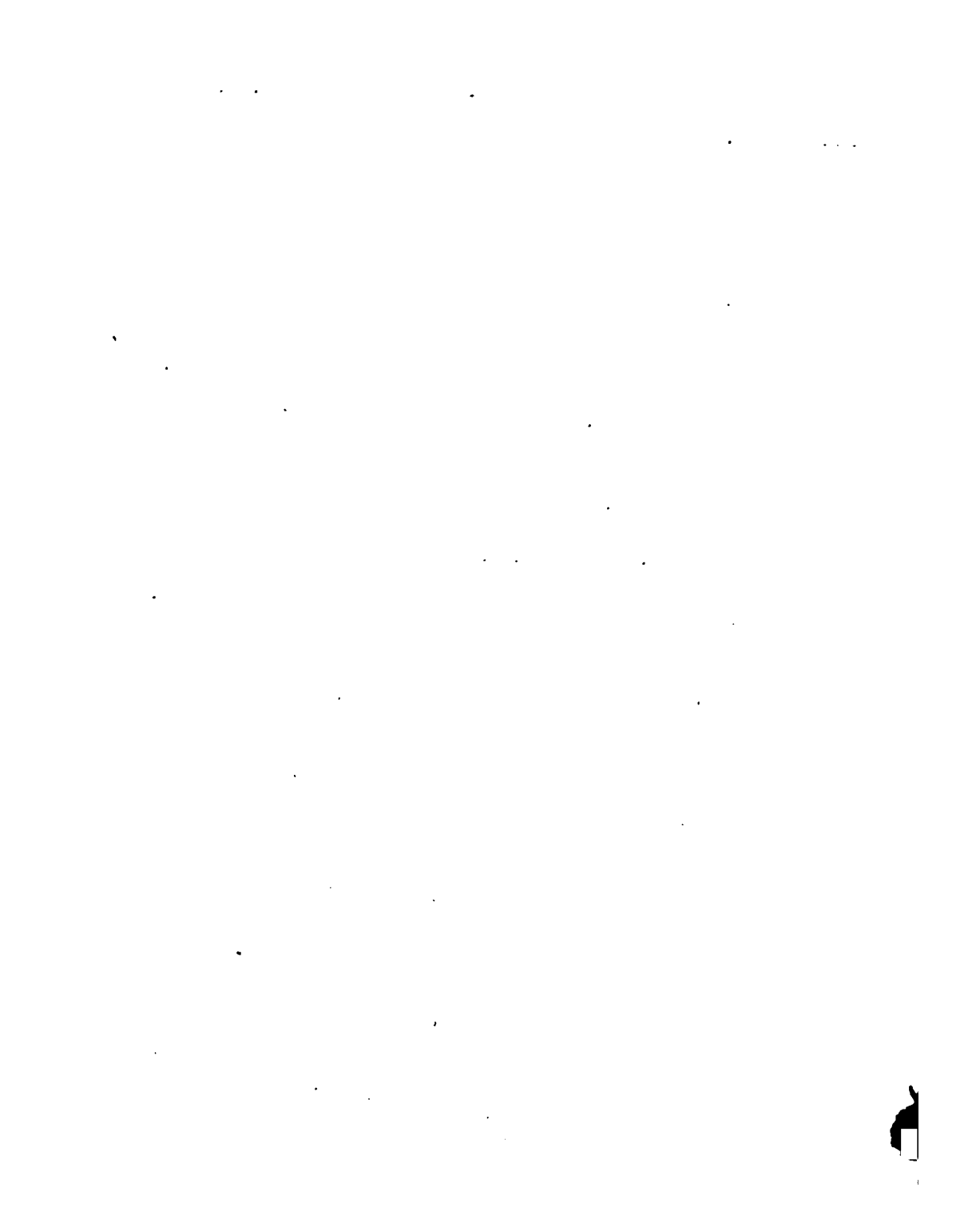
Written by **LODOWICK MUGGLETON**, one of the two last Witnesses and Prophets of the Spirit, unto the High and Mighty God, the Man Christ Jesus in Glory.

---

**F I N I S.**







**A TRUE ACCOUNT**  
**OF THE**  
**TRIAL AND SUFFERINGS**  
**OF**  
**LODOWICK MUGGLETON,**

*One of the two last Prophets and Witnesses of the Spirit,*

LEFT BY  
[NATHANIEL]

**OUR FRIEND POWELL,**

**WHO WITNESSED THE TRIAL AND ALL HIS SUFFERINGS,**

**THEREFORE**

**He gives a more full and particular Account of the Whole Pro-  
ceedings than the Prophet has left on Record,**

**WHICH IS THE CAUSE OF MY PRINTING IT,**

*That Believers may see how patiently our Prophet bore those Sufferings  
on Truths Account.*

Knowing when Time is ended, he should meet his God, his King and Redeemer, with all those that truly believe Jesus Christ, that was Crucified, was the only and alone eternal God, one glorious distinct Person in the form of a Man, who now reigns in the highest Heavens, where we shall behold his glorious Face, to live with him, and praise his Holy Name for ever!

---

Printed for T. FEVER---1808.

---

Small, Matteson

: 810 to 12 last row

AN ACCOUNT  
OF THE  
Prophet MUGGLETON's Sufferings,  
IN THE YEAR 1676,

*As related by our Friend, Mr. POWELL,*

Who was an Eye-witness to the whole.

---

THE 17th of January, 1676, it was one of the dismal days that has appeared this 1350 years, to any one who hath the true light of life eternal abiding in them, and then to behold the greatest of commissioned prophets brought to the bar of justice, nay, to the bar of injustice, and there to be arraigned for being robbed, and his robbers to be his accusers; I would humbly desire of any impartial hearer of his trial to tell me, soberly, whether he in his own days, or in any record he has read, and found such inhumanity, that burglary should be committed against a man by a fraternity of robbers, and the robbers sue the robbed, and denied the benefit of the laws, which is a security for the offended and scourge to the offender, and the robbers that robbed him to be his his accusers, in a plea of trespass in the Court of Arches of Canterbury, which Lodowick Muggleton being the offended, went there to answer, by express from the Court in person; by this means the robbers got the

A

Lord

Lord Chief Justice's warrant, and apprehended Lodowick Muggleton therewith, and brought him before Sir Thomas Davis, (then Lord Mayor of London) who committed him prisoner to Newgate, for owning the writing of a book, written against some Quakers, in the year 1663, and from thence bailed out to answer to an indictment, at the Old Bailey, for writing the said book ; then Mr. Muggleton took out a sesarary to remove his trial from the Old Bailey to the King's Bench, yet, notwithstanding the Lord Chief Justice Rainsford, after he had taken Lodowick Muggleton's money for the sesarary, very unjustly and arbitrarily supercedes it, contrary to all law and justice ; and the liberty of the subject commands him to take his trial at the Old Bailey, and there to answer to an indictment, as follows :

‘Lodowick Muggleton, thou standest here indicted for writing a blasphemous heretical seditious book, and to which indictment thou pleadest not guilty ; what sayest thou for thyself?’ Lodowick Muggleton made no answer, only desired the liberty of a counsel, which was granted ; but before Lodowick Muggleton's counsel began to speak, his adversary's council opened the cause, and said, ‘ My Lord, I am counsel for the King in this cause, and I think his crown and dignity was never so abused before ;’ and taking one of the books by one of the clasps, said, ‘ My Lord, here is a book contains the horridest blasphemy that ever was spoke or written before, a book that makes me tremble to hold it in my hand, I did read one side  
of

of a leaf in it, and I will assure your Lordship, it made my hair stand an end to see the horrid curses contained therein; it is composed of such horrid blasphemy, that I would not be obliged to read it through for all the world's wealth, for the blasphemy contained is very great; 'for,' said he, 'it was impossible for any man to write such a horrible blasphemous book, in assuming the place of God upon him,' 'for,' said he, 'it is so cunningly contrived, that it confounds all reason in man; therefore, my Lord, it is my opinion they ought to be cut off, both root and branch; with several other words to the same effect.' Then Lodowick Muggleton's counsel began to plead, but pleaded like a man that is either afraid to offend the judges, or like a very weak lawyer, for he pleaded no more than this: 'My Lord, the book Mr. Muggleton stands indicted upon, was written before the act of grace came forth, therefore if Mr. Muggleton has offended, he hopes the act of grace will favor him.' Whereupon the Lord Chief Justice Rainsford then sharply took him up, and said, 'That person that had the impudence to write such a blasphemous book as this was, did not want subtilty to antedate it.' Whereupon one Garrat stood up, and said, 'That Mr. Muggleton did own the writing of the book when he was before the Lord Mayor, in Guildhall.' 'Then,' replied the Lord Chief Justice, 'That the acknowledging the book before the Lord Mayor, was a sufficient testimony against him, and a publication of the book since the act of grace.' Then stood up Judge Atkins, and said, 'He

‘ He did not conceive that by owning the book before the Lord Mayor was a publication, since the Act. ; ‘ for,’ said he, ‘ would you have the man to have told a lie.’ ‘ My Lord,’ said Garratt, ‘ it was a long time before he would confess it.’ ‘ Why,’ said Judge Atkins, ‘ We have no law to make a man accuse himself ; can you make it appear,’ said he, ‘ that Mr. Muggleton has writ these books since the Act of Grace, or has he made sale of any since the Act of Grace, or has he offended the law :’—to which Mr. Garratt said ‘ No.’ ‘ Then,’ said Judge Atkins, ‘ Gentlemen of the Jury, you see there is no proof against Mr. Muggleton, either of his writing or making sale of any of these books since the Act of Grace ; therefore I do not understand how he can be denied the benefit of it, since we have no law for it.’ ‘ Why,’ said the Lord Chief Justice, in a great passion, ‘ If we have no law for it, I make it law,’ and down he sits ; and it was expected, Mr. Muggleton’s counsel would have pleaded, but whether the Lord Chief Justice’s passion prevented him or not, I do not know, but further he pleaded not, which made the Chief Justice very much reflect on Mr. Muggleton, and, in a jeering way, said to his counsel, ‘ Rise up, and plead for your client ;’ but he made no word of answer, which the adverse party made some advantage of, and the Lord Chief Justice stood up, and said, ‘ Gentlemen of the Jury, here is a cause before you so notoriously wicked, that, I thank God, I never heard the like before ; it is a cause so odious and so blasphemous, that you see his own counsel is  
**ashamed**

ashamed to plead in the vindication of so notorious a villain as this is, that could foment such horrid blasphemies as these are, and publish them : ‘ Pray,’ said the Lord Chief Justice, ‘ how many of these books did you find in his house ;’ they made answer, ‘ they had about a porter’s load.’ ‘ How many may that be in number,’ said he ; ‘ they carried about three or four hundred :’ ‘ What,’ said he, ‘ all of one volume,’ they said ‘ no ; there was about six of the volume ; as for the rest, they were what was contained in that book, but in smaller volumes.’ ‘ Then,’ said the Lord Chief Justice, ‘ it shews his subtillity had contrived them in several potions suitable to their constitutions ; they, whose stomachs were large enough to digest the whole venom might have it, and them whose stomachs were little and crazy, his cunning had contrived potions of it for their distempers. And now, Gentlemen of the Jury, although we have no proof of his selling any of these books, for it is to be believed those that bought them were of his own gang, and they will not appear against him ; therefore we must by circumstances, for what should one person do with so many books of one sort, unless it were to make sale of them ; therefore, Gentlemen of the Jury, I would have you narrowly sift the witnesses before you determine, and consider it was through a pretended zeal our late king was put to death, and who knows what design this villain had both in church and government : and therefore, Gentlemen, if you do not bring him in guilty, yourselves will be sharers in his curst apostacy.’ The jury receiving this unheard-of charge, went out of court, and after.

B

half



half an hour's consultation amongst themselves, they returned ; when it was demanded by the Clerk of the Peace, ' whether they were agreed in their verdict,'—they answered, ' they were ;' ' who shall speak for you,' was then asked : they said, ' the foreman ;' ' then,' said the Clerk of the Peace, ' is Lodowick Muggleton guilty of writing these books for which he stands Indicted, or not guilty,' the foreman said, ' Guilty ;' but the words came from him with so discomposed a countenance, that his very looks shewed his conscience had accused him with unjust doing ; the Lord Chief Justice having now his desired ends of the Jury, began in the most abusive, basest' way, that ever a Judge did to a prisoner, which is as follows :

'Thou impudent rogue, sirriah ! thou villain, which art a rogue so great, that I want words bad enough to call you, a villainous rogue, composed of such impudence, that you see he has got a set of them, and makes them call themselves Muggletonians, after his cursed name ; such a pack of villany I thought could not be invented by a rogue ; yet how impudently the impostor stands ; I am sorry our laws are so much unprovided that there is not a punishment severe enough to punish this rogue, according to the villainy of his crimes, but little did the contrivers of the law think that ever such blasphemy should be spread abroad in the world, and by so ill-looking a fellow as this ; I would forgive the greatest rogue that should rob me of all I have, the greatest murderer in the whole world, sooner than I would forgive this villain, who is a murderer of souls.' Upon the Lord Chief Justice  
ending

ending his speech, Judge Atkins left the Bench, and when he came down stairs, he shook his head and said, 'things are not fairly carried on here,' and spoke it in the hearing of several people, as well as myself. Then Lord Chief Justice Montague stood up and said, 'As for what my Lord Chief Justice said, I like it very well, for he has shewn his love and zeal to God, and his loyalty to his King; his zeal to God in endeavouring to crush this rogue, in his blasphemous pretences, who made it his business to draw away as many souls as he could after him by his damnable doctrine; I am sorry there has been occasion to publish his villainy by reading his blasphemous books in open court, for fear the venom should infect some of the hearers; but I hope God will direct them otherways, and as for the Stationers Company they ought to be remembered for their diligence, in searching after such cursed delusions as this impudent villain has broached abroad to deceive the peple, so likewise the Jury ought to be applauded for bringing in so just and pious a verdict; for he had rather forgive the greatest rogue, or greatest thief or murderer than this villain, this both thief and murderer to poor souls.' The Judge hereupon gave the Jury thanks for their verdict, and in a short time arose and departed the Court, leaving the Common Serjeant Jefferies to pronounce the sentence against him, when, with a disdainful countenance, looked upon the prisoner, and with words so abusively scurrilous, that it is a shame for a government to have such magistrates, as shall hereafter appear, who said, 'You rogue, that stands here; you impudent rascal, sirrah! that hath

hath such confidence to stand in presence of the Court to justify so much blasphemy, sirrah! the Court has been too favourable to such a villain as thou art, who has been guilty of the blackest deed that ever was invented by any rogue, except thyself; deeds arising from the very blackest of darkness itself, and considering all thy villany, the Court has been too favourable to the proposing a sentence,---'You are to stand three days upon the pillory, in three principal places in the City of London; and your blasphemous books to be divided into three parts, and there, with fire, to be consumed before your face; and you are to pay a little fine, but £500. It is but a little one, considering your villainy, and you must give security for your good behaviour, during your life, and such as are not of your own gang;' thus ended the pronouncement of this sentence. Now I will proceed to the fulfilling of the sentence in order; then Mr. Muggleton was carried by one of the keepers to Newgate, where he had not been above a week, but he was commanded to his first place of standing, which was at the Temple Gate, in Fleet Street; where, by the croaking frogs, he was pelted with clay, rotten eggs, and dirt in abundance, and in this place they put his head in the pillory, but Captain Richardson, the head keeper, came to them, and said, 'God damn you, what makes you put the man's head in, for it is contrary to his sentence.' Then he was taken out, and stood two hours; then he was taken off, and put into the cart, and so was carried to Newgate again, where he remained till his second standing, which was at the Royal Exchange

change, in London, where one would have thought the gravity of the City would not have suffered any violation of the law, yet he was more barbarously used by the caterpillars than he was by the croaking frogs, although several faithful believers used their utmost endeavours to hinder the throwing of things, by delivering some of them to the officers; others persuaded, and some threatened; yet, notwithstanding all this, they most shamefully used him out of the balconies, from the top of the Change; he had glass bottles thrown at him, and pieces of timber, and stones in abundance; and below there was a shopkeeper walked up to the pillory, and standing before Mr. Muggleton, hit him on the breast with an orange; which I seeing, ran at him, and, with my cane, hit him over the head, till he fell to the ground; then comes one with an unheard-of confidence, and takes a brand out of the fire, and threw it at him, which, had he not sheltered himself among the crowd, he would certainly have been laid in the fire he took the brand out of. This forwardness of mine created a deal of talk, who I was; some said I was one of his own people; others said I was the Sheriff's clerk; and that went most about with the people, and I was glad if by any means I could save him, notwithstanding he was shamefully abused; and having stood his two hours, he was taken down, and carried into a cart to Newgate, there to remain until his last standing, which was to be in West Smithfield, on a Friday, where he was no sooner come and entered the scaffold of disgrace, but the rude multitude began, in a most merciless manner, to throw stones at him

C

almost

almost as thick as hail, and here I am sure if some saints had not behaved with uncommon courage, he had certainly been killed; they went to the officers, requesting their diligent care, and promising to gratify them for it, and went quite round the people to hinder, either by fair means or foul; the throwing of stones, where I, with two officers going round about, saw a fellow take up a stone, swearing a bloody oath he would beat out his brains; but that hand that took it up was so belaboured, that I believe he could hardly lift it to his head for a week; yet, notwithstanding all the care and pains, we could not bring him off safe, for he was there knocked down with a stone, and had his head broke, in a base manner, so that the blood of the last Prophet that God will ever send, is to be required of this nation; so when his two hours were completed, he was taken down, and carried in a cart to Newgate, where he had his wounds dressed. So here he ended his corporal punishment, the greatest imaginable, both in his usage and in his time of standing; for I have known several rogues, cheats, and perjured persons, stand in the pillory, whose time was but one hour, and their usage much civiller than his, who had broke no law, nor any thing of evil laid to his charge, as shall hereafter appear. He stood two hours on the pillory, with the greatest abuse imaginable, only for his conscience in Christ Jesus, and owning himself his true Prophet.

Now beloved friends, as God said to the rebellious people, so will I say to those that were Mr. Muggleton's Judges and Jury,---come let us reason together;

together ; I desire to know whether thou doest believe in an eternal creator of heaven and earth, and all things formed therein, which I am sure thou canst not deny ? If thou doth believe it, so doth Mr. Muggleton. Why, then, do thou accuse him ? Doth thou believe Christ died for his elect ? So doth Mr. Muggleton. Why, then, do thou persecute him ? Do you believe Christ rose again for the sanctification of his elect ? So doth Mr. Muggleton. Why, then, do you furnish him ; O you workers of iniquity, perhaps you will say unto me, Mr. Muggleton pretends himself to be a true Prophet of God, and that there is no true minister but himself ; truly if so, what a condition have you brought yourself into, for David said, ‘ Who was a man after God’s own heart, save only in the matter of Uriah’s wife, touch not the Lord’s annointed, nor do my Prophets harm .’ Now you judges, who have sat in judgment, how have you followed the commandment of our Lord Jesus Christ, who said, ‘ He that receives a Prophet in the name of a Prophet, shall receive a Prophet’s reward ;’ so, consequently, he that despises a Prophet despises him that sent him ; so that you have pillored the Lord Jesus in your days ; ‘ for,’ said he, ‘ inasmuch as you have done it, to the least of my brethren, you have done it to me ;’ but you have done it to the greatest that has appeared this 1500 years ; but you may say, ‘ How do we know that he is a true Prophet ;’ ‘ I say unto you,’ as the Prophet of old said, ‘ My people are destroyed for the want of knowledge ;’ and you might have judged after the rule of Gamaliel, who said, ‘ Touch him not,

not, for if his doctrine be of himself, both him and his doctrine will perish together; but if it be of God, and you persecute him, you make yourselves fighters against God; since, therefore, no such righteous judgment has been acted by you, I will say, 'Who shall deliver you from the wrath of God! O ye powers of England,' and so I end his corporal punishment.

Now I shall give you an account of the chief actions that attended his personal imprisonment, also to pay the £500. Mr. Muggleton was not able, and to lie in prison among a company of rogues, he was not willing; wherefore Mr. Muggleton desired to be removed from the master's side to the press-yard, but one of the keepers told him he must not be removed; 'for,' said he, 'you are one of the best prisoners, and we give a great deal of money for our places, and at this rate we shall be losers if our best prisoners be taken from us'. Wherefore Mr. Muggleton sends for a lawyer, and advised with him what to do, who asked him 'whether he owed any money, and whether it was to any he could put confidence.' Mr. Muggleton answered, 'he did owe thirty pounds to one Mrs. Hall, upon a note under his hand, and that he knew her to be a faithful good woman by experience;' 'then,' said the lawyer, 'she must bring her writ against you, out of the Common Pleas, and charge you with it in Newgate, and then take a *Habeas Corpus* to remove you from Newgate to the Fleet.' Mr. Muggleton did not think it convenient for Mrs. Hall to appear alone before the Judges, therefore he made choice of me, Nathaniel Powell,  
to

to aid and assist her in this weighty affair ; in order thereunto, we goes and takes out a *Habeas Corpus*, which our lawyer gave to one of the prothonotaries of the Common Pleas, in order to have it entered ; but the prothonotaries told the lawyer, that he wondered he could appear in so ill a cause ; ‘ for,’ said he, ‘ Mr. Muggleton is a felon, and we are not to remove felonious persons.’ The lawyer (surely left his reason at home) came away with this lying answer of the prothonotaries, for there was never any felony nor any other evil laid to his charge, in all his trial, but for writing a book only. When I saw how unsuccessful we were with our lawyer, I desired Mr. Muggleton to put him off, and that Mrs. Hall and I would manage the business without him ; this was no sooner concluded on, but the under-keeper of Newgate came to Mr. Muggleton and told him, if he would give him ten shillings he would endeavour to get him a good chamber in the press-yard, which Mr. Muggleton was willing to do, by reason he should there be free from the trepanning visits many people made him. Being thus retired, he considered what was next to be done ; he therefore ordered Mr. Powell to go and sound the Sheriff of London, to see what he would take towards the £.500 ; accordingly we went to Sir John Peak, and Sir Thomas Stamp, then Sheriff of London ; Sir John Peak was very fair in his demands, for he said he would be contented with what his brother Sheriff did ; whereupon I said to him, ‘ Suppose your brother Sheriff will omit the penal fine, which if he doth, will you be pleased to condescend to it,’ he said, ‘ I will condescend to any



any agreement he and you doth make, and if he be willing to forgive his part, I will mine.' With this civil reply of Sir John Peak's I went to Sir Thomas Stamp, but found no such kindness there; for, in the first place, he demanded the whole fine, and said it was their due, and said he did not think himself obliged to abate any thing. I told him, there was no possibility to pay it, by reason of the inability of the person; he said then he must remain prisoner still;—said I, 'he cannot, by the course of nature live long, he being 68 years of age, and being confined it will be a means to shorten his days, then you will lose it all.' 'I do not care if I do,' replied Sir Thomas, said I, 'It must surely reflect upon your conscience, to have any old man die in a gaol on your account; he never did you any wrong.' 'I will venture that,' said he, 'and with that tell him from me, if he doth not leave off his public discourses, that I hear he uses in prison, I will confine him closer.' With this answer I went to Newgate, and gave Mr. Muggleton an account of what had passed, who, hearing of it, was resolved to content himself with the condition he was in some longer time. Mr. Muggleton remaining thus silent caused the Sheriffs to send to him, who sent one of the keepers of Newgate to tell him, if he would make any fair proposals, the Sheriffs would be very civil to him; whereupon Mr. Muggleton sent to them again, where it was referred to Sir Thomas Stamp, who advised me to bring him the £500. and I should see how civil he would be to me. 'Sir,' said I, 'I hope you do not take me to be such a fool as to trust to the courtesy of a covetous Sheriff.'

Sheriff; so I went away. After that Mrs. Hall brought a *Habeas Corpus* to remove him to the King's Bench, but was strangely frustrated; I called upon the tipstaff, and nobody was there to prove the *Habeas Corpus*, although the Lord Chief Justice Rainsford granted it, and he himself sat on the bench; yet did he suffer Jefferys to say there was no *Habeas Corpus* granted, and that this was like one of Muggleton's tricks; so he was remanded back to Newgate, and remained there some time after; then I went and took out another *Habeas Corpus*, and carried it myself to Guildhall, to the Lord Mayor, Sheriffs, and Court of Aldermen: there I was commanded to wait in the matted gallery, and after waiting there about an hour, Mr. Tanner, the Clerk of the Peace, came to me and told me, that the Lord Mayor and Court of Aldermen had accepted the *Habeas Corpus*, and would be obedient to the Lord Chief Justice's order. 'His order is, that you forthwith deliver his body, and I demand it.' 'Sir,' said Mr. Tanner, 'there is a great deal to be done before you can have it.' 'Sir,' said I, 'I know there is no more to be done than the return of the *Habeas Corpus*.' 'The Lord Mayor ordered me to tell you so,' said he, 'therefore I cannot help it.' So away I went, and the next morning called on Mr. Tanner, he being at Fishmonger's Hall, who told me, I must go and search the Counters, to see if there was no detainer lodged against him; otherwise the Sheriffs cannot safely deliver him up. 'Why,' said I, 'what hath the Sheriffs to do with him any more than what he is charged with in Newgate, or if there be any thing against him in any of  
the

the Counters, (as I am sure there is not) and if not charged upon him, in Newgate. the Sheriffs are to take no cognizance of it. 'I have orders from the Sheriffs to tell you so,' said he; I replied, 'I smell knavery in the Sheriffs,' which made Mr. Tanner a little angry; but, however, away I went to the Poultry Counter, and searched there, and found nothing, and from thence to Wood-Street Counter, where the clerk said the books were carried to Guildhall, and we must go there and search; so we went to Guildhall, and when we came there, they told us we could not see till the court sat, which would not be till eleven o'clock; so there we waited, and when the court sat, they favoured us to search, (but not without our money) where we found nothing entered there; so we went down again to Mr. Tanner, and acquainted him, and desired a return of the *Habeas Corpus*, who told me it was superceded. 'Who has done it,' said I, 'the Lord Chief Justice,' said he. 'How dared he to do that injustice,' said I; 'You may go ask,' said he. I answered 'I would,' so away goes Mrs. Hall and I; but before I went to the Chief Justice, we called at Newgate, and gave Mr. Muggleton an account of what had passed, who sent us to the Lord Chief Justice to know his unjust proceedings against him; so we went and told his Lordship we were come about a person his Lordship had granted a *Habeas Corpus*, for, and since had denied it by a supercedure. 'Who is that?' said he; 'Mr. Muggleton,' said I. 'Mr. Muggleton,' said he, 'shall not be removed out of the Sheriffs' custody.' 'Pray, why so.' my Lord; 'Why,'

'Why,' said he, 'you will not remove that for £30, that lies for £500.' 'My Lord,' said I, 'he is in for no debt but ours': 'Go,' said he, 'and pay the £500. and then you shall have your *Habeas Corpus* granted.' 'My Lord,' said I, 'would you have us to pay £500. to secure £30.' 'I do believe Mrs. Hall doth act in kindness,' said he, 'which will be more hindrance than to act according to the justice of the law.' 'Why, my Lord,' said he, 'whether it be kindness or not kindness, is it law? If it be law, my Lord, I am a free-born subject of the king; and, as such, I claim the benefit of the law; and if it be not law, my Lord, why should you be so unjust as to put us to £35. charges to take it out.' 'What's that to you, sirrah!' said he, 'out of my chamber; about your business, or I will send you to some other place.' So away we went, and gave Mr. Muggleton an account in Newgate, who, hearing all this his injustice, said, 'He must wait some other opportunity, he being so near got out of the Sheriff of London's custody, made him afraid he would find some other way.' Whereupon they sent to him again, to treat about the fine, and he ordered me to go and treat with them; in order thereunto, I went, and did agree with them about the fine for £100. After we had agreed about the sum, I asked what time they would give for the payment: they said they expected the money now; I said, I had not got it ready, but would give them bond and security for it; they asked me who was my security, I said Mr. Cooper in Shoe Lane, and Mr. Symonds in Cow Lane; they bid me come to-morrow, and

E

they

they would, in the mean time, enquire after the securities, to know if they were substantial. So in the morning I went to meet them at the Lord Mayor's, where they told me, they did not approve of taking a security on a bond, but if Mr. Muggleton would assign over his houses, they would take them, and give him six months for the payment. I told them 'No; for when once a Sheriff had got possession of a man's estate, it was hard to get it again.' 'Pray, then,' said Sir Thomas Stamp, 'let us have our money; what interest are you willing to allow me for the six months, if I procure the money to-morrow: Sir John Peak told me, he would allow me after the rate of six per cent. I told him I would not have it so; but if he would allow me after the rate of ten per cent. I would pay it on the morrow. 'I will allow it, then,' said he. With that I went and told Mr. Muggleton what I had to do, who approved of it very well, and sent me to borrow the money; accordingly I did, and the next morning went with the money to the Lord Mayor, Sheriffs, and Court of Aldermen at Guildhall, and took two men with me for bail for his good behaviour. The Court beginning to fill, I went to Sir John Peak, to have my business dispatched, who immediately sent to Captain Richardson for the copy of the commitment, but word was brought the Captain was out of town, and they could not get at it; then he sent to Mr. Tanner, the Clerk of the Peace, and ordered him to send it; his man sent word he was not at home, and he dare not send it without his order: whereupon I told Sir John  
Peak

Peak I did believe all that was done a mere trick, 'for how dare your servants,' said I, 'send you such petty answers, if it were not by your consent.' 'Pray,' said he, 'stay a little, and you shall see to the contrary.' So away he sends another messenger to Mr. Tanner's, and bid him tell him if he did not send away the copy of Mr. Muggleton's commitment quickly he would send him to prison; this message brought his clerk; but before he came, the Court of Aldermen broke up, and Sir John Peak told me it could not be done till the sitting of the next Court, which would not be till three weeks time. 'Sir,' said I, 'if I have not him out this day he shall lay there for ever.' 'Why,' said he, 'what would you have me to do?' 'Sir,' said I, 'invite the Lord Mayor and two or three Aldermen to a private table, to drink a bottle of wine, and it may as well be done before them as the whole Court.' 'I will do it,' said he, 'because you shall see how willing I am to serve you:' so to a private table he invites the Lord Mayor and some of the Aldermen, where they had bottles of wine and tobacco laying before them; then I and the two people who were to be bail went into the room:—'What are you?' said the Lord Mayor; I replied, 'My Lord, I am come to bail Mr. Muggleton out of Newgate.' 'Will the bail,' said he, 'swear themselves worth £300. a-piece, and all their debts paid?' 'What necessity is there for that,' said I, 'Why,' replied the Lord Mayor, 'do you think I will take less than £300. of two men for £500.?' 'I do not know what your Lordship means by £500.' 'Why,' said he, 'is not his fine £500.?'—'True, my Lord; but I do not

not put in bail for the fine ; I come to pay that : I have money in Court ready for it : your Lordship may ask the Sheriff that sits there, if he be not satisfied.' 'Then' said the Lord Mayor to the bail, ' Mr. Butterill, and Mr. Clark the farrier, you shall promise that Mr. Muggleton shall appear the first day of the general sessions of gaol delivery of Newgate, on pain of £200. a-piece, to be levied on your goods and chattels.' ' No, but they shall not,' said I : ' Why so ?' said the Lord Mayor ; I replied, ' because it was contrary to law :' with that one of the Aldermen stood up in a passion and said, ' Will you pretend to teach my Lord Mayor law ?' I told him that was none of my business, but I would prefer my own memory equally with the Lord Mayor's, or his either, and that it was contrary to the sentence he received, and that I would have no secondary impositions laid upon him. ' Pray,' said the Lord Mayor, ' you that know so well, what is the sentence ?' ' My Lord, his sentence was to stand upon the pillory three times, and to pay a fine of £500. and to give security for his good behaviour during life ; if during life no necessity for appearance till a default be made.' ' What,' said the Lord Mayor, ' are you one of his gang ? That is no business of your's to ask, my Lord ; neither did I come here to be catchechised ;' ' You talk too saucy to my Lord,' said one of the Aldermen. ' Not at all, Sir,' said I, ' for I did not come here to discourse on religion, but law.' ' Who is this man ?' said the Lord Mayor to Sir John Peak, who replied, ' he is Mr. Muggleton's solicitor.' ' Are you willing,' said the Lord Mayor, ' that he shall appear or no ; I told him  
I would

I would not go no other way than what the law directed.' Upon which Sir Robert Hanson and Sir John Peak whispered me out of the room, and kept me in talk, while the Lord Mayor, and Mr. Lightfoot, his attorney, persuaded my friends to be bound for his appearance, at the Old Bailey; when I perceived this, I was extremely troubled, but how to help it I could not tell: So having done at Guildhall, I went with the Sheriff to his house, to pay the money; before I let him have it, I told him I expected he would promise me that he should discharge Mr. Muggleton from that appearance, at the Old Bailey; he told me that could not be avoided now, but, at their appearance, he would discharge both him and his bail: I told him that would not do, for unless he would promise me he should not appear, I would carry the money back again; he hearing me say this, made me a promise to discharge him without his personal appearance. Dinner being over, and some private discourse between Sir John and I, gave me a release from the Lord Mayor, and an order signed by both the Sheriffs, to Captain Richardson, for his discharge, upon sight thereof: I told the Sheriff I did believe the Captain would not obey their order, he told me he would stay at home three hours on purpose for me, and if in that time I could not have him discharged, desired me to come and acquaint him, and he would go to Newgate himself, and lay Captain Richardson by the heels, and put Mr. Muggleton out; so giving him hearty thanks for his kindness, I took my leave, and about four o'clock in the afternoon I got to



Newgate, where I went to the keeper and demanded Mr. Muggleton, the keeper was a little surprised, thinking he had made all sure for his longer confinement; so after a little pausing, he told me he would send to the Sheriffs', to know if that was their hand writing, which, if they owned, I should have him discharged; so away he sent a messenger, but we heard no more of him till seven o'clock; then I went to the keeper again, to know the reason of his long stay, he told me he did believe Mr. Muggleton could not be discharged that night; I told him unless he did discharge him, both him and his captain should sit in the stocks, in their own prison, on the morrow, and that the Sheriff had so promised me: he hearing me say so, within half an hour discharged him from the prison of hell. The sessions coming on, it was much talked of in the City of London, that Mr. Muggleton was to be brought again to the Old Bailey: I being then at Braintree, in Essex, came speedily up to London, to prevent it, and as I was going to Sir John Peak's, I met him accidentally near the Poultry, who, seeing me, made his coach stop, and took me into it, where I began to attack him with falsehood for his breach of promise; he told me he could not help it, the Lord Mayor would have it so, or take the forfeiture of his recognizance: I told him he suffered the recognizance to be forfeited, and I would sue him for the money I paid him, and besides, I told him Mr. Muggleton was gone out of town, and I could not tell when he would come back again. 'Can't you get somebody to appear for him, and I will order it so, that shall do

do as well.' 'If that will do, I will appear for him myself,' said I: 'You will do very well,' said the Sheriff; 'But, Sir,' said I, 'I have three requests to make before the Court begins—the first is, that the business may be done as private as you can; the second is, that Sir George Jefferies may not be in Court, by reason his foul tongue may raise my passion, that may give offence to the Court; and the third is, that you would get Sir Robert Hanson to sit upon the bench; for he did declare to the Lord Mayor, that Mr. Muggleton was his next-door neighbour ten years, in all which time he never knew or heard that he ever swore an oath in his life, or ever was drunk, or ever knew that he told a lye, but was always a good man, making no difference with his neighbours; the Sheriff told me he would do what lay in his power to grant my request,' so we parted for that time: the time being come I was to appear in the Old Bailey, away I went, and, going to the Sheriff, I asked him 'When would my business come on?'—He said 'now;' so coming down from his chair, takes me into the passage, and told me, 'He had obliged me in all my requests, he had done my business very privately, and ordered Jefferies out of Court, and had got Sir Robert Hanson on the bench;' so taking a catalogue of all the prisoners' names that were to appear that day, out of his pocket, there was Lodowick Muggleton discharged, acquitted, and released, by order of the Lord Mayor; for which I gave Sir John Peak my hearty thanks, and took my leave.

Thus

Thus I have given you a true and impartial account of the whole proceedings of Mr. Muggleton's last trial and sufferings.

THE END.

